

IKSAD
7th INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE ON
SOCIAL SCIENCES & HUMANITIES

October 9-10, 2021
Ankara, TURKEY

IKSAD – THE INSTITUTE OF ECONOMIC DEVELOPMENT & SOCIAL RESEARCH

CONFERENCE
PROCEEDINGS BOOK

Edited by
Dr. Mustafa Latif EMEK

ISBN 978-625-800725-1

IKSAD
7TH INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE ON
SOCIAL SCIENCES & HUMANITIES
October 9-10, 2021
Ankara, TURKEY



CONFERENCE
PROCEEDINGS BOOK

Edited by

Dr. Mustafa Latif EMEK

All rights of this book belongs to IKSAD.
Without permission can't be duplicate or copied.
Authors of the papers are responsible both ethically and
juridically. Issued: 20.10.2021

www.iksadinstitute.org

ISBN 978-625-8007-25-1

CONFERENCE ID

TITLE OF CONFERENCE

IKSAD

7TH INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE ON SOCIAL SCIENCES & HUMANITIES

DATE - PLACE

October 9-10, 2021

Ankara, Turkey

ORGANIZATION

- ✓ IKSAD-INSTITUTE OF ECONOMIC DEVELOPMENT AND SOCIAL RESEARCH

ORGANIZING COMMITTEE

Prof. Dr. Salih ÖZTÜRK

Prof. Dr. Mustafa TALAS

Prof. Dr. Sarash KONYRBAEVA

Dr. Mustafa Latif EMEK

PARTICIPATING COUNTRIES

Turkey, Cyprus, North Macedonia, Ukraine, Georgia, Azerbaijan, Moldova, Pakistan, Hungary, Argentina, Belgrade, India, Nigeria, Indonesia, Serbia, Romania, Albania, Benim, Iran, Sri Lanka, Niger, Vietnam, Saudi Arabia, Croatia

NUMBER OF ACCEPTED PAPERS: 47

NUMBER OF REJECTED PAPERS: 51

THE NUMBER OF PAPERS BY FROM TURKEY: 19

OTHER COUNTRIES: 28

EVALUATION PROCESS

All applications have undergone a double-blind peer review process

COORDINATOR

Nurlan AKHMETOV

CONFERENCE LANGUAGE

English

SCIENTIFIC COMMITTEE MEMBERS

Professors

Prof. Dr. Kinga Flaga – Gieruszyńska - Poland
Prof. Dr. Aleksandra Klich - Poland
Prof. Dr. Sevi Oz - Turkey
Prof. Dr. Bartosz Jóźwik - Poland
Prof. Dr. Belgin Aydıntan - Turkey
Prof. Dr. Natalia Latygina - Ukraine
Prof. Dr. Olga Sciuchina - Moldova
Prof. Dr. Fahri Apaydın - Turkey
Prof. Dr. Akademik Muhtar İmanov - Azerbaijan
Prof. Dr. Ramazan Gafarlı - Azerbaijan
Prof. Dr. Firdaus Khisamitdinova - Russia
Prof. Dr. Nihat Şimşek - Turkey
Prof. Dr. M. Hakkı Alma - Turkey
Prof. Dr. Aliye Özenoğlu - Turkey
Prof. Dr. Nevzat Artik - Turkey
Prof. Dr. Sadettin Paksoy - Turkey
Prof. Dr. Veysel Bozkurt - Turkey
Prof. Dr. Guguli Dumbadze - Georgia
Prof. Dr. Osman Erkmen - Turkey
Prof. Dr. Sevcan Yıldız - Turkey
Prof. Selden Harris - USA
Prof. Dr. Gulizar Ibrahimova - Azerbaijan
Prof. Dr. A. Beril Tuğrul - Turkey
Prof. Dr. Mykola Vas'kiv - Ukraine
Prof. Dr. Mehmet Okur - Turkey
Prof. Dr. Habiľ Andrea Bencsik - Slovakia
Prof. Dr. Sri Indah Nikensari - Indonesia

Prof. Dr. Petra Pelletier - France

Prof. Dr. Samir Ladacı - Algeria

Prof. Dr. Alfiye Yusupova - Russia

Associate Professors

Assoc. Prof. Dr. Veli Batdı - Turkey
Assoc. Prof. Dr. Arzu Tunçer - Turkey
Assoc. Prof. Dr. Aparna Srivastava - India
Assoc. Prof. Dr. Mustafa Güleç - Turkey
Assoc. Prof. Dr. Osman Kubilay Gül - Turkey
Assoc. Prof. Dr. Seyithan Seydosoglu - Turkey
Assoc. Prof. Dr. Ahu Pakdemirli - Turkey
Assoc. Prof. Dr. Nilgun Ulutasdemir - Turkey
Assoc. Prof. Dr. Melike Özer Keskin - Turkey
Assoc. Prof. Dr. Guray Alpar - Turkey
Assoc. Prof. Gayana Yüksel - Ukraine
Assoc. Prof. Dr. Ali Fikret Aydın - Turkey
Assoc. Prof. Dr. Tavaldieva Gulbaxar Nishanovna - Uzbekistan
Assoc. Prof. Dr. Grozi Delchev - Bulgaria
Assoc. Prof. Caroline Akhras - Lebanon
Assoc. Prof. Joanna Studzińska - Poland
Assoc. Prof. Dr. Özlem Ülger - Turkey
Assoc. Prof. Dr. Mustafa Mete - Turkey
Assoc. Prof. Dr. Aziz Alekberli - Azerbaijan

Assoc. Prof. Dr. Ümran Türkyılmaz -
Turkey

Assoc. Prof. Ivaylo Staykov - Bulgaria

Assoc. Prof. Hassan Nasrollahzadeh
Saravi (Phd) - Iran

Assistant Professors

Dr. Alan Libert - Australia

Dr. Ronen Harel - Israel

Dr. Dipanwita Pal - India

Dr. İlkül Kaya - Turkey

Dr. Cavit Polat - Turkey

Dr. Vedat Akman - Turkey

Dr. Bhakta Bandhu Dash - India

Dr. Mohamed El Malki - Morocco

Dr. Dilshoda Mubarekova - Uzbekistan

Dr. Shaukat Aref Mohammed - Iraq

Dr. Basim Mohammad Ali Aldahadha -
Jordan

Dr. Orhun Burak Sozen - Turkey

Dr. Tamalika Sultana - Bangladesh

Dr. Aslı Saylan Kırmızıgül - Turkey

Dr. Cyrille Feybesse - France

Dr. Malik Yılmaz - Turkey

Dr. Mahira ÖZÇALIK - Turkey

Dr. Minji Yang - South Korea

Dr. Hazim Abed Mohammed Al-
Jewaree - Iraq

Dr. Viola Makhzoum - Lebanon

Dr. Giscard Assoumou Ella- France

Dr. Hatice Nur Germir - Turkey

Dr. Murathan Keha - Turkey

Dr. Franck Amoussou - Benin Republic

Dr. Bashir Ali Saleh- Al-Jabal - Libya

Dr. Usmonov Botir Shukurillayevich -
Uzbekistan

Dr. Tien Dung Nguyen - Vietnam

Dr. Desmond Bala Bisandu - United
Kingdom

Dr. German Martinez Prats -
Universidad Juarez Autonoma De
Tabasco - Mexico

Dr. Mutlu Özgen - Turkey

Dr. Ragif Huseynov - Hungary

Dr. Abbas Karaağaçlı - Turkey

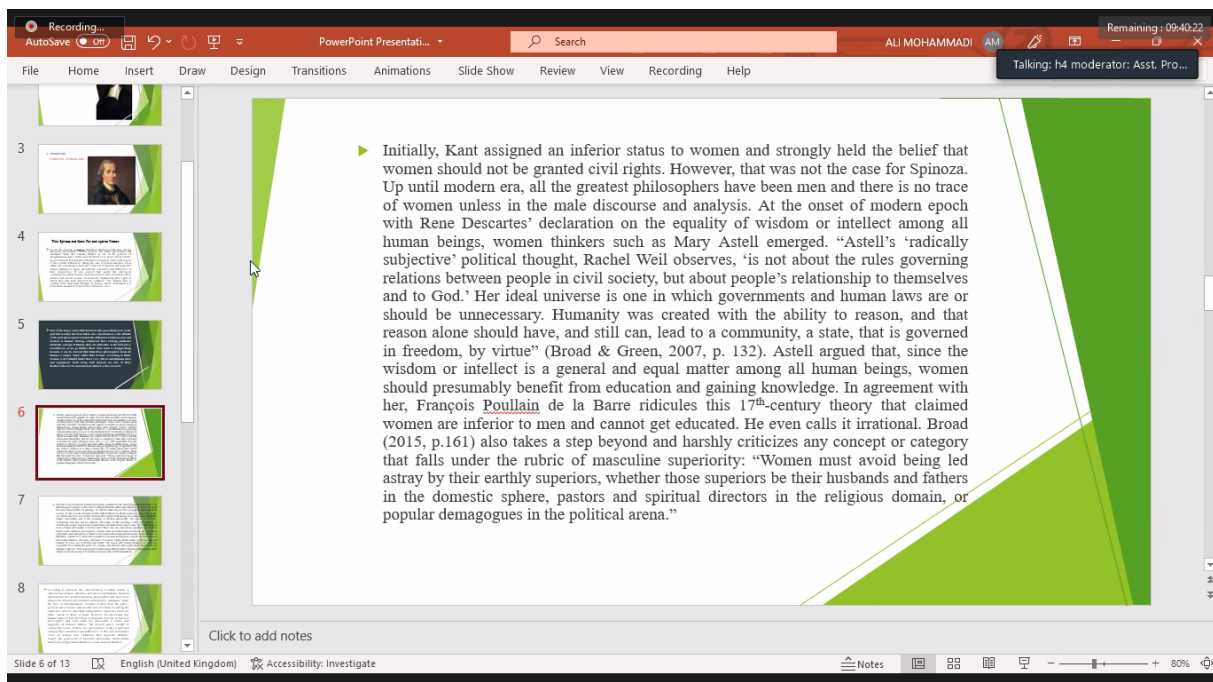
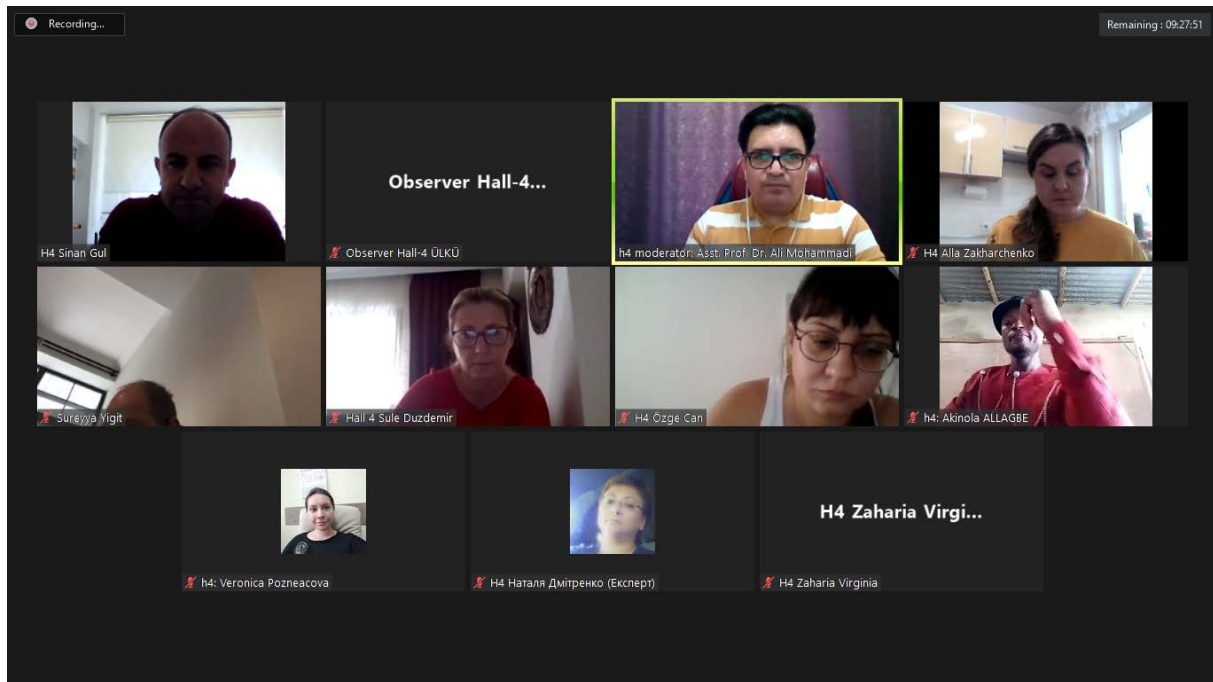
Dr. Bülent Haner - Turkey

Dr. José G. Vargas – Hernández -
M.B.A., Ph. D. - University Of
Guadalajara - Mexico

Dr. Nicholas Edizer - Turkey

Dr. Andre Nkwigize - United Nations

Dr. Catherine Lomia - Georgia



Recording... Remaining: 09:24:54
Talking: H4 Sinan Gul

AFRICAN-AMERICAN DRAMA

Langston Hughes



Amiri Baraka (former Leboi Jones)



August Wilson



Recording... TASKBAR DISPLAY SETTINGS END SLIDE SHOW Remaining: 09:17:10
Talking: H4 Sinan Gul

0:06:25 12:28 PM
Please move this window away

3. Social Integration

Fences (1987) by August Wilson

I hope that my art serves the masses of blacks in America who are in desperate need of a solid and sure identity. I hope my plays make people understand that these are African people, that this is why they do what they do. If blacks recognize the value in that, then we will be on our way to claiming our identity and participating in society as Africans.

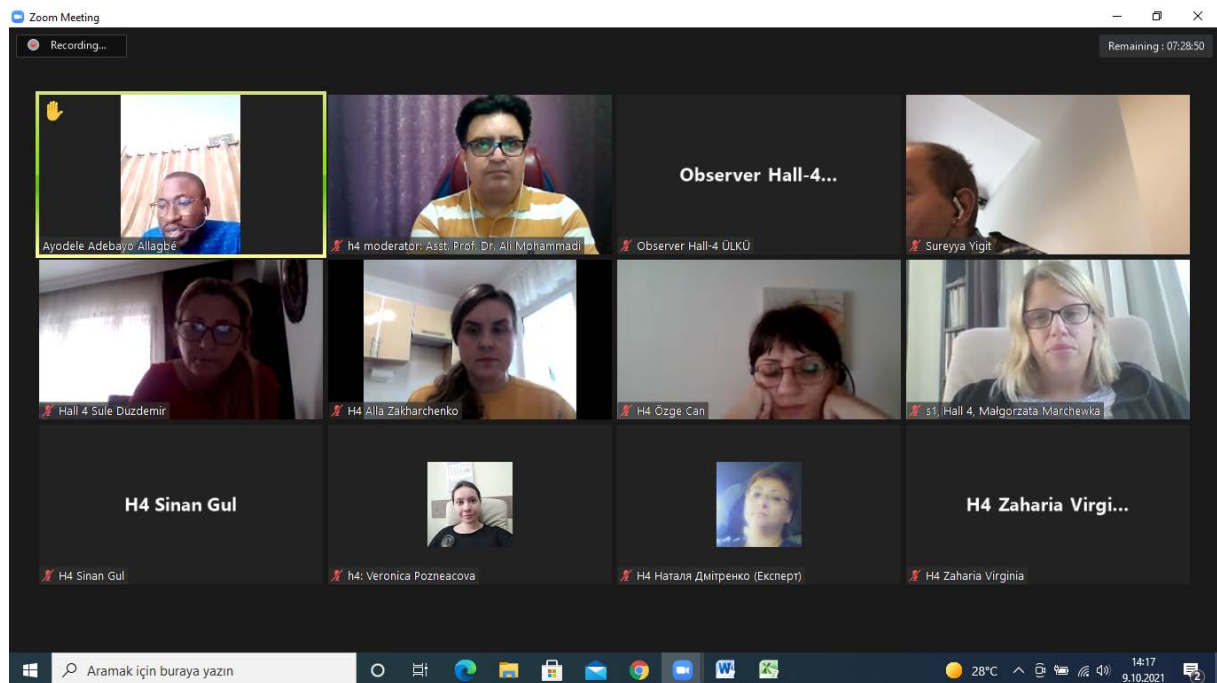
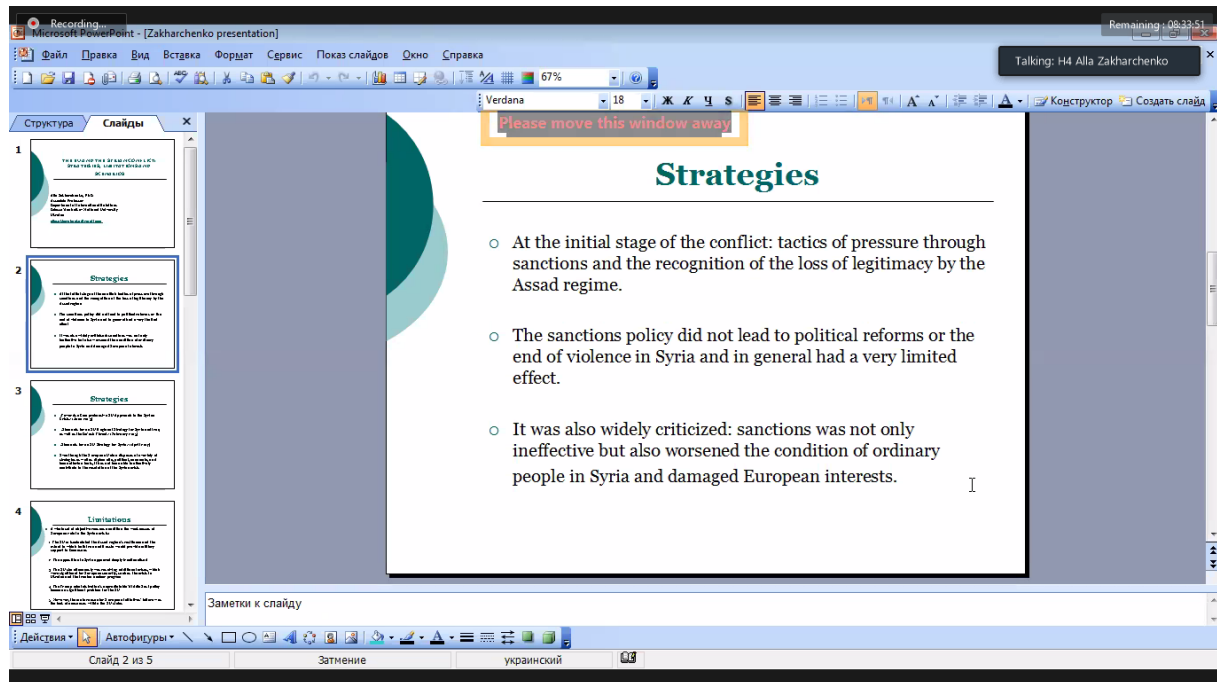


Conclusion

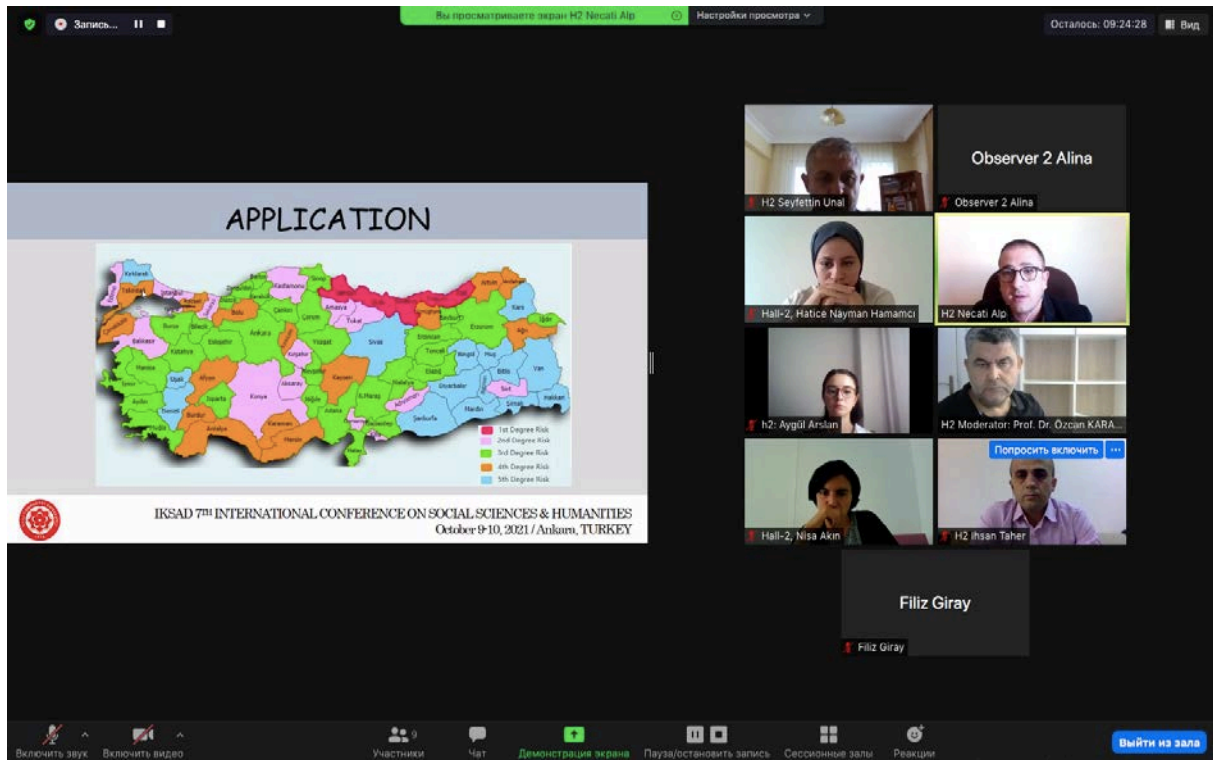
African American drama became a powerful device for African-Americans to find their own voice, songs, and identity. First, it broke the walls of racism on a fictional level and then came the social progress. It enabled blacks to have a utopian vision of the future. It mirrored the African-American society, and showed the way to question the status quo.

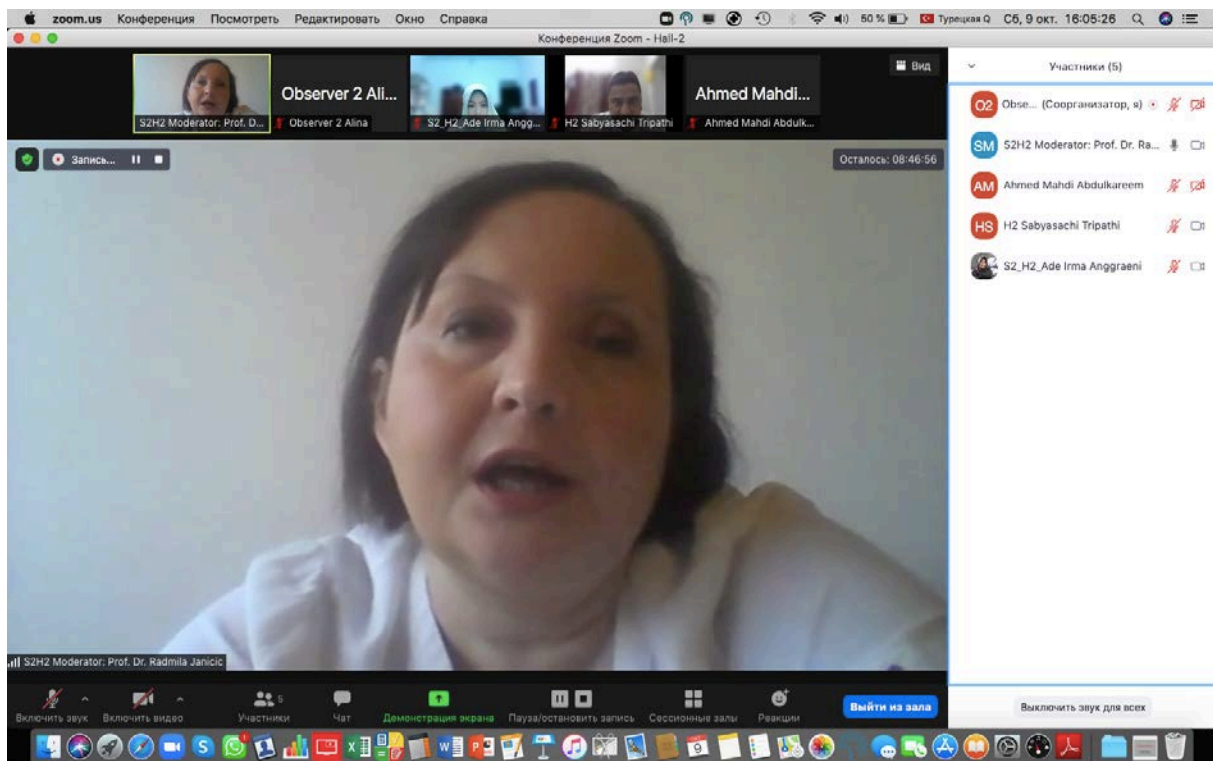
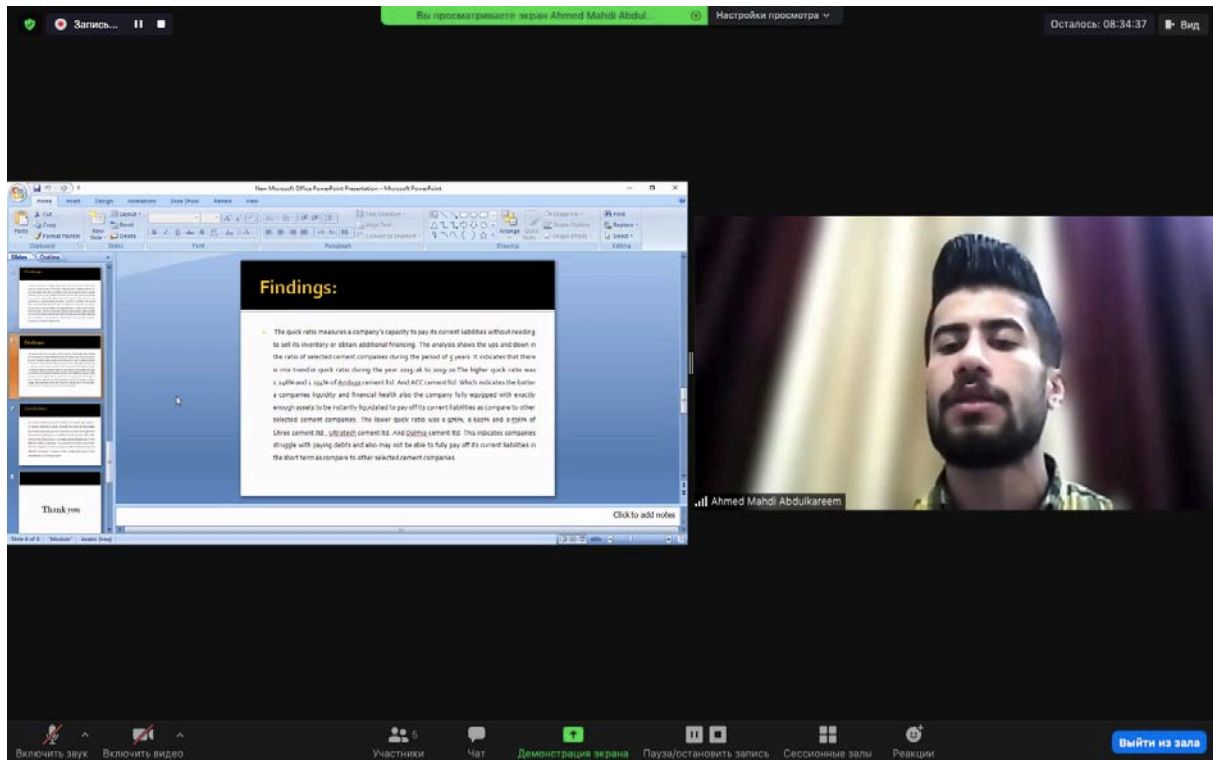
collected his share of dreams deferred and hopes deflected. Wilson animates the play with a host of characters whose intersecting lives contribute to its rich plot. Every scene of the play, Wilson has pointed out, features Troy, and audiences watch as Rose, Troy's powerfully steady and loving wife of eighteen years, and Cory, their son, debate

Slide 6 of 8



IKSAD 7TH INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE ON SOCIAL SCIENCES & HUMANITIES
October 9-10, 2021 / Ankara, TURKEY
PHOTO GALLERY







IKSAD

7TH INTERNATIONAL CONFERENCE ON SOCIAL SCIENCES & HUMANITIES

October 9-10, 2021
Ankara, TURKEY

Conference venue: Ankara

CONFERENCE PROGRAM

Online (with Video Conference) Presentation

Participating Countries:

Turkey, Cyprus, North Macedonia, Ukraine, Georgia, Azerbaijan, Moldova, Pakistan, Hungary,
Argentina, Belgrade, India, Nigeria, Indonesia, Serbia, Romania, Albania, Benim, Iran, Sri
Lanka, Niger, Vietnam, Saudi Arabia, Croatia

Meeting ID: 840 5575 6023
Passcode: 211099



zoom

ÖNEMLİ, DİKKATLE OKUYUNUZ LÜTFEN / IMPORTANT, PLEASE READ CAREFULLY**Önemli, Dikkatle Okuyunuz Lütfen**

- ✓ Kongremizde Yazım Kurallarına uygun gönderilmiş ve bilim kurulundan geçen bildiriler için online (video konferans sistemi üzerinden) sunum imkanı sağlanmıştır.
- ✓ Online sunum yapabilmek için <https://zoom.us/join> sitesi üzerinden giriş yaparak "Meeting ID or Personal Link Name" yerine ID numarasını girerek oturuma katılabilirsiniz.
- ✓ Zoom uygulaması ücretsizdir ve hesap oluşturmaya gerek yoktur.
- ✓ Zoom uygulaması kaydolmadan kullanılabilir.
- ✓ Uygulama tablet, telefon ve PC'lerde çalışıyor.
- ✓ Her oturumdaki sunucular, sunum saatinden 15 dk öncesinde oturuma bağlanmış olmaları gerekmektedir.
- ✓ Tüm kongre katılımcıları canlı bağlanarak tüm oturumları dinleyebilir.
- ✓ Moderatör – oturumdaki sunum ve bilimsel tartışma (soru-cevap) kısmından sorumludur.

Dikkat Edilmesi Gerekenler- TEKNİK BİLGİLER

- ✓ Bilgisayarınızda mikrofon olduğuna ve çalıştığına emin olun.
- ✓ Zoom'da ekran paylaşma özelliğine kullanabilmelisiniz.
- ✓ Kabul edilen bildiri sahiplerinin mail adreslerine Zoom uygulamasında oluşturduğumuz oturuma ait ID numarası gönderilecektir.
- ✓ Katılım belgeleri kongre sonunda tarafınıza pdf olarak gönderilecektir
- ✓ Kongre programında yer ve saat değişikliği gibi talepler dikkate alınmayacaktır

IMPORTANT, PLEASE READ CAREFULLY

- ✓ To be able to attend a meeting online, login via <https://zoom.us/join> site, enter ID "Meeting ID or Personal Link Name" and solidify the session.
- ✓ The Zoom application is free and no need to create an account.
- ✓ The Zoom application can be used without registration.
- ✓ The application works on tablets, phones and PCs.
- ✓ The participant must be connected to the session 15 minutes before the presentation time.
- ✓ All congress participants can connect live and listen to all sessions.
- ✓ Moderator is responsible for the presentation and scientific discussion (question-answer) section of the session.

Points to Take into Consideration - TECHNICAL INFORMATION

- ✓ Make sure your computer has a microphone and is working.
- ✓ You should be able to use screen sharing feature in Zoom.
- ✓ Attendance certificates will be sent to you as pdf at the end of the congress.
- ✓ Requests such as change of place and time will not be taken into consideration in the congress program.

Before you login to Zoom please indicate your name_surname and HALL number,
exp. Hall-1, Awais Khan



Meeting ID: **840 5575 6023**

Passcode: **211099**



OPENING SPEECH

9.10.2021

Ankara Local Time: 11:30 – 12:00

Mustafa Latif Emek

President & Founder of the

Institute of Economic Development And Social Research (IKSAD)

-Welcoming Speech-



Session-1, Hall-1

9.10.2021

Moderator: Assoc. Prof. Johnson Oluwole AYODELE & Assoc. Prof. Jane Roli ADEBUSUYI

Meeting ID: 840 5575 6023 / Passcode: 211099

Ankara Local Time: 12:00 – 14:00

1	STRUCTURE OF ART SOCIOLOGY	Mehmet Akif ÖZDAL	Sivas Cumhuriyet University, Sivas, Turkey
2	ECONOMIC AND SOCIAL EFFECTS OF SMUGGLING WITH MULES FOR REGIONAL PEOPLE OF NEIGHBORING PROVINCES OF IRAN, IRAQ AND SYRIA	Ehlinaz TORUN KAYABASI	Assoc. Prof. Dr. University of Kocaeli, Kocaeli, Turkey
		Orhan YILMAZ	Prof. Dr. Ardahan University, Ardahan, Turkey
3	A COMPARISON OF DEMOCRACY INDEXES	Ömer Taylan	Dr., Dicle University, Diyarbakır, Turkey,
		Ali Çiçek	Dr., Sivas Cumhuriyet University, Sivas, Turkey
4	DEMOGRAPHIC CONDITIONS AND MIGRATION IN ARMENIA	Sargiyya İmamali	Research Fellow, Azerbaijan National Academy of Sciences, Caucasus Studies Institute, Baku, Azerbaijan
5	IMPORTANCE OF INNOVATION IN SERVICE MANAGEMENT	Rima Mammadova	Ph.D. Candidate, University of Pecs, Hungary
6	TERRORISM: IMPLICATIONS OF RESOCIALIZATION FOR SECURITY AND DEVELOPMENT IN AFRICA	Assoc. Prof. Johnson Oluwole AYODELE	Lead City University, Ibadan, Oyo State, Nigeria
		Assoc. Prof. Jane Roli ADEBUSUYI	Lead City University, Ibadan, Oyo State, Nigeria
7	ORGANIZATION OF PREVENTIVE HEALTHCARE FOR WOMEN VICTIMS OF DOMESTIC VIOLENCE DURING THE COVID-19 PANDEMIC IN ORDER TO PREVENT FEMICIDE AS A GENDER-BASED MURDER	PhD Vida VILIĆ	Research Associate, Clinic of Dentistry Niš, Serbia
8	PREVENTING SOCIAL INTERNET CRIMES USING RELIABLE DISTRIBUTED APP STORE BASED ON BLOCKCHAIN TECHNOLOGY	Kiarash Shamsi	University of Science and Culture, Tehran, Iran.
		Hosein Gharaee	ICT research Institute (ITRC), Tehran, Iran.
All participants must join the conference 15 minutes before the session time. Every presentation should last not longer than 10-12 minutes. Kindly keep your cameras on till the end of the session.			



Session-1, Hall-2

9.10.2021

Moderator: Prof. Dr. Özcan KARAHAN

Meeting ID: 840 5575 6023 / Passcode: 211099

Ankara Local Time: 12:00 – 14:00

	Title	Author(s)	Affiliation
1	INSTANT MESSAGING GROUPS: IS IT CONVENIENCE OR TORTURE?	Mehmet Emin Bakay	Katip Çelebi University, İzmir, Turkey
		Sevtap Ünal	Katip Çelebi University, İzmir, Turkey
		Aygül Arslan	Katip Çelebi University, İzmir, Turkey
2	CREATION OF COVID-19 RISK MAPS USING SOCIO-ECONOMIC DATA AND FUZZY C-MEANS METHOD OF REGIONS IN TURKEY	Necati Alp Erilli	Sivas Cumhuriyet University, Sivas, Turkey
3	ETHICAL ASPECTS OF FINANCE	Seyfettin ÜNAL	Dumlupınar University, Kütahya, Turkey
4	WHAT ECONOMIC OPPORTUNITIES CAN BE BROUGHT TO ISRAEL AND UNITED ARAB EMIRATES BY THE ABRAHAM PEACE TREATY?	Ihsan H. TAHER	Tokat Gaziosmanpaşa University, Tokat, Turkey.
		Rüştü YAYAR	
5	HOW DID YOUNG CONSUMERS FEEL ABOUT BEING A CONSUMER DURING THE COVID-19 QUARANTINES?: AN ASSESSMENT WITH THE COLLAGE TECHNIQUE	Sevtap Ünal	İzmir Kâtip Çelebi University, İzmir, Turkey.
		Nisa Akın	İzmir Kâtip Çelebi University, İzmir, Turkey.
6	THE ROLE OF PHANTASY IN THE EFFECT OF EMOTIONS ON RISKY INVESTMENT INTENTION	Selim Aren	Yildiz Technical University, Istanbul, Turkey
		Hatice Nayman Hamamcı	Yildiz Technical University, Istanbul, Turkey
7	COMPARATIVE ANALYSIS OF TURKISH TAX WEDGE WITH OECD COUNTRIES	Prof. Dr. Filiz Giray	Bursa Uludağ University, Bursa, Turkey
8	INNOVATION AND ECONOMIC GROWTH IN EASTERN EUROPEAN COUNTRIES	Prof. Dr. Özcan KARAHAN	Bandırma Onyedi Eylül University, Balıkesir Turkey
All participants must join the conference 15 minutes before the session time. Every presentation should last not longer than 10-12 minutes. Kindly keep your cameras on till the end of the session.			



Session-1, Hall-3

9.10.2021

Moderator: Prof. Dr. Ulvi KESER

Meeting ID: 840 5575 6023 / Passcode: 211099

Ankara Local Time: 12:00 – 14:00

	Title	Author(s)	Affiliation
1	ARMENIANS IN CYPRUS UP TO 1963 AND TURKISH CYPRIOTS	Prof. Dr. Ulvi KESER	Girne American University, TRNC
2	THE HISTORY OF HUMAN RIGHTS ISSUES ON TURKEY'S EU ACCESSION	Dr. Çağlar EZİKOĞLU	Çankırı Karatekin University, Çankırı, Turkey
3	BIGGEST OBSTACLE TO IMPROVE RELATIONS BETWEEN TURKEY-ARMENIA: ARMENIANS OF DIASPORA	Yunus EKİCİ (PhD), Assist. Prof.	Osmaniye Korkut Ata University, Osmaniye, Turkey
4	KARABAKH REALITIES AND HISTORICAL REVIEW	Nigar Mustafayeva	Senior specialist, The Institute of Caucasus Studies, Azerbaijan
5	ILLEGAL ACTIVITIES IN KARABAKH BEFORE THE II.KARABAKH WAR	Aynur Azimzada	Azerbaijan National Academy of Sciences, Caucasus Studies Institute, Baku, Azerbaijan
6	CUSTOMARY LAW: CONTENT AND FUNDAMENTALS	Nurushova Gunel Giyas	Baku State University, Baku, Azerbaijan
7	HISTORICAL AND SOCIOLOGICAL PERSPECTIVE OF INTERFAITH HARMONY AMONG ALBANIANS	Dr. Genti KRUJA	University College Bedër, Humanities and Law Faculty, Tirana, Albania
8	MIGRATION AND CLIMATE REFUEES: CRUCIAL ASPECTS OF PHENOMENON, DEFINING AND REORGANIZING IN A GLOBAL SOCIAL FRAMEWORK	Assoc. Prof. Dr.sc. Katerina Veljanovska Blazhevskia	MIT University – Skopje, Faculty of Security Sciences, Skopje, the Republic of North Macedonia
All participants must join the conference 15 minutes before the session time. Every presentation should last not longer than 10-12 minutes. Kindly keep your cameras on till the end of the session.			



Session-1, Hall-4

9.10.2021

Moderator: Assist. Prof. Dr. Ali Mohammadi

Meeting ID: 840 5575 6023 / Passcode: 211099

Ankara Local Time: 12:00 – 14:00

	Title	Author(s)	Affiliation
1	SPINOZA AND KANT: FOR AND AGAINST WOMEN	Assist. Prof. Dr. Ali Mohammadi	Istanbul Yeni Yüzyıl University, Istanbul, Turkey
2	THREE MODES OF AFRICAN-AMERICAN DRAMATIC HERITAGE	Sinan Gul	National Defense University, Ankara, Turkey.
3	A NEW PERSPECTIVE ON THE RELATIONSHIP OF POETRY AND SOCIETY: COGNITIVE APPROACH	Özge Can	Dokuz Eylul University, Izmir, Turkey
		Şule Düzdemir	Dokuz Eylul University, Izmir, Turkey
4	REPRESENTATION OF THE WEISTIC IDEOLOGY IN SELECTED CLASSICAL AFRICAN NOVELS	Akinola Monday Allagbé	Université d’Abomey-Calavi (UAC), République du Benin
		Ayodele Adebayo Allagbé	Université de Zinder (UZ), République du Niger, Unité de Recherche en Sciences Sociales, Humaines, et de l’Education (UR_2SHE)
5	SYSTEM PRINCIPLES OF AUTONOMOUS LEARNING OF PROFESSIONALLY ORIENTED ENGLISH COMMUNICATION OF PRE-SERVICE EDUCATORS	Assoc. Prof. Dr. Natalia DMITRENKO	Vinnytsia Mykhailo Kotsiubynskyi State Pedagogical University, Vinnytsia, Ukraine
6	THE EU AND THE SYRIAN CONFLICT: STRATEGIES, LIMITATIONS AND SCENARIOS	Dr. Alla ZAKHARCHENKO	Odessa Mechnikov National University, Odessa, Ukraine
7	2021: THE GEOPOLITICAL ROLE OF THE EUROPEAN UNION IN THE POST-COLD WAR ORDER	Süreyya Yiğit PhD	New Vision University, Tbilisi, Georgia
8	THE REGULATION OF VACCINATION IN THE NATIONAL LEGISLATION OF THE REPUBLIC OF MOLDOVA	Dr. Virginia ZAHARIA	Moldova State University, Republic of Moldova
		Veronica POZNEACOVA	Moldova State University, Republic of Moldova
All participants must join the conference 15 minutes before the session time. Every presentation should last not longer than 10-12 minutes. Kindly keep your cameras on till the end of the session.			



Session-2, Hall-1

9.10.2021

Moderator: Assoc. Prof. Dr. Maria Butucea

Meeting ID: 840 5575 6023 / Passcode: 211099

Ankara Local Time: 15:00 – 17:00

	Title	Author(s)	Affiliation
1	STUDENT ACHIEVEMENTS IN YUNUS EMRE'S LITERARY WORK RISALETU'N-NUSHIYYE	Prof. Dr. Cem Tuna	Recep Tayyip Erdogan University, Rize, Turkey
		Büşra Turan	Recep Tayyip Erdogan University, Rize, Turkey
2	MEANINGS OF EDUCATION AND ACADEMIC ACHIEVEMENT: EXAMINING THE MEDIATING ROLE OF ACADEMIC SELF-EFFICACY	Sarwat Sultan, Sehrish Ameen, & Frasad Kanwal	Bahauddin Zakariya University, Multan, Pakistan
3	MENTAL PROGRAMMS AND CROSS-CULTURAL EDUCATION	Assoc. Prof. Dr. Maria Butucea	Teacher Training Department, Technical University of Civil Engineering, Tacul Tei B-dv, No.122-124, Bucharest, Romania
4	EXAMINING THE IMPACTS OF EXTRA-SCHOOL ACTIVITIES ON BENINESE LEARNERS' ACADEMIC ACHIEVEMENTS	Amadou SALAMI	Université d'Abomey-Calavi (UAC), Bénin
5	EFFECTIVE MATHEMATICS TEACHING METHODOLOGY	Dr. Raja Mohammad Latif	Prince Mohammad Bin Fahd University Al Khobar Kingdom of Saudi Arabia
6	INFLUENCE OF SOME ANTHROPOMETRIC INDICES ON GENERIC AND SPECIFIC BALANCE PERFORMANCE	Antonela Karmen Ivišić, Nikola Foretić PhD, Šime Veršić PhD	University of Split, Split, Croatia
7	NIKOL PASHINYAN'S FAILURE FOREIGN POLICY IN ARMENIA	Gunel Gurbanova	Chief specialist, Azerbaijan National Academy of Sciences, Caucasus Studies Institute, Baku, Azerbaijan
8	HARMONIZATION OF THE FOREIGN TRADE POLICY: EU & SERBIA	Assist. Prof. Dr. Mihailo Ćurčić, Research Associate	University of Defense, Military Academy, Social Sciences Department, Belgrade, Serbia
All participants must join the conference 15 minutes before the session time. Every presentation should last not longer than 10-12 minutes. Kindly keep your cameras on till the end of the session.			



Session-2, Hall-2

9.10.2021

Moderator: Prof. Dr. Radmila Janicic

Meeting ID: 840 5575 6023 / Passcode: 211099

Ankara Local Time: 15:00 – 17:00

15:00

	Title	Author(s)	Affiliation
1	THE IMPACT OF SUPERVISORY AND COWORKER SUPPORT TOWARDS CREATIVE WORK INVOLVEMENT	Dr. Muhammad Zia Ur Rehman	Assoc. Prof., National Defence University
		Dr. Zekeriya Nas	Assoc. Prof., Yuzuncu Yil University
		Mr. Arslan Ali & Mr. Adil	Research Scholars, Federal Urdu University of Arts Science and Technology, Pakistan
2	ECONOMIC AND STRATEGIC INTEREST OF CHINA AND INDIA IN CENTRAL ASIA	Rehana Kanwal	P.h.d Scholar, Department of Islamic Studies, National College of Business Administration and Economics, Lahore, Pakistan.
3	EXPERIENCE MARKETING IN ARTS	Professor Radmila Janicic, Ph.D	Faculty of Organizational Sciences, University of Belgrade
4	INTERNATIONAL SANCTIONS AND DEVELOPMENT: EVIDENCE FROM LATIN AMERICA AND THE CARIBBEAN (1950-2019)	Fernando Antonio Ignacio González	IIESS (UNS-CONICET) y FCE (UNaM) Ruta Nacional 12 KM 12.5 Posadas-Misiones (Argentina)
5	AN ANALYTICAL STUDY OF WORKING CAPITAL MANAGEMENT OF SELECTED CEMENT COMPANIES IN INDIA	Ahmed Mahdi Abdulkareem	Ph.D. Research Scholar, Department of Commerce and Business Administration, Saurashtra University, Rajkot, India
6	ATTITUDES TOWARD CHANGE: EVIDENCE FROM LOCAL GOVERNMENT	Dr. Ade Irma Anggraeni	Department of Management, Faculty of Economics and Business, Universitas Jenderal Soedirman, Purwokerto, Indonesia
7	RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN URBANIZATION AND HEALTH OUTCOMES IN INDIAN STATES	Dr. Sabyasachi Tripathi	Assist. Prof., Department of Economics, Adamas University, India
All participants must join the conference 15 minutes before the session time. Every presentation should last not longer than 10-12 minutes. Kindly keep your cameras on till the end of the session.			



Session-2, Hall-3

9.10.2021

Moderator: Assoc. Prof. Dr. Gökçe Çiçek CEYHUN

Meeting ID: 840 5575 6023 / Passcode: 211099

Ankara Local Time: 15:00 – 17:00

15:00

	Title	Author(s)	Affiliation
1	GREEN HRM PRACTICES AND STRATEGIC HRM: A REVIEW	Dr. MAC. Sulaiha Beevi Athambawa	South Eastern University of Sri Lanka.
2	COMPARING MANAGEMENT CONTROL SYSTEMS AND PERFORMANCE BY CHARACTERISTICS OF ENTERPRISES	Assoc. Prof. Dr. Oanh Thi Tu LE	University of Labor and Social Affairs, Hanoi, Vietnam
		Duc Minh NGUYEN	Hanoi University of Science and Technology, Vietnam
3	MACROECONOMIC IMPACTS OF SAFE ASSETS: INTERNATIONAL EVIDENCE AND POLICY DISCUSSION	Dr. Ly Dai Hung	VNU International School, Vietnam National University, Hanoi Vietnam Institute of Economics, Hanoi
4	REVIEWING THE EFFECTS OF EASTERN MEDITERRANEAN'S MARITIME DELIMITATION PROBLEMS ON THE SAFETY OF MARINE TRANSPORTATION CORRIDORS	Assoc. Prof. Dr. Gökçe Çiçek CEYHUN	Bursa Technical University, Bursa, Turkey
5	LOCATION AND IMPORTANCE OF THE AGRICULTURE SECTOR IN KÜTAHYA ECONOMY	Gülten SEN	Lec. Dr., Kütahya Dumlupınar University, Kütahya, Turkey
6	THE RELATIONSHIP OF EXPORT AND ECONOMIC GROWTH: THE CASE OF ECOWAS	Prof. Dr. Yusuf Bayraktutan	Kocaeli University , Kocaeli, Turkey
		Musa Sawaneh	Kocaeli University , Kocaeli, Turkey
7	REGULATORY CAPITAL ADEQUACY RATIO IS AN ELIXIR FOR EFFICIENCY IN ISLAMIC BANKS	Amina Malik	General Manager Finance Cable and Co, Pakistan
All participants must join the conference 15 minutes before the session time. Every presentation should last not longer than 10-12 minutes. Kindly keep your cameras on till the end of the session.			

CONTENTS

CONFERENCE ID	i
PHOTO GALLERY	ii-iv
SCIENTIFIC COMMITTEE	v
PROGRAM	vi-xviii
CONTENT	xix-xxiii

PROCEEDINGS BOOK

Ulvi KESER	1
ARMENIANS IN CYPRUS UP TO 1963 AND TURKISH CYPRIOTS	
Çağlar EZİKOĞLU	23
THE HISTORY OF HUMAN RIGHTS ISSUES ON TURKEY'S EU ACCESSION	
Mehmet Emin Bakay, Sevtap Ünal, Aygül Arslan	30
INSTANT MESSAGING GROUPS: IS IT CONVENIENCE OR TORTURE?	
Yunus EKİCİ	46
BIGGEST OBSTACLE TO IMPROVE RELATIONS BETWEEN TURKEY-ARMENIA: ARMENIANS OF DIASPORA	
Alla ZAKHARCHENKO	51
THE EU AND THE SYRIAN CONFLICT: STRATEGIES, LIMITATIONS AND SCENARIOS	
Necati Alp Erilli	52
CREATION OF COVID-19 RISK MAPS USING SOCIO-ECONOMIC DATA AND FUZZY C-MEANS METHOD OF REGIONS IN TURKEY	
Seyfettin ÜNAL	60
ETHICAL ASPECTS OF FINANCE	
Süreyya Yiğit	71
2021: THE GEOPOLITICAL ROLE OF THE EUROPEAN UNION IN THE POST-COLD WAR ORDER	
Ihsan H. TAHER & Rüştü YAYAR	99
WHAT ECONOMIC OPPORTUNITIES CAN BE BROUGHT TO ISRAEL AND UNITED ARAB EMIRATES BY THE ABRAHAM PEACE TREATY?	
Ali Mohammadi	110
SPINOZA AND KANT: FOR AND AGAINST WOMEN	
Nigar Mustafayeva	122
KARABAKH REALITIES AND HISTORICAL REVIEW	
Sevtap Ünal & Nisa Akın	128
HOW DID YOUNG CONSUMERS FEEL ABOUT BEING A CONSUMER DURING THE COVID-19 QUARANTINES?: AN ASSESSMENT WITH THE COLLAGE TECHNIQUE	
Selim Aren & Hatice Nayman Hamamcı	139
THE ROLE OF PHANTASY IN THE EFFECT OF EMOTIONS ON RISKY INVESTMENT INTENTION	
Virginia ZAHARIA & Veronica POZNEACOVA	150
THE REGULATION OF VACCINATION IN THE NATIONAL LEGISLATION OF THE REPUBLIC OF MOLDOVA	

Muhammad Zia Ur Rehman, Zekeriya Nas, Arslan Ali & Mr. Adil	
<i>THE IMPACT SUPERVISORY SUPPORT AND COWORKER SUPPORT THROUGH CREATIVE WORK INVOLVEMENT</i>	151
Aynur Azimzada	
<i>ILLEGAL ACTIVITIES IN KARABAKH BEFORE THE II.KARABAKH WAR</i>	157
Gunel Gurbanova	
<i>NIKOL PASHINYAN'S FAILURE FOREIGN POLICY IN ARMENIA</i>	162
Ehlinaz TORUN KAYABASI & Orhan YILMAZ	
<i>ECONOMIC AND SOCIAL EFFECTS OF SMUGGLING WITH MULES FOR REGIONAL PEOPLE OF NEIGHBORING PROVINCES OF IRAN, IRAQ AND SYRIA</i>	165
Nurushova Gunel Giyas	
<i>CUSTOMARY LAW: CONTENT AND FUNDAMENTALS</i>	172
Rehana Kanwal	
<i>ECONOMIC AND STRATEGIC INTEREST OF CHINA AND INDIA IN CENTRAL ASIA</i>	176
Cem Tuna & Büşra Turan	
<i>STUDENT ACHIEVEMENTS IN YUNUS EMRE'S LITERARY WORK RISALETU'N-NUSHIYYE</i>	177
Gökçe Çiçek CEYHUN	
<i>REVIEWING THE EFFECTS OF EASTERN MEDITERRANEAN'S MARITIME DELIMITATION PROBLEMS ON THE SAFETY OF MARINE TRANSPORTATION CORRIDORS</i>	188
Sargiyya İmamali	
<i>DEMOGRAPHIC CONDITIONS AND MIGRATION IN ARMENIA</i>	197
Filiz Giray	
<i>COMPARATIVE ANALYSIS OF TURKISH TAX WEDGE WITH OECD COUNTRIES</i>	202
Özcan KARAHAN	
<i>INNOVATION AND ECONOMIC GROWTH IN EASTERN EUROPEAN COUNTRIES</i>	216
Ömer Taylan & Ali Çiçek	
<i>A COMPARISON OF DEMOCRACY INDEXES</i>	224
Rima Mammadova	
<i>IMPORTANCE OF INNOVATION IN SERVICE MANAGEMENT</i>	230
Gülten SEN	
<i>LOCATION AND IMPORTANCE OF THE AGRICULTURE SECTOR IN KÜTAHYA ECONOMY</i>	235
Yusuf Bayraktutan & Musa Sawaneh	
<i>THE RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN EXPORT AND ECONOMIC GROWTH: THE CASE OF ECOWAS</i>	243
Radmila Janicic	
<i>EXPERIENCE MARKETING IN ARTS</i>	251
Ahmed Mahdi Abdulkareem & Alok Kumar Chakrawal	
<i>AN ANALYTICAL STUDY OF WORKING CAPITAL MANAGEMENT OF SELECTED CEMENT COMPANIES IN INDIA</i>	263
Özge Can & Şule Düzdemir	
<i>A NEW PERSPECTIVE ON THE RELATIONSHIP OF POETRY AND SOCIETY: COGNITIVE APPROACH</i>	273

Ade Irma Anggraeni	
ATTITUDES TOWARD CHANGE: EVIDENCE FROM LOCAL GOVERNMENT	279
Mihailo Ćurčić	
HARMONIZATION OF THE FOREIGN TRADE POLICY: EU & SERBIA	289
Vida VILIĆ	
ORGANIZATION OF PREVENTIVE HEALTHCARE FOR WOMEN VICTIMS OF DOMESTIC VIOLENCE DURING THE COVID-19 PANDEMIC IN ORDER TO PREVENT FEMICIDE AS A GENDER-BASED MURDER	298
Maria Butucea	
MENTAL PROGRAMMS AND CROSS-CULTURAL EDUCATION	299
Sabyasachi Tripathi	
RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN URBANIZATION AND HEALTH OUTCOMES IN INDIAN STATES	308
Genti KRUIJA	
HISTORICAL AND SOCIOLOGICAL PERSPECTIVE OF INTERFAITH HARMONY AMONG ALBANIANS	315
Amadou SALAMI	
EXAMINING THE IMPACTS OF EXTRA-SCHOOL ACTIVITIES ON BENINESE LEARNERS' ACADEMIC ACHIEVEMENTS	326
Kiarash Shamsi & Hosein Gharaee	
PREVENTING SOCIAL INTERNET CRIMES USING RELIABLE DISTRIBUTED APP STORE BASED ON BLOCKCHAIN TECHNOLOGY	327
Akinola Monday Allagbé & Ayodele Adebayo Allagbé	
REPRESENTATION OF THE WEISTIC IDEOLOGY IN SELECTED CLASSICAL AFRICAN NOVELS	328
Natalia DMITRENKO	
SYSTEM PRINCIPLES OF AUTONOMOUS LEARNING OF PROFESSIONALLY ORIENTED ENGLISH COMMUNICATION OF PRE- SERVICE EDUCATORS	336
Oanh Thi Tu LE & Duc Minh NGUYEN	
COMPARING MANAGEMENT CONTROL SYSTEMS AND PERFORMANCE BY CHARACTERISTICS OF ENTERPRISES	337
Raja Mohammad Latif	
EFFECTIVE MATHEMATICS TEACHING METHODOLOGY	350
Ly Dai Hung	
MACROECONOMIC IMPACTS OF SAFE ASSETS: INTERNATIONAL EVIDENCE AND POLICY DISCUSSION	359
Katerina Veljanovska Blazhevskaja	
MIGRATION AND CLIMATE REFUEES: CRUCIAL ASPECTS OF PHENOMENON, DEFINING AND REORGANIZING IN A GLOBAL SOCIAL FRAMEWORK	367
Antonela Karmen Ivišić, Nikola Foretić, Šime Veršić	
INFLUENCE OF SOME ANTHROPOMETRIC INDICES ON GENERIC AND SPECIFIC BALANCE PREFORMANCE	375
Sinan Gul	
THREE MODES OF AFRICAN-AMERICAN DRAMATIC HERITAGE	376

ARMENIANS IN CYPRUS UP TO 1963 AND TURKISH CYPRIOTS

Prof. Dr. Ulvi KESER

Girne American University, TRNC

ABSTRACT

The island of Cyprus is supposed to be that of the immigration, conflicts, turmoil, and chaos throughout the history. Almost all the countries, nations, and the communities living in the vicinity have had a specific focus on the island. Therefore the island itself has turned to be an international and cultural mosaic with all manner of societies, and the people. Armenians are one of those communities dwelling on the island. During the conquest of the Island by the Ottoman, Armenians themselves have helped conquer the island, and the Ottoman Administration has shown their good will restoring the holy temples, and presenting privileges to the Armenians on the island. Then what we face is the 1909 Adana Events and unfortunate 1915 period following a rush of Armenians towards Cyprus. Surprisingly Turkish Cypriots and the Armenians live in harmony and in peace on the island up the Bloody Christmas period in 1963 December. This scientific study will mainly focus on the Armenians, their lives with the Turkish Cypriots, and the events on Cyprus till 1963.

Keywords: Cyprus, Mediterranean, Ottoman, Turkish Cypriots

INTRODUCTION

Cyprus, being a very rich and old island throughout the history (Öğün 1991), is the biggest island of the Eastern Mediterranean with 9,251 km² in area, and the third in the Mediterranean after Sicily and Sardinia (Atan 1986). Cyprus is thought to have originally gotten its name from a common and indigenous flower called Kypros (Hill 1949), named after Kinyros' daughter in mythology, Kipris, or from "cuprum" which means copper in Latin, since the island had rich deposits of copper. Some sources also indicate that the island got its name from salted ox skin (Durrel 1992). The island, being called by many names throughout the ages, such as Yadana, Kittim, Cypr, and Zubar (Özyurt 1994), is a key point between Europe, Asia, and Africa, depending on its geopolitical position (Oberling 1989). Regarding its geographical, physical, cultural, and folkloric aspects, the island is a part of Anatolia (BCA. 030.01.64.394.7.). Even if the Phoenicians, Aegeans, and the Europeans had sometimes dwelled on the island, the ethnic majority of the island is mostly composed of the people who emigrated from the region of Anatolia (Erzen 1971). Armenians are also known to have lived on the island since the 6th century. In addition, between 395-1191, 3,000 Armenian soldiers under the command of Armenian King Morris came to the island. The island named Cyprus has been the cradle of a variety of civilizations throughout the history. Despite the fact that the island got conquered by the Ottomans in 1571, Turks, Armenians, Maronites, Greek Cypriots, and Jews have all lived together for years and in peace. The purpose of this article is to show the relation between Turkish and Armenian people up to, in particular, 1963.

ARMENIANS DURING OTTOMAN PERIOD

It is said that the Armenians, Greek Cypriots, and the Maronites (Alagöz 1971) lived as if they were Venetian slaves after the Venetian occupation of the island in March 1489 due to the social, cultural, and economical injustice. After the 1571 Ottoman conquest, under Orthodox and Greek pressure, (kılın 1987) they were all given freedom. During the conquest of Nicosia on September 9, 1570, the Armenians helped the Turkish

soldiers open the Paphos Gate (Hill 1949). Armenian help and their interest for the Turkish soldiers landing on Cyprus are very remarkable (Stephens 1966). Subsequent to the conquest, according to the census and registration, except for women and children, the number of the people between 14 and 50 appears to be 85,000 Armenians, Greek Cypriots, Maronites, and Gypsies (Kyprianos 1788). Turkish tolerance after the conquest appears to be a balanced and fair administration (Gazioğlu 2000). Armenian lawyer and poet Nubar Maksutyan also explains the good examples of such toleration in Cyprus and emphasizes that Turks never used the holy places as barn, store, or the depots before 1570. Soup Megar monastery is a good example for this situation. Used as the salt depot for years, it was turned over again to the Armenians, some privileges were given with no tax payment. These Ottoman non-Muslim subjects started living in peace, depending on the rights given. The Ottoman period never became oppressive or tyrannical. With balance, toleration and harmony, Armenians and Turkish Cypriots lived in a peaceful and secure atmosphere. The Armenians who paid their taxes regularly and carried out their obligations had the freedom to perform their religious rites in their own churches, to use their own languages and to take their problems to the Ottoman administration.

The people who reacted to Ottoman administration were only the Greek Cypriots (Beratlı 2002). In 1873, Ottoman annalist and historian Abdurrahman Şeref described the general characteristics of the Armenians, not only in Cyprus but also in Anatolia as follows (Kodaman 1991);

“...Since Armenians are friendly, not quarrelsome and modest, they have dealt with commerce, works, and craftsmanship. Paying their taxes on time and obeying the rules completely, they have had no difficulty against the government. Due to their modest characteristics and life-style, they have easily adapted to the Turkish way of life. Just like bone and meat, they have turned out to be the people sharing the same interest as well. So, the government has believed and trusted in them.”

Although the Armenians, Greek Cypriots, and the Maronites (Alagöz 1971) lived in Kormakitis, Aromatos, and Karpazia villages after the Venetian occupation of the island in 14th March 1489, as Hellenic slaves under the pressure of Orthodox and Greek pressure (Kılgin 1987), they are all given an exact freedom after 1571 Ottoman conquest, and the same situation continues up to the British period. During the conquest of Nicosia on 9th September 1570, The Armenians help the Turkish soldiers open the gate named Paphos Gate (Hill 1949)¹ Armenian help and the interest for the Turkish soldiers landing on Cyprus is very remarkable. Surp Asdvadzadzin Armenian Church near Paphos Gate is an ancient site today. It is a very historical site in Nicosia belonging to Signor Hayrabed Melikian family has more than 40 rooms and beautiful arches, but unfortunately left to be demolished today. Strategical situation of the church turns it to be an important military base for the Greek Cypriots especially after 1963 events. Subsequent to the conquest, census and the registration, except for the women and the children, the number of the people between 14-50 appears to be 85.000 Armenians, Greek Cypriots, Maronites, and the Gypsy (Kiprianos 1788). Turkish tolerance after the conquest appears to be a balanced and fair administration (Gazioğlu 2000). Armenian lawyer and poet Nubar Maksutyan also explains the good examples of such toleration in Cyprus and emphasizes that Turks never used the holy places as the barn, store, or the depots as used before 1570. Soup Megar Monastery is a good example for this situation. Used as the salt depot for years, it is turned over again to the Armenians, some privileges are given with no tax payment. Non-Muslim people living in Ottoman Empire are named to be “ehl-i zimmet.”

¹ The report dated 30 January 1964. Turkish Cypriot National Archive (KTMA), File (K) No.61, 1970-

This Ottoman Non-Muslim subject just after the conquest of the island start living in peace depending on the rights given. Ottoman period never turns to be a rough and tyrannical process with no pressure. With a balanced, tolerated administration in harmony, Armenians and the Turkish Cypriots live in a super neighborhood atmosphere. The Armenians paying their taxes regularly, carrying out the obligations have the freedom to perform their own religious performances in their own temples, to use their own languages, to transfer their problems in Armenian language to the Ottoman administration. The people who react this situation are only the Greek Cypriots as follows (Beratlı 2002);

“...Surprisingly, the Armenians in Lefka used to prefer to be mostly with Turks not with the Greek Cypriots. If not necessary, they never talked about the events which occurred in Anatolia, and never used to have hatred toward up. Or do I remember so? When my late father went to London one year before his death, Agop went to see my father, spending hours with him; therefore, what I remember is not wrong.”

Further, Professor Edward Daniel Clarke of Cambridge University, visiting the island in June 1801, expressed his opinions about the Armenians as follows: (Gazıoğlu 2000) “...Being a rich Armenian merchant, Sarkis’ house carries the highest standard of the oriental magnificence. It is just like a palace. The rooms are not only large and spacious, but decorated with a well-thought kindness and grace. The floor is full of embroidered pillow.” Foreign explorers were influenced by the social life of the rich Armenians and the Greek Cypriots. Mariti, for example, says, about the Covered Bazaar/Bedesten, “This is the market of the prominent Turkish, Greek Cypriots, and Armenian merchants.” British Colonial Minister Chamberlain also explains his opinions about the dwelling of the Armenians in Cyprus: “Armenians are not loved by the Greek Cypriots living on the island. Therefore, to get a colony composed of Armenians immigrants here will not be welcomed by the society.” (Gazıoğlu 2000)

The Armenians, having been tortured and dominated by the Greek Cypriots throughout the years, preferred living with the Turks and establishing good relations. The people living and having shops in the same areas bought and sold property to each other. Ali Ağa and Osman Ağa in Nicosia sold a house to Armenian bellows-maker brothers named Bogos and Bedros, and in Debbaghane District, Mehmed bin Mustafa sold his shop, costing 800 kurush, to bellows-maker Aaci Gavriyel (Çevikel 2006). Although this is an example reflecting “the art of living together well,” some problems did occur. For example, in the 1800’s El hac Hasan and El hac Mehmed sent a letter of complaint to Istanbul about two Armenian brothers named Serkiz and Artin in Nicosia, accusing them of seizing their goods without the right to do so, and damaging the goods (Çevikel 2006).

During the Ottoman period, Armenian translators, knowing Turkish, Greek Cypriot, and English, started working not only in the Ottoman palace in Istanbul, but also in Cyprus. These translators, working till the 1821 Greek Revolt, performed official business between the Ottoman government and the Cyprus Governor-General, and had special privileges and the rights. Then, the translators did nothing but translations, and were hindered from interfering with the official authority (Gazıoğlu 2000). H. A. Ütücüyan, working as a Turkish translator for the British administration in 1900s on the island, is a well-known one (An 2000). In the meantime, subsequent to the Gülhane Hatt-ı Hümayunu (Imperial Decree) dated 1839, the Armenians received the opportunity to represent themselves, and the Armenians and the Maronites started sending a representative to the Board (that is to say; Divan) led by Kaymakam who was appointed from Istanbul (An 1999). In 1841, there were 75-76,000 Greek Cypriots, 32-33,000 Turkish Cypriots, 1,200-1,300 Maronites, about 50 European

Roman-Catholics, and about 150-160 Armenians on the island. In the 1881 census, the number of the Armenians was 154 (Gürkan 1996). The number of the Armenian population is as follows; Nicosia 88, Orini 5, Değirmenlik 2, Famagusta 1, Limassol 6, Larnaca 14, Paphos 1, Kyrenia 37, totally 154. The population in 1921 is 1.197, 3.337 in 1931.

Because the island belonged to the Ottoman Empire, the island had a great strategic importance for British interest in the Eastern Mediterranean, the Middle East and India. There was only one negative aspect. After the Yeşilköy Agreement signed on March 3, 1878, England, so as to stop Russian advance, gave an offer of assistance to the Ottoman Empire (Thubron 1986) and wanted to take over Cyprus temporarily. The Ottoman Foreign Minister Safvet Pasha and British Ambassador Ostan Henry Layard make an agreement and sign the two-article agreement on June 4, 1878 (Artuç 1989) at the Yıldız Palace (Emilianides 1963). Then, the island, costing 92,986 pounds annual rent, was taken from “its motherland” and given to England. In other words, England collected the money from Cyprus to pay the rent (Sonyel 1978).

The First World War

The British government, being aware of the economic and strategic importance of Antakya and Syria districts, Çukurova and Taurus tunnels, announces war against Ottoman Empire Villalta 1982) on 5th November 1914 (Emilianides 1963) declaring the agreement of 1878 invalid unilaterally, and annexes Cyprus through Order of Council (Toluner 1977 ve Güvenç 1984) since World War I has broken out, and Ottoman Empire has taken part in favor of Germany, participating in the war on 29th October 1914. Annexation of Cyprus by Great Britain is accepted very gladly and joyfully (Stephens 1966) and this situation is supposed to be a step towards the unity with Greece unofficially (Karagil 1964). Greece, owing so many new territories in Aegean and the Balkans starting from Crete by means of Great Britain (Güvenç 1984), starts having the same hopes for Cyprus (Erim 1975). Prime Minister Lloyd George on 8th January 1915 and Foreign Affairs Minister Sir Edward Grey on 23rd January 1915 (Atan 1987) on behalf of British government on 8th January 1915 presents a new offer and expresses to Sir Francis Elliot, the ambassador of the United Kingdom in Athens that they are ready to supply more territories for Greece (Bayur 1983) in Anatolian coasts in case of help to Serbia (Hatipoğlu 1988). British ambassador in Athens having negotiated with Venizelos informs the counter message to London one day later immediately (Gürel 1984).

Above-mentioned territories are İzmir and the vicinity (Atan 1987). Greek government demands some territorial compensations and guarantees (Hatipoğlu 1988) from the British government on 14th April 1915. Considering the importance of the situation, British government sends another message of offer to Greek government via Foreign Affairs Minister Sir Edward Grey to Ambassador Sir Francis Elliot in Athens. According to this offer, British government gives Cyprus away (Foley 1964) officially to Greece on 17th October 1915 (Toluner 1977) so that Greece will fight with the allied forces against Bulgarian forces in Macedonian fronts. On the hand, the government of Alexander Zaimis refuses the offer declaring “Greece perishes if it participates in the war.” (Stephens 1966) On 16th October, giving no information to the allies of France and Russia (Hill 1948), the decision granted not by all the members of British government but by Foreign Affairs Minister Sir Edward Grey will cause some problems to him in future. Territorial compensations and offers made by the British government to force Greece to participate in the war mainly causes reactions in Italy and Russia. That the compensations supplied to Greece turn to be wider and wider territorial compensations, that Russia sees Greece as a rival because of Istanbul and the straights, and that Italy supposes so because of Western and Southern Anatolia. As soon as Greek government declares war against the Axis countries in 1917, the idea of annexation of Cyprus

by Greece never realizes (Oberling 1982). Even if so many British politicians talk about the situation of Cyprus and annexation to Greece, Greece is just disappointed because Cyprus is a royal colony on 1st May 1925.

FRENCH INTEREST IN CYPRUS

Considering Cyprus, France is the sole country, in addition to Italy and Russia, having a great interest, being very sensitive, and preparing for a tremendous commercial competition in the Middle East area against Great Britain as soon as the war comes to an end, and causing the intelligence service challenges to get the domination of the Middle East area (Sonyel 1995). France preparing to a big petroleum war against Great Britain is not in favor of challenging with other rivals in this market. During such dense war days, another event occurring is the Great Britain-France agreement. One of the articles of the agreement signed in May 1916 clandestinely in relation to particularly post-war commercial activities in the Middle East 1916 is about Cyprus. According to this article, Great Britain takes for granted not to turn over Cyprus to another country without applying to France. During such terrific war days of the World War I, the undeniable importance of Cyprus island in the very midst of the area that is to witness serious and remarkable fighting and challenges is certain for Great Britain trying to defend and protect its sovereignty and existence in the above-mentioned area. The island is of very importance for Great Britain to keep an eye upon its allies like Italy and France that will have the power and authority in the area, depending on the agreement to divide and share Ottoman Empire. As in Sykes-Picot Agreement, Great Britain having no confidence in France intends to use Cyprus just as a trump. According to this agreement being the most detailed, and the most important one of the agreements to share the Ottoman territories, signed on 26th April 1916 just one year after London Agreement dated 26th April 1915 by member of House of Commons Colonel Mark Sykes (Köni 1989) and former Beirut Consulate of France and High Commissioner François Georges Picot in Leningrad (Ener 1996) depending on mostly letter-exchanges (Turan 1991), Great Britain and France with their own partner and allies Russia being allies with Italy in London Agreement so as to participate in war together, giving some rights in the Mediterranean Sea region, and thinking to give away Rhodes, the Twelve Islands, Binghazi and Derne to Italy while sharing the Ottoman territories, and also thinking to give some rights in Antalya district while sharing Anatolia have put Italy aside by means of Syces-Picot Agreement and made a new arrangement containing not only the Arabic Peninsula, but also the Mediterranean and Southeastern Districts (Olçay 1981 ve Onar 1995).

According to this agreement on which some changes were made after the war, which was declared to the public after Petrograd archives were controlled by Bolsheviks, France has cheated and enlisted thousands of Armenian volunteers in Legion D'Orient claiming to establish an autonomous Armenia in Cilicia, made use of them to the limit and left aside in the end of the war. Thus, Great Britain, and France thoroughly share the territory within the German field of effect (Uçarol 1995). According to this agreement, Russia would get the territories of Van, Erzurum, Trabzon, the east of Bitlis, and some parts of Sivas, Elazığ, and Diyarbakır. France, on the other side, would get Adana and Beirut provinces completely, majority of Halep, Harput, and Diyarbakır cities, would owe Çukurova District cottons and Ergani mines (Akyüz 1975), Great Britain would get Southern Iraq containing Baghdad, and Basra cities (Turan 1991). Great Britain meanwhile declares that it never intends to control Syria, and that this area is the backyard of France. On the other hand, that British forces are in Syria, France seems to be a step-child (Onar 1995), and Cilicia left for France causes the reaction of French public (Yavuz 1994). Colonel House participating in the secret hearings of British war government in relation with the share of Ottoman territories in such a way on

behalf of President Wilson takes note as follows in his notebook (Coşkun 1996); “We have joyfully shared Turkey in Asia and Europe as well.” The ones who were unable to pass behind Çanakkale, to go forward from Erzurum (Köni 1989) try to divide the country in such a way by means of turmoil and Byzantine tricks. Lord Curzon expresses the results of this agreement, and French policy as follows (Gürel 1984);

“When Sykes-Picos agreement leaving Syria, Antioche, and Cilicia to France was signed in May 1916, France being very frightened from untiming generosity of our government one year before has insisted on an article not to give Cyprus to another country without informing France and had us add such an article in the agreement. This article had got directed towards Greece, and Italy since it would be a very unpleasant situation for France in the same way in case one of them should dominate the island.”

The responsibility Great Britain shoulders about Cyprus come to the surface with the 4th article of the agreement signed between France and Great Britain on 23rd December 1920 (Hill 1948);

“British government can’t start negotiations to turn over Cyprus to another country or to release it without informing and getting the approval of France due to the geographical and strategical importance of Cyprus Island off İskenderun Bay.”

French (Akyüz 1988) does all its best to intervene in the existence of another country that will cause some unpredictable potential problems in future endangering the sovereignty of France in Cyprus Island which is located in the very midst of the area. France controlling and taking İskenderun Port through Sykes-Picot Agreement lands a military force, in Mersin, of 1500 soldiers, 1350 of which are composed of Armenians, and 150 of which are French in 17th December commanded by Lieutenant Colonel (Ener 1996). The problems and the irregularities in this area start so. France also feels like being authority to transport Baghdad petroleum to Europe just after the area is developed in future properly. Lord Curzon expresses the importance of Cyprus in the area as follows (Şükrü 1984);

“... İskenderun Port, with Sykes-Picot Agreement, has been given to France. The area will certainly develop in future, and it seems to be the sole natural gate of Baghdad to open. That Great Britain controls Cyprus will be the most certain warranty so that İskenderun can be, not as a name or in the documents, actually a free port in future. If an Armenian nation is founded under the control of France or someone else’ in Cilicia and the provinces, Cyprus will supply invaluable supports to protect the nation in case of danger in future. The intention of France is to establish a French Dominion in Syria. This nation here will find itself in dilemma with the new Arab nation in Damascus. Our position in Cyprus can be helpful to balance the situation between both of them. France which has located in Cyprus will get a tremendous domination. If Italy happens to settle in Antalya, and establish a strong sea base, we will necessitate having a sea base in the east of Malta as well.

Should a strong country dominate Cyprus, it will be able to threaten the Suez Canal. If not, the island will be vulnerable to the attacks, and invaded by unfriend powers by means of sale or conquest. Cyprus can turn to be a strong underwater and air base in both cases. Then we will have to control this area in case of war even if it is of no serious danger. On the other hand, the history has shown that only the strong countries have dominated the island. The destiny of the island has been always together with the mainland in its opposite direction. That the island will get given to Greece will turn itself to be a target for the countries stronger than Greece.”

French Camps in Cyprus

Subsequent to the 1909 Adana events, some Armenians left Anatolia and came to Cyprus, so the Armenian population grew to 8,000. They started living in Armenahor village in Limassol, Armenu village in Paphos, Spathariko village in Famagusta, and Kornokepos village in Kyrenia (An 1999). That World War I breaks out, that Ottoman Empire takes part in the war with Germany accelerates the process of the sharing of the country which has been weakened in account of military, economic, political and governmental aspects since 17th century between the big countries. That the minorities living in Anatolia have been provoked, in this period, intentionally, that they have turned to be the messengers to share the country causes Anatolian people to have a freedom struggle in a very wide field. The minorities establishing refugees committees in Anatolia by taking the financial and spiritual supports of the big countries, and following a very disgusting tactics between the Armenian youth to hate Turkish people, making mostly use of the official insufficiencies of the laws have firstly aimed to strengthen economically, taken for granted all the ways to do so (Mutluçağ 1970), caused so many rebellions in various periods in Anatolia, and desired, in particular, the western countries to intervene in Anatolia, and eventually established secret terrorist camps in the neighboring areas of Anatolia.

France planning to land military forces in Samandağ during World War I bombs İskenderun six times (Gazigiray 1982). The small sea town of İskenderun located in the line connecting Mesopotamia, Syria, and Egypt which was named as "Mümbit Hilal²" to Anatolia and Europe has played a very important role throughout the history strategically and commercially. Because of this very important geographical position, it has hosted various disputes and wars through the ages (Onar 1995). In the very beginning of the war, General Lord Kitchener being busy to develop new war tactics in London thinks of making landing operations in İskenderun with a military force of 50.000 soldiers, simultaneously with another landing operation in Çanakkale. This military force comprised of 2 divisions which supplied logistics supports in Alexandria and Port-Said of Egypt will prepare for the war by reinforcing with 2 divisions which will be transported from Çanakkale.

The Armenians living in peace in Ottoman Empire more than 700 years have started to be the pain in the neck especially after 1890s, and some imperialistic countries such as Russia, England, and France have continued itching this issue continuously. As soon as the First World War broke out, lots of turmoil has also started to come to the surface in Anatolia. The measures adopted by the Ottoman Empire during this period to stop this violence were presented to the rest of the world under a completely different light and the Armenians, misguided by the promises and instigation of the Western Powers started to undermine the country where they had led a privileged life more than almost a thousand years. The Hinchak, Tashnak, Toward Armenia, Young Armenians, Union and Salvation, Ramgavar, Paramilitaries, Black Cross societies and Hinchak Revolutionary Committee, which were established out of Anatolia, formed organizations urging the people for an armed revolt. These activities were the bloody uprisings that cost thousands of Turkish and Armenian lives. During World War I, the Ottoman Empire was fighting against Russian armies in Eastern Anatolia, where the Armenian revolt was at its peak; and also against Armenian forces which supported the Russians. On the other hand, behind the lines it had to continue to fight against Armenian guerrillas that were burning Turkish villages and towns and attacking military convoys and reinforcement. In spite of this violence, the Ottoman Empire tried to solve the Armenian problem for months by taking local measures. Meanwhile, an operation was made against the Armenian guerillas and 2345 rebels were arrested for high treason.

² "Productive Crescent"

When it became evident that the Armenian community was also in rebellion against the state, the Ottoman Empire proceeded with the last resort of replacing only those Armenians in the region who actively participated in the rebellion. With this measure, the Ottoman Empire also intended to save the lives of the Armenians who were living in a medium of civil war because Turks started to counter-attack the Armenians who had performed bloody atrocities against Turkish communities. Some Armenians have refused to pay the taxes, some refused to enlist, some riots, chaos, and the unavoidable end came closer. The Ottoman Empire being on the brink of being ground zero tried to defend the borders, and some territories out of Ottoman Empire together with Germany. The country was lack of military personnel, ammo, logistics, and internal security. Therefore the government regarding the situation in Anatolia have taken radical precautions exiling some Armenians. The tragedy occurred for those exiled Armenian people, some killed, some raped, some lost their lives due to the cold and the hunger, and some robbed on the way. This is a double-dimension issue named “Armenian Issue” nowadays against Turkey.

The second Armenian rush to the island came after the 1915 events in Istanbul; and after the 1921 Ankara Agreement with French government, some of the Armenians leaving Çukurova started coming to the island. Additionally, Turkish soldiers mostly captured at the Çanakkale Front by the British Forces were taken to Cyprus to Karakol POW Camp after October 1916. In addition to the POW camp established by the British military forces on the island, French authority established another camp named Armenian Legion D’Orient Camp to train the Armenians collected not only from Anatolia, Cyprus, European countries but also from the USA, Argentina, and some more countries. The Armenians in this Armenian camp provided the security of the camp. Although Syrian, Iraqi Arab and Armenian POWs fighting for the Ottoman State were also transferred to this camp, due to the hardships and false propaganda, some POWs left this camp and were brought to the Armenian Camp.³

The Armenian Legion d’Orient established by France in 1916 in Egypt was once more activated, and Armenian people from different areas, so as to fight against Turkish people in Çukurova, were at first collected in Port-Said, then transferred to Cyprus with their families (Keser 2000). They were all trained by French officers, and subsequent to the training, they were all deployed to Anatolia. After English approval, an area 24 kilometers away from Famagusta, at the seaside with no residences but having water wells, was chosen.⁴ The closeness of the French Armenian camp to that of the Turkish POWs⁵ and that the area was used as a training area both by French and British forces show that both countries had cooperated here as well. British forces, giving at first the approval to open a French camp in Cyprus, supplied the French military personnel with the logistics, helped them build the infrastructure, and helped them about the intelligence and counter-intelligence upon the camp activities. The single British objection was for the Armenian women and children to be transferred to the island from Port Said. According to Legion D’Orient Regulations (Milliyet 21 June 1992), six legion companies (Turan 1991), having 200 Armenians each, with a total presence of 5,000 and 160 Arabic legionnaires.⁶

Despite the fact that French officers behaved well towards the Armenians⁷, the tension due to the Armenian criminals ambushing a village called Trikomo and killing a British soldier, raises the tension (Sayıl 1985). Additionally, Armenian intelligence and espionage activities

³ ATASE, K. 2680, D. 210, F. 1-31.

⁴ ATASE, K.2680, D.210, F.1-37, 1-59, 1-60, 1-61, 1-62, 1-63, 1-64, 1-65.

⁵ ATASE, K.2680, D.210, F.1-37, F.1-59, 1-60, 1-61, 1-62, 1-63, 1-64, 1-65.

⁶ ATASE, K.2680, D.210, F.1-24 ve ATASE, K.2680, D.210, F.1-3.

⁷ ATASE, K.2680, D.210, F.1-4.

made life unbearable on the island.⁸ The last event caused by the Armenians was that the Turkish POW camp was stoned by the Greek Cypriots helping the Armenians (Nesim 1990). So, the English High Commissioner announced itself the authority and brought some restriction (The Cyprus Gazette 4 July 1915). Some of these Armenian families living within the French camp don't leave the island, and continue living in Cyprus. The preferable places after Armenian immigration were mostly very close to the Turkish residential areas and the Turkish shop. The Turkish people and the Armenians start living close together in Cyprus. The Armenians starting to live in Limassol, Larnaca, Famagusta, Nicosia, and Paphos were not ordinary people, but doctors, dentists, veterinarians, bankers, translators, and civil servant. They start to be dominant in the British administration.

Cyprus after the Lausanne Agreement

The Lausanne Agreement was approved by England just after the signing on August 6, 1924 (Sarica 1975). The Turkish Cypriots were then required to accept one of the alternatives: to be a British subject and stay on the island, or to leave the island and be a Turkish subject. As a result, some 7-8,000 Turkish Cypriots immigrated to Turkey. At same time, the British administration put some restrictions on mosques, Turkish schools and the Turkish flag. They forbade the raising of the Turkish flag at national activities, such as May 19 and October 29, to celebrate the holiday. They also forbade bringing Turkish books from Turkey (Manavoğlu 2004). There were more than 23 secondary schools on the island. British administration permits only one secondary school and a high school in Nicosia and appoints someone named Mr. Wood as the school superintendent who was wounded at Çanakkale. On the other hand, Mr. Wood's wife is also an Armenian. The above-mentioned lady is the only Armenian person who behaves wildly against Turkish people on the island.

Behind these restrictions was a well-organized plan to put pressure particularly on the Turkish Cypriots (Aydinova 2003). The Turkish government was aware of what was happening in Cyprus, and detailed reports were received by means of the consulate in Cyprus.⁹ Some 1,300 ordinary Armenians from Turkey immigrated to Cyprus to fill the gap caused by the Turkish Cypriots who emigrated. This group was composed of shopkeepers, men of all trades, and ordinary people in addition to the merchants. Silk weavers, tailors, carpenters, carpet-makers, shoe-makers, copper-masters, gold-masters, silver-masters, cotton-masters, silk manufacturers, fur-makers, rifle workmen, wool workmen, tin-makers, comb-masters, furniture masters, and other workmen were seen in all the market. Turkish Cypriots on the island lost their property due to debt, lack of administration, waste, immigration and being unable to keep up with the daily conditions," and the Armenians and the Greek Cypriots took over the fertile fields, farms, barns, dairies and garden. Also, Armenians, and the Greek Cypriots started building houses and shops next to the commercial areas and the city center. Ismet Konur, a history teacher, explains that period as follows (Konur 1938);

"The government, without regarding the future and the past of the Turkish Cypriots, commits some activities damaging Turkish people, especially recently, and causes certain unjust acts. And regarding 65,000 Turkish Cypriots lower than a group of a few thousand Armenians, the government regards Turkish people as if it is zero. That's not all. The Armenians have also participated and the Turkish official posts have been turned over to them. Now there are many Armenian officials in the administration. So, we do naturally accept the presence of Armenian officials in the committee of the classification of the worker. But this is not the problem; the problem is how they behave

⁸ ATASE, K. 2680, D. 210, F. 1-24.

⁹ The Report by Cyprus Consulate of Turkish Republic dated 14th September 1938. BCA.030.10.124.887.3.

toward up. Nobody thinks that this commission is established by chance because the members of the commission are one Armenian, one Greek Cypriot and one British.”

Commercial life was gradually put in the hands of the Armenian merchants. There were also a few photographers, publishers, mechanics and furniture-makers among the Armenians who immigrated to the island later. Being bilingual and clever at administrative work, many Armenians started getting jobs in many different ways, such as in banks, courts, private companies, the police department and the military. Many doctors, journalists, engineers, architects, veterinarians and psychiatrists started running their own enterprises and become employer. Because Turkish Cypriots disappeared for many different reasons, the British administration supplied new fields of work in which the English language was required with Armenians, such as teachers, military personnel and more. What is interesting here is that some political problems occurred between the Armenians themselves. The rich Armenians supported by the British administration did their best to expel the other poor Armenians that seemed to be the problem for the social life off of the island and even supply financial assistance for them to leave.¹⁰

An Armenian in Nicosia during this period was Baron Amerya, who was a lawyer defending Sait Molla, a member of the Association of Friends in England, against the journalist Mehmet Remzi Okan and his journal called Söz (Nesim 1987). Baron Amerya was also the neighbor of the journalist. In the official case caused by Mehmet Remzi Okan's an article insulting the Armenians, the British court sentenced M. Remzi Okan to a two-month sentence. Söz was also shut down for three months since M. Remzi Okan was sentenced to Kyrenia Castle in July 4, 1926. Additionally, Baron Amerya tried to sequester the journal and demanded a large amount of money. However, the debt was paid and the journal started appearing again. The first Armenian school in Nicosia opened in 1887 with the financial assistance of Armenians from Egypt, England and France. Later, Krikor and Garabed Melkonyan, brothers who were born in Turkey, supplied financial support and established a center that was known as the Melkonian Institute in 1924 (www.hayem.org/indekp.htm). There were more than 100 students in the school from twenty countries, including Greece, Iran, Lebanon, the United Arab Emirates, Ethiopia and the United States.¹¹ Some 1,500 students attended the school. The school closed down in 2005 (www.hayem.org/indekp.htm).

ARMENIANS IN CYPRUS AFTER WWII

Close and friendly relations of the Armenians and Turkish Cypriots continued increasing after World War II. The Armenians who came to the island after 1915 spoke perfect Turkish;¹²

“Turkish Cypriots have always respected the Armenians. In the Turkish sectors of Cyprus, there is always sympathy for the Armenians. Thousands of Turkish Cypriots from this generation have spent their childhood with their Armenian friends here. Thousands of Turkish Cypriots have been classmates with the Armenians at the British School and the American College. Many Armenians even today have properties in the Turkish sector of Cyprus. Turkish Cypriots take care of all these properties.”

¹⁰ The report prepared by Osman Uzunoğlu for Turkish Information Office dated 17th September 1965 named “A Report About Armenians in Cyprus/Kıbrıs Ermenileri Hakkında Bir Rapor”. KTMA, File No.61, 1970-E.

¹¹ Linguist Pars Tuğlacı is also the graduate of this school.

¹² Special News Bulletin, 24 April 1965, 2 June 1964 and 5 June 1964, Nicosia. KTMA, File No.61, 1970-E.

An activity which spread all over the island by means of the British School was scouting. The Turkish High School with its director İsmail Hikmet accelerated the activities everywhere. A group of 30-40 people started different activities to get some money. What they did was the same with what the Armenians did: sell minor items such as socks, sockets, matches, and other things in the street markets (Plümer 2001). Some competitions were arranged between the schools in Nicosia Atalasa. The majority of the businesses were still run by Armenian merchants. Armenians had typical commercial characteristics as the people from Kayseri did. They were very careful and thrifty; they didn't enjoy spending much and did their best to increase capital with no risk. They were never bored and not lazy to work. More importantly, they had relations strictly with each other (Özdemir 1997);

“Armenian horsemen would take a tour on the street. They were loved a lot since they never wanted payment in advance and in cash. Armenians buy only from Armenians, Turks both from the Armenians and the Turks. There was no Armenian beggar on the Nicosia streets. They had schools in Nicosia and in Larnaca. The Armenians were the agency of British cars and Riley cycles, steam repairing and peddling, and then, finally, there are rich Armenian merchants.”

Armenians attended the private Italian School, the British School, and the American Academy in Larnaca and preferred to make friends with the Turkish Cypriots, not with the Greek Cypriots (Özhun 2006). Even if they were good friends with the Turkish Cypriots, for shopping, their preference was the Armenian merchants and sellers (Kasımoğlu 1986);

For example, there used to be a coffee house at Sarayönü near Şükrü Kaya's barber shop once. The Armenian sitting by us used to stand up all of a sudden saying, 'Let me go and buy a pack of cigarette.' and used to buy it from the Armenian seller. Although cigarettes are sold in the coffee house, and he is asked to buy it from the coffee house, he used to say 'No.' and used to go away from Sarayönü to Paphos Gate to buy. We of course used to talk about this situation there. We used to emphasize that Turkish Cypriots never supported each other. This is one of the messages I never forget from my childhood.

The poorest Armenian living in Nicosia has very close and sincere relations with Turkish people and keeps his identity secret till his death. He marries a Turkish Cypriot and dies in Nicosia years later. Armenians shopping from the Armenian shops and backing each other was well known by the Turkish Cypriots as well (Özhun 2006);

“I know the Armenians shop from the Armenian sellers, not from the Turkish shopkeepers, even to buy a box of matches. Almost everybody in Cyprus knew that most of the shops at Arasta Nicosia belong to the Armenians. We also knew that most of the shops at 'the longest road of Nicosia' also belonged to the Armenians. It is also a fact that all the Armenians living in Cyprus speak Turkish better than the Turkish people do.”

As soon as the businesses were taken over by the Armenians, many shops having signs with words ending -ian started emerging all over the island. There were so many shops with the name of Garabian, Menokian, Damadian and Malukian. The jeweler shops, the tailors, photographers, carpet dealers, and street sellers were almost all Armenians, but they lived with Turkish traditions (Zihni 2004);

“They used to speak Turkish better than the Turks did. The old ones didn't know the Armenian language. These Armenians who have lived with us adapted Turkish traditions and liked Turkish food. They used to enjoy Turkish music. They have had famous composers and the musicians as well. When they first came to the island as

immigrants, the British authority rented them empty houses and settled a few families in one. When they got used to Cyprus, they started to try to get money and to run their own businesses. They were spread to Larnaca, Limassol and Famagusta, but the majority was in Nicosia. Then they got the agency to sell many items, such as cars, bicycle, household goods, and cameras, carpets, cotton, and more... They again started living the Dolce Vita here.”

One of the well-known families in Nicosia was the Uzunyans. This family imported the first automobile and many household goods to the island. In addition to the newly appeared architectural designs and the styles of the island, talented young musicians started appearing, especially in art and music. One of whom was the lute-playing artist, Keğam Celalyan. The musicians playing Turkish music also took part in the chorus and organized groups as well. Keğam Celalyan participated in many TV and radio programs with Zeki Taner, and Mustafa Kenan up to December 1963 (An 2000). Another Armenian musician Vahan Bedelyan; his students Manuk Parikian, Levon Çilingiryan and Hartun Bedelyan; as well as piano teacher Sirvart Çilingirian; cardiologist Vatçe Kalbiyan; author Ohannes Şöhmeliyan; the famous shirt-maker Stefan Harutunyan from Larnaca; Vahe Nigogosiyan, who first brought the cinema to the island; and the painter Vartan Taşçıyan were other Armenians who were remarkable people. Finally, the lawyer and historian, Nubar Maksutyan, wrote articles about Cyprus in Turkish journals and magazines in the 1940p.

TURKISH CYPRIOTS AND THE ARMENIANS IN NICOSIA

The majority of the Armenians living and working in Nicosia preferred to live at Arap Ahmet, Yediler and Korkut Efendi Districts, and on Victoria Street. Some rich and wealthy Turkish officials and families also lived in the same area (Gazioğlu 2000). Another area that the Armenians mostly preferred was Köşklüçiftlik District. The Armenian houses there had a typical Armenian style and all were built with yellow stones. One of those Armenians having good friendships with the Turkish Cypriots was Vahan Bedelyan, who was the music teacher at Nicosia Turkish High School (Kıbrıs Erkek Lisesi 1934). Vahan Bedelyan, who tried to do his best to train the Turkish students, was discharged from the school for no reason (Özdemir 1997), and the Turkish people reacted against this situation (Halkın Sesi 6 Mayıs 1949). Bedelyan Efendi nevertheless didn't leave music and continued to teach student. We have unfortunately heard of some teachers explaining why this dear music teacher of the school band, Bedelyan Efendi, was all of a sudden discharged from the school. Those teachers seeming to be the voice of the school director left us in pain (An 2000).

Bedelyan Efendi nevertheless doesn't leave the music and continues to teach the students (An 2000). There were also some water-ewer makers in Arasta and Bandabuliyā of Nicosia (Bağışkan 1997). Additionally, the most interesting work carried out by Armenians was as the lokmacı. The round-like dessert called lokma was mostly known and given away particularly during the holy days in the Aegean area. The small lokmacı shop run by an Armenian family was open until December 1963 (Keser 2006). Due to the blockade and the restrictions at Ledra Avenue, the area is now known as Lokmacı Barikatı and divides Nicosia into two parts (Keser 2006);

“At Lokmacı Barikatı, in Arasta, there were Armenians selling wool and cotton. They would trust us a lot, and we would go shopping there. I have worked in the Greek Cypriot sector in the British canteens for more than 18 months. I have had some Armenian friends working together. I have had Armenian friends in the Turkish sector as well. I have also had a friend working in the Greek Cypriot sector. Her mother was a teacher. They were very good people...There were many Armenian sellers in the

market. We would buy everything we needed from them. Our yogurt seller was also an Armenian. Our neighbor Mr. Sirvat was a good lady. She would visit us in our holy holidays and bring some gifts. My mother worked for them for years. Mr. Sirvat would send some packs of cigarettes for my father, too. They were just Turkish friend. My mother worked for them till the 1960p. Then this family went to London.”

The soap known as the soap of Tripoli, since it was exported from Tripoli, was mostly used to wash the dead and was accepted to be something holy. A clever Armenian master named Kasparyan first produced soap in Cyprus, and then the Turks also started producing the same soap (Zihni 2004);

The only item to clean the body once was the soap. As well as the Turkish and Greek Cypriot soap-makers, there used to be an Armenian soap-maker whose soap would sell like hot cakes in Cyprus. What I remember from my childhood is Ali Efendi and Kasparyan. Kasparyan’s house and shop, belonging to Memduh Fuat Bey, was at Avni Efendi Street near Karakaş Garden in Nicosia. It was a two-story house positioned between the east and the west. Entering from the main gate at Avni Efendi Street, the bottom floor and a part of the first floor were the workshop. His widow sister and her two daughters lived in the rest of the first floor. The main entrance for the house with a big garden was at Laleli Camii Street.

Who was Kasparyan? Kasparyan, who was born and bred in Anatolia, fed with Turkish bread, was an Armenian... The Armenians leaving Turkey spread over many countries... As far as my father said, ‘Some Armenians have covered the oil tins filling them with gold.’ ...Kasparyan was one of those Armenians running from Turkey... Kasparyan would produce soap using primitive methods with mineral water and olive oil. He would sell it by decorating with the picture of Aphrodite... I would go to Kasparyan workshop in my childhood and get the soap deposit. While producing the soap, some deposits would appear. The women would use this item in addition to the soap since it was very economical. Kasparyan would fill containers cheaply. Kasparyan left us after the inter-communal dispute in 1963. He moved to the other sector of Nicosia with his family. He gave the house and the workshop to a Turkish family to care for him. He was already very rich. Then he built houses there and made his sister’s daughters marry. His two-story house turned to ruins and was demolished by the municipality. Now there is no evidence of the Kasparyan house and the workshop.”

There is never any snow in Cyprus except for the Trodos Mountains, but an Armenian (Altinkaya 2006) introduced an icy slush composed of grape syrup called kar hoşafı to Turkish Cypriots¹³ Another food imported by Armenians was the worldwide famous pastırma¹⁴ of Kayseri and produced from the meat of calves. Pastırma was very popular with Armenians and the Greek Cypriots (Zihni 2004);

“The Armenians have for the first time produced pastırma in Cyprus. When I attended the secondary school, there was a well-known pastırma producer working at the old Kadınlar (Women’s) Street near Şükrü Veysi’s shop. I also remember another producer from Larnaca very well. I used to pass by that house smelling the taste of sucuk and pastırma.”

¹³ Kar hoşafı is a kind of juicy slush eaten even today in different parts of Turkey mostly by the nomads. It is supposed to be a refreshing juice especially in summer. The ice is cut from the special ice wells in the high mountains and transported by the mules, covered by the pine leaves, and sold in the bazaars as a mixture with pekmez.

¹⁴ There is a great similarity between the Armenian and Cypriot kitchens such as shish(kebhaps) kokoreç, pastırma, spicy appetizers and so on.

In addition to commercial and cultural life, social life reflected itself in the neighborhoods, funerals, weddings, marriages, engagements, circumcisions, holidays, and visits where good wishes were expressed. The neighbors helped and supported each other (Keser 2006);

“Our Armenian neighbors were very good people. We would visit each other. Our neighbor Victoria’s mother was very ill, and her father was a barber. She was my friend from the same district, and had presented me with a wrist chain in addition to a summer jacket in the 50p. Mr. Sirvak and her family were also very rich people. They were friendly people. We were like sister. They used to employ Turkish people in their houses. When the inter-communal dispute appeared in 1963, the Greek Cypriots threatened them to get money, and they were given threatening letters, and then they were killed by EOKA (Keser 2007)¹⁵ member.”

TURKISH CYPRIOTS AND ARMENIANS IN FAMAGUSTA

Armenians mostly lived in Famagusta as well as Nicosia and were mostly shopkeepers and dealt with the commerce (Altınkaya 2006);

There was an Armenian photographer named Agopyan in Famagusta. There were some Armenians selling cotton by the meter and known as okkacı. They would speak perfect Turkish. Garabet was also a tailor and a master. There were Armenian tailor. We would get our school hats from them. We as the Turkish Cypriots would prefer to shop from them. There was a very lovely and friendly Armenian in Upper Marash (Varosha), and he would enjoy playing dice with the Turkish people. Having lined the items, he would enjoy grasping one of the dice. When asked why he did so, he would say “If an earthquake happened to occur... He never wanted the game to be spoilt. He had no negative opinions against Turkey and Turkish people, but when the turmoil started, he went to other side of Nicosia.”

Turkish public opinion about the Armenians was that they lived in peace with them, having no problems, no hardships, no prejudice, and no negative aspects (Başer 2006);

“Two of the three bakeries belonged to them. There was almost no problem between Turkish and Armenian people. When we attended the primary school, there were Armenian masters who produced those little candies. They also had football clubs having matches against the Turkish football clubs.”

ARMENIANS AND TURKISH CYPRIOTS IN OTHER PARTS OF CYPRUS

There were fewer Armenians living in other towns outside of Famagusta and Nicosia. They had almost no interest in agriculture, but rather in business and commerce. One of these towns was Lefka where there is a very abundant source of water (Beratlı 2002);

“Apart from the Greek Cypriots, the town also had a small Armenian colony. Agop who is the most popular Armenian of the town and his brother Tomas’ shop was in the same

¹⁵ EOKA (Ethniki Organosis Kibriyon Agoniston) is an illegal armed organization founded in 1950s, and directed by ex-officer (retired lieutenant colonel) Georgios Grivas. The first illegal activities carried out by EOKA fighters first appeared against the British facilities, HQs, official buildings in 1st April 1955, and continued for years against not only Turkish Cypriots but also the Greek Cypriots, and the British subject. The Turkish Cypriots living in Cyprus have then firstly established Karaçete, Dokuz September, and Volkan organizations to resist against EOKA, then starting from 1958, August; well-trained, well-equipped personnel came together and established a relatively professional organization named TMT (Türk Mukavemet Teşkilatı/Turkish Resistance Organization) against EOKA assault.

place as Hüseyin Uskuri's shop. Their mother, Mr. Varteni, was a white-haired, golden-toothed woman in black. She would every afternoon make up, dress and take a tour in the neighborhood with her purse. Using a nasal Eastern Anatolian accent, she would speak perfect Turkish. Regarding the Turkish language, there was no difference between Agop and up. But I remember that Tomas' wife and his children who lived in Nicosia spoke a different language when they came to Lefka. I don't know it was Armenian or Greek. I also remember Mr. Atnis and Nişan as well. Nişan had a very big scar on his nose, so he was named 'Nose-Eaten Armenian' here. Were they two different persons or not? I think they were the unfortunate people who left Anatolia after 1915. They were in a way the people of Lefka."

There were some Turkish and Armenian people working for CMC (Cyprus Mining Cooperation). Armenians had the same work in Lefka as well (Beratlı 2002);

"The most famous shop of that time was Himonidis'. Agop and Tomas' shop was also very popular. Tomas was not so lovely, but Agop's brother was the soul of the party in Lefka. He would enjoy joking and smiling. He was a man with no hair. I don't remember their father. Their mother, Aunt Arteni, was also as lovely as Agop and was always available for the afternoon meetings of women. I don't know Tomas, but Agop was unable to live here, and immigrated to London. I have heard that he still has relations with the people from Lefka there."

Turkish and Armenian people living on the island are so close and so interwoven that their social, traditional and cultural characteristics are surprisingly similar. These similarities reflect on the culture, and the literature as well, thus there are so many examples showing such characteristics of the life in Lefka folkloric life, as in the poem "Lefka Murmurings", since the Armenians had close relations with the Turkish Cypriots in Lefka (Fedai 2002);

3- The palm heats the stokeholes in the houses

Takuyi would have henna on the bath day.

12- Father Ermen would ignore the empty shelves

He would light his cigarette with fago.

29- Lüccan was also teher, the master of the iron maker

He spent all he had in the tavern.

32- Gololambi Garden was famous with its figs

The insects would light the area.

33- Who dared to say anything to Driver Başı Yanni

He would get a cigarette while driving.

34- Butcher Yango was the best

He would scorn everybody except Salih Hafız

38- Musician Bedros was the must for the weddings

He would start composing after a few drinks.

43- The blind Armenian never forgot the Turks

He would get angry when someone said "Atatürk".

54- Eva, Doctor Kontarini's daughter, as a fairy girl.

She would sell rolls of wool, looking lovely.

59- Ahilli was the house for the Armenians

The humble would get jealous of them.

In Lefkara, which is in the Greek Cypriot sector, Ottoman treasury official Yahya Efendi and his family lived with two daughters named Nevard and Azadui, and a son named Agop. They dealt with stationery and photography in the village. The Garabet family was also in Lefkara dealing with tin-making and the copper process. Father Garabet also had some Turkish errand boys to teach them the craft (İzmen 2005). The most multinational town of the island before 1963 was Kyrenia with Turkish Cypriots, Greek Cypriots, Armenians and Maronites (Gürkan 1996). Limassol was the second city of the island but there were almost no Armenians here. The number of the Armenians there is now about 250. There is a school there belonging to the Sourp Kevork Church founded in 1939. The Sourp Stephanos Church in Larnaca was in use after 1909. The situation for the Turkish people was the same in Larnaca. Hotel management, printing and business were for the Armenians, while agriculture, container-making and fishing belonged to the Turkish people (Özdemir 1997). The biggest company of the town was a button factory belonging to an Armenian family (Özdemir 1997). The American Academy was a bridge to bring the Turkish and Armenian students closer (Hamidoğlu 2005);

“I had very sincere twin friends in the 1936-37 term at the academy. We used to play tennis and take tours together. We had a very sincere teacher of Turkish named Gasuni. We also had neighbors called the Onnik family. We used to visit each other. I had a very close schoolmate and friend named Antin. Most of the shops where we purchased something were in Nicosia. Because my father was a police officer, the sellers used to give me an advance to buy what I needed. Armenians had a university in Nicosia, and when I went there, my friends used to take care of me.”

SPORTS ACTIVITIES, TURKISH CYPRIOTS AND THE ARMENIANS

Lefkoşa Türk Futbol Ocağı founded in 1910 played the first match against a mixed team of Greek Cypriots, Armenians and British players in 1916. The Cyprus Football Federation founded in 1934 was composed of Apoel, Trust, Olimpiakos and Nicosia Turkish Sports Clubs from Nicosia, Ael and Aris from Limassol, Epa of Famagusta, and Anorthosis from Famagusta. Turkish and Armenian players are supposed to play football together in Apoel and Omonia football teams but these teams are Greek Cypriot teams. Then Turkish and Armenian players started playing together in Ael and Epa Football Clubs. In a tournament arranged in 1938, for example, the Turkish High School, Larnaca Greek Cypriot High School and American Academy took part in addition to the Melkonian and Samuel Armenian Schools.¹⁶ The Greek Cypriots who always reacted to the close relations between the Armenians and the Turkish people started a commercial sanction against the Armenian businesses soon after an Armenian team called Kayzak became champion. Unfortunately, the Kayzak football team stopped all its functions then. Starting with the 1946-1947 season, the first Armenian football team, founded in 1934 and called AYMA (AYMA stands for Armenian Young Men Association) was taken into the league (Özhun 2006). Armenians generally were in favor of Turkish teams, such as Çetinkaya and Yeniciami, and similarly, the Turkish people supported the Armenian teams (Özhun 2006).

¹⁶ KTMA, Ses, 14 December 1938, No. 128.

The most significant event of this period for both Armenians and Turks was that the Nicosia composite football team went to Beirut for matches in May 1950, and two matches result resulted in a draw (2-2) and (1-1). The team had five Turkish footballers (Hatay 2000). The first and the last international matches performed by the composite team of Cyprus were in Israel. Çetinkaya also had a match against the team on March 3, 1954 resulting in a win (4-1) (Hatay 2000). The Israel national team which came to the island on March 7, 1954 defeated the composite team of Cyprus (5-1). The referee of the match was Faik Gökay from Turkey. The second match on March 10, 1954 was also with Israel (3-2) (Hatay 2000). The Cyprus team which went to Israel May 4-9, 1954 had five Turkish footballers in addition to Şandri, Lello, Anastasiades, and Nikui from Apoel, Aram from Epa, Psillo from Omonia,¹⁷ Daki from Pezoporikos, Mancallo, Koço and Şaylo from Anorthosis¹⁸ and Sarkiz from Ayma. The match on May 6, 1954 between Cyprus and the Israel B national team resulted in a draw (2-2). Two days later, Israel won the match (2-1) (Hatay 2000).

THE CYPRUS REPUBLIC, ARMENIANS AND TURKISH CYPRIOTS

Just after the Proclamation of the Republic of Cyprus, the number of the Armenians was 3,628 (KTMA, File No.61, 1970-E.). Of those, 2,500 Armenians were in Nicosia, 800 in Larnaca, 250 Famagusta, and the rest in small villages. The Maronites, Armenians, French and other subjects were officially supposed to be religious groups, and a referendum was held. In the results, 1,077 Armenians voted to be Greek subjects, and 5 to be Turkish subjects. In Nicosia, 737 Armenians, 281 Maronites and 1870 Latin, in Limassol, 69 Armenians, 35 Maronites, 59 Latin, in Famagusta, 64 Armenians, 18 Maronites, 15 Latin, in Larnaca, 203 Armenians, 8 Maronites and 57 Latin, in Kyrenia, 4 Armenians, 704 Maronites and 12 Latin vote for the Grek Cypriots, 4 Armenians and 1 Latin in Nicosia, 1 Armenian in Larnaca vote for Turkish Cypriots. Naturally, the Armenian society made use of the rights granted by the law and annexed to the Greek Cypriot sector. Because most of the Armenians were merchants and craftsmen, and had property, workshops and estates in the Greek Cypriot sector, immigration accelerated in that direction. The main reason for the immigration was the Greek Cypriots' attacks on the Turkish people. Nevertheless, some seven families preferred to live in the Turkish sector (KTMA, File No.61, 1970-E.). Turkish Cypriots were not disappointed with the result of the referendum and the relations with the Armenians continued as it was before.

However, the EOKA increased the pressure upon the people, and the Armenian families who were unable to pay money were forced to leave the island. The first group to leave the island contained some 200 families. The women of the Petrosyan and the Chakarian families, trying to resist against the threats, were beaten, raped and killed by EOKA members (Special News Bulletin, 22 May 1964). Luiza Bedrosyan and her mother, Samandciyan Bedrosyan, living in Greek Cypriot sector of Nicosia were killed at home on February 26, 1964 since they refused to pay the money demanded by EOKA. In addition, an old Armenian woman, Yebruhi Lusarriyan's home was broken into. The EOKA members, being unable to kidnap her, set a fire, stole everything in her home and then disappeared. The only Armenian person against the Turkish Cypriots was an employee working at Beligpaşa and Zafer cinemas. When he was known to be a messenger of the Greek Cypriots during the 1963 events, he left the Turkish area (Özhun 2006). As soon as the Greek Cypriots started the attacks in the light of Akritas Plan against the Turkish people after December 20, 1963, not only Turkish people but also

¹⁷ While preparing this article, some Turkish Cypriots have talked about a football team named Ohamya, but this is something wrong because that team is actually named OMONIA, and a Greek Cypriot team.

¹⁸ This football team has eliminated Trabzonspor recently, beating 3-1.

Armenians were influenced negatively. Most Armenians who refused EOKA demands, who didn't obey EOKA rules were killed; their houses and shops were ambushed, bombed, and they were threatened to death (KTMA, File No.61, 1970-E.). That Archbishop Makarios started enlisting Armenian young people caused reactions and the Armenian people wanted Makarios to stop this decision at once.

Greek Cypriot and Greek provocative politics continued to increase. Especially after December 21, 1963, Greek Cypriot and Greek journals purposely provoked Armenians against Turkish Cypriots by publishing prejudiced articles and news on the 1915 events. Since the provocations continued, Turkish Cypriots started a counter-movement so as to stop the intentional disintegration of a national case (KTMA, File No.61, 1970-E.) Special hearings were arranged after December 21, 1963 in the Cyprus assembly in which there was no Turkish representative due to the 50th year after the 1915 events, and special delegations got in communication with the Armenian authorities. Because the provocations increased against the Armenians in Cyprus, Armenian leaders came together and provided examples of people living together in peace for years in Turkey, and moderation was advised (Special News Bulletin, 28 April 1965). Because an Armenian named Berch Tilbian gave an explanation accusing Turkey, an Armenian lady named Nurshak Nalbantyan expressed her own ideas as follows: "Turks have always shared their food with me. Is it of use to irritate the events that occurred fifty years ago? The only reason for being against the Turks is the Greek threat." (Special News Bulletin, 27 April 1965). Meanwhile, another Armenian woman named Victoria Kamyian said, "We had better not talk about the events that happened fifty years before. Berch Tilbian¹⁹ was born in Cyprus. How can he know these events? How can he forget the brutal death of the Armenian women living in the Greek Cypriot sector? Greek Cypriots are free to force the people to talk as they want, but to talk about fifty years before is not so good." (Special News Bulletin, 27 April 1965). Artin Idoyan and his wife making an explanation on the same day said that the Turkish language was their own language, they lived together in peace and, despite hardship, and Turkish people helped them (KTMA, File No.61, 1970-E.). Makar Cherchadian, threatened by EOKA, lost his spare parts shop due to arson and explosion in Famagusta on August 14, 1965 (Special News Bulletin, 17 August 1965). Armenians were in dilemma not knowing what to do against EOKA attacks (KTMA, File No.61, 1970-E.);

Armenians who have never expected such pressure and terror reluctantly turn to be a means of Greek Cypriots' political propaganda, and some have had to make explanations, and arranged meetings against Turkish people on TV or in the newspaper. Although it is known that some Armenians are forced to do so, the other Armenians in Turkish sector of Nicosia protest those Armenians acting against the Turkish Cypriots, and have explained their feelings by giving advertisements in the newspapers on 25th April 1965. Some Armenians have collaborated with the Greek Cypriots in the very first days of the events, and informed them using the wireless systems and the radios that they had to kill Turkish people... Turkish people have never shown hatred against Armenians, because Turks and Armenians have lived together brotherly, in peace. Turkish people have again behaved brotherly towards Armenians who went on living in the Turkish sector after the December 1963 events and helped them in all manner."

Leaving all their property in the Turkish sector and leaving themselves at the mercy of EOKA members, Armenians established a board of nine people called the "Armenian Property Owners Who Immigrated". Armenians couldn't resist against the EOKA threats and

¹⁹ The above-mentioned person then works as a deputy at Greek Cypriot Assembly, and known as Berj as well.

start moving first to the Greek sector, and then to the United Kingdom, the USA, France and Canada.

CONCLUSION

After 1915, in which Armenians started coming to the island, there occurred almost no problem between Turks and Armenians. Turkish Cypriots and Armenians had anonymous solidarity against Greek Cypriots on the island, showing examples of good friendship, brotherhood, peace and harmony. The total population of the Armenian society in Cyprus throughout history has varied between 150 and 3,000. The only exception of the population increasing up to 8,000 was after the foundation of Legion D'Orient in Cyprus again in 1916. Because most of these Armenian families had later gone abroad, the population decreased to an average level of 3,000 or so. During the violence caused by EOKA attacks after December 21, 1963, the protection of Armenian property left in the Turkish sector was granted by Cyprus Turkish Forces Regiment as well as Turkish Cypriots. Some 2,000 Armenians had been living completely in the Greek Cypriot sector of the island, trying to keep their ethnic identity. Both the Turkish Republic of Northern Cyprus and Turkey will always show good-will toward the Armenians. The last example of such good-will is that the old Armenian property left in the Turkish sector after the July 20th Peace Operation, Melikian Ouzounian Primary School as well as Sourp Asdvadzadzin Church have been restored partly, and be ready to be delivered to the Armenian authorities after restoration.

KAYNAKÇA

A- ARCHIVES

- a) General Staff HQ ATASE Archive
- b) Prime Ministry Republic Archive
- c) Turkish Cypriot National Archive
- d) Special News Bulletin Archive

B- PRINTED MATERIALS

a) Books

- Akyüz, Yahya, 1988, Türk Kurtuluş Savaşı ve Fransız Kamuoyu, Ankara
- Alasya, Halil Fikret, 1964, Kıbrıs Tarihi ve Kıbrıs'ta Türk Eserleri, Ankara
- Alasya, H. Fikret, 1987, Kuzey Kıbrıs Türk Cumhuriyeti Tarihi, Ankara
- An, Ahmet, 1999, Kıbrıs Türk Kültürü Üzerine Yazılar, Kuvılcım Pub., No.5
- Arhimandrit, 1788, Kiprianos, Excerpta Cypria: Istria Hronoloiki Tis Nisu Kibro, Venedik
- Artuç, İbrahim, Kıbrıs'ta Savaş ve Barış, Kastaş Pub., İstanbul, 1989
- Baışkan, Tuncer, 1997, Kıbrıs Türk Halkbiliminde Ölüm, Ankara
- Bayur, Yusuf Hikmet, 1983, Türk İnkılabı Tarihi, Volume III, Kısım 2, Ankara,
- Beratlı, Nazım, 2002, Lefke Sevgilim, Işık Kitabevi Pub.,
- Coşkun, Alev, 1996, Kuvayı Milliye'nin Kuruluşu, İstanbul
- Çevikel, Nuri, 2006, Kıbrıs'ta Osmanlı Mirası, 47 Numara Yay, İstanbul.

- Denktaş, Rauf. R., 1999, Karkot Deresi, Akdeniz Haber Ajansı Pub., Lefkoşa
- Durrel, Lawrence, 1992, Acı Limonlar; Kıbrıs–1956, İstanbul, Belge Pub.,
- Eemilianides, 1963, Achille, Histoire De Cyprus, Paris
- Ener, Kasım, 1996, Çukurova Kurtuluş Savaşı'nda Adana Cephesi, Ankara
- Erim, Nihat, 1975, Bildiğim ve Gördüğüm Ölçüler İçinde Kıbrıs, Ankara
- Fedai, Harid, 2002, Kıbrıs Türk Kültürü Bildiriler I, Özyurt Basımevi, Lefkoşa
- Foley, Charles, 1964, The Memoirs Of General Grivas, London
- Gazigiray, A. Alper, 1982, Ermeni Terörünün Kaynakları, İstanbul
- Gazioğlu, Ahmet C., 2000, Kıbrıs'ta Türkler 1570–1878, Cyrep Pub., Lefkoşa.
- Gürel, Şükrü P., 1984, Kıbrıs Tarihi (1878,1960), Ankara
- Gürkan, Haşmet Muzaffer, 1996, Bir Zamanlar Kıbrıs'ta, Galeri Kültür Pub., Lefkoşa
- Güvenç, Nazım, 1984, Kıbrıs Sorunu, Yunanistan ve Türkiye, İstanbul
- Hadjilyra, Alexander Michael, 2009, The Armenians of Cyprus, Kalaydjian Foundation, Lefkoşa
- Hatay, Yücel, 2000, Futbolda Türk-Rum (1934–1955), Mavi Basın Pub., Lefkoşa
- Hatipoğlu, M. Murat, 1988, Türk-Yunan İlişkilerinin 101 Yılı, Ankara
- Hill, Sir George, 1949, A History Of Cyprus, Volume I, Cambridge University Press
- Hikmetağalar, 2005, Hizber, Eski Lefkoşa'da Semtler ve Anılar, İstanbul
- İzmen, Mehmet Ali, 2005, Lefkara ve Lefkaralılar, Özyurt Matbaacılık
- Karagil, Nevzat, 1964, Kıbrıs Meselesi Üzerinde Son Konuşmalar ve Yazılar, İstanbul
- Kasımoğlu, Erten, 1986, Eski Günler Eski Defterler, İzmir.
- Keser, Ulvi, 2000, Kıbrıs 1914–1923 Fransız Ermeni Kampları, İngiliz Esir Kampları ve Atatürkçü Kıbrıs Türk'ü, Akdeniz Haber Ajansı Pub. No.17, Lefkoş.
- Keser, Ulvi, 2007, Kıbrıs'ta Yeraltı Faaliyetleri ve Türk Mukavemet Teşkilatı, IQ Publications, İstanbul
- Konur, İsmet, 1938, Kıbrıs Türkleri, Remzi Kitabevi.
- Nesim, Ali, Batmayan Eğitim Güneşlerimiz, Lefkoşa
- Luke, Sir Harry, 1989, Cyprus under the Turks 1571-1878, Londra
- Parker, Robin, 1962, Aphrodite's Realm, Zavallis Press, Lefkoşa
- Oberling, Pierre, 1989, The Cyprus Tragedy, Rüstem and Brothers Press Pub., Lefkoşa
- Oberling, Pierre, The Road To Bellapais, New York, 1982
- Olçay, Osman, 1981, Sevres Andlaşmasına Doğru, Ankara Üniversitesi Siyasal Bilgiler Fakültesi Publications No. 455, Ankara
- Onar, Mustafa, 1995, Atatürk'ün Kurtuluş Savaşı Yazışmaları I, Ankara
- Özdemir, Hüseyin, 1997, Kıbrıs'ta 60 Yıl, Volkan Pub., İzmir
- Plümer, Fazıl, 2001, Anılar, Cyrep Pub., Nicosia

Sarıca, Murat, Erdoğan Teziç, Özer Eskiuyurt, Kıbrıs Sorunu, İstanbul Üniversitesi Hukuk Fakültesi Pub., İstanbul

Sayıl, Altay, 1985, Kıbrıs Polis Tarihi, Lefkoşa

Serter, Vehbi Zeki, 1973, Kıbrıs Türk Mücadele Tarihi, Lefkoşa.

Sonyel, Salahi R, 1995, Kurtuluş Savaşı Günlerinde İngiliz İstihbarat Servisi'nin Türkiye'deki Eylemleri, Ankara

Stephens, Robert, 1966, Cyprus-A Place of Arms, Pall Mall Press Pub., Londra

Thubron, Colin, 1986, Journey Into Cyprus, Middlesex

Toluner, Sevin, 1977, Kıbrıs Uyuşmazlığı ve Uluslararası Hukuk, İstanbul

Turan, Şerafettin, 1991, Türk Devrim Tarihi-1, Ankara.

Uçarol, Rıfat, 1995, Siyasi Tarih (1789-1994), İstanbul

Villalta, Jorge Blanco, 1982, Atatürk, Ankara

Yavuz, Bige, 1994, Kurtuluş Savaşı Döneminde Türk-Fransız İlişkileri 1919-1922, Ankara

b) Articles

Alagöz, Arif, "Kıbrıs Tarihine Coğrafi Giriş", Milletlerarası Birinci Kıbrıs Tetkikleri Kongresi Türk Heyeti Tebliğleri, Türk Kültürünü Araştırma Enstitüsü, Ankara, 1971, 25.

An, Ahmet, "Kıbrıs Ermenileri" Tarih ve Toplum, October 2000, No 202, 30.

Atan, Atilla, "Kıbrıs-Yeni Bir Türk Devletinin Doğuşu", Belgelerle Türk Tarihi Dergisi, Sayı 14, Ankara, April 1986, 56.

Eerdoğru, M. Akif, "Kıbrıs'ın Türkler Tarafından Fethi ve İlk İskân Teşebbüsü", Kıbrıs'ın Dünü Bugünü Uluslararası Sempozyumu, Ankara, 1991, 48

Erzen, Afif, "Kıbrıs Tarihine Bir Bakış", Türk Kültürünü Araştırma Enstitüsü, Milletlerarası Birinci Kıbrıs Tetkikleri Kongresi, Ankara, 1971, 82.

Günay, Nejla, "Kıbrıs'ın İngiliz İdaresine Bırakılması ve Bunun Anadolu'da Çıkan Ermeni Olaylarına Etkisi", Gazi Akademik Bakış, I (I), Winter 2007, Ankara, 115-126.

Nesim, Ali, "Mustafa Nuri Efendi", Yeni Kıbrıs, Lefkoşa, April 1990, p. 28.

Öğün, Gülay, "Kıbrıs'ta İslam Hâkimiyeti ve Selçuklular Zamanında Kıbrıs İle Ticaret İlişkileri", Doğu Akdeniz Üniversitesi, Kıbrıs'ın Dünü Bugünü Uluslararası Sempozyumu, Lefkoşa, 1991, 29.

Kodaman, Bayram, "Üç Ermeni Şarkısı ve Ermenilerin Türklere Bakışı 1891-1990", Doğu Akdeniz Üniversitesi, Kıbrıs'ın Dünü Bugünü Uluslararası Sempozyumu, Doğu Akdeniz Üniversitesi Pub., Lefkoşa, 1991, 107.

Köni, Hasan, " Birinci Dünya Savaşı Öncesi İstihbarat Ve Günümüze Etkileri ", Dördüncü Askeri Tarih Semineri, Bildiriler, Genelkurmay Başkanlığı, Ankara, 1989, 283

Kılıgın, Hilmi, "Tarihsel Perspektif İçinde Enosis Hareketine Bir Bakış", Güvenlik Kuvvetleri Dergisi, Lefkoşa, July 1987, No 2, 25.

Mutlucağ, Hayri, "Bir İşbirlikçi Vezirin Marifetleri", Türk Tarih Dergisi, September 1970, No 36, 75-78

Nesim, Ali, "Mustafa Nuri Efendi", Yeni Kıbrıs, Nicosia, April 1990, 28.

Jennings, Ronald C., “Lefkoşa”, Kubrus; Doğu Akdeniz’de Bir Osmanlı Adası, (Yayına Hazırlayan M. Akif Erdoğan), Galeri Kültür Pub., July 2010, Lefkoşa, 133-140.

Özyurt, Ahmet, ”Hep Sıcak Bir Ada; Kıbrıs”, Atlas, Sayı 15, İstanbul, June 1994, 32.

Şahin, İsmail, “Ermeni Olayları Sırasında Kıbrıs Adasının Rolü (1878-1900), Uluslararası Hukuk ve Politika, 8 (31), 62.

Ulutaş, Songül, “Çukurova Bölgesi Ermeni Olaylarında Kıbrıs’ın Rolü, III. Uluslararası Kıbrıs Sempozyumu, 18-20 October 2012, Kıbrıs Türk Kültür Derneği, Ankara, 85-93

Zihni, Turhan, “Anılarla Sabuncu Kaspariyan”, Kıbrıs Mektubu, September-October 2004, 17 (5), 42-44.

c) Oral Interviews

1- Interview with the late Mehmet Y. Manavoğlu on 25 August 2004 in Kyrenia.

2- Interview with the late Macit Aydınova on 13 July 2003 in Kyrenia

3- Interview with Rauf Özhun on 29 January 2006 in Ankara.

4- Interview with Gülten Tuncel Keser on 10th January 2006 in Anamur.

5 -Interview with Kemal Altinkaya on 20th February 2006 in İzmir.

6- Interview with late Mustafa Başer on 20th February 2006 in İzmir.

7- Interview with Feyyaz Hamidoğlu on 12nd December 2005 in İzmir.

d) Electronic Sources

www.hayem.org/indekp.htm.

THE HISTORY OF HUMAN RIGHTS ISSUES ON TURKEY'S EU ACCESSION

Dr. Çağlar EZİKOĞLU

Çankırı Karatekin University, Political Science and Public Administration, Çankırı, Turkey

ORCID ID: 0000-0001-5948-4693

ABSTRACT

Europe and the West became concerned about the issue of human rights and democratisation after World War II. In parallel with this, Turkey started the democratisation process with the establishment of a democratically elected government after the 1950's. Nevertheless, The EU has criticised Turkey since the 1980's because of the human rights abuses. Moreover, the Copenhagen Criteria which was established for candidate states has become important for Turkey in terms of human rights. Although Turkey started the political reform programme in 2001 after the starting of Turkey's candidacy status with the Helsinki Council in 1999, these problems cannot be solved by the Justice and Development Party (AKP) which has been in government as the ruling party. The issue of human rights has been one of the most important problems for Turkey to access the European Union during historical process of Turkey-EU relations. This study explores this phenomenon with focusing the history of human rights issues on Turkey's EU accession.

Keywords: Human Rights, EU-Turkey Relations, Copenhagen Criteria, Kurdish Issue, Democratisation

INTRODUCTION

Europe and the West became concerned about the issue of human rights and democratisation after World War II. In parallel with this, Turkey started the democratisation process with the establishment of a democratically elected government after the 1950's. Nevertheless, the first relations between Europe and Turkey in terms of human rights were started after the 1970's (Hale, 2013). There was no effective protection system of human rights in Turkey after the establishment of the democratic government in the 1950's. Hale points out this phenomenon with its reasons:

“As in other spheres, human rights discourse in Turkey tends to be highly partisan, and often interpreted as human rights for me (by implication, but not for those other people). This has been reinforced by the fact that, although Turkey has been ruled by democratically elected governments for most of the period since 1950, its constitutions have been weak protectors of human rights” (Hale 2011, p.324).

Indeed, there were some negative developments in regard to human rights in Turkey during the between 1950 and 1980. The events of 6-7 September in 1955, 27 May 1960 Military Coup, internal conflicts, 12 March 1971 Military Coup were serious examples of human rights violations (Robins, 2003). However, the EU did not show interest in these developments in the light of human rights due to some reason. The 1963 Ankara Association Agreement which was the first agreement between EU and Turkey did not mention the issue of democracy and human rights, this agreement included only economic integration between these two sides (Jørgensen and LaGro, 2007). Ugur explains that one of the main reasons is an ineffective human rights system in the European Union. Security or economic interests are more important than humanitarian aims for the European Union during this period (Ugur, 1999). On the other hand Turkey was an important country for Europe due to economic reasons in terms of European tariffs, reducing duties and non-tariff barriers to trade in Turkey

(Arikan 2003). Because of this, Europe was interested in Turkey only for economic reasons until the 1980's. Nevertheless, the EU's position has not changed until 1980's due to some specific reasons. Ugur explains one of the main reasons below:

“ . . . One reason for this belated interest was strategic considerations. The withdrawal of Greece from NATO's military command in 1974 increased the premium on Turkey's role in the containment of the Soviet Union and induced the EU to subordinate human rights issues to strategic considerations.” (Ugur 1999, p.216)

Another reason was the internal conflict and political violence in Turkey. Most of the people were killed and many human rights violations were realised in the 1970's. It was caused to make pressure from European Union on Turkey with its poor image of a political situation not human rights violations (Robins, 2003). Finally, as said before, the EU's human rights policy was not developed until the 1990's with a new institutional framework like the Common Foreign and Security Policy or new membership process criteria such as the Copenhagen Criteria.

As a result of these developments, the EU engaged with human rights violations in 1980 before the military coup. Amnesty International reported human rights violations in Turkey and this reporting caused a new meeting of the EU-Turkey Joint Parliamentary Committee (JPC) for 20 October 1980 (Dagi, 1998). However the military coup of 12 September 1980 restrained this meeting. After the military coup, EU's member states implemented a 'wait and see policy' in terms of democracy in Turkey between 1980 and 1985 (Ugur 1999). First, Turkey's membership process stopped with this military coup. The EU and Member States wanted to see Turkey's authorities' view about cooperation with international institutions like the European Union or NATO. The European Commission stated that “the EU hopes to see human rights will be fully respected” after the 1980 military coup. The EU and the Commission tried to send European Parliament (EP) members to investigate human rights violations and to call for a timetable for transition to democracy in Turkey between 1980 and 1982 (Kirisci, 1999). During this period, the situation of Turkey was important for EU due to economic and political reasons. Dagi summarises them as follows:

“...The Community tended to think that it had a right to interfere in the domestic restructuring of Turkish politics because as a state which was attached to Community with an association agreement and which also revealed its intention for full membership in a short time, the restoration of democracy could not be left to the goodwill of the ruling generals.” (Dagi, 1998, p.131).

Despite these efforts, the EU cannot develop an effective policy towards Turkey, because transition to democracy in Turkey is not possible with the military regime after the 1980 coup. In 1983, free elections were held and a new government was established by Turgut Ozal who was the civilian politician after this election. It was an important development for the transition to democracy in Turkey, but it did not lead to a significant change in the EU's human rights policy towards Turkey until 1986 (Dagi, 2001). However, some overtures were tried by some Member States during this period. For instance, Denmark, France and the Netherlands tried to establish a friendly settlement with Turkey. Moreover, Germany tried to improve its influence in terms of Turkey's accession to the EU due to economic reasons like free movement for Turkish workers (Hale, 2013). These efforts happened due to some economic improvements in Turkey like Turkey's high growth rates or increasing foreign trade. Nevertheless, there were no effective human rights policies from the European Union towards Turkey during this period. The death penalty, torture or restrictions on the freedom of opinion or expression had become unsolved problems despite the fact that the new civilian

government was established after the military coup (Smith, 2003). Ugur evaluates this phenomenon below:

“ . . . the EU made it clear in 1980 that it was not prepared to take Turkey in because of the high levels of risk associated with the latter’s divergent policy choices and the non-credible nature of her European orientation. In fact, the economic concessions granted in 1980 were closely related to objective of securing a delaying Turkey’s membership application. In that sense, the EU’s human rights were an anchor/credibility dilemma in EU-Turkey relations. While Turkey’s non-credible European orientation induced the EU to be even more risk averse; the latter’s failure to undertake risks and its unwillingness to impose sanctions made it easier for the Turkish military to deviate from EU standards and impose a highly restrictive regime”. (Ugur 1999, p.226).

EU’S HUMAN RIGHTS POLICY TOWARDS TURKEY AFTER 1985

As indicated before, EU played a waiting game with the 1980 military coup between 1980 and 1985. From 1986 onwards, the issue of human rights became the main topic of EU accession for Turkey and the EU’s agenda. Dagi points out that the new civilian government under the Prime Minister Ozal wanted to continue economic and politic relations with the EU and other international institutions. Because of this, Ozal tried new attempts to return democracy in Turkey (Dagi, 2001). For instance, a ban of former politician leader was lifted by a referendum which was prepared by the Ozal government at the end of 1986 (Evin, 2005). Moreover, the Ozal government granted a limited amnesty with an amendment on the execution of prosecution law which resulted in the release of 31,000 prisoners (Dagi, 2001). Nevertheless these positive changes had not found enough European Community in terms of Turkey’s accession. Ugur shows that most of the specific areas were not solved by the civilian government: the death penalty, the penal code and the code of criminal procedures, the anti-terror law, the treatment of the Kurdish minority and the anti-democratic provisions of the 1982 constitution (Ugur, 1999). Although Ozal wanted to improve relations with the European Community, the Community believed that Turkey was not ready for full access of the EU. Dagi explains this view as follows:

“Ozal believed that Turkey's relations and cooperation with the West should not be exclusively centered around a common defence strategy. He wanted to have closer economic ties, which were considered to be essential in order to integrate Turkey structurally into Europe. Despite the return to civilian government, Turkey's *de facto* frozen relations with the Community did not immediately start moving. The EC continued to make the reactivation of relations conditional on an improvement in the Turkish human rights record. The prevailing view was that despite general elections Turkey still had a long way to go for the full realization of democracy.” (Dagi 2001, p.58).

Ozal’s government applied for a full membership of the European Community in April 1987. As a result of negative effects and developments, The European Commission responded in December 1989 by confirming Ankara’s eventual membership but also by deferring the matter to more favourable times, citing Turkey’s economic and political situation, as well its poor relations with Greece and the conflict with Cyprus as creating an unfavourable environment with which to begin negotiations (Dorransoro, 2004). Moreover, Turkey’s human rights regime and protection of minority rights had not reached the level required in a full democracy according to the Commission’s decision.

After the end of the Cold War and the collapse of Soviet Union communism, Turkey's situation started to change in terms of the EU accession process. The end of the West-East divide gave hope to Turkey about the accession to the European Union after 1989 (Jorgensen and LaGro, 2007). As a result, Turkey started partial reforms to improve the human rights record in the country. Ugur points out that these were moderate changes; partial reform continued after the negative verdict of the Commission in December 1989 on Turkey's membership application. In 1991, Turkey introduced a number of improvements which included the permission to use the Kurdish language in publications from February 1991 onwards; the annulment of Articles 141,142 and 163 of the penal code on 12 April 1991; the commutation of the death sentences to 20 years and life sentences to 15 years in the same month; and the early conditional release of a large number of political prisoners on 16 July 1991 (Ugur, 1999).

Nevertheless, these positive changes in constitutions and other general rules of law were not enough to fulfill the Copenhagen Criteria in terms of the EU accession process. The Kurdish issue was one of the main controversial issues for human rights violations in Turkey. Historically, the Kurdish political movement had many difficulties in Turkish politics. Smith indicates that Kurdish political leaders were jailed, killed or disappeared; books which were written in the Kurdish language and about Kurdish nationalism were seized; and Kurdish newspapers, magazines, and civil organisations have been closed by the state since the 1980's (Smith, 2003). Moreover, the anti-terror law (Law 3173) which was established to punish the Kurdistan Worker's Party's (PKK) military actions towards Turkey's forces was an important problem in terms of human rights. Article 8 in this law punished people due to their expressions (violent or not) with long prison sentences and heavy fines. Consequently, the number of prisoners who were Kurdish people rose significantly during the conflict between PKK and Turkish military forces (Yildiz, 2005).

Additionally, The Turkish Court decision to dissolve the pro-Kurdish Democracy Party (DEP) in June 1994 and the trials of the DEP members of parliament – which occurred at the time when Turkey was pressing for the customs union – were an important indication that EU influence on Turkey's policy choices was limited in this regard (Yildiz, 2005). Indeed this issue was important for the European Union in terms of the Copenhagen Criteria and Turkey's membership process. Because of this, the European Parliament called on Turkey to release six members of parliament who were from the pro-Kurdish Democracy Party and to vacate Article 8 of the anti-terror law (Kirisci, 1999). All these negative developments affected the economic relationship between the EU and Turkey during this period. Under these circumstances, both Turkey and the EU seemed to settle with a customs union by the Ankara association agreement which was established in 1963. Dagı shows how the issue of human rights was affected during the creating of this customs union between the European Union and Turkey:

“ . . . However, even in the routine process of setting up a customs union, the issues of human rights and democratisation came up to a degree that put the Turkish government under pressure, as it was determined to reach an agreement and then sell it to the Turkish public as a major breakthrough. The EP had passed a resolution following the decision of the association council that human rights conditions in Turkey were not satisfactory to permit setting up a customs union with this country.” (Dagı 2001, p.64).

Nevertheless, this negative situation in Turkey's human rights record could not stop the creation of a customs union between Turkey and the EU in 1995. Especially the leading EU members like France and the UK supported Turkey and lobbied the other member countries to compromise for a customs union with Turkey (Rumford, 2001). Despite this support, the EU

has not stopped its criticism about the issue of human rights violations in Turkey. In October 1996, a commission report on the progress of the customs union highlighted the need to introduce more reforms in the field of human rights. This proved that the EU was determined to insert political issues which are the human rights, democratisation and the Kurdish question into every aspect of EU-Turkey relations, including the customs union (Arikan, 2002).

Additionally, the reforms which must be implemented by candidate states were first outlined in the documents with the title "Agenda 2000" published by the Commission in July 1997. This document shows that Turkey is not eligible for accession and it must provide the quality of human rights and democracy in Turkey:

"... Despite political recognition of the need for improvement and certain recent legislative changes, Turkey's record on upholding the rights of the individual and freedom of expression falls well short of standards in the EU. In combating terrorism in the south east, Turkey needs to restraint, to make greater efforts to uphold the rule of law and human rights and to find a civil and not a military solution". (European Communities, "Agenda 2000", 1997)

As a result, the European Council rejected Turkey's application for candidate status in 1997 at the Luxembourg Council due to poor human rights record and tensions with Greece. The Turkish government believed the EU's decision to be extremely critical and it was far from encouraging and persuading Turkey to fulfill the Copenhagen Criteria (Hale, 2013). Then, Prime Minister Mesut Yilmaz threatened the European Union with withdrawing Turkey's membership application and froze the relations with the EU. Smith indicates that Yilmaz and his government thought that some European countries, especially Germany, were pursuing a policy of *Lebensraum*, which was Hitler's foreign policy and Germany's policy is not related to the human rights problems in Turkey (Smith, 2003). On the other hand the politics of Turkey changed with the 1999 election. The far right party, the National Action Party, won about 17 percent of the vote in this election, became the second largest party in parliament and became a partner of the coalition government until 2002. The EU was concerned about this situation due to the eurosceptic view of the National Action Party (Duzgit and Keyman, 2007). In conjunction with this concern, despite of all these negative events and developments, EU finally recognised Turkey as a candidate country at the Helsinki summit in December 1999.

After the Helsinki Summit in 1999, the EU placed some conditions for full membership as short term and medium term. Smith explains that strengthening freedom of expression, civil society, stamping out torture, giving opportunities for legal redress against human rights violations, intensifying human rights training for law enforcement officials and maintaining the moratorium on capital punishment were some important aims for Turkey to access the EU in the short term. Over the medium term, Turkey should guarantee all human rights and fundamental freedoms; improve freedom of thought and religion; review the Turkish constitution in terms of protecting human rights and freedoms; abolish the death penalty; develop detention conditions in prisons and guarantee cultural rights for all citizens (Smith, 2003). As a result of these conditions, the Turkish government started to build a framework where Turkey carried out political reforms in order to fulfil the Copenhagen Criteria. Moreover, the Turkish authorities prepared a 'National Programme for the Adoption of the Acquis' in March 2001 (Dogan, 2006). Following the National Programme, political reform continued with 34 constitutional amendments in October 2001. The Turkish assembly passed nine harmonisation packages until 2004. These packages aimed to improve and protect workers' rights, freedom of expression, freedom of association, the right to demonstrate, freedom of thought, and cultural rights especially for minority groups (Duzgit and Keyman, 2007).

Indeed Turkey made remarkable advances in the development of human rights between 2001 and 2005. However, there has not been the same indication after 2005 in terms of the improvement of human rights and democracy. Hale points out this phenomenon below:

“Between 2001 and 2005, Turkey made remarkable advances in the improvement of human rights. However, over the next four years, the reform process slackened severely, causing pessimists to predict that it might evaporate altogether. A commonly given explanation for this was that, up to 2005, Turkish governments had a powerful incentive to improve Turkey’s human rights regime, as demanded by the European Union (EU) as an essential condition for the start of accession negotiations. Once these negotiations had officially begun in October 2005, it was suggested, the incentive for further reform slackened significantly. This effect was compounded by the fact that some European leaders, in France and Germany in particular, now voiced open opposition to the whole principle of eventual Turkish membership, strengthening the arguments of those in Turkey who opposed further political reforms or closer alignment with the EU.” (Hale 2011, p.323).

CONCLUSION

Turkey has affected the impact of the European Union in human right policies since the 1980’s. It is an undeniable fact that the issue of human rights has played one of the most prominent roles during the EU membership process for Turkey. The EU has criticised Turkey since the 1980’s because of the human rights abuses. Moreover, the Copenhagen Criteria which was established for candidate states has become important for Turkey in terms of human rights. Although Turkey started the political reform programme in 2001 after the starting of Turkey’s candidacy status with the Helsinki Council in 1999, these problems cannot be solved by the Justice and Development Party (AKP) which has been in government as the ruling party. The issue of human rights has been one of the most important problems for Turkey to access the European Union. Secondly, I aim to explain the real situation in Turkey in terms of human rights, since most people in Europe have not known about the human rights abuses in Turkey. Nine harmonisation packages and some constitutional amendments were enacted by the Turkish parliament between 2001 and 2005. It was an important step to improve the protection of human rights and to liberalise laws. However, the AKP government has not continued these steps after 2005 (Hale, 2011). Indeed, this phenomenon has badly damaged Turkey-EU relations and Turkey’s full membership process to the European Union.

REFERENCES

- Arikan, Harun (2002) “A Lost Opportunity? A Critique of the EU's Human Rights Policy Towards Turkey”, *Mediterranean Politics*, 7:1, 19-50.
- Arikan, Harun (2003) “Turkey and the EU: an awkward candidate for EU membership?” , Ashgate.
- Dagi, Ihsan (1998) “Democratic Transition in Turkey, 1980-83: The impact of European Diplomacy”, in Kedourie, Sylvia, (ed.) *Turkey: identity, democracy, politics*, Frank Cass, pp.124-142.
- Dagi, Ihsan (2001) “Human rights and democratization: Turkish politics in the European context”, *Southeast European and Black Sea Studies*, 1:3, 51-68.

- Dagi, Ihsan (2001) "Human Rights, Democratization and the European Community in Turkish Politics: The Özal Years, 1983-87", *Middle Eastern Studies*, 37:1, 17-40.
- Dogan, Nejat (2006) "Human Rights and Turkey's Bid for EU Membership: Will "Fundamental Rights of the Union" Bring Fundamental Changes to the Turkish Constitution and Turkish Politics?", *Turkish Studies*, 7:2, 243-259.
- Dorronsoro, Gilles (2004) "The EU and Turkey: between geopolitics and social engineering", in Dannreuther, Roland, (ed.) *European Union foreign and security policy: towards a neighbourhood strategy*, Routledge, pp.48-62.
- Düzgüt, Senem Aydın and Keyman, Fuat (2007) "Democratization and Human Rights in Turkey", in Jørgensen, Knud Erik; LaGro, Esra, (ed.) *Turkey and the European Union: prospects for a difficult encounter*, Palgrave MacMillan, pp.69-90.
- European Communities (1997), "Agenda 2000, For a Strong and wider Union", available online at: http://www.cvce.eu/content/publication/2005/7/1/5f7d6fda-6eb6-464c-80d2-1842936c43b3/publishable_en.pdf (Accessed date: 12 July 2013)
- Evin, O. Ahmet (2005) "From Ozal to the Present Day", in Lake, Michael, (ed.) *The EU & Turkey: a glittering prize or a millstone?*, Federal Trust for Education and Research, London, pp.29-49
- Hale, William (2011), "Human Rights and Turkey's EU Accession Process: Internal and External Dynamics, 2005–10", *South European Society and Politics*, 16:2, 323-333.
- Hale, William (2013), "Turkish Foreign Policy since 1774" , Routledge, New York.
- Jørgensen, Knud Erik; LaGro, Esra (2007) "Turkey and the European Union: prospects for a difficult encounter", Palgrave MacMillan.
- Kirisci, Kemal (1999) "Turkey and the Mediterranean", in Stavridis, Stelios, (ed.) *The foreign policies of the European Union's Mediterranean states and applicant countries in the 1990s*, Macmillan, pp.250-295.
- Robins, Philip (2003) "Turkish foreign policy since the Cold War" , University of Washington Press.
- Rumford, Chris (2001) "Human Rights and Democratization in Turkey in the Context of EU Candidature", *Journal of European Area Studies*, 9:1, 93-105.
- Smith, Thomas W (2003) "The Politics of conditionality: the European Union and human rights reform in Turkey", in Kubicek, Paul, (ed.) *The European Union and democratization: reluctant states*, Routledge, pp.111-132.
- Ugur, Mehmet (1999) "The European Union and Turkey: an anchor-credibility dilemma" , Ashgate.
- Yildiz, Kerim (2005) "The Kurds in Turkey: EU accession and human rights", Pluto Press in association with Kurdish Human Rights Project.

INSTANT MESSAGING GROUPS: IS IT CONVENIENCE OR TORTURE?

Mehmet Emin Bakay¹, Sevtap Ünal², Aygöl Arslan³

^{1,2,3} Social Sciences Institute, Faculty of Business Administration and Economics, Katip Çelebi University, İzmir, Turkey

ABSTRACT

Instant message applications have become one of today's indispensable communication tools. Besides such positive contributions, are there any negative aspects of text messaging applications? This question constitutes the main research problem of the study. The study aims to examine the disturbing situations, and the emotions and thoughts of the participants while using instant messaging applications (Whatsup, Instagram, Facebook, Telegram, Twitter, etc.) that they participate voluntarily. A total of 14 participants were included in the research sample. According to the results, disturbing situations of the users in the group; violation of privacy, harassment, hurtful words and behaviors and gender discrimination. The main reasons why users accept these situations are primarily various fears. These are fear of standing out, fear of authority, fear of being alone, fear of being misunderstood, and fear of conflict. The other factor is the cultural structure they are in and the personal characteristics of the users (silent, insensitive, etc.). In order to take precautions against these actions, it has been revealed that trainings on the use of instant messaging applications and social media should be disseminated, awareness-raising activities should be organized and reaction should be taken to establish the right communication.

Keywords: instant messages; social identity theory; social norms normative community pressure

INTRODUCTION

The Internet has become essential today. It has become indispensable for fundamental experiences such as work, education, social relations, entertainment, shopping, and communication. With the COVID-19 outbreak, the place of the Internet and social media that takes place in our lives have become even more important. Like many internet applications, instant messaging applications have started to play a fundamental role in both our business and social lives. They have now become the main medium for sharing between groups such as work, education, close friends, and family (Chung and Nam, 2007; Pimmer et al., 2018). However, there are also dark sides to the vital benefits that instant messaging apps offer. The number of these groups, which are generally formed with work, friends, family, or school groups, increases depending on the number of connections and causes serious information pollution. At the same time, sharing and waiting for a response from messaging groups every day of the week and every hour of the day, and if you do not answer, your freedom can be very limited (Chung and Nam, 2007). It has to be mentioned that the characteristics of the culture in which it takes place are also effective in this regard. Compliance with group norms is very important in collective cultures like Turkey. Social identity theory focuses on the perceptual and cognitive foundations of a group membership. Reference groups undertake the “informational” function, which is expressed as providing useful information to people. People want to be group members to access important information. In addition, individuals participate because they think that belonging to a social group has symbolic meanings. All social groups offer their members a common identity with various symbols. Especially if the behavior is important within the scope of subjective norms, the sanction of the group on the person becomes stronger. Subjective norms express that important beliefs and attitudes for the

group and group dynamics have a directive effect on the behavior of individuals (Ajzen, 2005). Individuals tend to conform more to subjective norms, especially when it comes to groups with friends, family, relatives, or other connections (Sardana et al., 2020).

Another factor that influences a person's adaptation to a group is that the people who are respected in the group are opinion leaders, celebrities, or people with high authority. With the effect of power, authority, or advocacy that these people have, normative community pressure makes itself felt and the behavior of people to conform to the group increases (Martin et al., 2008). The dynamics in these groups and the behavior of conforming to the group formed the aim of the study. The study was aimed to examine the effect of the groups in the instant messaging applications (Whatsup, Instagram, Facebook, Telegram, Twitter, etc.) in which people participate voluntarily in the group conformity behavior and the feelings and thoughts of the members towards this situation. It has been tried to determine whether individuals who show conformity behavior to the group fall into the "victim" position and if this is the case, their feelings, thoughts, and reactions.

LITERATURE REVIEW

The human being is described as "a social animal" (Aronson, 1980). Therefore, it has always been important for human beings to join groups and use the "we" instead of "I". Groups have a great contribution to make our lives easier. In general, groups help us gain knowledge, acquire various values, and acquire an identity (Solomon, 2017; Tomasello, 2014). Social identity theory explains the behavior of people joining the group as follows: The individual wants to join the group because he thinks that belonging to a certain social group has an emotional and symbolic meaning. All social groups, large or small, provide their members with a shared identity that determines and evaluates who they are, what they should believe, and how they should behave (McKeown et al., 2016). Because it is stated that groups give individuals a sense of belonging to a symbolic world (McLeod, 2021; Glass and Li, 2010). It is stated that individuals try to achieve and maintain a positive social identity in their groups, thereby increasing their self-esteem. It is argued that this positive identity is largely due to positive comparisons that can be made within and outside the group. If individuals have an unsatisfactory identity as a result of their comparisons, it is seen that individuals may try to leave their groups or seek ways to obtain a more positive distinctiveness for the group (Brown, 2000). An individual shares common characteristics and beliefs with other members of the group. Therefore, when individuals identify with a group, they see themselves as part of the group and try harder to achieve the group's goals (Lin et al., 2017).

Norms play an active role in joining and adapting to the group. Norms determine the boundaries of social identities of groups and individuals (McKeown et al., 2016). In this direction, an individual with subjective norms is expected to exhibit behaviors by within-group norms. It is stated that individuals try to make themselves look like an in-group prototype by acting according to group norms in this direction. Subjective norms are based on individuals' perceptions of what other people want them to do. It is largely based on the need for approval and reflects the influence of other people on the behavior of individuals (Bagozzi et al., 2007). It is seen that subjective norms are more effective on their behaviors when individuals want to identify too much with the groups they belong to and when they feel obliged to fulfill group norms (Sardana et al., 2020). Regarding this process, social psychologists state that the need for approval by the people in the group is the primary reason for regulating the behavior of individuals (Algesheimer et al., 2005).

This normative pressure to conform to the populist view of the society or group directs the behavior of individuals, especially when supported by the ideas of members such as the

leaders of the group and opinion leaders. In addition, the behavior of someone with subjective norms to comply with group norms does not only depend on the fact that someone has more power than the individual but also on the family, friend, school, etc. that individuals want to be in. It is seen that the thoughts of the individuals in the groups are also important (Shen et al., 2010; Sardana et al., 2020).

Normative community pressure affects community members in the way they behave. Community norms are expressed in two ways. These are social norms/norms of conformity and personal acceptance of norms. Group norms become oppressive when the first condition is fulfilled and the second condition is insufficient. Norms turn into oppression when individuals do not want to accept the norms personally. However, it is stated that some members feel that they are a part of the groups they belong to and that they see group norms as necessary to have a good social identity. In this case, it is seen that individuals do not perceive group norms as pressure (Lindiawati et al., 2019). In this study, the emotions felt by people when the second situation is not valid and group norms are perceived as pressure was tried to be examined in the dimension of in-group text messaging, which is today's most important communication tool. The research questions, research design, and findings of the research are given below.

RESEARCH MODEL

The study aims to present suggestions about the disturbing situations that undergraduate, graduate and doctoral students encounter in instant messaging groups and the precautions that can be taken by revealing the feelings and thoughts of those who are exposed to it. For this purpose, answers to the research questions presented below are sought.

- (1) What are the disruptive actions encountered in instant messaging groups?
- (2) What are the characteristics of those who create and are exposed to offensive actions in instant messaging groups?
- (3) What are the precautions that can be taken against offensive actions in instant messaging groups?

Participants

The study group consists of a total of 14 people, 5 undergraduate, 4 graduate, and 5 doctoral students at 6 different universities. The ages of the students range from 20 to 44. 11 female and 3 male students were included in the study. Demographic data of the students are presented in Table 1.

Table 1. Demographics of Participants

Participants	Age	Gender	Education Status	University
P1	20	Female	Undergraduate	Anadolu University
P2	43	Male	Doctoral	Katip Çelebi University
P3	32	Female	Doctoral	Katip Çelebi University
P4	24	Female	Undergraduate	Süleyman Demirel University
P5	44	Female	Doctoral	Katip Çelebi University
P6	25	Female	Graduate	Katip Çelebi University
P7	29	Female	Doctoral	Katip Çelebi University
P8	23	Female	Undergraduate	Katip Çelebi University
P9	26	Male	Graduate	Katip Çelebi University

P10	20	Female	Undergraduate	Ege University
P11	24	Male	Undergraduate	Dokuz Eylül University
P12	32	Female	Doctoral	Katip Çelebi University
P13	24	Female	Graduate	Adnan Menderes University
P14	25	Female	Graduate	Süleyman Demirel University

Data Collection Tool

The semi-structured questionnaire, which is a data collection tool, was developed by the researchers and was finalized by taking the opinions of two different faculty members who are experts in the field. The interview form consists of 19 questions, 3 of which are demographic data and 16 of which are to collect participant views on the research questions. The interview form was applied to 3 people, and it was evaluated by the researchers according to the feedback obtained and given its final form. There is also a “Volunteer Participation Form” in the introductory part of the data collection tool.

Data Collection Process

Interviews were conducted with 14 undergraduate, graduate, and doctoral students, using the Zoom program and the interviews lasted between 30 and 45 minutes. Interviews with the consent of the participants were recorded for later analysis. Participants were given the scope of the study and necessary information by the researchers about the process and data protection before the study. The participants were informed that they could leave at any stage of the interview and that they were not obliged to answer questions that bothered them.

Data Analysis

The data obtained from the interviews were transferred to the computer, and the raw data were analyzed by the researchers with the inductive content analysis method. For this, first of all, the raw data were carefully read by the researchers. Then, open coding was done with content analysis. After open coding, patterns were found, and then themes and sub-themes were reached. While determining the themes, it was checked whether the expressions under each theme were consistent with themselves and with the theme title. Opinions of the participants P1, P2 It has been transferred in a coded format.

Validity and Reliability

To increase the reliability of the research and to prevent data loss, the interviews were recorded. The coding was re-coded by two faculty members who are experts in the field. To check the consistency between the two codes, the coders got together and reviewed the coded data. There was a 75% similarity between the themes created by the two experts. A consensus was reached on the different themes.

Findings And Discussion

First, the social media tool preferences were asked. According to the findings, it is seen that undergraduate students use social media and instant messaging applications more than graduate students. This situation can be expressed by the age difference. The frequency and percentage distributions of the instant messaging applications most used by the participants are presented in Table 2.

Table 2. Frequencies of Instant Messages Applications Most Used by Participants

Apps	f	%
Whatsapp	14	100%
Instagram	14	%100
Youtube	13	%92
Twitter	13	%92
Facebook	8	%57
Linkedin	5	%38
Pinterest	4	%21
Telegram	2	%14

When the data is examined, it can be seen that all of the participants mostly use WhatsApp and Instagram. Youtube, Twitter, Facebook follow these apps. It is seen that the least used applications are Linkedin, Pinterest, and Telegram. Considering the purposes of using instant messaging applications; participants state that instant messaging applications facilitate communication, are an important socialization tool, thus they follow the agenda, and using these applications is a necessity and necessity today. At the same time, it can be said that it is easier to access visual materials thanks to these applications and it has become the main source of news. It would not be wrong to say that classical news sources such as television, radio, and newspapers are now replaced by social media and instant messaging applications and are becoming more common day by day. One of the participants expressed this situation as follows:

“At the beginning, though, the purpose of Instagram was to share photos, many people today use it to follow the update. Similarly, I think Twitter is a news channel (P3).”

It is seen that instant messaging applications are very important in terms of accomplishing almost all the communication needs by their users in the social environment, business, and school. As a result of the interviews, it is stated that Whatsapp is of vital importance, as it facilitates and accelerates communication for the participants. One of the participants expresses this situation as follows:

“Whatsapp has become essential now. Because everyone communicates there. You have to communicate from there because no more messages like it used to be. Whatsapp became a part of life (P8).”

Some of the participants, who stated that Whatsapp is the easiest way to reach communication channels in school, business, and daily life, express that Whatsapp groups have become a necessity with the following:

“There is a side of me that I like to talk about a little more privately. But there are also obligations. Some things, even everything, are on social media. When our professor sends us any information, he writes from the group because he wants to reach more than one person

with a single message. Not being in that group also causes me to fall behind in knowledge or not learn when a plan is made. That's why I have to be in those groups (P1)."

Instant message apps are a socialization tool for users as well as facilitating communication with the business or school group. Connecting this, the participants stated that besides Whatsapp they use Instagram and Twitter as socialization tools. Stating that it facilitates communication with family and friends and provides the opportunity to be included in the lives of people around them, the participants express that they do not feel alone thanks to social media groups. At the same time, the participants, who stated that they had the opportunity to meet different people in social media groups, stated that these groups strengthened their social networks. At this point, the participants stated that while they see Whatsapp mostly as a means of socializing with their close friends, they use Instagram and Twitter to have information about the country and world agenda and to follow the latest updates. One of the participants expresses this situation in the following:

"Everything would be very difficult, especially during this period. I am working with different people from different parts of the world on several projects. I guess if there were no WhatsApp groups, I would have much more difficulty in communicating with people around the world (P12)."

Another question of the research is "What are the distributive actions encountered in instant messaging groups?" After analyzing the data, the following themes and sub-themes were reached.

Table 3. The themes and sub-themes of distributive actions encountered in instant messaging groups

Main Theme	Sub Themes
Violation of privacy	Added to the group without your approval Violation of privacy Sharing posts about eating, drinking, and traveling Being in the same group with people you don't know
Abuse	Imposing ideas (religious or political) Biased posts Being forced to express or support an opinion Excessive messages Psychological pressure
Offensive Actions	Cursing, insults, rude speech Contempt/Ridicule Humiliation of others Using status Incoherent speech and inappropriate addressing Gossip Pranks Aggression and irritability Provocation
Gender Discrimination	Male-dominated speeches Obscenity

It can be said that the disturbing events encountered in instant messaging groups are the violation of privacy, harassment, hurtful actions and gender discrimination, respectively. It is

stated that the most disturbing situation for the participants is that they are included in any group without being asked. Participants added that they frequently encounter this situation especially in family and work groups. Most of the participants state that they do not want to be included in these groups, but they cannot leave these groups for some compelling reasons. One of the participants stated this situation;

“So if the plan is made without your opinions being asked and I am taken into it without being asked or not, it affects me very badly. That sounds like bullying to me too (P1).”

Another participant expresses this situation as follows:

“For example, someone, I think, is an officer from work. If I remember correctly, it was very funny to celebrate Holy Friday. Actually, he included people in a group to celebrate Holy Friday. Oh, it was so funny. So I thought, why am I in this group? Why was this group formed? And why am I here? I love that friend too, I don't want to offend, I even wrote, so why did you add me to the group this Friday? Can I get out, so there are people from this group and people I don't know, we're together. (P5)”

Other participants stated that they find it disturbing that their posts related to their private life is shared by her friends in social groups, intentionally or unintentionally;

“My friend doesn't think I have a private life. So everyone's perception is different. I shared something with him, but he couldn't understand that it was private or whether I wanted to share it. He is sharing at the time and I feel the need to write to him privately. Or, some people can comment on me just because of their annoyance, or share a secret of mine. (P1)”

“They add your phone number to different WhatsApp groups, you can leave, but it stays there clearly until you leave, you know, it's visible. Then, for example, I found myself in conversations that I should not have been included in groups that I should never have been (P4).

Participants state that posts about eating, drinking, and traveling are disturbing and that they have to meet people they do not know by being included in the same groups, even though they do not want to. One participant expresses this situation as follows:

“For example, there are close friend lists on Instagram, in stories. I don't know them, I wouldn't greet them if I saw them on the street or remembered their faces, but I am among their close friend list. I can see their ridiculous car stories, a photo of him with his girlfriend or whatever, and it comes across (P8).

Another main theme expressed by the participants is disturbing actions that can be described as harassment in groups. Among these, they state that they are uncomfortable with trying to impose religious or political ideas, being forced to express opinions, a constant bombardment of messages at the late times, and the psychological pressure created by these messages. Some of the participants express these situations as follows:

“The way of thinking of the members of the group is very different from each other, so there are a lot of things that bother me while talking. People trying to impose their own opinion. I usually get very uncomfortable with such people. (P4)”

“A group that is texted a lot and that I never wanted to be in also makes me feel stuck, frankly. I feel stuck between quitting and not leaving that group. (P12)”

“I don't want to miss any information shared in groups with a lot of messages, but I don't want to read 30-40 messages to catch that information, for example, he writes a lot. It really bothers me. (P12)”

“In Whatsapp groups, we sometimes have to stay in the same groups with people we don't know, so this can be a university project team, it can be in a different working group. Then, there is a discussion or a dialogue between two people and I am not a member of it, but I get a constant message throughout the day and it actually makes me tired even if I am not in that discussion (P12)”

“For example, one of the things that bother me is like this; I think it's bullying to think that if there is an event or breaking news everyone has to express an opinion on the subject, and everyone should show sensitivity to the issue. (P3)”

“There are people who believe everything they see and try to comment directly on everything they read. So it bothers me. (P8)”

One of the factors that have an important role in establishing the right communication is to select the correct words. It is also imperative in social groups, which has become one of the foundations of daily communication. The inability to convey emotions in online media requires careful selection of the words used in the text. In the interviews, the participants stated that the swearing, insults, or rude speeches in the group communications were very disturbing. For some group members, these words, which are in the colloquial language, are considered normal, but it was seen that the majority of the participants were uncomfortable with it. Some participants said the following about this;

“...it bothers me a lot when people insult each other on social media, crosses the border, and don't know the lines. (P5)”

“.....especially hate speech, polarization on Twitter and Instagram, defamation of each other, this can be both political and cultural, and people's beliefs and preferences. The hate speech towards each other on these various things is the first thing that strikes me, that bothers me. (P3)”

“Once, they started to say insulting words to each other, then they closed that group, so that's what I just said, they also ended that group later on. That's a sad situation. (P7)”

“As a person who does not use profanity in my daily life, I am disturbed by other people's abusive speech. However, I see it used frequently nowadays. For some people, it has even become used to say hello. Apart from that, it bothers me that Foreign words are embedded in people's daily conversations. For example, they always say “ok” instead of native words.(P8)”

“I also get angry when someone says something insulting when bullying is done. Because at this point, since I am a character who would say, "Wait, you can't talk to that person that way" if we were in a social environment, it bothers me not to say that in that group, even if I say it, it will be misunderstood, and not to say it at all. (P12)”

It is stated that the words used do not always have to be insulting or profanity in order to disturb them. It is seen that it is a very disturbing situation for members to make fun of each other's behaviors, preferences, and ideas in the group. A participant who states that he is sometimes ridiculed with his speaking style and sometimes with his behavior states that not only himself but also other members are exposed to this situation in the following way:

“In the groups we play in, for example, my inability to play the game, my behavior, my way of speaking, etc., come back to me as criticism. I don't know if it's defined as bullying, but there was someone who described serving something to eat while playing online games as henpecked. (P11)”

One participant stated that platforms that provide access to different ideas, especially users who have conflicts of opinion, express their opinions by inoculating each other and that they are uncomfortable with the use of social media applications in this way;

“Sometimes, even though I don’t have the same opinion, I read different opinions on social media on Twitter to see what they have in mind. I see the conversations of both sides mixed with insulting each other and I am very sad. (P9)”

Another problem experienced in social groups is that group members use their status to suppress other users. It has been stated that situations are also encountered in social media applications. The participants stated that they were uncomfortable and sometimes directly exposed to the use of status to dominate and influence others in this way. Some users said the following about it;

“We have a WhatsApp group of elementary school parents. There is also a district governor among the parents. A parent wrote something, the district governor’s wife warned very harshly she has no right to such a thing, but she warned. Then the teacher got involved in this, the teacher apologized to the wife of the district governor. I couldn't understand this situation, so why did the teacher apologize now? She was the one who had the authority to do the bullying. (P5)”

“Just like in daily life, I feel very much that the status difference is tried to be felt in social media and social groups. I feel too much. Even being the manager of the group, for example, seems to me as if it creates the idea that only he can be an authority in that group. (P1)”

On the other hand, the members do not pay attention to the way they address each other in the group is described as levity for some participants. The participants stated that the members who made lowly speeches thought it was an indication of sincerity, but that it was disturbing and attention should be paid to the way of speaking. Regarding this, a participant expresses it as follows;

“Commune is so uncomfortable. As you say, the young generation, you know much better, they can act very easily and they can talk about everything, they think that they can criticize everything. (P5)”

In addition, especially female participants express that they are uncomfortable with the perception of girl groups only as a gossip group and the use of groups in that way by their fellows. Finally, it is seen that the participants think that the jokes based on sincerity in the group sometimes exceed the limit and reach disturbing dimensions. The inability to adjust the dose of jokes made in the group is not considered correct by the participants, as it causes humiliation of the person being joked about.

Some of the participants state that these behaviors can be exhibited just to show themselves and belong to a group. Since there is no obligation to confirm the accuracy of what is shared on social media, users have stated that they can pretend to be someone they are not, and thus seem to have the characteristics of the group they feel belong to. The opinions of the participants about this are as follows;

“Because everybody wants to show off. See me "This is who I am". Everyone wants to belong to a group. It doesn't matter which group it belongs to. But everyone has a desire to belong to a group. That's why he wants to create a world of his own. The easiest way for this is social media because no one will tell you this is a lie, this is the truth if you share it. (P8)”

The interview results also state that some people in the group exert psychological pressure and aggression is observed in these people. The interview results also state that some people in the group exert psychological pressure and aggression is observed in these people. Some

people who try to influence others by displaying vicious attitudes achieve their goals, but it would not be wrong to say that they are described as disturbing by other group members. Regarding this, the opinions of the participants;

“So these people like to pressure and influence them to get what they want. These are the types who say whatever I want or whatever (P7)”

“Especially people who are very aggressive when expressing their own opinions can be disturbing. (P4)”

Another disturbing activity in instant messaging is the male-dominated perspective and messages with obscene content. Participants state that these behaviors are done by many people, including their close friends, sometimes unknowingly and sometimes specifically to hurt them. It was observed that the obscene speeches that included gender discrimination in the groups disturbed the participants. Women participants expressed their views on this issue as follows;

“I don't like the fact that there is a difference between men and women in the group and men try to establish dominance. While we have considerate boyfriends who react to people who do this, derogatory remarks that directly target women are quite upsetting (P4).

“Obscene words can be used, people can taunt each other, I think people don't communicate properly anymore (P10).”

Participants were asked how they defined their roles in instant messaging groups. When the answers are given are analyzed, the participants identified themselves respectively; passive, spectator, listener, neutral, conciliatory, and cowardly. Participants, who are relatively more active in friend and family groups, state that they remain spectators in school and workgroups and often participate in conversations when necessary. Some participants stated that they are in business and parent groups only to get information and to follow school/work issues, so there should be no messaging other than the purpose of the group. On the other hand, some of the participants stated that they preferred to remain passive because they thought that their opinions would not be considered and respected. Some of the participants' opinions are presented below;

“I don't usually take a very active role in in-group posts. My attitude is generally not to interfere with conversations unless it reaches the final point. I just state my opinion, withdraw and continue watching. I prefer to watch, I have a spectator role. I prefer to be active if necessary, but I am never the one who uses very harsh language (P5).”

“I prefer to stay calm and stay behind at this point. I prefer not to participate too much, especially in situations that bother me, but I follow from a distance (P7).”

“I try not to be a side to anything, especially on social media. Because the country we live in is not a place with such democratic and contemporary people. In other words, they are not people who respect each other and their ideas and discuss them in a respectful manner. (P3).”

“Actually, I'm the one who listens to the conversations in the background. If it is not a topic that is very relevant to me or something I would like to be involved in, I am not the person who texts and actively uses it at every point. I read, maybe I approve or not, but if I don't want to write, I don't write (P4).”

According to the results, it is seen that only two participants take an active role and these participants also take a leadership role in the group and share content more frequently. Some of the participants, who generally choose to remain silent, show that they do not have free

time to be active, while others do not like to be constantly chatting in the group and they are aware that the discussions will not be concluded as the reason.

The answers given to the research question “What are the reasons for accepting offensive actions in instant messaging groups?” were analyzed and the themes and sub-themes presented below were reached.

Table 4. Themes and sub-themes of reasons for accepting offensive actions in instant messaging groups

Main Theme	Subtheme
Fear	Fear of flagrancy/ Fear of having problems at work Fear of authority Fear of being misunderstood Fear of being alone Fear of being guilty Abstain from conflict
Cultural structure	Respect Kindness Upbringing Traditions and customs
Personality Traits	Silence Insensibility Not to take seriously Habit

When we look at the reasons for accepting disturbing actions in instant messaging groups, it is found that three themes come to the forefront and these are fear, cultural structure, and personality traits.

Fear is one of the most disturbing actions encountered in instant messaging groups. The theme of fear also emerges in different forms as fear of losing one's job, fear of flagrancy, fear of authority, fear of being alone, and fear of conflict. It would not be wrong to say that most of the participants were unresponsive and put up with uncomfortable situations because they could not take the chance to be harmed.

It has been observed that the presence of high-status members in social groups affects the reactions of other members. The participants stated that they were unresponsive because they were afraid that when they gave the necessary reaction in groups with authorities such as the boss, manager, etc., they would stand out and they would have problems in their business life. Statements of some participants regarding this issue are presented below;

“A parent in my child’s school group constantly puts pressure on and humiliates the teacher in the group because of his wife's position. The teacher, on the other hand, has to submit to pressure because he knows that he has to get on well with the parents because of the fear of the school administration and the fear of being unemployed” (P5).

“Reacting to disturbing behavior in business instant messaging groups, especially in groups with managers, makes us stand out. Glaring negatively affects comfort in the working environment. That's why I prefer to remain unresponsive to such events”(P7).

In the groups other than the workgroups, it is seen that the majority of the participants did not react because they were afraid of being misunderstood. Even if the participants express themselves well, they think that the groups are a suitable environment for misunderstanding. In such cases, they express that they think that they will be guilty and that the problem will not improve, maybe even grow, with the following sentences;

“The reason I can't react is that I'm afraid of being misunderstood if it's not a group with which I have an intimate relationship. Frankly, if I tell a person in the group that he or she has acted inappropriately, I am afraid and hesitant that that person may perceive it as an insult to his beliefs, maybe to his character, or even to his personality, not to his behavior. (P12)”

“Because, especially in high school students, they may have fear of things like; they may kick me out of the group, they may not take me into their friend groups. That was the case with me for a while too. They might not let me hang out with them again, so I was afraid of who I would hang out with. Here I will be alone, the fear of loneliness. (P1)”

Instant message applications sharing your actions and reactions publicly can sometimes be a reason for not responding. For example, one participant explained the situation as follows:

“When you leave the WhatsApp group, the application sends information messages to all members. In this case, other members start to question why you left and you stand out. I think it is a problem that the application gives such a warning. It limits your freedom”. (P3)”

It can be said that another important reason for the unresponsiveness is the social environment we live in and the cultural structure we have. The participants stated that the reasons why they did not react to the disturbing situations in the groups were traditions and customs, respect to older people or status people, courtesy, and the way they were brought up. Participants express their views on this issue in the following;

“Because I don't know how to explain it any other way, so I'll give an example from myself. There is a certain respect we have for family members, something we are taught in particular, respect for elders. In other words, we are taught that if there is someone above you, they may be old, they may have status, they may be in any strong position, you should respect them. (P10)”

“As I said, I think the reaction we will give to everything we encounter or not encounter is related to our past. It's about where we live, about our parents, about our siblings, about our neighborhood, about where we were born and grew up. (P4)”

Another participant states that he is reluctant to leave the group, especially regarding the groups he was included in without permission, because of the fear that leaving the family group will be considered shameful. The participants who stated that the cultural structure had an effect in such cases stated that the unwritten rules about family ties affected their behavior. Regarding this, a participant said the following;

“Cultural structure. If I were a European individual, I would say it's my personal choice and leave. But I can't do this because there is a judgment in the culture I live in that it would be something shameful and contrary to courtesy. I can set my limit, but I exist in that group. (P3)”

The results can be explained by social influence and adaptive behavior. Social influence directs individuals, who are social beings, to comply with the norms of the society

(Kağıtçıbaşı, 2014; Mcleod, 2021; Glass and Li, 2010). The results support studies stating that compliance with group norms is the basis of social life. It is seen that the participants exhibit behaviors towards adaptation not only in their real-life groups but also in their virtual world groups. In other words, it can be said that the norms in our real-life affect our behavior in instant messaging groups.

Some participants refer to the phenomenon of “learned helplessness” by expressing the reason for their unresponsiveness to disturbing situations as “whatever I do, the behavior of these people will not change”. “It argues that when events are uncontrollable the organism learns that its behavior and outcomes are independent and that this learning produces the motivational, cognitive, and emotional effects of uncontrollability (Maier and Seligman, 1976).

Some of the participants state that they are unresponsive because they do not take these people seriously. The participants, who stated that they are aware of the aims of such disturbing people, state that being unresponsive can be an effective method as well as reacting. On the other hand, some of the participants state that unresponsive people are people who have a quiet nature and lack self-confidence.

The last question of the research is “What are the precautions that can be taken against disturbing actions in instant messaging groups?”. The answers given to the question were analyzed and the following themes and sub-themes were reached.

Table 5. The themes and sub-themes of precautions that can be taken against disturbing actions in instant messaging groups

Themes	Sub-themes
Education	Awareness about bullying Awareness of appropriate communication
Reacting	Expressing discomfort One-to-one communication Leave the group Ignore Exclude from group

Considering the opinions of the participants on what measures can be taken against the disturbing behaviors that occur in instant messaging groups, it is seen that two main themes come to the fore: “education” and “reaction”. However, the view that this education should be not only at the individual level but also at the social level comes to the fore. It is thought that these problems can be prevented to a large extent by informing the people around them, both by media channels and conscious users. The participants, who stated that it is necessary to raise awareness about both social media and correct communication, stated that education starting from the family should be supported by continuing education at school, media, and legal sanctions. The opinions of the participants about the necessity of raising awareness about the use of social media are as follows;

“Users who know the use of social media should also make the people around them (neighbors, friends, parents) aware of the use of social media. Especially since children are unconscious about this issue, they should be made conscious first. In this way, I think we can protect especially children from harmful content without their realizing it. (P4)”

“I think the most important thing is education, it should start with education. Then it must be supported by law. Because I think it is absurd to pass a law without creating infrastructure. (P9)”

“First of all, we as humans need to educate ourselves and learn how to use social media and messaging applications. For this, educational programs can be made, perhaps from television or even from social media. (P2)”

Some participants, on the other hand, express their views by emphasizing the importance of establishing correct communication as well as raising awareness about the use of social media;

“It's about knowing how to communicate. Therefore, it is necessary to know what these are in order not to do anything that amounts to an insult or threat, or pressure. This is something before a group is formed, something we must do before a social group is formed. Maybe there can be training about this in society and the family. (P12)”

“If we can teach this to children when they are very young, even if there are different training points, I don't know, there are institutions that give certificates, and if the importance of this can be explained to people and taught, that is, if the importance of communication can be taught, I think it can be solved at least to some extent. (P10)”

Participants think that warning users who create disturbing situations in an appropriate language, and if necessary, they can be warned by establishing one-to-one communication. If the problem cannot be solved in this way, it is stated that removing or blocking these people from the group may be another solution.

“We need to exclude those people. In my opinion, a lot of time should not be spent correcting people who are such indiscretions. (P11)”

“Especially if he insists on not understanding, he is a rude and unsympathetic person. There is no such person around us, so we do not host them. But if there is such a person, they should warn that person with the consensus of the other people in the group, and if they do not understand it, they should remove them from their midst. (P9)”

Some participants stated that they should leave the group in order to get rid of disturbing behaviors as follows;

“I prefer to leave the social groups in which uncomfortable situations reach their peak. In such situations, I think leaving the group is an effective reaction. (P3)”

“The solution is leaving the group we don't want. (P2)”

Another participant stated that the rules established by taking the opinion of the group members in social groups can prevent disturbing behaviors. He stated that group rules both prevent the group from deviating from its purpose and prevent group members from exhibiting behaviors that disturb each other. Regarding this, the participant said the following;

“I like to bring all the elements together and create protocols. As such, it seems that there are fewer communication misunderstandings. So I can recommend it. I think this can be an effective method especially in business groups, that is, those groups opened for business reasons, I can recommend it. (P12)”

CONCLUSION

When the data obtained from the research is evaluated as a whole, we are faced with the fact that instant messaging groups have become a part of our lives, and using them is now a

necessity, even if it is not legal. On the other hand, it turns out that these applications cause difficulties in addition to the conveniences they provide and cause many uncomfortable situations from time to time. In order to reduce these disturbing situations, which were discussed in detail in the previous parts of the research, instant messaging groups should not be created unless it is very necessary, if it is necessary to establish the rules for the use of these groups, the use of groups starting from a young age, in-group communication, tolerance, and courtesy. It is recommended to implement the training program. At the same time, it can be a solution for people not to share their actions and reactions publicly by making arrangements in the software of instant message apps, and to take care not to restrict people's freedom. At the end, it can be said that technology, which has the potential to make our lives easier, should not turn into a tool of social torture.

REFERENCES

1. Chung D, S Nam CS 2007, An Analysis Of The Variables Predicting Instant Messenger Use, *New Media & society*, 9: 212-234.
2. Pimmer C, Brühlmann F, Odetola TD, Dipeolu O, Gröhlbiel U, & Ajuwon AJ 2018, Instant Messaging And Nursing Students' Clinical Learning Experience. *Nurse Education Today*, 64, 119-124.
3. Ajzen I 2005. Attitudes, Personality and Behavior. Open University Press.
4. Sardana D, Cavusgil E, Gupta N 2020, The Growing Popularity Of Spiritual Brands: What Drives Purchase Intent?, *International Business Review*, 30.
5. Martin B, Wentzel D, Tomczak T 2008, "Effects Of Susceptibility To Normative Influence And Type Of Testimonial On Attitudes Toward Print Advertising" *Journal of Advertising*, 37: 29-43
6. Aronson E 1980. The Social Animal. New York : Palgrave Macmillan.
7. Solomon M 2017. Consumer Behavior: Buying, Having, and Being 12th Edition. Hoboken : Pearson.
8. Tomasello M 2014, "The Ultra-Social Animal" *European Journal Of Social Psychology*, 44:187-194.
9. McKeown S, Haji R, Ferguson N 2016. Understanding Peace and Conflict Through Social Identity. Switzerland: Springer International Publishing.
10. McLeod S 2010. Social Identity Theory, Simply Psychology. Available at: <https://www.simplypsychology.org/social-identity-theory.html> [30.07.2021]
11. Glass R, Li S 2010, Social Influence and Instant Messaging Adoption, *Journal of Computer Information Systems*, 51: 24-30.
12. Brown R 2000, Social Identity Theory: Past Achievements, Current Problems And Future challenges, *Eur J Soc Psychol*, 30:745-778.
13. Lin CW, Wang KY, Chang SH, Lin JA 2017, Investigating The Development Of Brand Loyalty In Brand Communities From A Positive Psychology Perspective, *Journal of Business Research*, 99 :446-455.
14. Bagozzi RP, Dholakia UM, Pearo LRK 2007, Antecedents and Consequences of Online Social Interactions, *Media Psychology*, 9:77-114.

14. Algesheimer R, Dholakia UM, Herrmann A 2005, The Social Influence of Brand Community: Evidence from European Car Clubs, *Journal of Marketing*, 69:19-34.
15. Shen YC, Huang CY, Chu CH, Liao HC 2010, Virtual Community Loyalty: An Interpersonal-Interaction Perspective, *International Journal of Electronic Commerce*, 15:1, 49-74.
16. Lindiawati, Usman I & Astuti SW 2019, Anticipating Normative Community Pressure İn Brand Community: A Study Of Young Entrepreneurs Community Of Bank Mandiri, *Journal of Economics, Business, and Accountancy Ventura*, 22:137-146.
17. Kağıtçıbaşı Ç 2014. Dünden Bugüne İnsan ve İnsanlar. Evren Publishing.
18. Maier SF 1976, Seligman ME, Learned Helplessness: Theory And Evidence, *Journal of Experimental Psychology: General*, 105:3-46.

BIGGEST OBSTACLE TO IMPROVE RELATIONS BETWEEN TURKEY- ARMENIA: ARMENIANS OF DIASPORA

Assist. Prof. Dr. Yunus EKİCİ

Osmaniye Korkut Ata University, Kadirli Faculty of Social and Human Sciences, Department
of information and Document Management, Osmaniye, Turkey

ABSTRACT

Armenians play an active role in the economic, cultural and political life of the countries they live in. In particular, Armenians in the diaspora, who are firmly committed to their religious and national identities, have established churches, schools, associations, aid organizations and media outlets. Armenians outside of Armenia are called "Diaspora Armenians". Since the term diaspora refers to groups who have to leave their country by force or voluntarily and live elsewhere, diaspora has to carry both its own identity and the identity of the society they live in. Diaspora is harming Turkey's foreign policy by making the so-called genocide allegations accepted by the member states of the European Union. The Armenian diaspora, which created an environment for having a say in Europe, especially in France, England and Germany, also prevents Turkey from becoming a member of the EU with the activities they carry out in the membership process to the European Union. In this respect, the Armenian diaspora has formed various organizations by adapting itself to different political and cultural structures. The Armenian diaspora, which continues to display its negative attitudes towards Turkey, not only affects Turkish foreign policy, but also hinders the diplomatic rapprochement between Turkey and Armenia.

The Armenian claims were brought to the agenda by the Armenian diaspora in various countries, and with the independence of Armenia in 1991, the international relations dimension of the problem came to the fore. The Armenian diaspora has damaged Turkey's image in its international relations and in the world public opinion with its negative propaganda for the recognition of the so-called genocide and has become one of the important factors threatening Turkey today. This paper analyzes a study of diaspora Armenians, which is one of the reasons for undeveloped relations between Turkey and Armenia, which is an important obstacle in the relations between both countries.

Keywords: Turkey, Armenia, Independence, Diaspora.

INTRODUCTION

Turkish-Armenian relations are so old that they cannot be compared with many other nations. Despite being based on a common geography and history, the problems between the two nations have been going on for nearly two centuries. The nationalist movement and the colonial policies of the west have been effective in the confrontation of the two parts. When the Turkish-Russian struggle, which started on the Black Sea, spread to the Balkans, the Caucasus and finally to Anatolia in time, the Armenians became an ally of Russia by breaking away from the Ottoman Empire in this process. In other words, the recent history of Armenians also constitutes an important section of Turkish-Russian relations. Ural and Çaykırın (2011).

The Armenian nation is one of the oldest modern nations, and the Armenian statehood is the oldest in the history of human civilization Aleksanyan (2016). The attitude of some of the Armenians, who lived comfortably and peacefully with the Turks for nearly nine centuries and made up a very wealthy group in the Ottoman Empire; has changed with the defeat of the

Ottoman Empire in the 1877-1878 Ottoman-Russian wars, with the signing of the San Stefano Treaty on March 3, 1878, and the Berlin Treaty on July 13, 1878. After these agreements, with the provocation of Russia and some European States, Armenians quickly organized and tended to establish an independent Armenian State. Turkdogan (2006).

After Turkey's joining to the First World War, the Armenian question was re-emerged. This time, Armenians, who saw this opportunity as a booty, fled to the Russian army and started to fight against Turkey again by forming voluntary gangs. The only thing that the Turks could do in this tight situation was to prevent the Armenian-Russian cooperation from reaching greater dimensions and to prevent the Turkish army from being hit from behind. For this, the only solution was to “deport” the Armenians out of the war zone from the military zones. This is what today's Armenians call genocide and try to portray Turks as murderers to the whole world. Of course, the expression that there were no deaths during the migration cannot be used, but many people died during the migration. It is possible that this is due to disease, bandit attack, and starvation. But the Ottoman Empire never carried out a genocide. Akcora (2007).

Upon the deportation done by the Ottoman Empire, the governments of Russia, France and England gave a note to the Ottoman government on May 24, 1915, emphasizing that deportation and resettlement was a crime against humanity and civilization, and that the Ottoman Government would be responsible for these new murders. In response to this, the Ottoman Government, notified that they were the ones responsible for what had happened, and that the Ottoman state would not give account of anything to any state for this reason. Moreover, it stated that while the British and French naval forces were bombarding the hospitals in Çanakkale, and that the Muslim people in the Kars region were being massacred by the Armenians backed by Russia, England, France and Russia had no right to talk about humanity and their notes were rejected. Ceran (2015).

The Emergence of the Armenian Question in Turkish-Armenian Relations

The developments in world politics have had a significant impact and contribution to the emergence of the Armenian question. One of them is colonialism, which is a very natural parallel to the Industrial Revolution. Another event is the French Revolution, which affected almost the whole world, and the phenomenon of nationalism that developed in parallel. Armenians saw that the minorities in the Ottoman Empire rebelled one by one, and they achieved their autonomy and/or independence. As a result of these events, the thought transpired that they could also engage in such a move. One of the factors emerged in the context of religious ideology. While there were only Gregorian Armenians as a denomination in the Ottoman society at first, as a result of; the efforts of France, a Catholic Armenian community and then the Armenian Catholic Church, the work of British and American missionaries and the pressure of the British Government, the Armenian Protestant Church and the influence of Russia the Armenian Orthodox Church emerged. Kantarcı (2014).

After the First World War, when the Armenians lost their chance to realize their demands towards Turkey, they were divided into two main groups in terms of politics and culture. While the first group lived in the Armenian Soviet Republic and was included in the Soviet education and political system, the second group immigrated to Europe and America and formed their own communities there. In these communities, which had to live together with different regions and cultures, protecting their national identity had an important value and place. In the new period, the social and cultural aspect of the Armenian cause was the preservation of the national identity and values of all Armenian communities. In this context, apart from the Soviet system, strengthening Armenia, protecting the nationality, language, religion and culture of the Armenian communities, expressing Armenian demands and claims

in the European and world public opinion, and finally providing assistance to Armenian immigrants from different sources are among the main duties. Ural and Çaykiran (2011).

After Armenia's independence, Turkish-Armenian relations have in no way gone well. In particular, the genocide allegations of Armenia and the Nagorno-Karabakh issue have not allowed the relations between the two countries to return to a normal level. Turkey, upon declaring its sovereignty recognized Armenia unconditionally, and at the same time made efforts to establish diplomatic relations with Armenia and open an embassy in Yerevan. Volkan Vural, the Moscow Ambassador of Turkey, made contacts in Yerevan to develop bilateral relations with Armenia which had not yet declared its independence in April 1991. Turkey invited Armenia to the Black Sea Economic Cooperation Organization (BSEC) as a founding member, although it does not have a coastline on the Black Sea. Turkey extended a friendly hand to Armenia, whose current conditions became even worse due to the earthquake disaster that occurred after independence. Delivering international aid to Armenia through its own territory, Turkey also agreed to supply electricity to Armenia. Understanding the importance of relations with Armenia, Turkey aimed to solve the problems in the Caucasus in cooperation with Armenia and to reach Central Asia more powerfully through Armenia. Gurbuz (2012).

With the Treaty of Lausanne, Armenians living in Turkey gained the minority status and had all the rights that Turkish citizens had. After this date, there were no problems with the Armenians. After the Second World War, when Turkey became a member of NATO against the threat of Soviet Russia, Armenian propaganda was put forward by Russia in order to damage Turkey's reputation abroad and to cause internal turmoil. Since this date, Armenians have put into practice a quartet plan¹. The stages of this plan are; terrorism, recognition, compensation and territory. In world politics, the Armenian Question is put forward in a planned manner at certain times. The imperialist and colonial states used the freedom and independence ideals of the Armenian committee members as a cover for their own purposes in order to break up the Ottoman Empire and achieve their regional interests. The aid and support provided by these states had not provided any benefit to the Armenian people, on the contrary, they led to the destruction of the innocent Armenian people. Yazar (2002).

Diaspora Barrier in Turkey-Armenia Relations

A large part of the Armenian diaspora was undoubtedly formed after the 1915 deportations. In addition, it would not be correct to attribute the entire diaspora formation to Byzantine or late Ottoman practices, since it is known that Armenians were inclined to trade, science and art and went to other countries with the intention of leading a better life; The same lifestyle and tradition continues today. When it comes to diaspora, the main countries that attract attention with their Armenian population and influence are: USA, Russia, France, Italy, Lebanon and Iran. Because these countries have a massive Armenian population, and these countries have more comprehensive relations with Turkey, either positive or negative. When it comes to the place and importance of the Armenian diaspora in the existence of Armenia and the Armenian people, Armenia primarily needs the economic, political, cultural and moral support of the diaspora Armenians. It can be said that it is the Armenian diaspora that directs Armenia to its current domestic and foreign policy, diplomatic initiatives, expectations and claims from other countries. Kutalmis (2003).

With the support of the Armenian diaspora in the 20th century, the so-called Armenian "genocide" has been recognized by more than 20 world powers. The Christian states of the West, who covered up the secret intentions of the Armenian betrayal during the First World

¹ The Author Named This As The "Four T" Plan As All Four Words Starts With T In Turkish.

War, used all ideological means to create a negative Turkish image in the world public opinion by undermining the international prestige of the Muslim Turk. In this context, it has been tried to prove that the Armenians' fabricated genocide claims are nothing but nonsense by approaching the events in terms of time and space. All this suggests that the question under study is quite relevant and resonates sufficiently today. Veziroğlu (2013).

The fact that the Armenian diaspora is an important source of economic and human capital, the Karabakh problem and the 1915 genocide allegations, which are the existential elements of the diaspora, are the constant issues in Armenian politics. Also, as well as Ter Petrosyan, who, despite having a westernizer orientation, favored keeping the relations with the diaspora as balanced as possible; It will be beneficial in the long run that the politically organized sections of the diaspora, who are opposed to Ter-Petrosyan and especially living in the USA, have adopted a "political" approach in their criticism and constantly criticize Ter-Petrosyan on the issues of relations with Turkey and the Karabakh issue, which form the core of diaspora activities. Their criticism of Ter-Petrosyan for his "dictatorial tendencies and human rights violations" are approaches that show that the diaspora is equally dependent on the homeland in order to maintain its existence and tries to display a balanced approach. Ekinici (2018).

Considering the geographical, political and economic structure of the country, relations with Diaspora, Russia and Turkey come to the fore in foreign policy. It is inevitable that Armenia needs political and military assistance of Russia as well as the diaspora's financial aid while confronting Turkey and Azerbaijan due to genocide claims and territorial claims. Ural and Çaykiran (2011).

The protocols signed in October 2009 for the settlement of the existing problems between Turkey and Armenia and the normalization of diplomatic relations have been promising. As a matter of fact, by confirming the mutual recognition of the "border between the two countries" in these protocols, the way for the ratification of the Kars Treaty by Armenia was opened. Again, there was no record in the protocol texts that Armenia would renounce the genocide allegations, but it was clearly promised that the parties would not follow a policy that was "incompatible with good neighborly relations". In addition, Turkey and Armenia were giving the green light to the resolution of problems with countries like Azerbaijan by committing to "contribute to the strengthening of peace, security and stability in the entire region". Unfortunately, the Armenian Constitutional Court approved the protocols with annotations. Thus, the process that started with the signing of the protocols stopped, and the normalization of relations was postponed to an indefinite date. Çiçek (2010).

CONCLUSION

In 2005, the 90th anniversary of the 1915 deportation (the so-called Armenian genocide), the diaspora Armenians, who organized dramatic theater scenes about the so-called genocide in the USA, Europe and many parts of the world, especially by wealthy businessmen and artisans living in the USA, promote the so-called genocide by playing with people's feelings. Armenia wants to attract the economic aid and resorts to the tolerance of the West, which created the image of an oppressed nation in the world, and for this purpose it, most importantly with Diaspora Armenians, has brought the genocide event and its claims about historical lands to the world public opinion through churches, schools, associations, parties, the press. It can be said that Diaspora Armenians partially achieved their goal with the efforts of keeping the Armenian issue on the agenda before Turkey's full membership negotiations with the EU in 2005. Tensions in Germany and France, especially before the negotiation process, and the activities of the Armenian diaspora on the 90th anniversary of the so-called

genocide were actually large-scale as expected. Armenian organizations have negative effects on Turkey's relations with other countries, especially through their lobbying activities on the administration of the USA and the activities they organize to bring the "genocide" allegations to the international arena. After 2000, the Armenian Diaspora has determined a large-scale strategy to become one of the biggest problems in Turkey's international relations, and they have brought their campaigns about the genocide up to the agenda of the politics of the countries they live in.

Whenever the OSCE and the USA want to improve relations between Turkey and Armenia, it constantly encounters obstacles from the Armenian diaspora, and Turkey is expected to accept the claims indisputably. Surrounded by a Turkish population of approximately 100 million, Armenia lives with the Turkish threat and cannot get over its prejudices. Unfortunately, this perception is also used and fed by the Armenian diaspora. As it is known, the population of the diaspora is much higher than the population of the Armenian State and has spread all over the world.

REFERENCES

- Akçora Ergünöz 2007. Van ve Çevresinde Ermeni İsyancıları (1896-1916), Türk Dünyası Araştırmaları Vakfı, İstanbul, 344 pp.
- Aleksanyan Ashot 2016. The Impact Of The Armenian Genocide On The Formation Of National Statehood And Political Identity, Armenological Issues, 2 (8), Yerevan, 22-43 pp.
- Ceran Hasan 2015. Osmanlı Döneminde Ermenilerin Göç Ettirilmesi 1915, İstanbul Ticaret Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Basılmamış Yüksek Lisans Tezi, İstanbul, 1-99 pp.
- Çiçek Kemal 2010. Ottoman Armenians and The 1915 Event of Displacement: A Criticism, Akademik Bakış Dergisi, Cilt 3, Sayı 6, 1-14 pp.
- Ekinci F. Didem 2018. Vulnerability And Viability In Small State Foreign Policy: The Case Of Armenia, Ermeni Araştırmaları, Sayı 61, 71-106 pp.
- Gülbüz M 2012. Kafkasya'da Siyaset Çatışma Ortamı ve Taraf Güçler. Kadim Yayınları. Ankara. 505 pp.
- Kutalmış Mehmet 2003. Ermenistan ve Ermeni Diasporasında Türkçe Türkiye'de Ermenice, Afyon Kocatepe Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Dergisi, Cilt 5, Sayı 1, 45-62 pp.
- Türkdoğan Berna 2006. Türk-Ermeni İlişkileri (Tehcirden Günümüze), Ankara Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Basılmamış Doktora Tezi, Ankara. 363 pp.
- Ural Selçuk, Çaykırın Güzin, 2011. Armenian Foreign Policy in The Ruling Period Robert Koçaryan, Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü Dergisi 8, 107-136 pp.
- Vəzir Oğlu Cəfərov Taleh 2013. Qondarma Erməni Soyqırımı Faktların Dili ilə, "Kitab aləmi" Nəşriyyat, Bakı. 235 pp.
- Yarar Hülya 2002. Ermeniler ve Türk Ermeni İlişkileri, Ankara Üniversitesi Osmanlı Tarihi Araştırma ve Uygulama Merkezi Dergisi, Sayı 13, 35-57 pp.
- Kantarıcı Şenol 2014. "Tarih Boyunca Türk-Ermeni İlişkileri ve Ermeni Sorunu'nun Ortaya Çıkışı", Tarihte Türkler ve Ermeniler: Ermeni Meselesinin Ortaya Çıkışı Kilise ve Misyonerlik, Ed. Mehmet Metin Hülagü-Musa Şaşmaz-İbrahim Ethem Atnur-Taha Niyazi Karaca-Mustafa Çolak-Recep Karacakaya, Türk Tarih Kurumu, Ankara, pp.189-238.

THE EU AND THE SYRIAN CONFLICT: STRATEGIES, LIMITATIONS AND SCENARIOS

Dr. Alla ZAKHARCHENKO

Odessa Mechnikov National University, Faculty of International Relations, Politology and Sociology, Department of International Relations, Odessa, Ukraine

ORCID ID: <https://orcid.org/0000-0001-7492-6103>

ABSTRACT

The purpose of the paper is to analyze the peculiarities of the EU's policy towards the conflict in Syria. It examines European approaches to the crisis at the initial stage of the civil war; the EU's strategies of 2013, 2015 and 2017 regarding Syria, including the methods and instruments of their practical implementation; the reasons for low efficiency of European policies in the Syrian settlement.

The author concentrates on two principal findings. The first is the stark contrast between the EU's firm initial position (that Assad must go) and its subsequent modest diplomatic and military involvement. The second is the discrepancy between the EU's limited influence on the course of events and the fact that most of the dramatic humanitarian, economic, and security consequences of the Syrian crisis fall on European countries' shoulders. □

The author came into conclusion that a whole set of objective reasons condition the weaknesses of European role in the Syrian crisis. First, the EU miscalculated the Assad regime's resilience and the extent to which both Iran and Russia would provide military support to Damascus. Second, the opposition in Syria appeared deeply fractionalized. Third, the EU simultaneously was resolving additional crises, which were significant for European security, such as the crisis in Ukraine and the Iranian nuclear program. However, the main reason for European initiatives' failure was the lack of consensus within the EU states.

In the second half of the paper the author represents three plausible scenarios of the EU policy toward Syria in nearest future and analyses each scenarios' difficulties and risks. The research bases on a qualitative methodology covering text and discourse analysis of documents of the European External Action Service, the European Council and the European Parliament; speeches by European and Syrian officials; works of international experts with the special focus on the expertise of scholars with Syrian/Arab origin located in European countries.

Keywords: the EU, strategy, Syria, conflict.

CREATION OF COVID-19 RISK MAPS USING SOCIO-ECONOMIC DATA AND FUZZY C-MEANS METHOD OF REGIONS IN TURKEY

Necati Alp Erilli

Sivas Cumhuriyet University, Faculty of Economic and Administrative Dept. Of Econometrics,
Sivas, Turkey.

ABSTRACT

Covid-19 disease is effective in Turkey as well as all over the world. In particular, the fact that the number of cases does not decrease also raises many problems. In this study, Covid-19 disease risk indicators of geographical regions in Turkey were established depending on the number of cases. In the analysis conducted by Fuzzy C-Means method which is mostly used in Fuzzy Clustering, groups of risky cities were determined for each geographical region. As a result, a risk map of Turkey was created and evaluated.

Keywords: Covid-19 Disease, Fuzzy Clustering Analysis, Region Statistics

INTRODUCTION

New Coronavirus disease (Covid-19) is a virus that was first identified on January 13, 2020 as a result of research conducted in a group of patients in Wuhan province, China, who emerged in late December 2019 and developed respiratory symptoms. The disease was initially detected in places where seafood and livestock were sold in this area. It then became a global epidemic, spreading from person to person and spreading to other cities in Hubei province, especially Wuhan and other provinces of the people's Republic of China, and from there to other countries around the world. The World Health Organization (who) designated this outbreak as a public health emergency of international concern on January 30, 2020. It later declared it a pandemic on March 11, 2020. (WHO, 2021).

As of May 12, 2021, there have been more than 222 million cases and more than 4.5 million deaths from Covid-19 disease worldwide. In Turkey, the number of cases and deaths increased by the beginning of 2021, as of September 2021, the number of 6.5 million cases and more than 58 thousand deaths has reached. The mortality rate, which was around 2% in mid-2020, has decreased to 0.89% in September 2021 with the help of many preventions taken. Efforts to reduce the rate of disease continue with partial and complete closure processes implemented throughout the country.

As in our country, this pandemic process, which affects the whole world, caught countries unprepared and suddenly, has brought many social, cultural and economic problems. The COVID-19 pandemic caused a dramatic loss of human life worldwide and presented an unprecedented challenge to public health, food systems and business. The economic and social disruption caused by the pandemic has become devastating: Millions of people are at risk of falling into extreme poverty, while the number of malnourished people, estimated to be about 690 million by October 2020, could rise to another 132 million by the end of the year. The pandemic process affected the entire food system and revealed its fragility. Because of the closure of the borders of countries, trade restrictions and legal measures, many people have lost their jobs or caused serious reductions in their income.

The diffusion of Covid-19 has been devastating for the millions of people who have been infected and lost their lives by the virus, and tens of millions who have lost their jobs and livelihoods. Governments and civil societies have sought to respond quickly to the virus with policies that reduce human interaction and slow its spread. These policies, both absolute and

relative, have shown negative effects, such as further reducing labor participation, productivity and capital use, reducing household consumption, and increasing poverty at various thresholds (Minetto et al., 2020).

Many academics and scientists are studying Covid-19 disease from different directions and trying to do what they have to do to combat this disease. In particular, it is not wrong to say that studies in which statistical analysis of variables thought to affect this disease and studies with socio-economic factors effective in the diffusion of the disease have increased recently. In this way, by investigating the back door of Covid-19 disease with the diffusion of vaccines, it will be possible to prepare in advance for future problems.

In this study, the risk map for geographical regions of Covid-19 disease in Turkey was created using Fuzzy C-Means method from fuzzy clustering methods. In addition to weekly case numbers and vaccination rates according to the provinces used in the study, socio-demographic variables thought to affect Covid-19 disease were also used. Thus, high, medium and low risk provincial groups were determined for each geographical region.

MATERIAL AND METHOD

Clustering analysis is a method that allows us to classify the units studied in a study by collecting them in certain groups according to their similarity between them, identify the common properties of the units, and make general deceptions about these classes. Here, the goal is to classify ungroup data according to their similarities (or unsimilarities) and help the researcher obtain appropriate, useful summarizing information (Tatlıdil, 2002). Taking into account the similarities between another expression and the data, it is necessary to collect similar data in the same group or cluster.

Fuzzy clustering analysis is an analysis technique developed based on fuzzy logic theory. The use of fuzzy sets in clustering was first proposed in 1964 (Bellman et al., 1964). Fuzzy clustering is used to calculate membership functions that determine the degree to which objects belong to sets, and to determine overlapping sets within the dataset (de Oliveira and Pedrycz, 2007). It occurs as a convenient method if the clusters do not differ markedly from each other, or if some units in their membership are territorial in the cluster membership. Fuzzy sets are functions that determine each unit from 0 to 1, defined as the membership degree of the unit in the set. Units that are very similar to each other are located in the same set or cluster according to a high degree of membership (Höppner et al., 1999). Because of this, the fuzzy clustering method calculates the coefficients of units belonging to a set or sets. The sum of the membership coefficients is always equal to 1. In this way, the unit is assigned to the set in which it has the highest membership coefficient. Like other clustering methods, fuzzy clustering is based on distance measurements. Which of these distance criteria to choose depends on the cluster structure and the algorithm used (Naes et al., 1999). The advantage of fuzzy clustering over classical clustering methods is that it provides more detailed information about data. But it also have some disadvantages. It is difficult to summarize and classify information, since there will be a lot of output in the case of a large number of individuals and clusters. In addition, fuzzy clustering algorithms are often complex in structure and are mostly used when it comes to uncertainty (Ross, 1995).

The Fuzzy C-Means (FCM) clustering algorithm, one of the furthest used fuzzy clustering method, was first proposed by (Dunn, 1974) and morely developed by (Bezdek, 1981). FCM method forms the basis of all clustering techniques based on the objective function. When the FCM algorithm is concluded, points in p-dimensional space become a spherical shape. The objective function for FCM can be given in Equation.1:

$$J(u, v) = \sum_{j=1}^n \sum_{t=1}^c u_{jk}^m \|x_{ji} - v_{jk}\|^2 \quad (1)$$

In this equation n represents the number of individuals, c represents the optimal number of clusters and v represents the center of each k -th cluster, u_{jk}^m is the membership of x_j in k -th cluster and $J(u, v)$ is a measure of the total of all weighted error sum of squares.

The values used in determining the most proper number of clusters in fuzzy cluster analysis are called cluster validity index. In this study, an index based on artificial neural networks proposed by (Erilli et al., 2011) was used to determine the optimum number of clusters.

In this method Forward-fed artificial neural networks are applied to each of the possible cluster numbers so that the input data matrix and the target value are the cluster number assigned to each data as a result of fuzzy clustering. For each cluster number, the median of the error squares mean square root (RMSE) values obtained from artificial neural networks is calculated according to the various hidden layer unit numbers. A graph of the median values obtained for each number of clusters is drawn, and the value preceding the number of clusters where the median value of RMSE, where the first jump, is first overgrown, is determined as the optimal number of clusters (Erilli v.d., 2011).

RESULTS

In this study, Covid-19 risk maps of geographical regions in Turkey were created using Fuzzy C-MEans method from fuzzy clustering analysis methods. For this purpose, the provinces used Covid-19-week case numbers, vaccination rates and socio-economic indicators that are thought to trigger Covid-19 disease. Fuzzy clustering analysis is made with MATLAB.2009 package program. The optimal number of clusters for each analysis was determined by the cluster validity Index based on the artificial neural network. Socio-economic data in the study data obtained from the website of the Turkish Statistical Institute and weekly case numbers tables published by the Ministry of Health (February 27-August 27, 2021) was used according to the provinces (Turkish Ministry of Health, 2021; TUIK, 2021).

The socio-economic data used in the study were compiled from the 2018-2020 reports published on a provincial basis on the TUIK internet address. The variables used are given in Table.1.

Table.1 Variables used in analysis

1. Vaccination Rate
Number of Weekly Cases per City
Average Temperature (°C)
Average Rainfall (mm)
Number of Doctors
Life Satisfaction
Employment Rate
Average Daily Earnings
Number of Beds in Hospitals
Number of Hospitals
Literacy Rate
Population Density
GDP per capita
60 + Age Population

In application, the Fuzzy C-Means method is used for each geographic region with the help of the variables given in Table 1, and the regions are divided into sets. In Figure.1, the Risk Map of the Marmara region is given.

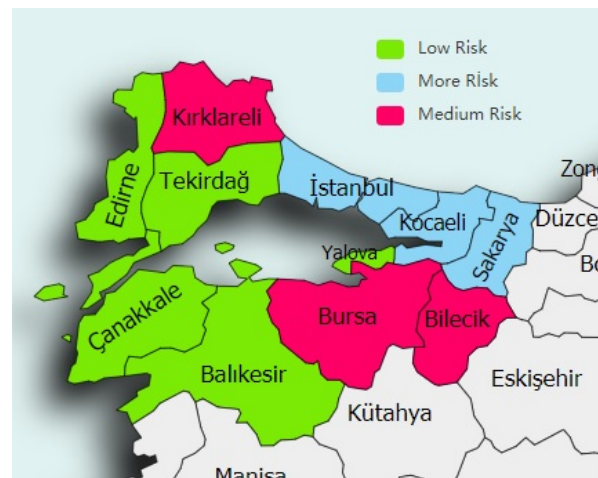


Figure 1. Marmara Region Risk Map

Looking at the results, it is seen that İstanbul, Kocaeli and Sakarya are in the group of the most risky provinces in the region. Kırklareli, Bursa and Bilecik were among the medium-risk provinces, Edirne, Tekirdağ, Deccan and Balıkesir were among the low-risk provinces. The Risk Map of the Aegean region is given in Figure 2.

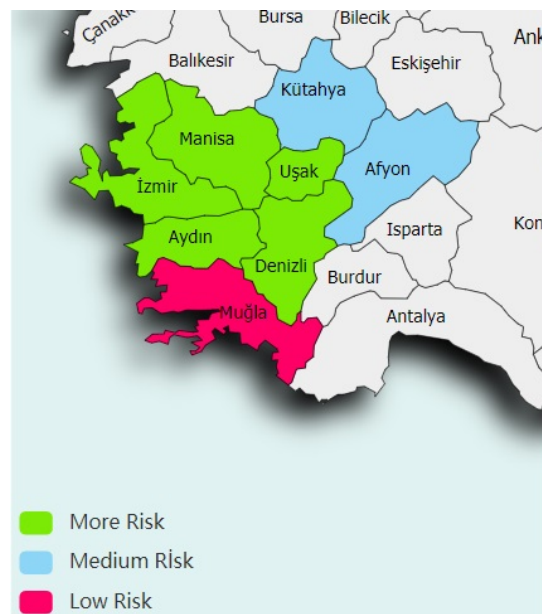


Figure 2. Aegean Region Risk Map

Looking to Figure 2, only Muğla is seen as a low-risk province. High-risk provinces are İzmir, Manisa, Aydın, Denizli and Uşak, while medium-risk provinces are Kütahya and Afyon provinces in the innermost part of the region. The Risk Map of the Mediterranean region is given in Figure 3.

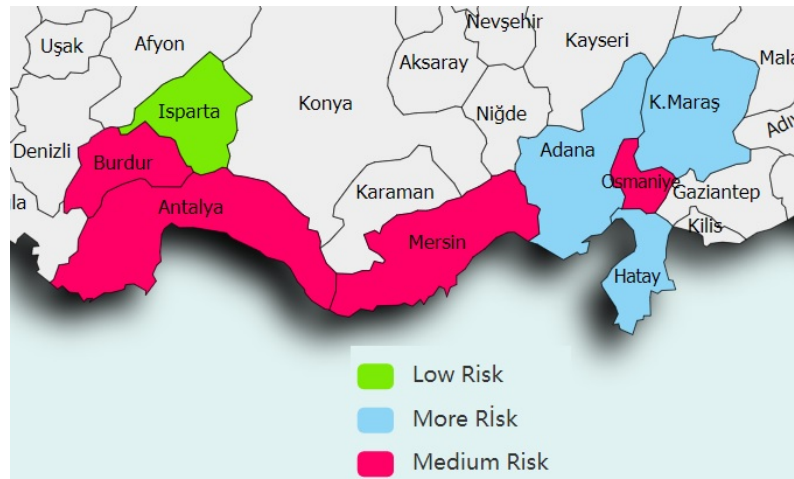


Figure 3 Mediterranean Region Risk Map

There is a single low-risk in the province: Isparta. High-risk Kahramanmaraş, Hatay and Adana provinces, and Medium-risk Burdur, Antalya, Mersin and Osmaniye provinces were located. The Risk Map of the Central Anatolia region is given in Figure 4.

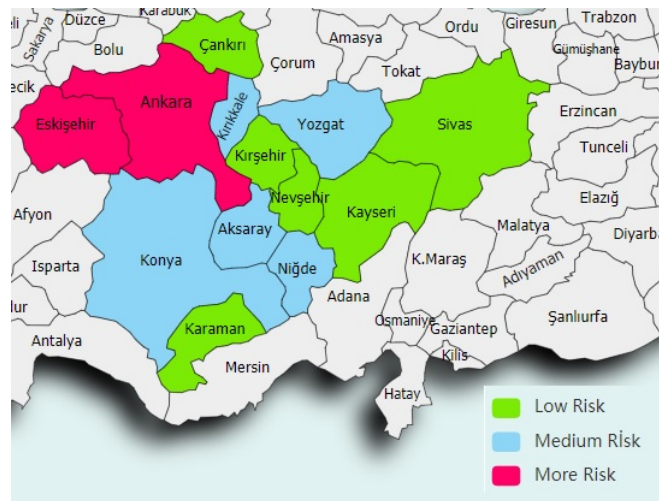


Figure 4. Central Anatolia Region Risk Map

In region High-risk provinces were Ankara and Eskişehir, while medium-risk provinces were Kırıkkale, Yozgat, Konya, Aksaray and Niğde. The low-risk provinces are noted as Kayseri, Karaman, Sivas, Nevşehir, Kırşehir and Çankırı. The Risk Map of the Black Sea region is given in Figure 5.

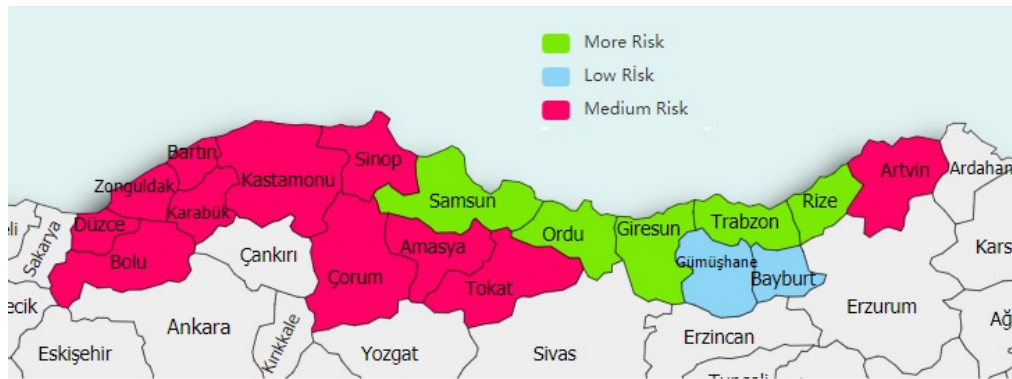


Figure 5. Black Sea Risk Map

High-risk provinces were Samsun, Ordu, Giresun, Trabzon and Rize which are neighbors. The medium-risk provinces were Bolu, Düzce, Zonguldak, Bartın, Karabük, Kastamonu, Sinop, Çorum, Amasya, Tokat and Artvin, while the low-risk provinces were only Gümüşhane and Bayburt. Figure 6 shows the risk map of eastern Anatolia.

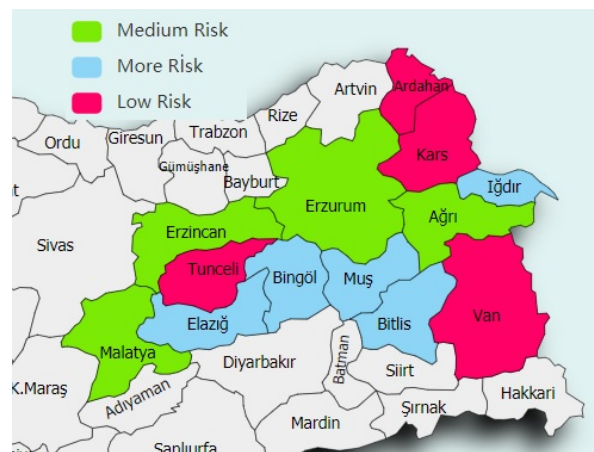


Figure 6. Eastern Anatolia Risk Map

In Eastern Anatolia region Van, Tunceli, Ardahan and Kars were identified as high-risk provinces, while Malatya, Erzincan, Erzurum and Ağrı provinces were medium-risk provinces. Elazığ, Bingöl, Mus, Bitlis and Iğdır were in the group of low-risk provinces. Figure 7 shows the risk map of South Eastern Anatolia.



Figure 7. South Eastern Anatolia Region Risk Map

In region Sanliurfa, Diyarbakir and Siirt provinces were high-risk provinces, while Adiyaman, Mardin and Batman provinces were in the medium-risk group. Gaziantep, Kilis, Sirtak and Hakkari are low-risk provinces.

Finally, the risk map of Turkey, in which all variables are used together, was again created using the Fuzzy C-Means method. The risk map created according to the analysis results determined as 5 clusters by the cluster validity method is given in Figure 8.



Figure 8. Turkey Risk Map for Covid-19 Disease

Looking at the map in Figure 8, it is seen that the 5 neighboring cities (Samsun, Ordu, Giresun, Trabzon, Rize) that make up the Black Sea coastline are the most risky provinces. The provinces that are relatively least at risk are Sivas, Kırklareli, Uşak, Denizli, Kars, Bingöl, Muş, Bitlis, Van, Hakkari, Şanlıurfa, Mardin, Diyarbakır, Şırnak and Batman. Especially, the most risky group of cities in the coastal part and neighbors, most of the lowest risk group consists of the region of south-eastern Anatolia as remarkable results have emerged.

It is believed that the combined assessment of demographic characteristics used to create risk groups for the disease and health reasons such as vaccination status caused the study result to differ from what was expected.

CONCLUSION

In this study, it was aimed to make the Covid-19 Risk Map of Turkey by regions. These maps, created using Fuzzy C-Means with the help of weekly number of cases, vaccination rates and determined socio-demographic data for provinces in each region, created risk situations for regions. These results, which can be interpreted according to criteria such as neighboring provinces or proximity to the sea, can also be used to analyze the spread of Covid-19 disease on a regional basis.

Covid-19 disease is a global pandemic affected by the last 2 years in the world. Fighting this disease is not only the task of the medical field, but also of all kinds of scientific fields in a social or cultural sense. For this reason, such studies can provide an understanding of the factors underlying the disease, infrastructure can be created for research on this issue, and even all kinds of information flow can be provided to prevent the spread of the disease.

REFERENCES

- Bellman RE, Kalaba R, Zadeh LA 1966. *Abstraction and pattern classification*. J. Math. Anal. Appl., 1-7
- Bezdek JC 1981. *Pattern recognition with fuzzy objective function algorithms*. NY: plenum press.
- De Oliveira JV, Pedrycz W 2007. *Advances in Fuzzy Clustering and its Applications*. Wiley, West Sussex.
- Dunn JC 1974. *A Fuzzy Relative Isodata Process and its Use in Detecting Compact Well-Separated Clusters*. Journal of Cybern, (3): 32-57.
- Erilli NA, Yolcu U, Eğrioğlu E, Aladağ ÇH, Öner Y 2011. *Determining the Most Proper Number of Cluster in Fuzzy Clustering by Artificial Neural Networks*. Expert Systems with Applications, 38, 2248-2252.
- Höppner F, Klawonn F, Rudolf K, Runkler T 1999. *Fuzzy Cluster Analysis*, Wiley, UK.
- Minetto R, Segundo MP, Rotich G, Sarkar S. 2020. *Measuring human and economic activity from satellite imagery to support city-scale decision-making during COVID-19 pandemic*. arXiv, 215786072 (preprint arXiv:2004.07438).
- Naes T, Mevik TH, 1999. *The Flexibility of Fuzzy Clustering Illustrated By Examples*, Journal of Chemo Metrics.
- Ross TJ, 1995. *Fuzzy Logic With Engineering Applications*, McGraw Hill, New Mexico.
- Tatlıdil H, 2002. *Uygulamalı Çok Değişkenli İstatistiksel Analiz*, Akademi Matbaası, Ankara.
- World Health Organization (WHO), 2021. <https://covid19.who.int/table> [01.08.2021]
- Turkish Ministry of Health, 2021. <https://covid19.saglik.gov.tr/> [01.08.2021]
- Turkish Statistical Institute (TUIK), 2021: www.tuik.gov.tr [01.08.2021]

ETHICAL ASPECTS OF FINANCE

Seyfettin ÜNAL

Dumlupınar University, Kütahya, Turkey

ORCID ID: 0000-0002-6248-4317

ABSTRACT

Financial system is built on trust. The credibility of instruments and agencies in financial markets presents more significance than in any other markets. The recent crises are fueled by financial markets, and damages have been increasing gradually. From regulatory authorities to credit rating agencies, many sides carry the burden of damages caused by their unethical actions. This study is aimed to provide a general outlook about the place of ethics in financial world. The issue is addressed by analytical and descriptive approaches. At this respect, the study examines the ethical dimensions of finance within the primary subtitles of finance. Financial subtitles covered are corporate finance, banking, insurance, and capital markets. The results outline that financial services, markets, and transactions cannot be made totally ethical just by legislations and legal enforcements. That is because the scope of moral values is broader than the written rules. Therefore, it is required that all market participants' consciousness is improved. Even more importantly, they should become eager to base their businesses on moral values.

Keywords: Ethics, Moral, Finance

INTRODUCTION

Human being is equipped with ethical values in nature. It can be asserted that, at least, certain ethical values are born-given endowments to mankind. Nevertheless, the human also bears frailties. Weaknesses created by such features as egos, ambitions and greeds weaken the ties with ethical values and thus create problems that may even bring about issues with social aspects. Due to the level of knowledge and all types of living experiences, there is no doubt that individuals differ in both the degree of ethical values and frailties. An ongoing process exists for the search of balancing between the two properties. Juristic norms are material products of these efforts so that ethical standards can be constituted upon legal regulations.

As on all areas of social sciences, on economics and finance there is a constant pursuit of equilibrium. In economical life, the legal framework should ease and promote trade. It should also secure the environment of trust for all parties. Therefore, it is presumably the main principle that the legal framework simultaneously assures the promoted and secure trade. This balancing activity is not an easy task to achieve.

With respect to real economy, being one of the two fundamental components of economical structure, it is significantly important that commercial activity must be materialized upon mutual trust. On the other hand, for financial markets, constituting the other component of economical structure, mutual trust between the parties not only stands as a part of commerce but also virtually becomes the core of it. As it is well known, financial system is built on trust. In real economy, transactions of goods and services take place and there are various physical or non-physical satisfactions, of which the seller promises and the buyer expects to acquire. Nevertheless, in financial markets, both the goods and the satisfactions are quite different than those in real economy. That is, financial assets are bought in exchange for the hope of future prosperity. The price of financial asset is charged in exchange for the buyer's variety of current savings. Taking in one hand that financial assets are nearly all intangible in today's

digital world and, hopes are intangible as well in the other; the vitality of trust in financial markets becomes apparent.

The credibility of instruments and agencies in financial markets presents more significance than in any other markets. Taking the technological innovations into account, the issue of trust becomes even more critical. That is, in transactions of non-financial goods and services, technology mostly constitutes a facilitating channel (e.g., ordering a book online). In financial markets, on the other hand, the convenience creating technology is not only the platform for transactions but also the product itself becomes an intangible digital property (e.g., buying a common stock). Consequently, in today's highly digital world, the importance of trust becomes more evident. It is so that, the crises of last three decades based on financial markets, and damages created by crises have been increasing gradually. At this point, it is obvious that almost all market participants' are responsible from these outcomes. From regulatory authorities to credit rating agencies, many sides carry the burden of damages caused by their unethical, degenerating, misusing actions and even activities of abuse and corruption. Since only the number of parties confess and speak out of this fact, the situation leads to a threat of widespread breach of trust in whole economy. Even though human being is knowledgeable and learns his lessons, expecting the ending of these misconducts, deteriorations in morals, and crises remain only a dream. Unfortunately, mistakes repeat sooner or later. Yet, it does not imply that we should stand still and do nothing. On the contrary, remedies always exist and we should seek for them. As a matter of fact, that is what the cycle of life entails us.

Ethics is an important issue that touches all aspects of human life. It frequently appears in economical life as well. Contemporary popular business subjects such as corporate social responsibility and sustainability are highly related with the conception of ethics. Brigham and Gapenski (1994) define the scope of business ethics as a firm's attitudes and actions in relations with its personnel, costumers, society and stockholders. A firm's approach to business ethics can be measured as its workers' and company's own compliance with laws and regulations in such issues as quality and safety of products, peace in the workplace, trustworthy selling and advertising activities, confidentiality of personal and inside information, social activities, and bribery.

In order to reflect the significance of ethics for firms, it is worth noting that firms' top managers believe in a positive correlation between ethics and long-term firm profitability. For example, in the 1990s, a banking corporation in the US stated that ethical attitude increased the bank's profit. The details revealed that acting in accordance with ethical codes provided an avoidance of legal fees and expenditures, built up the community's perception of trust toward the bank, and increased the volume of businesses taken from costumers who support ethical conducts. Furthermore, ethical attitude both increased present workers' loyalty and appealed well-qualified new workforce. Lastly, ethical behavior supported the sustainable economic growth of the surrounding society. At this respect, Fettahoğlu (2014) examines the effect of firms' social responsibility activities to their financial performance. Applying multiple regression and ANOVA analyses, the work is conducted on 16 firms, which are listed in Borsa İstanbul and publish sustainability report. The findings reveal statistically significant results for some of the variables.

In the field of finance, the subject may be discussed in two fundamental contexts. Within the concept of corporate finance, one of these is potentially ethical issues that may arise among firms' internal and external stakeholders. Possible ethic-related conflicts that may emerge in financial markets constitute the other. At this respect, the study examines the ethical dimensions of finance within the primary subtitles of finance. The issue is addressed within

the framework of an analytical and descriptive approach. Financial subtitles covered are corporate finance, banking, insurance, and capital markets.

1. Corporate Finance and Ethics

In today's business world, to grow beyond certain limits and to reach a sizable extent, firms are required to become institutionalized. As a result of the separation of ownership and management, the professional management concept has developed. In addition, since debt fuels the growth of firms, there emerges another stakeholder party in firms' circle of relationships. These two advances have brought about new perspectives in financial management field. At this respect, Jensen ve Meckling (1976) present the commonly known potential conflicts of interests under two titles. One of them appears in the relationship between firm owner(s) and professional manager(s). The other is observed in the relationship between firm owner(s) and creditor(s).

The first one, known also as agency conflict, states that executives' some actions may not be suitable for owners. That is, managers' preferences may be ranked prior to those of shareholders. It should be noted that this type of conflict is closely related with such conditions as whether the firm's share are publicly traded, depth of the shares in the market, and the firm's market capitalization. When the number of shares is outspread and not concentrated among limited number of shareholders hence small investors' possession of monitoring and control power on managerial decisions is restrained, the likelihood that professionals put their special interests before shareholders' benefits will increase. One of the reasons behind this is asymmetric information issue. This is because, compared to shareholders, managers possess more information about the firm's operations. For example, even though it is not beneficial for the firm, executives may carry out new investment or merger and acquisition (M&A) decisions to grow out firm due to their such expectations as gaining more power, wages, statue, bonuses, and job safety.

Another potential conflict arises between shareholders and creditors. The source of this conflict emerges from the fact that owners (shareholders) are the only and final authorized decision-makers on firm's operations. The advantages provided by debt financing create leverage so that large-scale investments that otherwise may not be carried out by equity can be implemented. However, whether debt or equity, shareholders have the full power of directing firm's all financial sources to assets they choose. Investment decisions relying on more increase in debt compared to equity result in a shift of business risk from shareholders to creditors. This, in turn, leads creditors to bear a higher burden considering that they have to content themselves with a fixed rate of interest return for their financing funds.

Stemming from asymmetric information, this situation causes a conflict of interests thus brings about creditors to demand additional collaterals and coverages for protection. Firatoğlu (2005) states that due to asymmetric information, creditors would claim a higher risk premium and consequently increase the cost of borrowing over more than acceptably normal level. Therefore, at this point, asymmetric information causes both an adverse selection problem and a moral hazard case for borrowers with indeed low credibility.

Although it is generally considered as an accounting-originated subject in the literature, manipulation of financial reports is worth to mention since it has aspects related with corporate finance. There are recent examples of the matter both in Turkey and in the rest of the world. While Enron and WorldCom are well known instances outside of Turkey, dual booking practice by İmar Bankası constitutes a dramatically fresh incident inside Turkey. Moreover, the case of Greece during the last global crisis appears as the most striking example. In this particular case, it has been discovered that, in spite of being a member, the Greek governments had been cheating the European Union for a long time by reporting its

debt and budget deficit lower their actual levels. Surely, the lies become evident eventually. And, the Greek will have to compensate for this lie by undergoing a heavy burden of debt they have to pay for a long time.

In order to avoid various possible conflicts of interests, especially among shareholders, managers and creditors, a number of remedies may be applied. For example, performance-based salary or bonuses and stock options are considered as some of them. In particular, firms, which are run with corporate governance principals, carry over their adopted ethical rules to their employees by in-service training. In addition, these firms also put these principles into writing and provide their workforce to acknowledge them. For instance, as a multinational firm, Coca Cola's affiliate in Turkey has prepared a forty five-page document called "The Code of Ethics Handbook"¹ that captures the subject in detail. The company also established a phone line named "Coca Cola Ethics Line", providing a service in four languages as well as assigning subject-specific e-mail and web address. Today, these kinds of efforts may be observed in many other firms. Zorlu Holding, for example, prepared a similar thirty three-page document called "Ethical Principles".² The company declared that the policies of all firms operating under the group comply and are integrated with these published ethical principles. In addition, the firm asks all related parties –from board of directors to suppliers– for acting in accordance with these principles.

A similar implementation is observed in the practice of the Association of Financial Institutions (Finansal Kurumlar Birliği). On April 30th, 2015, the Association prepared a document covering its leasing, factoring and financing member firms' professional ethical principles and notified its members.³ Although the document is short and mostly includes references to law codes, it is important to put them into writing. These kinds of documents may be observed in many other firms and institutions. Indeed, what matters is the implementation of these written principles.

2. Banking and Ethics

As the oldest and highly important part of financial services sector, it could be argued that banking industry deserves the most emphasis about the issue of ethics. Carried upon deposit and credit relationship, conventional banking is essentially a business of trust. Even though participation banking, known as interest-free banking, renders its own alternative financing vehicles, it is also a part of banking industry. And, the banking still remains as an indispensable intermediate for transferring funds in today's modern financial world. In banking, where a pool of funds is established by saving deposits in safe custody to transfer borrowers, such notions as trust and credibility constitute the sector's fundamentals. However, such notions are hard to acquire yet easy to lose. Consequently, they cannot be considered apart from ethics.

When banking and ethics words are mentioned together, it is quite noteworthy that most people consider it as an ironic coexistence. That is because prevailing belief regards bankers as persons with ethical frailties. Bankers' are characterized as so greedy, opportunist, egocentric and unreliable that such features even constitute humor topics in society.

As a crucial labor supply, human stands in all businesses with no exception. Nevertheless, the importance of human capital in services industry is considerably higher. Since it is a part of services industry, human capital plays a leading role in banking industry as well. Therefore, it necessitates assessing the terms of human and trust together.

¹ Detaylı bilgi için bkznz. https://www.cci.com.tr/Portals/0/Documents/PDF/is_etigi_kodu_el_kitabi.pdf

² Detaylı bilgi için bkznz. <http://www.zorlu.com.tr/assets/files/pdf/zorlu-holding-etik-ilkeler.pdf>

³ Detaylı bilgi için bkznz. https://www.fkb.org.tr/Sites/1/upload/files/FKB-MESLEKI_ETIK_ILKELER-395.pdf

Especially in the crises of recent history, banking sector appears in the center of them. Needless to say that the list also includes central banks. Because banks are so much mentioned with crises, looking only for technical reasons will not be satisfactory. Thus, it is required to consider moral values seriously.

Whether country-specific, regional or global, financial services industry is mainly liable for recent economic crises. Certainly, there are more than one responsible side of crisis including governments, central banks, and rating agencies. However, taking the recent crises of both Turkey's 2001 crisis and the last global crisis into account, banking sector bears a heavy responsibility. For example, in Turkey's 2001 experience, the independence of the Turkish Central Bank must be noted. In addition, the state banks' lack of autonomy hence uses of their sources by politicians for populist purposes had constituted one other part of the problem. Another serious issue was so called holding banking activities. Prior to 2001, there had been too many banks that many of them had been established solely to finance group's own companies but not to do truly banking businesses.

The last issue especially deserves a close look. That is because so called "*holding banking activities*" had caused multi-dimensional complications in the system. One of these is the unfair competition they had created against other banks engaged with real banking activities. It generated an unethical situation since holding banks collected deposits with interest rates higher than their competitors and transferred these funds to their group firms with lower rates. This unethical cycle had been fed up by the fact that whole deposits, without a limit, had been under the state warranty. In this circumstances, it is quite obvious that potential failure of a bank, especially of a one with this notion, carries only an ignorable risk for bankers and no risk for bank customers. This, in turn, brings about an "*adverse selection*" problem, as well as a "*moral hazard*" case. It also should not be forgotten to mention the losses of proper banks' from unfair competition and having to participate paying the bill of the crisis, which they are not responsible for.

After the whole country paid off the bill of the crisis, a series of fundamental transformations are implemented. Among them are, a total provision of banking law, providing the central bank with lawful independence, and delivering the autonomy of state banks so that they are free of politicians' populist interferences. Thanks to these measures, the distorted banking system of the past has been transformed into a healthy solid base. So, the banking industry of Turkey has become a leading example in the world. This healthy structure has paid back during the last global financial crisis by standing up solidly on the ground. It is not difficult to predict how much harm the global crisis would do to Turkish economy if it had to confront the crisis with its old banking structure. In this case, the burden of the crisis would be considerably higher than the bill paid after the crisis of 2001.

In the case of the last global crisis, it had started by the aggressive credit supply of the banks in the US mortgage market. Despite the fact that banks had been aware of bad mortgage credits supplied to insufficient costumers, they had greedily continued to provide credits to them. This, in turn, had created a mortgage bubble. Moreover, the Fed's role in this process is particularly important. Although it had been aware of this course, it had not intervined to end it thus had a share in the aftermath of the crisis. In addition, being only the audiences of all these events, rating agencies' role is worth to note. Since they had graded Lehman Brothers, named the crisis with its failure, and Greece with top grades just days before their crash, no one could assume that rating agencies were innocent. Their excuse of not being able to see this coming would only be regarded as a plea bigger than the guilt at least.

The perception toward the degeneration of conventional banking industry during the crisis has brought about an increased interest for “Islamic Finance” and “Ethical Banking” topics in many developed countries. Dereci (2017) regards the notion of “Ethical Banking” as a reaction to moral degeneration in conventional banking system. This notion has started by ecological sentiment in the 1990s and then has evolved into a reconciliation of finance with moral values. Derici (2017) calls this evolvment as a return back to humanitarian cores, in a sense. After reminding currently there is not such banks in Turkey, Gündoğdu (2018) suggests that this type of banks are needed in such countries as Turkey with high unfair income distribution hence disadvantaged people having difficulties in accessing bank credits. Güney and Mandacı (2009) conduct a study on a sample of bankers who work in marketing and sales department of state and private banks in Ankara. The findings reveal that there is a statistically significant and strong negative relationship between the level of Machiavellianism and ethical perception.

3. Insurance and Ethics

Another trust- and ethics-sensitive component of finance field is insurance industry. The industry represents an area in which asymmetric information-based adverse selection and moral hazard problems are frequently observed. Buyer of an insurance policy passes the policy-specific risks to insurer in exchange for paying some amount of premium, whereas the insurer aims to generate income by running its portfolio of policies via the use of risk management techniques. In this relationship, such mutually ethical principles as trust and integrity constitute the fundamental rules.

In case the covered policy-specific risk is realized, the policy holder expects the loss to be compensated by the insurance firm. The insurance firm, on the other hand, expects that the policy holder provides all accurate and necessary information about the asset covered by the policy and also will act with reasonable care and diligence to protect it from risks. In the case of insurer’s compensation liability, the focus should be on the process starting from the preperation of the policy till the realization of risk and redeeming the accrued loss. In addition, the procedure also includes all related sides of the insurance policy.

Brenan (2018) presents the survey being conducted by Gallup for 50 years on the honesty and ethics of professions. According to the survey, the participants steadily view that the profession with the highest rate of honest and ethics (84%) is nurses. The second high-rated group is medical doctors (67%). They are followed by pharmacists (66%). At the bottom of the list, there are marketing people (9%), car salespersons (8%), and members of congress (8%). Insurance professionals are placed quite down on the list with a rate of 15%. This result is dramatically important to reflect the ethical perception towards insurance industry. It is worth noting the view of Peter L. Miller,⁴ who is the president of insurance training institution The Institutes and also the CEO of the Chartered Property Casualty Underwriter (CPCU) Society Board of Directors. He strongly recommends that directors in the insurance industry should not only remind their subordinates about the priority of ethics everyday but also indicate the ideality of ethics. His view emphasizes that ethics should not remain just in say but should be fully comprehended, and even internalized in the conduct of all business activities.

As well as employees of an insurance company, being the last bearer of risk, commercial agents and brokers should also act by honesty and transparency principles. Taking their expertise into account, it is ethically important that insurance company personnel and/or

⁴ How to improve insurance industry ethics, Insurance Journal (April 8, 2015), <https://www.insurancejournal.com/news/national/2015/04/08/363627.htm>

agents are required to fully and clearly inform policy customers about such matters as the policy's enclosure, clauses, and exclusions, which affect insurance premiums. Considering that insurance contracts are written in legal language in their nature and most customers do not read them or do not understand them in spite of reading, informing customers about the details of the policy is critically important. Findings of the study by Ünal and Serdar (2020) show that insurance literacy level of both individuals and employees of the insurance industry is currently inadequate in Turkey. Certainly, as insurance companies' ethical approach to the matter is essential, putting the same effort by employees of intermediaries (e.g., agencies) is also crucial. At this point, there are responsibilities for insurance companies in the selection of agencies and the education of staff. That is because even a highly credible and delicately ethical insurance firm's reputation may be badly affected by its intermediaries's misconduct.

The other aspect of the issue is whether the policy holder provides the insurer with true information about the asset covered by the policy and pays reasonable attention to protect the asset from risks. A customer's act of moral integrity about providing necessary information is the main principle on which the insurance firm assesses the charges for its service. For example, since they are beyond the insurer's information, the health insurance premium will be lower for a customer who hides a health problem in his/her knowledge or the information of being a smoker. Similarly, it is an *asymmetric information*-caused problem that someone, who is considering self suicide, buys a life insurance policy. In this case, again, it is impossible for the insurance company to have such information. In similar circumstances, an insurance company will have to face losses as a result of *adverse selection*.

When a policy holder does not put reasonable effort to protect insured asset from risks, the insurance firm has to cover the losses. The matter created by this type of cases is called *moral hazard* problem. Certainly, costs of both adverse selection and moral hazard will not be limited, in micro level, to the loss of insurance firm. Indeed, major harm will occur in macro level. That is, in order to offset costs caused by such cases of unethical attitudes, insurance firms will have to raise the insurance premium of those customers, who are inherently moral. Consequently, as well as paying higher premiums for their policies, ethical customers will even start questioning that being ethical may not be such a good merit. It is obvious that the last one will bring about bigger problems over the long term.

Though it is relatively new for Turkey, individual pension system (BES) is worth noting since it is a part of insurance industry and has significant and multi-dimensional effects both on financial markets and the economy. The system's interactions extends from easing the burden of social security system to reducing the government's borrowing costs, and from the development of capital markets to improving the wealth of nation, all of which carry social, economic and financial aspects. Taking all these into account, BES-related parties' ethical behavior are critically important.

Individual pension companies, intermediaries, regulatory and supervisory authorities are expected to operate as transparent, delicate and responsive about ethics. In addition to the fact that individual pension system is relatively new in Turkey, it is well known that the capital markets are not fully developed and do not have the desired depth. Furthermore, studies on the sector reveal that neither the participants' nor the salespeople's expertise and comprehensive knowledge on the issue are satisfactory (e.g., Altıntaş, 2009; Ünal and Gül, 2021). Therefore, unethical attitude and practices of the industry workforce due to their intentional conduct or insufficient knowledge may result in preventing to reach expected long-term prospects toward the system.

Insurance Association of Turkey has published insurance ethical principles.⁵ These principles are self-regulatory rules of the insurance industry in Turkey. The principles are classified under such themes as general rules, inter-company relations, customer relations, relations with employees and insurance agencies, and relations with official institutions and regulatory authorities. The size and coverage of the insurance industry is generally referred to a measure of a country's development level. In order to achieve a higher development level, the volume and penetration of industry should be promoted. At this point, enhancing the ethical standards of the insurance industry plays a critical role.

4. Capital Markets and Ethics

It is well known that Anglo-Saxon countries' capital markets are both more developed and also have a greater share in the economy. On the other hand, in Continental Europe and many other countries, bank-based financial system is much more dominant. Although there are studies revealing the both systems' unique advantages in the related literature, it can be asserted that capital markets promise a more sound economic structure in the long run. In this respect, compared to developed economies, the both systems' past is not long enough in Turkey. In comparison with that of banking industry; however, the history of capital markets is relatively shorter. Therefore, as also studies report, it can be argued that capital markets of Turkey are not big, nor has enough depth yet.

Considering that they are institutions of safekeeping, it is a well-known fact that trust is the most valuable asset in banking industry. In the case of capital markets, there is a debit-credit relationship in bond market while there is a partnership relationship in stock market. Compared to inherent risks of debit-credit relationship, risks born by investors in partnership relationship are quite higher. In owner/manager cases, shareholders have the power of control and supervision over firm operations. However, today's modern business world limits these abilities due to the facts that firms grow bigger hence need professional management teams and also the status of minority shareholders in public companies make difficult them for screening the firm's operations. It can be observed that majority stockholders may have the board decide (e.g., about dividend distribution, mergers & acquisitions) in their behalf yet against the minority shareholders. Especially in countries with developed capital markets, it can be found highly strict laws and regulations to protect the rights of minority stockholders. In Turkey, such regulatory and supervisory agencies as the Capital Markets Board are on duty. Moreover, as a professional membership society, Turkish Capital Markets Association is closely involved with its members' practices.

A frequently observed ethics-related problem in capital markets is manipulation. Manipulative comments, news and attitudes, coming from many parties such as firm managers and media, misleads a number of sides involved trading activities in capital markets, for example, current or potential investors, dealers and brokers. As a result, gains and losses will occur in favor of manipulators yet against other investors. Manipulation is regarded as a crime hence legal provisions of precautionary insentives and penalty measures are carried out in most countries. Nevertheless, the success level of these attempts are open to discussion. Certainly, it can be asserted that the better of a country's jurisdiction, the higher the rate of success. It is quite obvious that a country's not only the economic system but also specifically the capital markets function properly if it is a state literally ruled by law.

In today's modern economic world, information is as important as to be considered as a production factor. One of the cases related with the violation of ethical principles in capital markets is known as insider trading. Sources of such ethics-related problems are those who

⁵ Detaylı bilgi için bkznz. <https://www.tsb.org.tr/Default.aspx?pageID=413&srch=etik%20ilkeler>

have access to news or information, which have possible impacts on a firm, an industry or even the whole economic system. For example, an executive or an ordinary employee of a firm, or a politician may be able to reach such information before it is publicly available. Therefore, the privilege of access to information will result in an improper personal gain for who has and uses this information.

Another popular issue worth to mention in capital markets is speculation. Even though it is not an illegal action by law, its moral status is questionable with respect to ethics. Speculators are players who are needed in capital markets. Thanks to them, trading activities are fast and easily materialized hence the provision of liquidity, which is an important function of capital markets, is ensured. However, compared to which their existence and actions are thankfully welcomed in the marketplace, their activities become controversial beyond some point. Unfortunately, they may attempt to move their trading activity further away from the basis of their existence in the markets to an entire mechanism of easy, fast and high money making device. At this point, speculation becomes arguable with respect to ethics. The issue becomes even more dramatic when inexperienced and unsophisticated investors, other than professionals, start to intervene risky speculative trading activities. In a workshop organized by the Banking Regulation and Supervision Agency (BDDK) and the Participation Banks Association of Turkey (TKBB) in 2013, Ertaş, the president of the Capital Markets Board of Turkey (SPK), highlighted this issue. Questioning the increase in the volume of speculative trading and pointing out the rising interest toward Islamic finance recently, he regarded all these events as carrying a promising potential for Turkey's scope of becoming a financial center. It should be noted that one of the main causes of the last global crisis is the increase in speculative transactions. As mentioned earlier, it can be argued that the credit rating agencies have also serious even intentional ethics violations related with the global crisis. Their responsibility is so significant that the costs created by their ratings hence harms done to third parties carry severe long-term effects. Despite all these losses caused by their actions, it is particularly dramatic that they have continued their operations without paying any charge for their share of the bill.

In addition to subjects examined so far, there are also other issues related with ethics. Some others of them are ethical problems of governmental agencies and institutions-originated. As being the sole legislative authority, the fair acting of a government in both using its legislative power and execution of them is critically important. It is well known that the properly functioning justice system in a country results in a solid and healthy economy. In that sense, unfortunately our country's record is not appreciated well enough. The fairness in both the generation and execution procedures of legislative order is frequently questioned. Following this, the scepticism toward the justice system comes up thus creates fragilities. For example, sudden and frequent changes of laws can be observed. Similarly, examples may occur in the government's conception of regarding itself as superior to its citizens and even to the law provision and execution procedures. With respect to financial aspects, among others, tax amnesties have unfortunately become to appear on continuous basis hence create a deterioration in the society's moral values and perception of ethics. It constitutes an alarming situation in the long-term besides its negative impacts on the business and financial environment. It should not be ignored that the matter carries such direct or indirect inevitable drawbacks as in issues ranging from corporate finance to investment climate.

Concluding Remarks

Trust may be achieved by commitment to such features as dignity, esteem and credibility. Compared to others, what probably makes trust more valuable for the financial system is the systematic effects occurring in case of its loss. That is, the magnitude of negative impacts

created by harms to trust in financial markets is greater than any other sectors of the economy. Moreover, these complications are not even limited to the financial markets itself but also threaten the fundamentals of whole economic structure.

Human being is expected to act in accordance with the ethical values that s/he is given by born. However, it is possible only in an ideal world. In today's highly globalized world, financial integration and the movement of funds have reached at quite advanced levels. On the other hand, countries' diversified religious and cultural features bring about difeferences in their perceptions of ethics. Therefore, a country's relatively more ethical practices with respect to its legislations and applications may not provide it with a complete prevention from the negative outcomes of others' financial wrong doings. Despite all difficulties, it is possible to come together on a consensus of universal ethical norms.

In summary, several inferences can be carried out. That is, financial services, markets, and transactions cannot be made totally ethical just by legislations and legal enforcements. That is because the scope of moral values is broader than the written rules. Therefore, it is required that all market participants' consciousness is improved. Even more importantly, they should become eager to render their businesses ethical. Lastly, all parties should be self restraint. The future finance and ethics-related studies would be valuable and contribute to the literature by assessing it in a greater extent and also by examining other financial subtitles of the issue.

REFERENCES

- Altıntaş, K.M. (2009). Belirlenmiş Katkı Esaslı Emeklilik Planlarında Finansal Eğitimin Önemi: Katılımcıların Finansal Okuryazarlığı Çerçevesinde Alternatif Bir Yatırım Eğitim Modeli. *ZKÜ Sosyal Bilimler Dergisi*. 5(9), ss.151-176.
- Brenan, Megan. (2018). Nurses Again Outpace Other Professions for Honesty, Ethics, <https://news.gallup.com/poll/245597/nurses-again-outpace-professions-honesty-ethics.aspx>
- Brigham, Eugene F. and Gapenski, Louis C. (1994). *Financial Management, Theory and Practice*, The Dryden Press, Seventh Edition, Fort Worth, TX, USA.
- Coca Cola İçecek İş Etiği Kodu El Kitabı, https://www.cci.com.tr/Portals/3/Documents/PDF/code_of_ethics_handbook.pdf, Access Date: 3-4-2021.
- Dereci, Mustafa. (2017). Etik Bankacılık ve Biz, Katılım Finans Dergisi, katilimfinans.dergisi.com.tr/etik-bankacilik-ve-biz (15 Kasım 2017), Erişim Tarihi: 5-11-2019.
- Ertaş, Vahdettin. (2013). Finans Sistemi Etik değerlerle Buluşmalı, Katılım Bankacılığı ve Faizsiz Finans Çalıştayı, 22-12-2013.
- Fettahoğlu, Sibel. (2014). İşletmelerde Sosyal Sorumluluk ile Finansal Performans Arasındaki İlişki: İMKB'ye Yönelik Bir Uygulama, *Sosyal ve Beşeri Bilimler Dergisi*, 6(1), pp.11-20.
- Fıratoğlu, Bahşayış. (2005). Şirketlerin Sermaye Yapısını Etkileyen Faktörler ve Kriz Dönemlerinde Şirket Davranışlarında Meydana Gelen Değişiklikler, *Sermaye Piyasası Kurulu Araştırma Raporu*, p.39.
- Finansal Kurumlar Birliği, Mesleki Etik İlkeler, https://www.fkb.org.tr/Sites/1/upload/files/FKB-MESLEKI_ETIK_ILKELER-395.pdf, Access Date: 18-3-2021.
- Gündoğdu, Aysel. (2018). Etik Bankacılık ve Türkiye'de Uygulanabilirliği, *İş Ahlakı Dergisi*, 11(2), pp.255-273.
- Güney, Semra ve Mandacı, Gamze. (2009). Makyavelizm ve Etik Algısı İlişkileri: Bankacılık Sektöründe Bir Araştırma, *Hacettepe Üniversitesi İİBF Dergisi*, 27(2), pp.83-104.

Jensen, Michael C. and Meckling, William H. (1976). Theory of the Firm, Managerial Behavior, Agency Costs, and Ownership Structure, Journal of Financial Economics, 3(4), pp.305-360.

Miller, Peter L. (2015). How to improve insurance industry ethics, Insurance Journal (April 8, 2015), <https://www.insurancejournal.com/news/national/2015/04/08/363627.htm>, Access Date: 18-3-2021.

Türkiye Sigorta Birliği, Sigortacılık Etik İlkeleri, <https://www.tsb.org.tr/Default.aspx?pageID=413&srch=etik%20ilkeler>, Erişim Tarihi: 21-3-2021.

Ünal, Seyfettin ve Gül, Nihat. (2021). Bireysel Emeklilik Firma Yöneticileri Perspektifinden Bireysel Emeklilik Okuryazarlığı, Sosyal Güvenlik Dergisi, 11(1), pp.1-16.

Ünal, Seyfettin ve Serdar, Ahmet. (2020). Sigorta Şirket Yöneticileri Perspektifinden Sigorta Okuryazarlığı, Balkan Sosyal Bilimler Dergisi, 9(18), pp.1-10.

Zorlu Holding Etik İlkeler, <http://www.zorlu.com.tr/assets/files/pdf/zorlu-holding-etik-ilkeler-en.pdf>, Access Date: 18-3-2021.

2021: THE GEOPOLITICAL ROLE OF THE EUROPEAN UNION IN THE POST-COLD WAR ORDER

Süreyya Yiğit PhD

Professor of Politics and International Relations, School of Politics and Diplomacy, New Vision University, Tbilisi, Georgia

ABSTRACT

There was consensus regarding the end of the cold war ushering in a new era - the problem centred on identifying the critical features of this new epoch. Thirty years later, we still refer to this as the post-cold war period. At first, as quickly as bipolarity disappeared, unipolarity appeared to be dominant and here to stay. Entering the 2020s, it seems increasingly plausible that an emerging multipolarity may replace the unipolar international system. The European Union is a potential pole of attraction in such a scenario. Despite the catastrophe of Brexit, Europe has the capabilities to fulfil a historic role. This research aims to provide a coherent summary of the engagement between the United States and the EU and the possibilities facing both actors during the post-cold war era.

Keywords: European Union, Unipolarity, United States, Geopolitics, Post-Cold War, Russia

INTRODUCTION

A photograph was taken by Alfred Eisenstaedt in Times Square, New York City, on 14 August 1945, of a sailor kissing a nurse. That photograph is probably one of the most famous and unforgettable images of the twentieth century. For the most part, it signifies the end of World War II, the final victory over Japan. In another significant dimension, it signals the end of one world order and the beginning of another. The ending of the Second World War identified to all concerned that a spectacular new era had begun, and this was perhaps most easily identified by Eisenstaedt's photograph. Everyone knew the emergence of two new Great Powers, Superpowers who would come to dominate the international system for decades to come. Two generations after this event, we can recall a crumbling Berlin Wall photograph on 9 November 1989. Whilst a similar celebration occurred, there was no evident acceptance, consciousness, or perception that a new era had been entered into on the same scale as there had been in 1945. However, it is worthwhile considering that in 1945, however precarious, the U.S. and the USSR were allies. The general public did not equate the USSR as an enemy at the immediate cessation of hostilities. Equally, at the end of the cold war, public opinion did not immediately consider Russia a friendly nation.

Another global image that entered the collective psyche was the World Trade Center falling to the ground due to terrorist attacks on the United States, which captured the world's attention a dozen years later on 11 September 2001. The image of an aeroplane purposefully crashing into the Twin towers is a frame etched in the memory of all those who watched the television news that day and is certainly the most evocative image of the 21st century so far. Nearly sixty years after Pearl Harbor, to paraphrase President Roosevelt, American territory was attacked once more, and the symbol of the financial district of New York was severely damaged and very many American lives lost. The American people, territory and interests were in grave danger.

To be sure, in all three events, an old order had come to an end to be replaced by a new order. In 1945 and 1989 this was clear to see for all, but not so in 2001. Even though it was accepted that 1989 was a significant turning point, it was still not clear how decisive the changes had

been and exactly what sort of order had come about as a result. The academic literature referred to it as the post-cold war era. It was clear what the previous era was, but equally unclear what the present consisted of. 2001 was a blatant attack on the post-cold war unipolar power, and one may even argue – twenty years later in 2021 - that there is still no consensus concerning what other dimensions it encompassed.

The present time is not the first age where a sudden concentration of dramatic events has revealed underlying shifts in military power, economic interest and political alignments. One can claim that significant political changes result from the conjecture of unique and unpredictable sets of developments. We can see that in the post-1945 era, several actors dominated the world stage. Of these, in the civilian sphere, at least one has been an actor that encompassed several states, namely the European Union (E.U.). Established during the Cold War and nurtured by it, the E.U. matured in the aftermath of the Cold War.¹ Its importance on the international stage has refuted those who had considered it a total by-product of the Cold War.² Far from being sidelined with the ending of the Cold War, the E.U. integrated much more profoundly and expressed a desire to be heard with attentive ears when speaking on international issues.

It is undeniable that the E.U. is one of the most formidable actors on the global stage.³ It is undoubtedly a regional magnet attracting practically all states within its near geography to desire inclusion within itself.⁴ While the E.U. has set itself specific targets to aim for in this new era, it is still yet uncertain what it will be able to achieve.⁵ There are structural and internal factors and dynamics at work that will profoundly influence the development and effectiveness of the E.U. For a start, the ending of the Cold War has changed the operational environment beyond recognition.⁶ It is in this arena that the E.U. finds itself alongside all other actors. The only substantial difference is that all the critical changes have appeared in the region in and around Europe. It is impossible for such dramatic changes not to have specific as well as general effects. Given this, this research aims to shed some light on what the E.U. can be expected to achieve as an international actor in the 2020s.

Cold War

The years between 1939-1945 are generally regarded as the Second World War and the years between 1945-1989 as the Cold War. In all terms and dimensions, the former was an authentic and all too horrible war, whereas the latter was not a real war, nor a hot war. Hence, it can be argued that the peace after it should not be a real peace either. As the Cold War was not a proper war in the sense that, for example, World War II was, it did not require a proper peace.

General Wesley Clark has often referred to the NATO action over Kosovo not being permitted to be called a war.⁷ Hence he could not claim "victory" as it was not a war. In this

¹ Godowska, M. (2012). The relevance of neofunctionalism in explaining European integration in its origins and today. *Journal for Perspectives of Economic, Political, and Social Integration*, 18(1-2), 145.

² Söderbaum, F., & Van Langenhove, L. (2005). Introduction: the EU as a global actor and the role of interregionalism. *European Integration*, 27(3), 249-262.

³ Zielonka, J. (2008). Europe as a global actor: empire by example?. *International affairs*, 84(3), 471-484.

⁴ Edwards, G. (2008). The construction of ambiguity and the limits of attraction: Europe and its neighbourhood policy. *European Integration*, 30(1), 45-62.

⁵ Söderbaum, F., Stålgren, P., & Van Langenhove, L. (2005). The EU as a global actor and the dynamics of interregionalism: A comparative analysis. *European Integration*, 27(3), 365-380.

⁶ Gold, H. (1978). Foreign policy decision-making and the environment: the claims of Snyder, Brecher, and the Sprouts. *International Studies Quarterly*, 22(4), 569-586.

⁷ Clark, W. K. (2019). How We Succeeded in Kosovo. *Brown J. World Aff.*, 26, 165., Stigler, A. L. (2003). A clear victory for airpower: NATO's empty threat to invade Kosovo. *International Security*, 27(3), 124-157., Dixon, P. (2003). Victory by spin? Britain, the U.S. and the propaganda war over Kosovo. *Civil Wars*, 6(4), 83-106.

same vein, one can certainly argue that a Cold Peace with no formal settlement followed the Cold War as such. Furthermore, as it ended peacefully, there was no need for peace to be made at the end. The central miscalculation stemming from these opinions and arguments concerns the confusion between a peaceful end and a peaceful settlement. They may well resemble each other, but they are not the same.

In Europe, one can undoubtedly witness this dichotomy. It is worthwhile to remember that a peace settlement is a symptom rather than a cause. It reflects a distribution of power that already exists, as victory has been the consequence. Therefore, peacemaking can be regarded as just symptomatic of the order that is already in place.⁸ Peace settlements do not wipe the board clean as such; they also encompass continuities and the instruments of change.

When it comes to the ending of the Cold War, especially in Europe, as this research concentrates upon, the term peacemaking is not the correct term as it was negotiated rather than imposed. Some, such as Lebow and Stein, argue that the USSR actually did lose the Cold War.⁹ The argument centres on the fact that the USSR simply could not afford to keep participating in the arms race and had to accept the U.S. as the victor due to the high cost of military expenditures.¹⁰ Others claim the USSR did not lose the Cold War as so many observers comment so freely, closely followed by suffering a peace settlement.¹¹ The USSR had other choices that it could have taken but chose not to do so, opting for ending the Cold War peacefully, of negotiating Cold War issues that made it come to an end and culminate in a new basis for closer relations between the East and West. Had Gorbachev not been General Secretary but someone else who supported Andropov's ideological stance, the cold war would have continued. Therefore, it is considered that as there was no military defeat of the USSR, as it was a voluntary choice - primarily by Gorbachev - for it to end the Cold War, there was and is no requirement for a peace settlement.

Even though the Cold War years were a period of intense concern, worry, and at times of crisis, of hysteria in Europe, its ending did not mean a settlement for the whole international order. The international order is not synonymous with Europe. Whilst we can observe that the Cold War did wrap parts of the globe in phases and segments like the tentacles of an octopus, there were initially significant remnants of the world that were not touched by the changing of this order. Now, after a period of several decades, there are certain schools of thought that attempt to highlight the effects of the new international order across the globe.¹²

Rival Predictions

With the end of the Cold War, two identifiable strands of hopes and expressions were evident. The Pessimists concentrated on the dangers that were evident with the ending of the Cold war. They focused more on the looser restraints that had emerged, which were likely to lead to a return of past instabilities. The traditional agenda was predicted to emerge as the end of the

⁸ Richmond, O. P. (2001). A genealogy of peacemaking: the creation and re-creation of order. *Alternatives*, 26(3), 317-348.

⁹ Lebow, R. N., & Stein, J. G. (1995). *We all lost the Cold War*. Princeton University Press.

¹⁰ Brooks, S. G., & Wohlforth, W. C. (2001). Power, globalization, and the end of the Cold War: Reevaluating a landmark case for ideas. *International Security*, 25(3), 5-53.

¹¹ English, R. D. (2002). Power, ideas, and new evidence on the cold war's end: A reply to Brooks and Wohlforth. *International Security*, 26(4), 70-92.

¹² Brands, H. (2018). American grand strategy in the post-Cold War era. *New Directions in Strategic Thinking* 2.0, 133., Kacowicz, A. M., & Miller, B. (2018). The Problem of Peaceful Change Revisited: From the End of the Cold War to the Uncertainties of a Post-Liberal Order. *International Studies Review*, 20(2), 301-308., Grigoryev, L., & Pabst, A. (2020). Introduction: International Cooperation in Times of Post-Cold War (Dis) order. In *Global Governance in Transformation* (pp. 1-12). Springer, Cham., Bluth, C. (2021). Global Security in the Post-Cold War Era and the Relevance of Nuclear Weapons.

Cold War would no longer conceal these long-held desires and needs. A new age of power politics awaited the world without the checks and balances associated with the Cold War. Kaplan asserted that the future was one whereby it was a wait for the "coming anarchy" and Huntington that the future would have to accept a "clash of civilizations".¹³

At the other extreme, the Optimists declared that the ending of the Cold War had to be entirely associated with the victory of liberalism. As this was so evidently the case, then quite naturally, it was predicted that international organizations would have a more significant and more profound influence in world affairs, collective security would enjoy a revival with a corresponding improvement and importance attached to human rights. Fukuyama defended his claim that the "end of history" had arrived, and the world witnessed the year zero.¹⁴ Despite their wide-ranging expectations, both the pessimists and the optimists agreed that the post-Cold War period was a true watershed and that whatever happened, nothing would ever be the same again.

Before analysing and identifying the post-Cold War order, it would be helpful to cast a glance at what the Cold War order consisted of. It can indeed be argued that to even talk of a Cold War order, especially in Europe, is self-contradictory as it was a system of superpower control and management that broke many of the values usually associated with a concept of order. Europe was divided into two ideological, militarily armed camps. Two military alliances emerged around the hub of each Superpower, threatening each other in an international system that was bipolar. Therefore, the most critical systemic factor was one of there being two poles. With the end of the Cold War, the world witnessed the decline, and as most readily accept, the disappearance of one of the poles. A very new scenario indeed, compared to the last few decades.

The fundamental distinction of the post-Cold war is not related to it being new, however, but that it is a sharp break from the past. If, for example, the USSR was simply replaced by another state, it would have obviously meant a new scenario, but the essential characteristics would have remained the same. There would have been no substantial systemic break with the past. It is precisely this which is the current post-Cold war's most notable and vital distinction. It is not easy to understand the current order if one cannot recognize the continuities that exist. One must recognize that in this particular period, there are both continuities as well as discontinuities.

The most evident continuities concern the Cold War institutions. It seems that institutions such as NATO are almost the defining attributes of the post-Cold War era. Given that NATO has played a prominent role throughout the 1990s, there is ample support for this assertion.¹⁵ Having said this, however, according to a liberal interpretation of international relations, it can be asserted that some of the institutions and philosophies continue to exist either because they are a part of the system of mutual commitments and reassurances whose logic predates the Cold War, or since they were independent of it. Whatever the interpretation, the Cold War is over, but the Cold War political system remains.¹⁶ One can also add to this the broader concept of the Western liberal order, which is another structure that has strengthened after the Cold War.¹⁷ Again, to highlight this development, it is sufficient to note that a new global

¹³ Kaplan, R. D. (1994). The coming anarchy. *Atlantic Monthly*, 273(2), 44-76., Huntington, S. P. (2000). The clash of civilizations?. In *Culture and politics* (pp. 99-118). Palgrave Macmillan, New York.

¹⁴ Fukuyama, F. (1989). The end of history?. *The national interest*, (16), 3-18.

¹⁵ Yost, D. (1998). The new NATO and collective security. *Survival*, 40(2), 135-160.

¹⁶ Matambo, E. (2020). International Relations Theory after the Cold War: China, the Global South and Non-State Actors. *Image.*, Ross, R. S. (2020). It's not a cold war: competition and cooperation in US-China relations. *China International Strategy Review*, 2(1), 63-72.

¹⁷ Ikenberry, G. J. (2018). Why the liberal world order will survive. *Ethics & International Affairs*, 32(1), 17-29.

institution whose aim is to promote the liberal trading order, the World Trade Organization, was set up in 1995.¹⁸

A Historic Parallel?

Whilst there was a school of thought that regarded the period before 1945 as a very distant past, never to be repeated, some voices argue that it is precisely this pre-1945 world that is closer to the present and offers much more relevant lessons than the Cold War period.¹⁹ Throughout the Cold War, academics considered the period they were living in to be the norm and other time periods insignificant to understand the present. Due to modern technological developments and especially the existence of nuclear weapons, the circumstance of the Cold War was only natural and rational.²⁰ It is now argued that the Cold War period itself should perhaps be seen as the exception in global historical epochs.²¹

Even though established academics such as Gaddis accept that the period 1989-1991 signifies a rare fundamental, "clean" historical break, others such as Waltz respond by emphasizing the danger of neglecting the many dimensions of continuity such as the structure of power or the construction of a liberal capitalist order.²² It is clear to see that there are instances of clear discontinuity and clear cases of continuity, too, in the post-Cold War era. The decade of 1990, in terms of order, did not resemble in many parts that of the prevailing order of the first half of the twentieth century. This was especially so when we remind ourselves of the ethnic separatism of the 1990s. It is precisely this and other related developments that lend credence to the view that the end of the Cold War allowed for the pre-1945 world to look less distant.

Thinking back to the Cold War, it was a complex phenomenon involving two significant dimensions in effect. The first, most threateningly, is related to East-West rivalry. The second, to the systemic development within the West. If one accepts that the growth of the West is regarded as a vital aspect of the Cold War, then this half of the two dimensions did not necessarily end in 1989. The USSR had declined in many areas compared to the U.S. by the mid-1980s, thus eroding its capacity to sustain the Cold War. According to one school of thought, the distribution of power had changed, which contributed significantly to the end of the Cold War.²³ Once the structure that sustained the Cold War had begun to erode, the end of the Cold War was in sight. Neo-realists asserting the structural adjustments primary role in world politics highlight the importance of the Balance of Power today.²⁴ Much focus is given to the distribution of world power due to the collapse of the USSR, and hence attention is directed towards the polarity of the system.

¹⁸ Hoekman, B. (2002). The WTO: functions and basic principles. *Development, Trade, and the WTO: A Handbook*. Washington, DC: World Bank, 41-50.

¹⁹ Herbert, U. (2007). Europe in high modernity. Reflections on a theory of the 20th century. *Journal of Modern European History*, 5(1), 5-21.

²⁰ Waltz, K. N. (2017). Reading 7.3 Why Nuclear Proliferation May Be Good. In *Conflict After the Cold War* (pp. 418-431). Routledge.

²¹ Van Evera, S. (1990). Primed for peace: Europe after the Cold War. *International Security*, 15(3), 7-57.

²² Gaddis, J. L., & Bothwell, R. (1997). We now know: rethinking cold-war as history. *International Journal*, 52(3), 537., Waltz, K. N. (2000). Structural realism after the Cold War. *International Security*, 25(1), 5-41.

²³ Waltz, K., & Fearon, J. (2012). A conversation with Kenneth Waltz. *Annual Review of Political Science*, 15, 1-12., Waltz, K. N. (2000). Structural realism after the Cold War. *International Security*, 25(1), 5-41.

²⁴ Waltz, K. N. (2000). NATO expansion: A realist's view. *Contemporary Security Policy*, 21(2), 23-38., Waltz, K. N. (2000). Globalization and American power. *The National Interest*, (59), 46-56.

Post-Cold War Peace

Modifying what Clark asserts, one can identify a post-Cold War peace in Europe in two parts and five stages.²⁵

The Armistice:

i) Until the end of 1991, in this period the conflict ended between the two rivals.

Peacemaking:

ii) 1991-1993: A significant degree of cooperation took place with Russia, with a high level of Russian compliance with western preferences.

iii) 1994 - 2001: A more testing time between the West and Russia.

iv) 2001 - 2014: An initial period of frozen tensions and partial periodic collaboration, especially the war on terror.

v) 2014 - present: Sanctions are levied against Russia by the West for its annexation of Crimea

As mentioned earlier, there emerged a dual interpretation of what the future held. The optimists considered certain developments in the 1990s, especially the early successes of U.N. Peacekeeping, as offering them a clearer picture of the future.

Three principal reasons catered for this optimism.²⁶

1) U.N. Security Council consensus among the Great Powers. Operation Desert Storm conducted against Iraq proved to be a highlight, but a long shadow was cast due to the lack of consensus over the vexed issue of Yugoslavia.

2) An increased awareness of the indivisibility of peace. This acceptance did place high costs on the relatively few potential peacekeepers as time went on.

3) Early gloss on the U.N. system. As the number of missions increased and were imposed on the U.N., it became clear that it could not adequately carry this burden.

One of the abovementioned factors that led to the optimists' perception concerned what can be called the U.N. Security Council Concert. However, this was not to last, as was witnessed by Russia's divergent views concerning the Kosovo crisis and China's very different interpretations concerning intervention and human rights.²⁷ As the decade proceeded, both were to protest western actions. This diluted the optimists' view of how the future of international relations would be conducted.

Toward the second half of the 1990s, a noticeable, pragmatic development of a rudimentary collective security system, directed by a handful of powers, emerged. They usually acted in concert with "coalitions of the willing".²⁸ The major problem with the concept of collective security concerned the nearly impossible goal of getting all states to agree, which required a smaller group of Great Powers to take the lead.

²⁵ Clark, I. (2001). Globalization and the post-cold war order. *The globalization of world politics*, 2, 634-648.,

Clark, I. (2001). *The post-Cold War order: the spoils of peace*. Oxford University Press. Chapter 3.

²⁶ Clark, I. (2001). *The post-Cold War order: the spoils of peace*. Oxford University Press. Chapter 7.

²⁷ Harland, D. (2010). Kosovo and the U.N. *Survival*, 52(5), 75-98.

²⁸ Cooper, A. F. (2008). Stretching the Model of 'Coalitions of the Willing'. In *Global Governance and Diplomacy* (pp. 257-270). Palgrave Macmillan, London., Vucetic, S. (2011). Bound to follow? The Anglosphere and US-led coalitions of the willing, 1950–2001. *European Journal of International Relations*, 17(1), 27-49.

The central problem with such a scheme was that if such a small group took important decisions, then vital decisions would not enjoy widespread legitimacy among the international community. It can be asserted that such a coalition continues to this day concerning the war on terrorism, but it would be complicated to defend the view that this was put on the international agenda by any power other than the U.S.

The Dimensions of Peace

Clark identifies two different aspects of the peace within the Post-Cold War order: distributive and regulative.²⁹

The Distributive aspect contained six central identifications.

- i) German Unification within NATO
- ii) Dismantling of the Warsaw Pact
- iii) Disintegration of the USSR
- iv) NATO Enlargement
- v) E.U. Enlargement
- vi) Diminished role of Russia

As for the characteristics of the post-Cold War Regulative peace, four are named:

- i) The salience of norms attached to the working of the global economy
- ii) The continued dominance of a Western controlled multilateralism
- iii) Reformulated style of collectivization of security
- iv) Continued assertion of a liberal rights order.

The peace was not carefully determined and implemented, but instead, it developed spontaneously with no conscious planning. The peace was a distributive peace as sovereignty over territory was redistributed (Germany and Czechoslovakia) and existing spheres of influence abrogated (The USSR and Eastern Europe), and finally, deployments of military power fundamentally shifted (NATO and the Warsaw Pact). Whereas the Cold War was characterized as a state of equilibrium, its ending led to a dynamic series of shifts and manoeuvres that finalized in clear disequilibria of power. From being a Superpower, Russia was initially transformed into a fringe player in its own near abroad. Given that such developments did occur, it is correct to inquire that if this was not an example of a distributive peace, what is?

One of the most significant examples of the distributive peace idea is the fact of NATO enlargement.³⁰ NATO enlargement took place simply because it could. The Cold War resulted in such a redistribution of power that such an action could and did take place.

An interesting point to recall is that the West considered the Soviet Union's concerns whilst German unification was being contemplated. Whereas concerning NATO enlargement, that took place irrespective of Russia's say.³¹ Therefore, the latter event is an excellent example of a different stage of a peace settlement reached by then. During the former, the USSR was pressed to accept it by declaring that it would be in its interests to proceed. No such action was taken regarding NATO enlargement. Russian objections were, let alone answered, but

²⁹ Clark, I. (2001). *The post-Cold War order: the spoils of peace*. Oxford University Press. Chapters 5&7.

³⁰ Reiter, D. (2001). Why NATO enlargement does not spread democracy. *International Security*, 25(4), 41-67.

³¹ Kramer, M. (2009). The myth of a no-NATO-enlargement pledge to Russia. *The Washington Quarterly*, 32(2), 39-61.

completely ignored. Once again, this shows the distance travelled in the consolidation of the European settlement between 1990 and the latter part of the decade.

Order

It is worthwhile to remember that, according to Clark, in order to achieve a post-war order to develop, two criteria must be met in the negotiation of the peace.³²

- a) The defeated party must accept the fact of defeat.
- b) The defeated party must be treated as a working partner within the international order at the earliest opportunity.

Looking at history, we can note that France in 1815, Wilhelmine Germany in 1918, Nazi Germany and Japan in 1945 were similar to the USSR and its socialist allies pacified by attempted radical internal transformations to their political and economic character. As they underwent such a change, they became incorporated into the international order and functioned, usually acting on the whole as status quo states.

For a sense of peace to be long-standing and stable, the defeated power, once reformed, ought to become an active participant in maintaining the peace settlement that has been imposed upon it. We can see that Japan and the Federal Republic of Germany were excellent examples of this way of thinking. For the E.U., its most significant and most crucial neighbour remains undoubtedly Russia. Concerning this relationship, in particular, the post-Cold War peace determines Russia's rightful place within Europe. The E.U. has not been nearly as warm to Russia as it has been to the other successor states of the USSR. The current peace that was inscribed in Europe reflected a more hostile vision towards Russia. To suggest that Russia should be readmitted and reincorporated into a twenty-first-century equivalent of a Concert of Europe would be pretty naïve.³³

It can be argued that in 1990, the regulative aspect became the central aim of peacemaking. This was not related to it distancing itself from the concept and association with power but was due to it being within those dimensions that power could most effectively be exercised. Distributive peace was sidelined not due to its image as being power-based but due to its lack of effectiveness. Since 1990, there was a reversal towards distributive peace as the view that the need for granting concessions to the defeated party that regulative peace typically brings was on the decline.

Therefore, one can state that the terms of peace, as such, at the beginning did seem to be relatively benign, though this was deceptive. It appeared lenient only as it was less visible, as the regulative peace was given the spotlight to demonstrate the West's manner of action and preference. Within the process of distributive peace, several examples of discontinuity presented themselves. Perhaps the three that come to mind at the first instance are:

- i) Spheres of influence
- ii) State dismemberment and State unification
- iii) Military balances

To highlight some of the notable observations that validate this statement, it is worth recalling that there is no longer bi-polarity, no Warsaw Pact and even no USSR. As for continuities, U.S. power remains dominant, the condition of the Third World remains primarily unchanged, and the globalization process continues. It is clear to see that all of the above draw the

³² Clark, I. (2001). *The post-Cold War order: the spoils of peace*. Oxford University Press. Chapter 9.

³³ Jackson, W. D. (2004). Russia and the Council of Europe: the perils of premature admission. *Problems of Post-Communism*, 51(5), 23-33.

sharpest possible contrast between the world of the Cold War and its successor. According to Clark, even though a regulative peace may desire to seek itself some distance from power, it may only do so in an effective manner if the victorious party or parties enjoy the power differentials that permit them to resort to this strategy in the first place: and this is itself an expression of a kind of power.³⁴ Order will remain, as both the distributive and regulative settlements together will overcome any resistance to it. Stability is rooted in the sense that it is in the best interest of all participants to acquiesce in it. For weak states, defection costs are higher than the costs of continued compliance.³⁵

Order will be sustainable only if future shifts in the distribution of power do not take place. This is, of course, unlikely. Therefore, regulative peace is seen as a continuation of the distributive peace by other means, not as a legitimate alternative. It is always a paradox of victory that the material and ideational forces that lead to victory do not necessarily control the peace once the fighting halts. The question that most Realists and Neo-realists concern themselves is the situation of "when the fighting stops".³⁶ These forces can only shape the peace if there is a will to resort back to those forces once more, which is, on the whole, quite unlikely. The European Union had a powerful interest in keeping the continent stable and, during the 2000s, strove to increase its capabilities to impose its notion of order.³⁷ The huge bi-polar gladiatorial "fight" never took place, but there was calm on the continent and all parties watched closely what the E.U. could be capable of doing.

E.U. Foreign and Security Issues

During the Cold War, the E.U. was active in primarily the civilian arena, hence Duchene famously declaring it as a "Civilian Power".³⁸ It was only after the coming down of the Berlin Wall that the E.U. began to involve itself in the security domain. With the Treaty of European Union signed at Maastricht, the Common Foreign and Security Policy (CFSP) was born out of European Political Co-operation (EPC).³⁹ The debacle over Bosnia and the clarity concerning the limits of the European member-states of NATO during the Kosovo campaign ensured that the E.U. had to engage more fully in this field.⁴⁰

According to Vedrine, in terms of foreign and security policy, there is a difference concerning other policies pursued by the E.U.⁴¹ Having given this interpretation concerning the initiation of the Single Currency, a distinction is made concerning the realm of foreign and security policy. When looking at the issue of a single currency, he states that most finance ministers and central bank governors had come to realize that the concept of sovereignty in this field was little more than theoretical. At the time, most countries were in effect moving toward a Deutsche Mark zone, following Germany. National sovereignty in terms of a national currency was quickly becoming fictional, which was a decisive factor in creating and

³⁴ Clark, I. (2001). *The post-Cold War order: the spoils of peace*. Oxford University Press. Chapter 9.

³⁵ Underdal, A. (1998). Explaining compliance and defection: three models. *European Journal of International Relations*, 4(1), 5-30.

³⁶ Hartzell, C. A., & Hoddie, M. (2021). 1 After the Fighting Stops: Security Concerns, Institutions, and the Post-Civil War Environment. In *Crafting Peace* (pp. 21-42). Penn State University Press.

³⁷ Deighton, A. (2017). Why St. Malo Matters. In *The New Transatlantic Agenda* (pp. 51-64). Routledge.

³⁸ Duchene, Francois (1973). 'The European Community and the Uncertainties of Interdependence'. Max Kohnstamm and Wolfgang Hager. *A Nation Writ Large? Foreign Policy Problems before the European Community*. London: Macmillan. p.43.

³⁹ De Gucht, K. (1997). THE COMMON FOREIGN AND SECURITY POLICY (CFSP): IS THERE ROOM FOR NEW PERSPECTIVES IN THE AFTERMATH OF MAASTRICHT?. *Studia Diplomatica*, 49-83.

⁴⁰ Shepherd, A. J. (2009). 'A milestone in the history of the E.U.': Kosovo and the E.U.'s international role. *International Affairs*, 85(3), 513-530.

⁴¹ Vedrine, H. (2000). A greater Europe by reform. European Press, 8 September 2000.

accepting and inclusion within the eurozone. In comparison, there was no alternative to the single currency that is not the case with foreign and security matters.

Perhaps Védérine is most famous for his views on the distribution of power in the world in the 1990s and the number of poles in the international system. He stated that "The market economy has no competition. No countermodels exist any more....one can't deny that there is henceforth a dominant 'pole', the United States. In this sense the world is unipolar-even if it's potentially multipolar. Among the 189 countries in the world today, one constitutes a category all by itself, notwithstanding the formal equality of states of the United Nations. I'm talking about the United States, the world's only 'hyperpower'. The United States is predominant in all areas: economic, technological, military, monetary, linguistic, cultural. This situation is unprecedented: what previous empire subjugated the entire world, including its adversaries?"

42

Accepting this view of the international system, it was unlikely to expect that all the member states' views and policies regarding the whole world would come to an end and lose their validity at a given hour at a given date. It could not be that London, Paris, Berlin and Madrid would halt pursuing their preferred national policies at a specified time, and all would be replaced by a standard view arranged in Brussels. With this in mind, one could expect only a common rather than a single foreign policy for the foreseeable future.

It is difficult to envisage that any foreign policy can function, adhering only to the lowest common denominator either. No meaningful foreign policy can be contemplated nor operationalised only regarding the central principles of peace, human rights and democracy. If peace were the ultimate goal of statecraft, then the solution to peaceful change would be quite easy: surrendering to the aggressor state can consistently achieve peace.

Furthermore, within this context of formulating a common foreign policy and moving beyond the lowest common denominator, no member state will accept unwillingly any position nor be expected to renounce an established position. According to Védérine, national foreign policies are different, though converging over time.⁴³ They were expected to harmonize within the greater European whole, though with certain member states still leading from the front. In actual fact, the E.U. is faced with what Lippman characterized over nearly eight decades ago as the fundamental problem of foreign policy - the balancing of commitments and resources.⁴⁴ It seems unlikely that the member-states are prepared to go much beyond the Petersberg tasks and are still a long way from accepting the possibility of their soldiers returning in body bags from conflict zones.⁴⁵

In this realm, Hawtrey investigates an integral part of an active international presence, namely prestige.⁴⁶ He stated that the reputation for strength is what was called prestige. A country gained prestige from the possession of economic and military power. The result was that there was a wide margin of error. Prestige was not entirely a matter of calculation but partly of indirect inference.⁴⁷ The E.U. tried to increase its prestige in world politics, but the results have been somewhat mixed. When it came to vital matters such as conflict within its own continent, the E.U. was manifestly weak, indecisive and unready. The Unipolar pole did not

⁴² Védérine, H. (2003). What to Do With the Hyperpower? Interview. *Le Debit*, (3), 4-16.

⁴³ Seaton, P. (2002). France in an Age of Globalization: Védérine, Hubert, and Dominique Moisi; Philip H. Gordon, trans. *Perspectives on Political Science*, 31(2), 116.

⁴⁴ LIPPMAN, W. (1943). The Problem of Germany. *Current History*, 4(22), 229-234.

⁴⁵ Jørgensen, K. E. (1997). Western Europe and the Petersberg tasks. *European Approaches to Crisis Management*, 131-52.

⁴⁶ Smolnikov, S. (2018). Distinguishing Credibility. In *Great Power Conduct and Credibility in World Politics* (pp. 203-245). Palgrave Macmillan, Cham.

⁴⁷ ACH, A. (1930). The Problem of Oil. *Journal of the Royal Institute of International Affairs*, 9(3), 400-401.

involve itself as fully as it had previously, leaving it to the E.U. to handle this crisis and the world saw that the Europeans were not at a stage in which they could achieve coherence and success. Quite obviously, lessons have been learned from the Balkan episodes of Bosnia and Kosovo, which culminated in the Helsinki Summit decision of December 1999 to establish a European Rapid Reaction Force.⁴⁸ Indeed, the incorporation of the Common European Security and Defence Policy (CESDP) being written into the Nice Treaty (Arts. 17 and 25) is a pointer for the future concerning the aims and actions of the E.U.⁴⁹ Nevertheless, in military-security matters, it is evident that the US is the primary mover, with the EU remaining its faithful follower in 2021.

EU-US Relations

As the post-cold war system was one of Unipolarity, it is vital to investigate the relationship between the E.U. and the Unipolar pole. Looking into the future, one factor that could severely affect European-US relations would be a future Trump 2.0 administration combined with American domestic moralizing and a fierce cynicism deployed abroad. Most writing very prophetically over twenty years ago declared that there is a "dangerous American propensity to believe that the only way to be heard in the world is to *act tough*".⁵⁰ One can undoubtedly note such a stance in the immediate and continuing aftermath of the 11 September tragedy that struck New York and Washington.

Especially after this event, the U.S. became, correctly so, more concerned about rogue states and weapons of mass destruction, whereas the Europeans dealt with more domestically oriented and driven issues such as the environment and how food was produced. Such a dichotomy reflected the gap between a global power and a rather selfish and generally inward-looking regional actor, though much more than this, it explains the shift from the Cold War to the age we are presently experiencing. It seems apt to point out that traditional state-centred concerns are no longer as relevant in the present climate of globalisation.

After the Cold War, the Europeans became much more aware of their "Europeanness" with each passing year. As states became more knowledgeable about multiple identities and cultures through witnessing ethnic bloodshed, Europeans considered that to define themselves; they looked to the "Other".⁵¹ The only reasonable power to compare has naturally been the U.S.; hence, Europe tends to define its own identity by distinguishing itself from the U.S.

Generally, it has been thought that being a European was a product of history, geography and culture based on the weight of memory. Giddens has contributed a valuable interpretation concerning European identity. An individual's identity is dependent on location. When asked on the street where he/she is from, the answer is the door number. In another part of town, the district, in another town, his/her city, in a neighbouring country his/her country and another continent, his/her continent. When one contrasts this with the American concept, the contrast is clear: It is a culture of will for Americans. One becomes an American because one wants to be. Some progress has taken place concerning this within Europe, most notably the

⁴⁸ Giegerich, B., & Wallace, W. (2004). Not such a soft power: the external deployment of European forces. *Survival*, 46(2), 163-182.

⁴⁹ Whitman, R. G., & Juncos, A. (2009). The Lisbon Treaty and the Foreign, Security and Defence Policy: Reforms, implementation and the consequences of (non-) ratification. *European foreign affairs review*, 14(1).

⁵⁰ Moisi, D. (2001). The real crisis over the Atlantic. *Foreign Affairs*, 149-153.

⁵¹ Bialasiewicz, L., Elden, S., & Painter, J. (2005). The constitution of E.U. territory. *Comparative European Politics*, 3(3), 333-363.

transformation of the German citizenship law, from a Bismarckian blood emphasis to one of time, will and territorial belonging.⁵²

Most believed that a more balanced alliance in a more balanced world ought to be a shared ambition.⁵³ A strong Europe can mean a more robust NATO, a reality, which he believed many Americans fail to accept. The dominant view in Washington has long been that they consider a more independent Europe will inevitably be increasingly incompetent, paralyzed and ultimately divided.

Polar Influences

The post-Cold War environment comprises a new distribution of power, which has created new asymmetries between powerful and weak states. It is precisely these new power disparities, which are manifest as the old order has been destroyed. In such an environment, many opportunities and incentives exist for states to either confront each other in a contest for power and influence or establish new principles and rules of order. Even though it has been asserted that the Cold War was not a war, ipso facto there can be no identifiable victor; the U.S. received a "windfall" of assets increasing its power capabilities. It is also the case that the E.U. also received some benefits from the new environment, but these gains have been dwarfed by the gains accrued to the Unipolar power. Whatever the E.U. has set itself as the desired goal has been tempered by the significant power disparity between itself and the U.S. It is fair to say that the greater the power disparity, then the more significant the incentive for the more influential to attempt to impose its own preferred notion of order. Equally, in such a scenario, it is expected of the weaker states to refrain from attempting the implementation of their concept of order, opting for trying to establish agreements with the Unipolar pole, thereby hoping to curtail its freedom of manoeuvre and reduce the risks of hegemonic domination or total abandonment.

As such a spectacular systemic change has occurred, it is natural for the governing rules and institutions to be remade to fit in with the newly powerful actors, in this case, the US and the EU.⁵⁴ Where the interests of the two actors have merged, both have benefited, where they have diverged, the world has seen clearly who holds the upper hand. To emphasize this point, if we hypothesize that rather than New York if London had been attacked or Berlin or Paris, would the same international reaction have occurred? Would NATO have incurred Article 5 the next day? If at all? The hypothetical scenarios can be multiplied, but the essence of the argument is thus: The Unipole commands extremely significant resources to control the international agenda. In fact, models have been formulated to explain this phenomenon.⁵⁵

EU in the 21st Century

As mentioned, when we look back at the past, specific dates have tremendous resonance for us. We can allocate an essential role for them, which is why we remember them. Is a Sunday just a Sunday after all? It hardly is if some significance can be attached to it. In the Western Hemisphere, in the Americas, Sunday, 7 December 1941 has etched itself into the collective memory. Other, fortunately, more pleasant days too, have found a place in history such as 10 November 1989. Another date was 14 September 2003 and the venue, the whole of Sweden. The Swedish people decided not to relinquish their national currency in favour of the Euro.

⁵² Yigit, S. (1997). Turkish immigration into Germany: The E.U. perspective.

⁵³ Moisi, D. (2001). The real crisis over the Atlantic. *Foreign Affairs*, 149-153.

⁵⁴ Cox, M., Ikenberry, G. J., & Inoguchi, T. (Eds.). (2000). *American democracy promotion: impulses, strategies, and impacts*. Oxford University Press on Demand., Ikenberry, G. J. (2002). America's imperial ambition. *Foreign affairs*, 44-60.

⁵⁵ Hansen, B. (2000). The unipolar world order and its dynamics. In *The new world order* (pp. 112-133). Palgrave Macmillan, London.

For those that adhere to and believe in democracy, this decision of the Swedish people must be accepted and respected. Why is it that this decision taken on this particular Sunday should come to have such an impact? Most states in the world do not hold referendums on abolishing their currency. Keeping one's currency is not an issue at all for the vast majority of states in the world. The currency is part and parcel of a State's identity and means of control of the economy. In the past, State's prestige was indexed to the value of its currency. Those days have long since gone now. The issue of the Swedish decision being potentially so important is directly related to the furtherance of European integration.

The idea of European integration was one of the significant intellectual developments that took place in the Twentieth century. The notion of cooperation gained credence and was incorporated into the idea of Europe. The concern over national interest remained, and different ways and means of achieving that "national interest" began to be researched. After the success of the European Coal and Steel Community ECSC, the European Economic Community (EEC) was born on 25 March 1957. Depending on one's view, it was initially intended as an innovative mechanism to enable political union or closer economic integration. The preamble to the Treaty of Rome indicated the aim of bringing the peoples of Europe closer together.

After many decades and many enlargements, the EEC of six member-states became the European Union (E.U.) of fifteen member-states. The E.U. since the 1990s has been a powerful magnet attracting many states indicating their desire to accede. From its inception until Brexit, the E.U. had not only become more extensive in territory and population but had also increased its competencies in policy fields. It has been the forum in which bold and innovative steps have been taken within the realm of integration. At least nineteen member states have agreed to abandon their national currencies in favour of the single European currency: the Euro.

At the end of the millennium, the E.U. stood as a formidable regional organisation, the most influential, and integrated and powerful the world had seen to date. It is clear that the E.U. had achieved notable successes and earned an important place within the international system. That much is true. The question is, where will it go? For one, questions continue to be asked after Brexit concerning will it survive? If so, what shape will it take? Will integration deepen, and in a manner Engels probably never considered, lead to the withering away of the State? What impact will it have within its region and further afield? Will it achieve a position of a pole in the current (clearly) unipolar international system? It is all these questions and more that stimulate this research, introducing possibilities of where the E.U. may be in the third decade of the 21st century.

Graham Allison referring to the role of bureaucracies, remarked that "where you stand depends on where you sit"; meaning that within the bureaucracy, the position that was held depended on the interests of the particular ministry or section one was employed in.⁵⁶ For example, finance ministry officials and defence ministry officials can see very differently regarding arms procurement. Going beyond this relatively narrow focus, for us, the relevance of this observation is an early warning that whatever one writes concerning forecasting at least, there is a danger of subjectivity clouding objectivity.

Furthermore, there is the added issue, so eloquently expressed by Elise Boulding, over "conflicting perspectives".⁵⁷ For example, if two people are on the banks of the receding Aral

⁵⁶ Smith, S. (1980). Allison and the Cuban Missile Crisis: a review of the bureaucratic politics model of foreign policy decision-making. *Millennium*, 9(1), 21-40., Allison, G. T., & Graham, A. (1999). *Essence of decision*.

⁵⁷ Boulding, J. R., Clements, K. P., Morrison, M. L., & Strimling Yodsampa, A. (2016). Elise Boulding's legacy to the twenty - first century: Reflections on her contributions to understanding conflict and peace. *Negotiation*

Sea, overlooking the fishing vessels, one may well observe the very beginnings of a breathtaking sunset, making oneself feel happy and peaceful. The other may well see dark grey clouds on the horizon indicating a future storm, warning that all is not well. Both people are perfectly correct in their observations; both represent two different representations of the same reality; hence, they end up with profoundly different expectations of the future. They stand side by side in the same place, looking at the same spot on the water, yet they see varying scenes. There is truth in both observations, yet they are conflicting perspectives.

Quite obviously, all decisions involve choices among images of possible futures. In the case of the previous example, the testing of the image of the future is straightforward indeed. All that has to be done is to wait and observe the storm. In other words, to wait until the future becomes the present and then the past. At least in international relations, to make good decisions, one needs to find ways of testing the images of the future before they are realised and come to pass.

When investigating international relations, some are used to expecting the worst and engage in worst-case scenarios. Others indulge in painting utopian masterpieces. The central point to remember is that what we imagine for the future guides our present actions. Therefore, if one accepts a worst-case scenario, it will significantly increase the danger of belligerent action. Equally, the acceptance of a best-case scenario is fraught with dangers too. One may well end up planning for a Panglossian world which is the best of all possible worlds that only exists in one's mind - in a foolhardy optimistic delusion - and is not reflected in the operational environment. Bearing these in mind, the current practice is to have a broad canvass upon which many colours are present.

As argued earlier, the international system has undergone a profound change in the last decade. With the dissolution of the USSR, the bipolar structure has vanished, leaving behind unipolarity. As the world has changed so significantly, so must our perceptions and relations to it. Nearly all systems contain the probability for change, and in this respect, one can identify "phases". An appropriate example in a double land-locked state is the sea. Oceans and seas are made up of water. Water has many phases; it can be in liquid form, as it is seen from the banks of the Aral, or it can be in solid form when it turns into ice, or it can be in a gaseous phase when it becomes steam. The point to remember is that the phase in which a substance like water exists depends on its environment, such as temperature and pressure. When its environment is altered, it adopts a new form. Social systems, unfortunately, do not exhibit as clear cut examples of phases as chemical substances like water. The phase boundaries are rather more blurred.

Looking at the international system, one can crudely divide it into two and identify phases of war and phases of peace. Thinking within these terms, there are actions states can and cannot do. This is referred to as the "possibility boundary".⁵⁸ Georgia, for example, can disarm unilaterally but cannot ensure universal disarmament. The possibility boundary can be defined by physical, biological and by social limitations.

Within this boundary, there is also a taboo line that divides all actions into two realms: those where voluntary restraint is exercised and those actions where it is not.⁵⁹

and Conflict Management Research, 9(4), 274-291., Boulding, E. (1995). The dialectics of peace. *BOULDING, E. and BOULDING, K.(Eds)*. Chapter 10.

⁵⁸ Waller, W. (2013). 6b Comment: Kenneth Boulding on power. In *Interdisciplinary Economics* (pp. 284-294). Routledge., Boulding, Kenneth E., "Moving From Unstable Peace to Stable Peace", available at <http://www-ee.stanford.edu/~hellman/Breakthrough/book/pdfs/boulding.pdf>

⁵⁹ Payton, R. L. (2006). The ethics and values of fundraising. *The kindness of strangers, philanthropy in higher education*, 109-118.

Refrainment can be due to both external and internal consequences, as well as actions being considered taboo. The main difference between war and peace can be seen in the taboo line of decision-makers. A State may have the military capability of initiating a surprise attack. If peace prevails, it is due to the taboo on the use of armed forces. Without military capabilities, this taboo would become part of the possibility boundary, as armies that did not exist could not be used. These concepts are beneficial when attempting forecasting, as we shall see.

The phase of bipolarity highlighted one emotion more than any other: fear from threat. When one begins to ponder over what forms the basis of domestic systems, it is threats, especially as and when legitimised, that is the central base. For example, without the fear of the traffic policeman, many people would undoubtedly drive faster. Therefore, within the State, the threats are exerted at the individual. In the highlighted example, the State threatens the citizens with a penalty if they do not respect the speed limit. In the international system, threats are directed against other States. The dynamics of the threat system depend on the responses to the threat. During bipolarity, the world was effectively divided into three camps: those aligned with either one of the Superpowers and a third demanding non-alignment. Currently, there is only one Superpower or an ex-Hyperpower. The threats that emanate from the pole as well as from other States may well require different responses. The position of the E.U. concerning its responses to future threats ultimately depends on its resources, which allow for its capabilities.

Serfaty identified four issues that may shape the E.U. in the 21st century:⁶⁰

- i) Growth rates and Economic Cycle
- ii) Quality of political leadership and public support
- iii) Effectiveness of E.U. institutions regarding stability
- iv) U.S. attitude toward the E.U.

The main thrust of the argument concerns the economic well-being of the E.U. If a sustained period of economic growth is achieved, additional funds could be created, which could be distributed in various policy domains. Put simply, a rise in economic fortune could well spill over into other areas. A better than expected growth rate would entail a more generous E.U., perhaps willing to take on additional risks.

For the E.U. to maintain its international position and enhance it, political centrism becomes a vital element. The political leaders of the union have to convince their electorates to abide by the financial restrictions they have all voluntarily agreed to and invest in the E.U. with a view to a medium-term return. This is increasingly challenging in the post-Brexit era. The domestic decision-makers will have to win the battle to convince their electorates to be active as they were, for example, during the NATO intervention concerning Kosovo.

If inequalities within the E.U. widen, this could lead to irreparable societal and political damage. The institutions must be able to rely on the member-states in giving them the credit they deserve, rather than continue to blame them for what they cannot do. The U.S. commitment towards the E.U. is not unconditional, which was made brutally clear with the Trump Administration. A transatlantic community built on compatible social values, democratic practice and implementation of free trade is a prerequisite. Furthermore, there is an expectation from the U.S. that the European allies must shoulder some of the defence burden of NATO, a point that President Trump kept on reiterating.

⁶⁰ Serfaty, S. (2000). Europe 2007: From nation - states to member states. *Washington Quarterly*, 23(4), 15-29.

According to Serfaty, a future E.U. would have the following features given a favourable economic cycle, effective leadership, relative stability surrounding its borders and continued cooperation with the USA.

- A leaner and more effective Commission as well as a more powerful Parliament.
- A Council of Ministers operating more with Qualified Majority Voting
- A deeper range of policy responsibilities
- A fully operational single market with a strong Euro-zone
- Ultimately, a European Security and Defence Policy
- Further enlargement to raise membership to between 20 and 25 member-states.

This scenario for the E.U. was a well-thought-out one that made its assumptions clear. For the union to be capable of acting in this way in 2007, it needed to improve its economic performance, demonstrate political will, and refrain from competing with the USA. Had these assumptions held, then it was likely that the outcome would be the favourable one forecast. The criticism that can be levelled at this forecast rested primarily on the assumptions.

Primarily, the U.S. has been performing better than the E.U. in the recent past and was expected to continue in that vein. If growth rates do not meet the expectations, then the inequalities that already exist will not be narrowed but will widen, with inevitable consequences for the assumptions concerning effective political leadership. Such increasing divergence may well lead to bilateral disputes. Furthermore, given the fact that the Danes and the British effectively destroyed the idea of a single currency for the entire E.U., it will be tough to convince markets of a strong Euro-zone that aims to encompass the whole of the E.U., let alone becoming a rival to the U.S. dollar as an alternative reserve global currency.

At the turn of the millennium, Brzezinski considered Europe to be a “de facto” military protectorate of the USA.⁶¹ The alliance between the two parties being an unequal one signifying the asymmetry in power, with this asymmetrical power relationship likely to widen in the U.S. favour. The reasoning for the asymmetry was based upon the robust economic expansion witnessed in the U.S. alongside the achievements in technical innovation. It was expected that it was highly unlikely that the E.U. could close the gap in military terms with the U.S. The logical conclusion to this pattern of thought was that the U.S. was likely to remain the only truly global power for at least another generation and dominate the transatlantic alliance until 2025. This prediction has stood the test of time, as of the time of writing – autumn 2021.

Brzezinski identified three central factors that accounted for the creation of the European idea:

- i) External necessity
(Soviet Union)
- ii) Ideological commitment
(European idealism)
- iii) Domination by the most powerful
(France harnessing Germany)

⁶¹ Brzezinski, Z. (2000). Living with a new Europe. *The National Interest*, (60), 17-32.

The assertion that the drive for integration is bureaucratically spearheaded is made, concluding that it cannot generate the political will required for genuine unity. The example that one cannot achieve political unity and politically energise the public by 130,000 pages of the *acquis* is forcefully argued.⁶²

Brzezinski, a respected member of the Realist school of international relations, naturally concerns himself with security dimensions when measuring an actor's power and possible roles within the international system. For him, a polity construed on convenience is bound to be different from a polity derived from conviction. Therefore, the emerging E.U. would look more like a grander Switzerland than the USA, primarily as there are no Europeans willing to die for "Europe".

Particular emphasis was made concerning the decision taken at the 1999 Helsinki Summit in creating a joint European Rapid Reaction Force. This was considered to be a first tangible manifestation of a political Europe. However, if a threat warranted a serious mission to be undertaken, the planned European force would have to rely on NATO assets, making independent action improbable and perhaps impossible. Accordingly, Brzezinski remarked that:

"Thus, NATO would be *de facto* involved, even if initially it had exercised its option of first refusal. So, if the crisis is serious, the European reaction will not be independent, if the reaction is independent, the crisis will not be serious."⁶³

One can undoubtedly criticise Brzezinski for emphasising military power and, in effect, making it the litmus test of European integration. One of his critics compares this attitude as reflecting Stalin's infamous desire to know of the strength of the Pope by asking how many divisions he had.⁶⁴ Given the fact that the E.U. has failed so spectacularly in preventing and halting conflict in the Balkans, it makes sense to pursue what the military capabilities of the Europeans are. As is all too clear in the recent past, possession of capabilities is not the answer in containing or restraining conflict: it requires transforming those capabilities into concrete action. Therefore, although military preparedness is vital, the political will to act is even more paramount. Looking at the European position under bipolarity and unipolarity, there is nothing to suggest that its effectiveness as an actor in the international system will be enhanced.

So far, the views of experts have been evaluated concerning the future orientation of the E.U. Not surprisingly, the union itself has looked into this matter as well. In order to plan for the future, some ideas of what may need to be addressed or which issues will maintain or gain saliency need to be thought through. The most specific work undertaken concerning the future of the E.U. was, as a working paper carried out by the Forward Studies Unit, set up in 1989 as a department of the European Commission reporting directly to the President. A futurological function gradually developed outside the Unit, within several of the Commission's Directorates-General, which were keen to adopt a strategic approach. The Unit came to serve as a point where all these various future-oriented think tanks inside the Commission met together.

⁶² Szucko, A. (2020). Brexit and the Differentiated European (Dis) Integration. *Contexto Internacional*, 42, 621-646.

⁶³ Brzezinski, Z. (2000). Living with a new Europe. *The National Interest*, (60), p.26.

⁶⁴ Bertram, C. (2000). Comments on Brzezinski. *National Interest*, (60), 30-31.

Various Expected Outcomes: All Unrealised

The Forward Studies Unit launched the "Scenarios Europe 2010" project in 1997.⁶⁵ The aim was of producing a set of coherent and thought-provoking images of the future of Europe. The initial work was based on the research accumulated by the Unit during the ten years of its existence and on the expertise of civil servants of the European Commission.⁶⁶

SCENARIO I

Economic ideas dominate agenda
Consensus on Free Trade
A Strong Euro
Adoption of an American version of Liberalism & Individualism
Downsizing of the State
Reform of CAP accomplished, Structural funds reduced
Political integration shelved
Slow progress in JHA and Foreign Policy
Strong reliance on NATO
No development in social & environmental dimensions
Desire to see SEM enlarged
Growing regional imbalances within E.U.

Within the work, five possible scenarios for Europe were introduced. The first one, entitled "Triumphal Markets", implicitly regarded the triumph of a liberal-minded world economy approach. In fact, the concept of free trade was forecast to have been virtually accepted by all States. Europe had been won over to liberalism by American successes, accepting that there was no alternative to the U.S. model. A noticeable shift in the European political debate towards liberalism and individualism had taken place, which had resulted particularly in welfare cuts and a general reduction in public expenditure. In this scenario, societies had become fragmented and individualistic, concerning themselves primarily with the short-term. A critical presumption was a robust monetary policy implemented by the E.U.

The concern one had with the first scenario related to whether the realm of the economy would, in fact, loom as large as was predicted. Furthermore, for it to receive the attention it got, the rewards from the economic system had to be considerable, much more than at the time. How such a scenario could be fulfilled with widening global inequality was somewhat difficult to imagine. Here, free trade was accepted as a panacea for all the worlds' ills, clearly not the whole story. Furthermore, a trilateral view of the world was advocated whereby Japan became the third power, which was tough to accept. The E.U. may well and is likely to concentrate on economic matters as that was, after all, the central plank on which it was set up. Though extrapolating as this scenario did, the institutional system would not be reformed and attaching tremendous importance to the Single Market and the eurozone becoming an absolute priority for Brussels and even considering a customs union with Russia seemed unreasonable. Nevertheless, as its title suggested, this was one view of the future attaching high importance to a frontier-free economy where the markets dominated.

⁶⁵ MICHALSKI, A., & PENCH, L. R. (1999). Scenarios Europe 2010.

⁶⁶ As many as sixty officials from fifteen different Directorates-General were involved in the group work leading to the production of the scenarios. The entire exercise, coordinated by the Forward Studies Unit, took about two years, including test presentations to select outside audiences.

SCENARIO II

Enlargement abandoned
Open hostility to the economic & political system
Growing lack of legitimacy
Widening social and geographical inequality
Political fragmentation
Increase in international crime
No progress on Foreign Policy or JHA
Some member-states consider leaving the E.U.
Recurrent political crisis and public despondence

The second scenario mentioned was labelled “The Hundred Flowers”, which opposed the previous optimistic scenario with a heavy dose of pessimism. The E.U. was losing considerable powers, and consequently, its credibility being seriously undermined by its decision to abandon eastward enlargement. There was a proliferation of political scandals and deterioration of social conditions, which led to a crisis of confidence and a public reaction brimming with cynicism. There was a noticeable growth in the underground economy, with an emergence of new values based on local action, mutual support and a return to nature. The welfare systems were disorganised but continued to offer some limited support. Political fragmentation led to the most vital regions gaining greater autonomy while others descended into lawlessness. Due to this, the E.U. itself suffers from the member-states lack of legitimacy. Despite the setbacks, the euro-zone countries preserved their budgetary and monetary stability by constant alterations and adjustments and creative accounting.

In this scenario, the public had reacted against the old-style government that could be traced back to the 1980s. Rigid hierarchies and the compartmentalisation of competencies had led to bureaucracies remaining inflexible and unable to adjust accordingly. The theme of decentralisation, granting greater autonomy to regions, and creating institutional instruments to bind regions like the Committee of Regions went against the prevailing view.⁶⁷ Having said this, of course, such attempts can indeed not be said to have been effective. A public reaction is probable if they lead to what the public associates with failure and deception. This scenario extrapolated from certain developments advocating that information technologies and knowledge would be the main engines of growth and that self-regulation of the European economy would follow the voluntary or de facto withdrawal of public authorities. States are remarkably resilient social structures and do tend to adopt when circumstances allow it no other option. In that vein, whilst some of the characteristics that this scenario highlighted could occur, the ultimate picture of a future Europe would probably not be as dire as painted here.

SCENARIO III

Public embracement of integration
Enlargement is implemented
Progress in social and environmental matters
Favourable political relations with neighbours
Reform of E.U. given serious consideration
A new model of cooperation and consensus building
Growing poverty gap; attempts at reduction by increasing aid

⁶⁷ Christiansen, T., & Lintner, P. (2005). The Committee of the Regions after 10 Years: Lessons from the Past and Challenges for the Future. *EIPAScope*, 2005(1), 7-13.

Growth of civil society
Continent-wide debate on the future of the E.U.
Enhancement of democracy
Increases in E.U. budget and elimination of national veto
Progress in Foreign Policy co-ordination
New Euro-Mediterranean dimension developed

The third scenario was entitled “Shared Responsibilities”, which was the most optimistic of all the five that had been offered. Here, Europe had undergone profound changes and had finally found a way of reconciling its ideals of mutual solidarity and respect for the individual and squaring this circle with economic efficiency and technological advancement. Integration was not a contentious issue as there was widespread acceptance. Enlargement had occurred, and significant steps were taken in fields such as social affairs and the environment. In this scenario, a four-pronged tool for the future was expressed: decentralisation, openness, subsidiarity and a duty to co-operate. A European model emphasising cooperation and consensus-building was not only achieved but acknowledged by the rest of the world. There was convergence around the shared values of confidence, solidarity and responsibility. Russia was tied to the E.U. via a free trade agreement, and the influence of the union extended beyond its immediate neighbours as at the international level, it became the self-styled central defender of the multilateral institutions.

Similar to all forecasts, there was much to agree with within this particular one. Indeed the values foreseen were long-established and still carry essential resonance within the member-states. The central point of query not surprisingly concerned the vigorous espousal by the public of the idea of European integration. A brief look at the participation rates for European Parliament elections immediately made one very despondent about the level of activism of the European public. A specific input was essential for the public attitude to change in such a dramatic manner. That input could be from internal matters or relate to external developments. At the time, neither seemed to be on the horizon.

SCENARIO IV

Austerity measures implemented
EU-wide general strikes
Mass public disenchantment, open revolts
Stock Market volatility, currencies devaluated
Mass public consultation
Public demand to concentrate on social questions
Green Accounts & new green taxes
Agreement to harmonise tax rates
Logic of the market economy changed
Negative growth rates, contracting industrial base
No new aid mechanism for new entrants
Partial enlargement
Major development in JHA
No coherent Foreign Policy
Prevalent protectionist stance

The fourth scenario was entitled "Creative Societies" and fit into the negative category of future versions of the E.U. In the year 2010, the social situation in Europe was to highlight the growing gap between the rich and the poor, between the public's needs and aspirations and economic realities. Austerity measures implemented by the member-states led to mass protests, and violence erupted in some major cities. The European public was called upon the voice its opinion concerning the E.U. in "European Forums", which appealed to a hundred million citizens. After this process, governments implemented a wide-ranging reform of the accounting and financial system, with new taxes on capital, international financial movements, pollution, energy and environmental damage, due to the measures taken, with some firms relocating outside the E.U. The situation was so adverse that it was hoped that, by 2015, the E.U. could regain the level of wealth it possessed at the turn of the century. Not surprisingly, European integration was on the back burner, and Economic and Monetary Union (EMU) came under closer political scrutiny.

This scenario was by far the most radical in terms of internal dissent and economic upheaval. It was not easy to envisage millions of Europeans rebelling against their governments as East and Central Europeans rose up in 1989 against theirs. Whilst inequality could indeed widen, the gap should not lead to such a breakdown. It was difficult to imagine, as the forecast suggested, that the E.U. would only be back to its original economic well-being after a decade and a half of paralysis. It was likely that that would likely lead to a systemic breakdown or rupture, from which the U.S. could not stay away. Given the commitment and interest the U.S. had in the European continent, such a deterioration seemed implausible. Nevertheless, it was prescient about Washington's unambiguous disinterest in transatlantic relations as witnessed during the Trump administration.⁶⁸ This scenario was the worst-case one, to focus policy-makers minds on public participation and the increasing internal inequality within the E.U.

SCENARIO V

Proliferation of small-scale conflicts Unrealised promise of globalisation Isolationist USA Ethnic conflict within Europe E.U. military responses, heavy casualties Security concerns limit enlargement Creation of Common Police Border Force Creation of a European Intelligence Service Creation of a European Security Council ECJ jurisdiction over JHA rescinded Greater intergovernmentalism in Foreign Policy Tight immigration policy & tightened external borders Increasing social inequality Lack of support for comprehensive reform Running down of public services

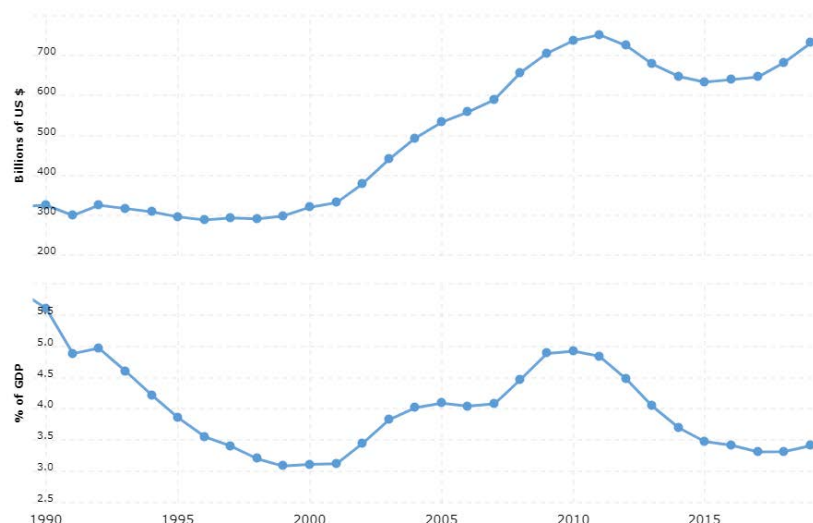
The final scenario put forward by the Forward Studies Unit was called "Turbulent Neighbourhoods." Marx and Engels wrote in the Communist Manifesto that "A spectre is haunting Europe - the spectre of communism. All the powers of old Europe have entered into

⁶⁸ Yiğit, S. (2021). Trump vs China. in Günar, A. (2021). World Economy in the Age of Populism. *The Trade Wars of the USA, China, and the EU: The Global Economy in the Age of Populism*, 1.

a holy alliance to exorcise this spectre: Pope and Tsar, Metternich and Guizot, French Radicals and German police-spies”.⁶⁹ The fifth forecast painted a security threat in the same language overshadowing the whole of Europe. This threat was not communism but physical violence in the form of terrorism and potential ethnic conflict. The external environment was the most critical factor affecting the future development of Europe. The involvement of the Europeans in a military conflict had profoundly affected the E.U. and resulted in new institutions. A repressive wind was blowing over the European continent with an unsettled, passive and increasingly intolerant European public becoming even more intransigent. Security and defence issues dominated the agenda and pushed down structural reforms of the economy. Competitiveness declined, and state intervention increased, resulting in a passive acceptance of public services getting worse and worse.

This forecast was another which could be located under a worst-case scenario. The emphasis here was not so much on economic upheaval, although it was indeed mentioned. However, rather more on the security problems that were associated with the E.U. Ethnic conflict, which had been a feature in the Balkans in the 1990s, was considered to boil once more, and other military threats were considered to emanate from the instability of the states surrounding the E.U. Quite obviously, if the E.U. was threatened, it could react and defend itself. That defence, however, may not have taken place under the umbrella of the WEU, but perhaps under NATO. The seriousness of the threats put forward in this scenario was more likely to be met under the auspices of NATO than under any independent E.U. action. The factors relevant to this reasoning are essentially historical and practical. NATO was still the bastion of European security, and when it came to essential threats, it would still be deferred to, rather than a risky strategy be taken up with an inexperienced institution. As with the previous suggestions, there were undoubtedly elements contained within this scenario that one could agree with, though once more, the developments mentioned here were located on the extreme end of the possibility spectrum.

Table 1: U.S. Military Spending 1990-2021

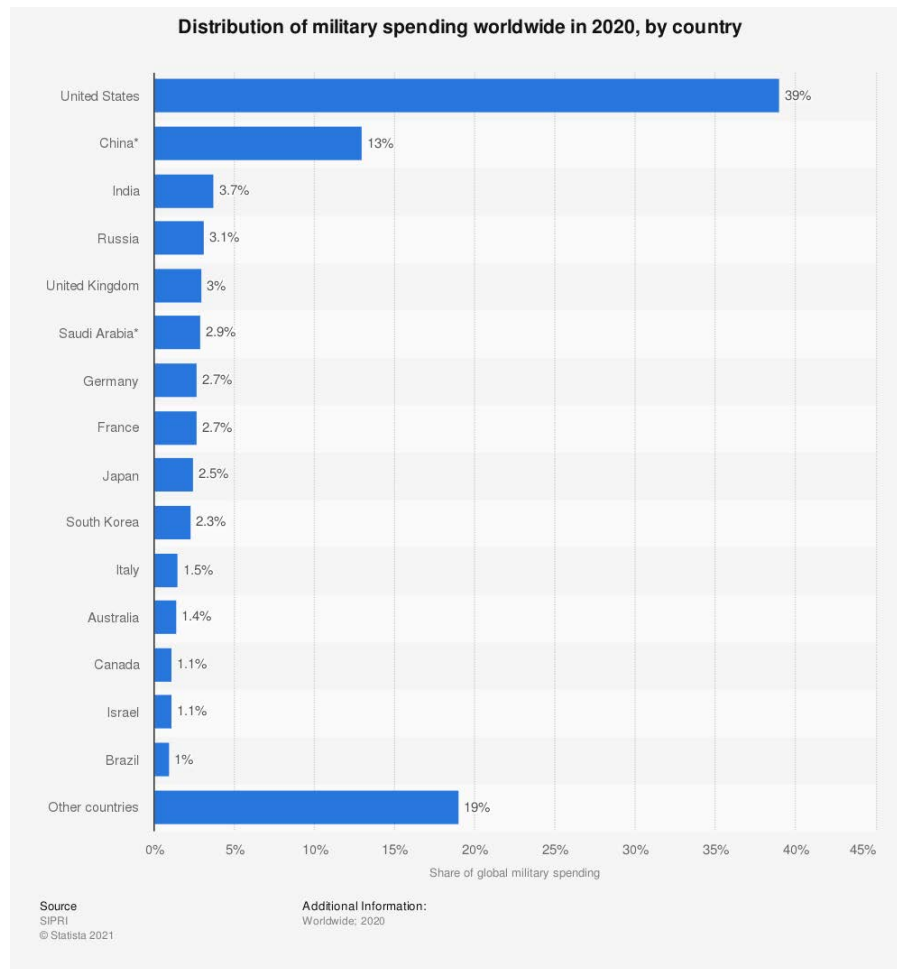


Source: Macrotrends (2021). U.S. military spending/defense budget 1960-2021. Retrieved September 09, 2021, from <https://www.macrotrends.net/countries/USA/united-states/military-spending-defense-budget>

⁶⁹ Marx, K., & Engels, F. (2012). *The communist manifesto*. Yale University Press.

Of all the developments, the interesting ones to note concerning military expenditures. Table:1 demonstrates that American spending continued to rise throughout the post-cold war period. In fact, by 2020, the U.S. accounted for almost 40% of the whole world's military expenditures. As can be seen in Table:2 an interesting fact to note is that the U.S. Defence spending for 2020 is more than three times greater than its nearest rival China and more than the combined spending of the next eleven highest spenders, namely, China, India, Russia, U.K., Saudi Arabia, Germany, France, Japan, South Korea, Italy and Australia.

Table 2: Distribution of Military Spending worldwide in 2020 by Country



Source: SIPRI. (2021, April). TRENDS IN WORLD MILITARY EXPENDITURE, 2020. Retrieved September 09, 2021, from https://sipri.org/sites/default/files/2021-04/fs_2104_milex_0.pdf

Given the fact that the U.S. economy was growing much faster than the E.U., it seemed plausible to conform to Brzezinski's predictions. As he stated boldly, "Creating a larger and gradually more integrated European Space, closely allied to the U.S., is the only game in town".⁷⁰ Whether aims that go beyond this prediction are beyond the possibility boundary are, of course, open to speculation. The E.U. does possess many resources that are in fact regarded as capabilities. The problem, as initially formulated by Hill, is the Capabilities-Expectations-

⁷⁰ Brzezinski, Z. (2000). Living with a new Europe. *The National Interest*, (60), 17-32.

Gap.⁷¹ The expectations of the Europeans are higher than what their capabilities allow for at present. To be a pole in the international system requires military capability and the political will to use that military capability. Helsinki was a move in the right direction in this regard, but for those who predicted the demise of NATO - such as Waltz famously predicting that 'NATO's days are not numbered, but it's years are' - and the symmetrical rise of the E.U. should have a very long time horizon.⁷² For the union is a collection of member-states that fail to agree on a single currency; how are they expected to agree to formulate a joint policy relating to security?

CONCLUSION

The 21st century, if it resembles the past century in any way, shape or form, will be one of turbulence and instability due to the structure of the international system. The unipolar moment came to stay for one generation. The U.S. will remain the only pole for another decade. What will that mean for the E.U.? Either pursuing a policy of balancing or bandwagoning. Given the Atlanticist orientations of most member-states and the removal of Trump from the White House, the latter may well seem the better option. However, much depends on President Biden's actions in the coming years. If the E.U. cannot achieve a share it regards as its right in the international economic system; then a rift may well emerge in the transatlantic relationship. For the moment, at least, the E.U. is prepared to bow to American political hegemony but is less subservient when it comes to economics.

The external environment is notoriously difficult to predict. The internal dynamics of the E.U. indicate a particular pattern of strengthening institutions, deepening policy areas, an embryonic step toward a security policy and identity, to just name four. Though if environmental or natural disasters are to strike as record-breaking high temperatures and forest fires engulf Spain, Italy, Greece and Turkey in the summer of 2021, the E.U. will be reacting rather than acting, which is the most common form of behaviour in foreign policy. Whatever the scenario, it is likely that as long as the idea of "Europe" is not thoroughly instilled into the minds of European citizens, not much can be expected from them. That in itself is not a bad thing either. As researchers are wont to forget, "Europe" is not just the collection of positive achievements witnessed in the last half-century or so. "Europe" also encompasses a historical past which implemented exploitation at the highest level, created national socialism, fascism and initiated genocide. When one looks at the rise in extremist parties and the anti-immigrant behaviour and tendencies within the E.U., unfortunately, more pessimistic scenarios spring to mind.

In the final analysis, the post-Cold War order has been one of Unipolarity, more so in the decade since 11 September 2001. Though it must be accepted that it has advanced along the path of what Galtung subtitled his book in 1973 "a Superpower in the making". The Unipole advanced its own interests and engaged internationally when it deemed it essential, primarily for its own national interest. Within this system, the E.U. played only a limited role. Only in certain specific matters where it is not in the vital interests of the Unipole can it challenge.⁷³ Even should it reach the status of a very considerable Regional Power, it is implausible to challenge the ex-Hyperpower. The world seems destined to be strongly influenced and perhaps even managed by the Unipolar pole for the next decade.

⁷¹ Hill, C. (1993). The capability-expectations gap, or conceptualizing Europe's international role. *J. Common Mkt. Stud.*, 31, 305.

⁷² Waltz, K. N. (1993). The emerging structure of international politics. *International Security*, 18(2), 44-79.

⁷³ Galtung, J. (1973). *The European Community: a superpower in the making*. Routledge.

It has long been argued that so long as the more affluent states and organizations are unwilling to share their exploits with the rest of humanity and eradicate the blatant imbalances in the international system, there are inherent seeds for conflict and significant instability within the international system.

Quoting a sixteenth-century idea concerning the cycles of war and peace, Blainey states that: "I have always heard it said that peace brings riches; riches bring pride; pride brings anger; anger brings war; war brings poverty; poverty brings humanity; humanity brings peace; peace, as I have said, brings riches, and so the world's affairs go round."⁷⁴ If this is true, no matter how much redistribution there is on a global scale, nor how much justice is provided, war is inevitable. If it is not valid, then the E.U. has a brilliant opportunity to contribute towards righting decades, if not centuries, of exploitation and injustice. For those of us who long to see the whole human race dining at the same table, we sincerely hope that the world has large lungs and can hold its breath for an inordinate amount of time.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Ach, A. (1930). The Problem of Oil. *Journal of the Royal Institute of International Affairs*, 9(3), 400-401.
- Allison, G. T., & Graham, A. (1999). Essence of decision.
- Bertram, C. (2000). Comments on Brzezinski. *National Interest*, (60), 30-31.
- Bialasiewicz, L., Elden, S., & Painter, J. (2005). The constitution of E.U. territory. *Comparative European Politics*, 3(3), 333-363.
- Blainey, G. (1988). *Causes of war*. Simon and Schuster. p.87.
- Bluth, C. (2021). Global Security in the Post-Cold War Era and the Relevance of Nuclear Weapons.
- Boulding, E. (1995). The dialectics of peace. *BOULDING, E. and BOULDING, K.(Eds)*.
- Boulding, J. R., Clements, K. P., Morrison, M. L., & Strimling Yodsampa, A. (2016). Elise Boulding's legacy to the twenty-first century: Reflections on her contributions to understanding conflict and peace. *Negotiation and Conflict Management Research*, 9(4), 274-291.,
- Brands, H. (2018). American grand strategy in the post–Cold War era. *New Directions in Strategic Thinking 2.0*, 133.
- Brooks, S. G., & Wohlforth, W. C. (2001). Power, globalization, and the end of the Cold War: Reevaluating a landmark case for ideas. *International Security*, 25(3), 5-53.
- Brzezinski, Z. (2000). Living with a new Europe. *The National Interest*, (60), 17-32.
- Christiansen, T., & Lintner, P. (2005). The Committee of the Regions after 10 Years: Lessons from the Past and Challenges for the Future. *EIPAScope*, 2005(1), 7-13.
- Clark, I. (2001). Globalization and the post-cold war order. *The globalization of world politics*, 2,
- Clark, I. (2001). *The post-Cold War order: the spoils of peace*. Oxford University Press.
- Clark, W. K. (2019). How We Succeeded in Kosovo. *Brown J. World Aff.*, 26, 165.

⁷⁴ Blainey, G. (1988). *Causes of war*. Simon and Schuster. p.87.

- Cooper, A. F. (2008). Stretching the Model of 'Coalitions of the Willing'. In *Global Governance and Diplomacy* (pp. 257-270). Palgrave Macmillan, London.
- Cox, M., Ikenberry, G. J., & Inoguchi, T. (Eds.). (2000). *American democracy promotion: impulses, strategies, and impacts*. Oxford University Press on Demand.
- De Gucht, K. (1997). THE COMMON FOREIGN AND SECURITY POLICY (CFSP): IS THERE ROOM FOR NEW PERSPECTIVES IN THE AFTERMATH OF MAASTRICHT?. *Studia Diplomatica*, 49-83.
- Deighton, A. (2017). Why St. Malo Matters. In *The New Transatlantic Agenda* (pp. 51-64). Routledge.
- Dixon, P. (2003). Victory by spin? Britain, the U.S. and the propaganda war over Kosovo. *Civil Wars*, 6(4), 83-106.
- Duchêne, F. (1973). The European Community and the uncertainties of interdependence. In *A Nation Writ Large?* (pp. 1-21). Palgrave Macmillan, London.
- Edwards, G. (2008). The construction of ambiguity and the limits of attraction: Europe and its neighbourhood policy. *European Integration*, 30(1), 45-62.
- English, R. D. (2002). Power, ideas, and new evidence on the cold war's end: A reply to Brooks and Wohlforth. *International Security*, 26(4), 70-92.
- Fukuyama, F. (1989). The end of history?. *The national interest*, (16), 3-18.
- Gaddis, J. L., & Bothwell, R. (1997). We now know: rethinking cold-war as history. *International Journal*, 52(3), 537.
- Galtung, J. (1973). *The European Community: a superpower in the making*. Routledge.
- Giegerich, B., & Wallace, W. (2004). Not such a soft power: the external deployment of European forces. *Survival*, 46(2), 163-182.
- Godowska, M. (2012). The relevance of neofunctionalism in explaining European integration in its origins and today. *Journal for Perspectives of Economic, Political, and Social Integration*, 18(1-2), 145.
- Gold, H. (1978). Foreign policy decision-making and the environment: the claims of Snyder, Brecher, and the Sprouts. *International Studies Quarterly*, 22(4), 569-586.
- Grigoryev, L., & Pabst, A. (2020). Introduction: International Cooperation in Times of Post-Cold War (Dis) order. In *Global Governance in Transformation* (pp. 1-12). Springer, Cham.
- Hansen, B. (2000). The unipolar world order and its dynamics. In *The new world order* (pp. 112-133). Palgrave Macmillan, London.
- Harland, D. (2010). Kosovo and the U.N. *Survival*, 52(5), 75-98.
- Hartzell, C. A., & Hoddie, M. (2021). 1 After the Fighting Stops: Security Concerns, Institutions, and the Post-Civil War Environment. In *Crafting Peace* (pp. 21-42). Penn State University Press.
- Herbert, U. (2007). Europe in high modernity. Reflections on a theory of the 20th century. *Journal of Modern European History*, 5(1), 5-21.
- Hill, C. (1993). The capability-expectations gap, or conceptualizing Europe's international role. *J. Common Mkt. Stud.*, 31, 305.
- Hoekman, B. (2002). The WTO: functions and basic principles. *Development, Trade, and the WTO: A Handbook*. Washington, DC: World Bank, 41-50.

- Huntington, S. P. (2000). The clash of civilizations?. In *Culture and politics* (pp. 99-118). Palgrave Macmillan, New York.
- Ikenberry, G. J. (2002). America's imperial ambition. *Foreign affairs*, 44-60.
- Ikenberry, G. J. (2018). Why the liberal world order will survive. *Ethics & International Affairs*, 32(1), 17-29.
- Jackson, W. D. (2004). Russia and the Council of Europe: the perils of premature admission. *Problems of Post-Communism*, 51(5), 23-33.
- Jørgensen, K. E. (1997). Western Europe and the Petersberg tasks. *European Approaches to Crisis Management*, 131-52.
- Kacowicz, A. M., & Miller, B. (2018). The Problem of Peaceful Change Revisited: From the End of the Cold War to the Uncertainties of a Post-Liberal Order. *International Studies Review*, 20(2), 301-308.
- Kaplan, R. D. (1994). The coming anarchy. *Atlantic Monthly*, 273(2), 44-76.
- Kramer, M. (2009). The myth of a no-NATO-enlargement pledge to Russia. *The Washington Quarterly*, 32(2), 39-61.
- Lebow, R. N., & Stein, J. G. (1995). *We all lost the Cold War*. Princeton University Press.
- LIPPMAN, W. (1943). The Problem of Germany. *Current History*, 4(22), 229-234.
- Marx, K., & Engels, F. (2012). *The communist manifesto*. Yale University Press.
- Matambo, E. (2020). International Relations Theory after the Cold War: China, the Global South and Non-State Actors. *Image*.
- MICHALSKI, A., & PENCH, L. R. (1999). Scenarios Europe 2010.
- Moisi, D. (2001). The real crisis over the Atlantic. *Foreign Affairs*, 149-153.
- Payton, R. L. (2006). The ethics and values of fundraising. *The kindness of strangers, philanthropy in higher education*, 109-118.
- Reiter, D. (2001). Why NATO enlargement does not spread democracy. *International Security*, 25(4), 41-67.
- Richmond, O. P. (2001). A genealogy of peacemaking: the creation and re-creation of order. *Alternatives*, 26(3), 317-348.
- Ross, R. S. (2020). It's not a cold war: competition and cooperation in US-China relations. *China International Strategy Review*, 2(1), 63-72.
- Seaton, P. (2002). France in an Age of Globalization: Vedrine, Hubert, and Dominique Moisi; Philip H. Gordon, trans. *Perspectives on Political Science*, 31(2), 116.
- Serfaty, S. (2000). Europe 2007: From nation-states to member states. *Washington Quarterly*, 23(4), 15-29.
- Shepherd, A. J. (2009). 'A milestone in the history of the E.U.': Kosovo and the E.U.'s international role. *International Affairs*, 85(3), 513-530.
- Smith, S. (1980). Allison and the Cuban Missile Crisis: a review of the bureaucratic politics model of foreign policy decision-making. *Millennium*, 9(1), 21-40.
- Smolnikov, S. (2018). Distinguishing Credibility. In *Great Power Conduct and Credibility in World Politics* (pp. 203-245). Palgrave Macmillan, Cham.

- Söderbaum, F., & Van Langenhove, L. (2005). Introduction: the EU as a global actor and the role of interregionalism. *European Integration*, 27(3), 249-262.
- Söderbaum, F., Stålgren, P., & Van Langenhove, L. (2005). The EU as a global actor and the dynamics of interregionalism: A comparative analysis. *European Integration*, 27(3), 365-380.
- Stigler, A. L. (2003). A clear victory for airpower: NATO's empty threat to invade Kosovo. *International Security*, 27(3), 124-157.
- Szucko, A. (2020). Brexit and the Differentiated European (Dis) Integration. *Contexto Internacional*, 42, 621-646.
- Underdal, A. (1998). Explaining compliance and defection: three models. *European Journal of International Relations*, 4(1), 5-30.
- Van Evera, S. (1990). Primed for peace: Europe after the Cold War. *International Security*, 15(3), 7-57.
- Vedrine, H. (2000). A greater Europe by reform. European Press, 8 September 2000.
- Védrine, H. (2003). What to Do With the Hyperpower? Interview. *Le Debit*, (3), 4-16
- Vucetic, S. (2011). Bound to follow? The Anglosphere and US-led coalitions of the willing, 1950–2001. *European Journal of International Relations*, 17(1), 27-49.
- Waller, W. (2013). 6b Comment: Kenneth Boulding on power. In *Interdisciplinary Economics* (pp. 284-294).
- Waltz, K. N. (1993). The emerging structure of international politics. *International Security*, 18(2), 44-79.
- Waltz, K. N. (2000). Globalization and American power. *The National Interest*, (59), 46-56.
- Waltz, K. N. (2000). NATO expansion: A realist's view. *Contemporary Security Policy*, 21(2), 23-38.
- Waltz, K. N. (2000). Structural realism after the Cold War. *International Security*, 25(1), 5-41.
- Waltz, K. N. (2000). Structural realism after the Cold War. *International Security*, 25(1), 5-41.
- Waltz, K. N. (2017). Reading 7.3 Why Nuclear Proliferation May Be Good. In *Conflict After the Cold War* (pp. 418-431). Routledge.
- Waltz, K., & Fearon, J. (2012). A conversation with Kenneth Waltz. *Annual Review of Political Science*, 15, 1-12.
- Whitman, R. G., & Juncos, A. (2009). The Lisbon Treaty and the Foreign, Security and Defence Policy: Reforms, implementation and the consequences of (non-) ratification. *European foreign affairs review*, 14(1).
- Yigit, S. (1997). Turkish immigration into Germany: The E.U. perspective.
- Yiğit, S. (2021). Trump vs China. in Günar, A. (2021). World Economy in the Age of Populism. *The Trade Wars of the USA, China, and the EU: The Global Economy in the Age of Populism*, 1.
- Yost, D. (1998). The new NATO and collective security. *Survival*, 40(2), 135-160.
- Zielonka, J. (2008). Europe as a global actor: empire by example?. *International affairs*, 84(3), 471-484.

WHAT ECONOMIC OPPORTUNITIES CAN BE BROUGHT TO ISRAEL AND UNITED ARAB EMIRATES BY THE ABRAHAM PEACE TREATY?

Ihsan H. TAHER¹, Rüştü YAYAR²

¹Iraq

²Tokat Gaziosmanpaşa University, Faculty Economics and Administrative Science,
Department of Economics, Tokat, Turkey.

ABSTRACT

The study aims to highlight the economic and political relationships between Israel and United Arab Emirates (UAE) from establishing Israel as a country until the latest peace agreement that has been signed between Israel and United Arab Emirates on 15th September 2020 in Washington. The research also examines the impact of normalizing the ties between both countries on boosting economic links and future economic opportunities that can be brought by the peace accord. Findings of this study reveal the importance of peace on making a convenient atmosphere for trade, investment and other economic activities between countries. Finally, the study determines the factors that may threaten the peace process between Israel and the UAE.

Keywords: Peacebuilding, Israel, the United Arab Emirates, Economic Opportunities, Politics

1. INTRODUCTION

From establishing Israel's state in 1947, there were many conflicts and several wars between Arab nations and Jews. During the conflicts many people lost their and it led to so many destructions.

On 15th September 2020, Israel, the UAE, and Bahrain have signed a peace treaty named the Abraham Accords, at the White House in Washington by which Bahrain and the UAE decided to normalize their relations with Israel. This is not the first case of normalization of ties between Arab countries and Israel. After several wars, Egypt in 1979 and Jordan in 1992 signed peace agreements with Israel. Since then, the countries have not been involved in any new tension. Although, since their agreement, there was a boosting economic cooperation between those countries, but some people believe that despite the peace agreement between the countries, its impact on the economic relationship may not last long enough. (Kaldas, 2020) asserts that the Israel – Egypt agreement could stop at any time.

It seems that a lasting peace process may not be obtained merely by signing a peace deal by politicians, but further actions need to be done to guarantee a lasting peace process. Many experts came to believe that boosting the economic activities between countries will have a big role in preventing conflicts between states and improve relations between countries. For instance, the Liberal theorists centralize that the trade of mutual interests can be obtained by both sides of the trade. They believe when these mutual interests arise between two states, if one of these countries goes to war with a country whose common interests are at stake, it is considered commercial suicide. Those who raise this thought argue that when countries gain trade exchanges, they will have a better understanding of each other's cultures (Humphreys, 2003).

Regarding the recent peace deal between Israel and Emirates, some questions need to be asked. The first question is that what was the level of political and economic relations between Israel and Emirates before signing the peace agreement and how much it improves

after the peace deal?. The other important question is that what economic opportunities are available between Israel and the UAE and how the opportunities will help to improve the peace process between them?. Finally, another question that will arise is that what factors may threaten the peace deal between the two entities?.

To find the answer to these questions, the article is divided into four sections. Section one will introduce the subject of study and indicates the questions that can be answered in this study. In section two the history of economic and political relations between Emirates and Israel can be examined to explain the path that Israel and Emirates were going through until they achieve the peace deal. In section three the available economic opportunities including energy, trade, and investment between the UAE and Israel can be evaluated. In section four the research will evaluate the stability of the Abraham accord and will discuss the factors which may threaten the peace deal. In the final section, we will conclude the main findings.

2. A HISTORIC OVERVIEW OF RELATIONSHIPS BETWEEN UNITED ARAB EMIRATES AND ISRAEL

For some people announcing the peace deal between Israel and Emirates can be seen as just a typical agreement between some states, but when we look at the history of conflicts between Arab and Jewish; the event can be seen as one of the significant turning points in the region. In this section we will look at the path that both sides go through until they normalize their political and economic ties as it described below.

2.1. Political Relations between Israel and Emirates

To assess the political relationship between the UAE and Israel, we must look at the relationship between the Arab states and Israel, because it can be said that since the founding of Israel until recent years, all Arab countries have decided together to boycott their relations with Israel. It is arguable that the disputes between Jewish and Arab dates back to long time ago. However, the disputes between the both nations entered a new phase as British Mandate in “Balfour Declaration” supported the formation of a Jewish state in Palestine. In 1922, by the League of Nations, Palestine was under the UK authority. A huge wave of Jewish people from eastern Europe immigrated during the British mandate between 1922 and 1947. This event led to clashes between Arabs and Jewish inside Palestine. Then after a constant fighting and terrorism, the Palestine issue was handed over to the UN. The UN looked at all other options and then suggested the termination of the British Mandate. The UN also, proposed dividing Palestine into two independent countries, one part for Palestinian Arab and the second one for Jewish and Jerusalem was internationally protected (United Nations, n.d).

After declaring of Israel as a state in 1948, a number of Arab countries joined Palestine people to fight against Israel. As a result of this, Palestine was occupied by Arab countries including Lebanon, Syria, Iraq, and Egypt. Saudi Arabia also participated in the war under Egyptian leadership. In February 1949, the Arab countries and Israel signed a ceasefire deal. Under this agreement, Egypt, Lebanon, Syria and Transjordan agreed to withdraw from the land they occupied. Thus, some areas that were formerly given to Palestine were annexed to Israeli territory according to the UN resolution in 1947 (Milestone, n.d).

In 1967, there was another fight between Israelis and Arabs. The war took only six days and, in this war, the remained region of Palestine Sinai desert inside Egypt, the Golan Heights from Syria were occupied by Israel. After six years and in order to recapture their lost land, Egypt and Syria agreed to on joint attack on Israel. Although in the beginning, they occupied some important places in Israel, but Syria retreated. Thus, Israel attacked Syria and captured regions in the heart of Syria. This led to the joining of Iraqi, Saudi Arabia and Jordanian

troops to counter attack Israel in Syrian frontline. The counter-offensive resulted in favor of Israel. Then, on October 17 1973, the Arab's oil producers who were the member of Organization of Petroleum Exporting Countries (OPEC) turn off the exportation of oil to international markets (Aljazeera, 2018)

This action had a consequence for the global economy. The embargo ended in March 1974, following intense diplomatic activity. After these events, some Arab entities and Israel took peace path as they became tired of war and conflicts. In 1979 Anwar Sadat, the president of Egypt eventually signed a historic peace treaty with Israel. Then after years of secret talks, Jordan also normalised its ties with Israel in 1994 (Bowen, 2017).

On 15th September 2020 at white house in Washington, a peace agreement of Abraham Accords was signed between Israel, the UAE and Bahrain and they recognized Israel state. It can be expected that further Arab countries may join the agreement later. In 2021, Eli Cohen, Israel intelligent minister stated that Saudi Arabia, Oman, and Qatar are expected to sign peace agreement with Israel and they have the intention to accept the normalization treaty (Khalil, 2021).

2.2. Economic Ties between the UAE and Israel

It is arguable that the cold economic relations between Arabs and Israel also overshadowed economic ties between them in general. The Emirates-Israeli economic ties also subjected to the policy that followed by the Arab countries against Israel as they boycotted Israel in 1945. According to Bard (n.d) the Arab boycott was formally declared by the newly formed Arab League Council on December 2, 1945. He argued that under the boycott any "Jewish products and manufactured goods considered as undesirable to the Arab countries." All Arab "institutions, organizations, merchants, commission agents and individuals" were called upon "to refuse to deal in, distribute, or consume Zionist products or manufactured goods." Arab countries also refused to have deals with foreign companies that had economic relations with Israeli companies and they blacklisted a number of companies that traded with other businesses that operates in Israel.

Accordingly, since the emergence of Israel as a state, the world has not seen any significant economic relations between Israel and the Arab states. The Israeli boycott by Arabs was remained stable until Israel signed a peace treaty with Egypt and Jordan. Since that, we have witnessed some economic exchanges between them, but it can be said that these relations were insignificant. According to data, the total export of Egypt to Israel from 2006 to 2016 was about 1.2 billion US Dollars and the sum of Egypt's import from Israel in that decade was recorded only 1.8 billion USD (Gal and Rock2018).

Except for Egypt and Jordan, which had a peace agreement with Israel, Israel did not have any direct economic relations with the rest of the Arab countries. Even if there was a connection, it was indirect.

Regarding to the Gulf countries, Israel has always looked to improve its economic presence in the region and has taken every opportunity to build relations with the Gulf states. Israel's efforts to gain a foothold in the Gulf is dated back to several years ago. In 1995, Israel's Prime Minister Yitzhak Rabin sent a delegation headed by the Foreign Minister Shimon Peres to Oman and Qatar. After this meeting, a relative progress was made and led to establishment of Low-key Israeli trade offices in these countries, but it was preferred to hide the identity of the offices. Soon after the change of government of Israel with Benjamin Netanyahu coming to power and the Israeli invasion of Lebanon, and the second Palestinian intifada, Israel's trade offices went wither away in both countries. (Gardner, 2020).

Although, there were no direct trade link between Israel and the Gulf countries, but there was some indirect shipment of Israeli products to these countries. Zisser (2020) states that after Turkey and Palestine, the Gulf countries were the third-largest importers of Israeli goods between 2000 to 2010. There is no up-to-date information about the amount of Israel's exports to those countries, but it is estimated that about half a million of Israel goods were shipped to the Gulf through third countries during that period of time. Some media outlets have repeatedly reported on technology or weapons sales by Israeli companies to the Gulf states.

The share of Emirates of these Israeli exports is unknown, but it is estimated that the Emirates may have a big share of those trade. In recent years, the UAE has been one of the buyers of Israeli-made intelligence equipment. In 2015 Israel established a diplomatic office associated with International Renewable Energy Agency in Abu Dhabi the capital of Emirates and many high-level officials of Israel have visited the host country (Cook, 2020; Gardner, 2020).

These data indicates that even before the peace agreement between the UAE and Israel, there were economic activities between them. although the statistics were not huge and there was no direct or obvious, we can note some significant movement in trade, energy, and investment between the two countries.

3. ECONOMIC OPPORTUNITIES BETWEEN EMIRATES AND ISRAEL

It is believable that many economic opportunities have been lost for many decades due to the boycott of Israel by Arab countries, especially by the UAE. This became more apparent by announcing many economic agreements during or shortly after announcing Emirates-Israeli peace deal. The new agreement between Israel and UAE, open a path for prospective business and economic opportunities for both countries. The Abraham treaty between UAE and Israel focuses on economy and funding, innovation, trading and economic relationships, healthcare, tourism, cultural and sport activities, energy, technological communication, and farming and food protection. Here are some economic opportunities available between Emirates and Israel:

3.1. Finding a more confidence path for shipping oil

According to Organization of the Petroleum Exporting Countries (OPEC), the UAE's crude oil exports in 2019 recorded about 2.5 barrel per day. Finding a cheaper and saver path for exporting their oil to international market is the priorities of exporters of oil. Emirates also spent a lot in order to make assure that its crude oil will be reached its destination safely. For example, in order to bypath the Hormuz strait, the UAE built a 370 Kilometer oil export pipeline from Habshan in Abu Dhabi to Fujairah which is worth (3.3 billion USD) with capacity of transport more than %75 of the country's oil (OPEC, n.d; The Free Library, 2012).

The authorities of the UAE spent this amount in order to find an alternative to ship their oil in Hormuz strait that is known as a dangerous. Since Iranian revolution in 1979 and Iran-Iraq war made the region to be unstable for business. BBC Persian reported that, during the Iraq-Iran war, around 400 oil ships were targeted and attacked in the Gulf. lately, the region became even more unstable as in may 2019 six oil ships and a US intelligent drone were targeted close to the Hormuz strait (Barakat, 2021; Meredith, 2019).

Signing peace deal between Israel and the UAE will give opportunity to Emirates and other Gulf countries to use a cheaper, faster, and more confident path to ship their oil to Europe markets as it will be able to use pipeline of Ashkelon Project to ship their oil to the

Mediterranean sea. The pipeline was established in 1968 by Israel and Iran, to export Iranian oil to Europe through Israel land with capacity of carrying of 600,000 oil barrel per day and to store around 23 million barrels of oil. Recently, the main purpose of the pipeline shifted to the transportation of UAE oil to Mediterranean sea via Red sea (Wallace, 2020). An Israeli company which is called European Association of Preventive Cardiology (EAPC) stated that they had signed a short-form agreement that facilitate the UAE oil exportation to Europe through a pipeline between Red sea and Port of Ashkelon (Rabinovitch and Cohen 2020).

If the plan is carried out, it can become a cheaper and more safe option for shipments instead of Egypt's Suez Canal. This will enable the Gulf countries to have an alternative of shipping oil via Suez Canal. Almost all oil that is transported from the Gulf to Europe is shipped through the Suez Canal or pipeline of Egypt which has the capacity of 2.5 million barrels per day (Wallace, 2021). However, the canal also can not be seen as a common way to export goods and oil. Nonetheless, oil exportation experienced number issues for number of times. For example, after the opening the canal was closed five times. Another challenge led to its closure for several years. A recent obstacle was on 23rd March 2021 where enormous cargo ship of Ever Given stuck and created a transportation issue (Dzhanova, 2021; Baker et al., 2021).

The project can be seen as a win-win project for both Emirates and Israel as Israel also can get benefit of hundred million dollars a year when Israel agrees to the oil pipeline in their land to export oil in Eilat to the coastal regions of Mediterranean (Barakat, 2021).

3.2. Trade opportunities between the UAE and Israel

There is a great potential for trade between Dubai and Israel. On the one side we have Israel with high level of technology that produce many equipments such as electronic devices, detergents, iron and firefighting suppliers. Israel is also advanced in terms of technology, biotech, healthcare system, self defense and intelligence. Thus the UAE can satisfy their need by depending on these Israel-made products (Josephs, 2020). On the other side, the UAE has been rated as one of the richest countries in the world that its GDP is nearly \$40,000 per capital.

Similarly, the UAE ships 2.5 million barrels everyday making it the one of the the biggest crude exporter. In return Israel, that uses 218,000 barrels per day for its market and energy production, can rely on UAE oil (Gardner, 2020; Opec, n.d). Furthermore, the UAE owned 45 Free Zones and providing interesting services for traders. According to this data the country can be seen as one of the attracting area for Israel businessmen to use them as a hub to exchange commodities. By exporting goods from these trade zones, will enable Israel to get its requirements in a more fair prices (Cherian and Writer, 2017).

Data indicates that by normalizing the ties between Tel-Aviv and Abu Dhabi, trade between both sides has progressed remarkably. According to Daily Sabah (2021) from August 2020 to January 2021, the trade value between both sides has reached 272 million USD. The authorities of both sides have a great hope to increase this value to very high levels. Israeli estimates trade with the UAE could eventually reach total of \$4bn a year in just three to five years, creating 15,000 jobs. Not only this, but it will enable Emirates to become a centre to many Asian exports to ship their goods to Israel from Dubai. Emirates will also have a potential to become a destination for tourists from Israel (Bowen, 2020; Naar, 2021).

When we look at the data of trade between Israel and Dubai after only normalizing their relations, we will note how many great trade opportunities they have lost before peace process. The agreement will allow both of them to increase the share of trade in international shares.

3.3. Available sectors for Investment

The United Arab Emirates is well-known of interesting places for foreign investment. The country's free trade zones offering 100% foreign ownership and zero taxes are helping to attract foreign investors. In case of easing doing business, in 2019 the UAE was introduced as the number one in the Middle-East and take place of 16 in the world, so it makes itself as one of the best destinations for foreigner to set up their business. Looking at Rel Investment Group report in 2020, from 2018 to 2019 UAE's income raised remarkably to 32% that it earn 13,8 billion dollars (The World Bank, N.Db; Dubai Chamber of Commerce & Industry and Federation of Israeli Chambers of Commerce 2020).

Israel also can be mentioned as one of the attract place for investment in the world. According to The World Bank (n.d) the total foreign direct investment (FDI) in Israel recorded 18.2 USD billion in 2019, that dominated %5 of its Gross Domestic Product (GDP) . It seems that the United Arab Emirates have an eye on adding huge amounts on foreign investment in Israel in the upcoming years.

On October 2020, Israel and Emirates announced that they will jointly invest in a project to export the UAE crude to Europe through a pipeline. There was a bid by Israel pipeline company and a newly founded company called MED RED land bridge, the bid was worth around \$800 million for a number of years (TRT World, 2021; Pipeline Business, 2020). In the same way, in 2021, israel declared a \$10 billion to invest in several sectors with countries whose relationships are normalized recently. The declareation came after phone call between israel prime minister and Abu Dhabi crown prince. By this investment plan, UAE aims to invest beside Israel in sectors such energy, manufacturing , water, healthcare and agricultral aspects (Naar, 2021).

The peace agreement have advantages for both parties to have common strategies for investment. According to Abraham treaty, the three countries of USA , Israel , and Emirates agreed to establish Abraham fund. They decided to fund \$3 billion to the prviate sectors and development projects in order to boost economic colaboration and growth of the middle east (U.S. MISSION UAE, 2020).

Each of these two countries has made progress in some cases that can share their experiences with each other. For example, Isreal is famous of growing in gross agricultural production over the last two decades and it can help reducing the UAE's food import dependency. The Israeli companies have successful stories in the development of medical equipment, pharmaceutical products and electronic components. In the other hand Emirates has the largest banking sector in the Middle-East and North Africa (MENA) region. The country also has a strong transportation and logistical infrastructure that Israel can get advantages from these sectors (Dubai Chamber of Commerce & Industry and Federation of Israeli Chambers of Commerce, 2020).

Economically it is common that each country may advance in some areas and in other areas need the experience and investment of foreign companies in order to achieve the desired development. The peace deal will provide a suitable environment for companies of both countries to help each other in different sectors.

4. WHAT FACTORS MAY THREATEN THE ABRAHAM PACE ACCORD?

As it mentioned before after Egypt and Jordan, the UAE is the third arab country that signed a peace agreement with Israel. Although, the first two peace accords avoiding Israel to face any fresh wars with Egypt and Jordan, but the peace accords between them were on the verge of

breaking several times and the deals have not resulted in significant improvements in the case of political and economic relationships between sides of agreements. Kaldas (2020) discussed that decades after the signing of the peace agreement between Israel and Egypt, the relations between the two sides did not exceed some energy projects and the visit of Israeli tourists to Egypt. The reason for this is the successive wars that took place between the two nations in the years before signing agreement in which many people on both sides lost their lives.

However, the peace agreement between the UAE and Israel does not seem to be a fragile one for several reasons. First of all, contrary to the two previous agreements that one of them reached as the basis of Arab-Israel war and ceasefire in 1967 and another signed as a result of Cold war (Jögi, 2020). Furthermore, although Israel and Emirates have had disputes before, but they have never been in a direct war with each other.

Secondly, the agreement establishes peace depending on mutual interests of economic progress and their concerns in terms of national protection and more specifically the ties to Iranian government. The deal caused a boost in trade, investment, tourism and technological cooperation between the participants of the accord (Callahn, 2020; Jögi, 2020).

Another reason that can make this peace deal more sustainable is the importance of this deal for Israel will encourage the authorities of the country to stabilize the agreement. Israelis do not like being isolated in the Middle East. The Israel's peace agreements with Egypt and Jordan has never been warm. As a result Israel seek to normalize its ties with other countries in the region and Israeli authorities might be more hopeful about future relations with Gulf countries a long way from the cockpit of Jerusalem and the occupied territories (Bowen, 2020).

After all, Israel has an eye on encouraging other Gulf countries to join the peace deal with Israel. So, by advancing its peace process with Emirates, Israel tries to persuade other Gulf states to normalize their relations with Israel. Khalil (2021) indicates that "It can be expected that further Arab countries including Saudi Arabia, Oman, and Qatar are expected to sign peace agreement with Israel and they have the intention to accept the normalization treaty" (Khalil, 2021).

All of these factors justify the idea that the peace agreement between Emirates and Israel will be stronger than the previous ones. Although, there are many hopes for the stability and development of the relations between Israel and Emirates based on the Abraham peace accord, but there are some factors that can make this deal fragile. For instance, it is believable that any tensions between Israel and Palestinians will put the UAE in a difficult position as the Arab nations will pressure the authorities of this country to reconsider their relations with Israel. After the peace deal between Israel and Emirates, the clashes between Israel and Palestinians in May 2021 put Emirates in a hard situation about the way to keeping balance between condemn Israel's attack and their peace deal with the country. The Arab countries including the UAE understand the benefits of normalizing their relations with Israel, but at the same time they know that this could be at the cost of inciting their nations against them if they support a country that kill Palestinians (Gardner, 2021).

Another factor that may threaten the deal is the change in the cabinet of government in Israel. There is a risk of revision the peace deal if extremist parties come to power in Israel. For instance, in 1995, Israel's Prime Minister Yitzhak Rabin sent a delegation headed by the Foreign Minister Shimon Peres to Oman and Qatar. After this meeting, a relative progress was made and led to establishment of low-key Israeli trade offices in these countries, but it was preferred to hide the identity of the offices. Soon after the change of government of Israel with Benjamin Netanyahu coming to power, the Israeli invasion of Lebanon, and the second Palestinian intifada, Israel's trade offices went wither away in both countries. (Gardner, 2020).

Finally, some Arab and Islamic states condemn the Israel-Emirate's peace deal and they protested against the agreement. Some of these countries have power to sabotage the agreement. Among those countries, Iranian authorities have harshly criticised the brokered deal. Many officials in Iran consider this agreement as a threat to the country's interest and regional ambitions as this action will result in expanding the presence of Israel in the region. The UAE is one of Iran's main trading partners and Iran fears that Israel may try to disrupt this trade after normalizing its relations with Emirates. Iran also concern about that this deal will allow Israel to spy on Iran much easier and Israel will reach Iran from Emirate's territory easier than past. (Esfandiari, 2021). As a result, it will not be a surprise if Iran try to build obstacles to the implementation of this agreement.

5. CONCLUSION

Several conclusions can be written from this research. First of all, soon after the announcement of the peace accord between Israel and Emirates, the world witnessed warm economic cooperation between both sides of the deal. There are also several economic opportunities for both countries to concentrate on them in order improve their economic development and boost their political relationship. This indicates the role of peace in creating economic opportunities between states, especially in the case of those countries which have disputes.

Secondly, Israel experienced two peace deals with Egypt and Jordan before signing the new agreement with the UAE. Although, the deals avoid Israel to enter new wars with Egypt and Jordan, the deals have not ended the isolation of Israel in the Middle East. As a result, Israel seeks to sign new deals with other Arab countries in order to find new economic and political partners.

Another point that can be mentioned is that the peace deal between Israel and Emirates seems to be one of the stable peace processes, because the agreement is based on common economic and security interests. Many factors make the agreement more stable, but we should not forget the factors that may weaken the deal.

Finally, besides the advantages of Abraham Accord for sides inside the agreement, the success of the agreement will increase the stability in the region and also will pave the way for the normalization of relations between Israel and other Gulf countries.

REFERENCES

1. FAO, 2006. Global Forest Resources Assessment 2005, FAO Forestry Paper 147. Available at: <ftp://ftp.fao.org/docrep/fao/008/a0400e> [28.05.12]
- Aljazeera, 2018. Why did the three countries go to war?. *Aljazeera*. Available at: <https://www.aljazeera.com/features/2018/10/8/the-october-arab-israeli-war-of-1973-what-happened> [24.04.2021]
- Baker, James., et al, 2021. Suez Canal remains blocked despite efforts to refloat grounded Ever Given. *Lloyd's list*. Available at: <https://lloydslist.maritimeintelligence.informa.com/LL1136229/Suez-Canal-remains-blocked-despite-efforts-to-refloat-grounded-Ever-Given> [06.04.2021]
- Barakat, A 2021. Israel to propose Saudi - Israel oil pipeline. *Globes*. Available at: <https://en.globes.co.il/en/article-israel-to-propose-saudi-israel-oil-pipeline-1001343034> [03.05.2021]

- Bard, M n.d. Arab League Boycott: Background & Overview. *Jewish Virtual library*. Available at: <https://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/background-and-overview-of-the-arab-boycott-of-israel> (23.05.2021).
- Bowen, J 2017. 1967 war: Six days that changed the Middle East. *BBC*. Available at: <https://www.bbc.com/news/world-middle-east-39960461> [27.04.2021]
- Bowen, J 2020. Five reasons why Israel's peace deals with the UAE and Bahrain matter. *BBC news*. Available at: <https://www.bbc.com/news/amp/world-middle-east-54151712?fbclid=IwAR1CZ5kmre9BZOwKGZvRBBvufN9VE3-COErJVZ250IHZLtAemYFiFdXa1rg> [05.04.2021]
- Callahn, A. 2020. The Abraham Accords and future prospects. *Universidad de Navara*. Available at: <https://www.unav.edu/web/global-affairs/detalle/-/blogs/the-abraham-accords-and-future-prospects> [15.4.2021]
- Cherian, D, and Writer, G 2017. 45 free zones in the UAE: Find the right one for your new business. *Gulfnews* . Available at: <https://gulfnews.com/lifestyle/community/45-free-zones-in-the-uae-find-the-right-one-for-your-new-business-1.1716197> [08.04.2021]
- Cook, S 2020. What's Behind the New Israel-UAE Peace Deal?. *Council of Foreign Relations*. Available at: <https://www.cfr.org/in-brief/whats-behind-new-israel-uae-peace-deal> [26.05.2021]
- Daily Sabah 2021. Dubai, Israel trade reaches nearly \$300M since normalization. *Daily Sabah*. Available at: <https://www.dailysabah.com/business/economy/dubai-israel-trade-reaches-nearly-300m-since-normalization> [06.04.2021]
- Dubai Chamber of Commerce & Industry and Federation of Israeli Chambers of Commerce 2020. Trade and investment opportunities between UAE and Israel. *Krajowa Izba Gospocardcza*. Available at: <https://kig.pl/wp-content/uploads/2020/11/Trade-and-Investment-Opportunities-between-UAE-and-Israel-Final.pdf> [18.04.2021]
- Dzhanova, Y 2021. The Suez Canal has a contentious history and has been blocked and closed several times since opening. *Insider*. Available at: <https://www.businessinsider.com/the-suez-canal-blocked-and-closed-several-times-since-opening-2021-3> (04.04.2021).
- Gal, Y, and Bader Rock. 2018. Israeli-Egyptian Trade: In-Depth Analysis. *Tony Blair Institute for Global Change*. Available at: <https://institute.global/advisory/israeli-egyptian-trade-depth-analysis> [27.05.2021]
- Gal, Y, and Bader Rock. 2018. I Israeli-Jordanian Trade: In-Depth Analysis. *Tony Blair Institute for Global Change*. Available at: <https://institute.global/advisory/israeli-jordanian-trade-depth-analysis> [27.05.2021]
- Gardner, F 2020. With UAE deal, Israel opens tentative new chapter with Gulf Arabs. *BBC News*. Available at: <https://www.bbc.com/news/world-middle-east-53805828> [07.04.2021]
- Humphreys, M. (2003). Economics and Violent Conflict. *Unicef*. Available at: https://peacemaker.un.org/sites/peacemaker.un.org/files/NaturalResourcesConflictResolutionUncoveringtheMechanisms_M.Humphreys2005.pdf [29.05.2021]
- Jōgi, K 2020. New peace treaties in the Middle East. Available at: <https://icds.ee/en/new-peace-treaties-in-the-middle-east/> [21.04.2021]

- Josephs, J 2020. BBC News, Israel-UAE peace deal 'big' for trade in Middle East. *International Centre for Defence and Security*. Available at: <https://www.bbc.com/news/amp/business-54574022> [07.04.2021]
- Kaldas, T 2020. Why Egypt didn't profit from peace with Israel as the UAE will. *Bloomberg*. Available at: <https://www.bloomberg.com/opinion/articles/2020-09-10/why-egypt-didn-t-profit-from-peace-with-israel-as-uae-will> (25.04.2021).
- Khalil, Z 2021. 4 nations may sign peace deals with Israel soon: official. *Anadolu Agency*. Available at: <https://www.aa.com.tr/en/middle-east/4-nations-may-sign-peace-deals-with-israel-soon-official/2179724> [28.04.2021]
- Meredith, S 2019. Oil tanker attacks in the Strait of Hormuz requires an 'international response,' US envoy to Iran says. *CNBC*. Available at: <https://www.cnbc.com/2019/06/22/oil-tanker-attacks-in-the-strait-of-hormuz-requires-an-international-response-us-envoy-to-iran-says.html> [03.04.2021]
- Mileston n.d. The Arab-Israeli War of 1948. *Office of the historian of United States Department of State*. Available at: <https://history.state.gov/milestones/1945-1952/arab-israeli-war> [23.04.2021]
- Naar, I 2021. UAE announces \$10 billion investment fund for Israel across multiple sectors. *Al Arabiya English*. Available at: <https://english.alarabiya.net/News/gulf/2021/03/12/Israel-relations-UAE-announces-10-billion-investment-fund-for-Israel-across-multiple-sectors> [09.04.2021]
- Opec n.d., UAE facts and figures. *OPEC*. Available at: https://www.opec.org/opec_web/en/about_us/170.htm [01.05.2021]
- Pipeline Business 2020. Israel - UAE Deal to Transport Emirati Oil to Europe Takes Another Step Forward. *Pipeline Journal*. Available at: <https://www.pipeline-journal.net/news/israel-uae-deal-transport-emirati-oil-europe-takes-another-step-forward> [12.04.2021]
- Rabinovitch, and Cohen, T 2020. Israeli pipeline company signs deal to bring UAE oil to Europe. *Reuters*. Available at: <https://www.reuters.com/article/us-uae-israel-pipeline/israeli-pipeline-company-signs-deal-to-bring-uae-oil-to-europe-idINKBN275155> [06.04.2021]
- Rel Investment group 2020. Foreign direct investment in the United Arab Emirates. *Relinvestmentgroup*. Available at: <https://www.relinvestmentsgroup.com/en/novosti/prjamye-inostrannye-investicii-v-obedinennyh-arabskih-emiratah.htm> [15.04.2021]
- The Free Library 2012. Habshan-Fujairah oil pipeline EOACA will be ready within six months. *The Free Library*. Available at: <https://www.thefreelibrary.com/Habshan-Fujairah+oil+pipeline+EoACAYwill+be+ready+within+six+months%27.-a0276646767> [2.5.2021]
- The World Bank. (n.d)a. Foreign direct investment, net inflows (% of GDP) – Israel. *The World Bank website*. Available at: <https://data.worldbank.org/indicator/BX.KLT.DINV.WD.GD.ZS?locations=IL> [11.04.2021]
- The World Bank. (n.d)b. Foreign direct investment, net inflows (% of GDP) – Israel. *The World Bank website*. Available at: <https://www.doingbusiness.org/en/rankings?region=middle-east-and-north-africa> [15.04.2021]

TRT World 2021. Experts say Israel-UAE oil pipeline deal a threat to Red Sea coral reefs. *TRT World*. Available at: <https://www.trtworld.com/middle-east/experts-say-israel-uae-oil-pipeline-deal-a-threat-to-red-sea-coral-reefs-44178> [09.04.2021]

U.S. MISSION UAE 2020. establishment of Abraham fund following accords commitment. *USEmbassy.org*. Available at: <https://ae.usembassy.gov/us-israel-uae-announce-establishment-of-abraham-fund-following-accords-commitment/> [10.04.2021]

United Nations n.d. the question of Palestine. *United Nation website*. Available at: <https://www.un.org/unispal/history/> [26.04.2021]

Wallace, P 2020. UAE and Israel open talks on once-secret crude oil pipeline. *World Oil*. Available at: <https://www.worldoil.com/news/2020/10/21/uae-and-israel-open-talks-on-once-secret-crude-oil-pipeline> [04.04.2021]

Zisser, E 2020. Israel and the Arab World: Breaking the Glass Ceiling. *Tel Aviv University: Strategic Assessment*. Available at: <https://strategicassessment.inss.org.il/en/articles/israel-and-the-arab-world-breaking-the-glass-ceiling/> [25.05.2021]

SPINOZA AND KANT: FOR AND AGAINST WOMEN

Assist. Prof. Dr. Ali Mohammadi

Istanbul Yeni Yüzyıl University, Faculty of Arts and Sciences, English Language and
Literature Department, Istanbul, Turkey

ORCID ID: <https://orcid.org/0000-0001-5240-1832>

ABSTRACT

As for the concept of *women* and their interaction with men, among European philosophers, Baruch Spinoza, the Dutch philosopher and Immanuel Kant, the German thinker, as one of the pioneers of Enlightenment, have written and discussed a lot. In his various works, Spinoza has put forward and elaborated on women's issues with respect to their sexual differences. Taking the case of women and their social status into consideration from the viewpoint of Spinoza and Kant, this inquiry attempts to figure out both the similarities and differences of their perspectives. It was concluded that unlike the ideological commonalities about women, Spinoza seems to have presented a more modern and realistic picture of women by emphasising their rights of which they had been deprived for centuries. This attitude was in contrast with what Kant thought of women which culminated in a tremendous amount of controversy in feminist circles.

Keywords: Baruch Spinoza, Feminism, Immanuel Kant, Social Status, Western Philosophy

1. INTRODUCTION

“‘Mind-body,’ ‘reason-emotion’ and ‘man-woman’ may be the most used (and abused) distinctions in twentieth-century feminist philosophy” (James & Palmer, 2002, p.160). One of the major issues that has been little paid attention to in the past but recently has been taken into consideration is the attitude of the past philosophers towards the differences between men and women as human. Having scrutinised their viewing platforms about the concept of human, they are admirable in the first place; nevertheless, as we go further, these ideas seem so disappointing because it can be realised that what these philosophers mean by human is simply “man” rather than woman. According to them, woman is not situated under those civil, ethical and humane rules and regulations. Kant along with Spinoza are two of these thinkers who will be meticulously studied in this research.

Initially, Kant assigned an inferior status to women and strongly held the belief that women should not be granted civil rights. However, that was not the case for Spinoza. Up until modern era, all the greatest philosophers have been men and there is no trace of women unless in the male discourse and analysis. At the onset of modern epoch with Rene Descartes’ declaration on the equality of wisdom or intellect among all human beings, women thinkers such as Mary Astell emerged. “Astell’s ‘radically subjective’ political thought, Rachel Weil observes, ‘is not about the rules governing relations between people in civil society, but about people’s relationship to themselves and to God.’ Her ideal universe is one in which governments and human laws are or should be unnecessary. Humanity was created with the ability to reason, and that reason alone should have, and still can, lead to a community, a state, that is governed in freedom, by virtue” (Broad & Green, 2007, p. 132). Astell argued that, since the wisdom or intellect is a general and equal matter among all human beings, women should presumably benefit from education and gaining knowledge. In agreement with her, François Poullain de la Barre ridicules this 17th-century theory that claimed women are inferior to men and cannot get educated. He even calls it irrational. Broad (2015, p.161) also

takes a step beyond and harshly criticizes any concept or category that falls under the rubric of masculine superiority: "Women must avoid being led astray by their earthly superiors, whether those superiors be their husbands and fathers in the domestic sphere, pastors and spiritual directors in the religious domain, or popular demagogues in the political arena."

Descartes inspired various feminist movements; nonetheless, the interesting point about him is not that among his multiple works, there's nothing about the nature and education of women or about the pains and pleasures of marriage; nor has he made any positive or negative statement about women. In other words, Descartes neither talked offensively about women nor praised this gentle sex, but he has been criticised by feminist philosophers both among his contemporary thoughtful female intellectuals and in the rereading of Western philosophy. The reason for all these widespread criticisms was his dualistic philosophy. In the rereading of the long tradition of Western philosophy, feminist philosophers have encountered two major issues: First, there has not been a female philosopher in history, and if there was, she was not an important one. Second, based on this tradition, philosophical concepts such as wisdom and concreteness are in contrast with matter and irrationality or whatever associated with woman and femininity. Feminists believe that these contrasts will lead to the elimination of woman and feminine concepts from the Western philosophy tradition. Of course, advocates of women's rights put the blame on Descartes as the founder of a new era of Western philosophy. The reason why feminist thinkers call Descartes responsible for isolating this gentle sex, woman, is his dualistic philosophy which is also known as substance dualism. These feminist philosophers argue that Descartes' substance dualism turned the natural world into an object to be harnessed and controlled by humankind.

According to feminists, this objectification of nature results in inferiorizing women, labourers, and uncivilised humans. Spinoza and Kant are two modern European philosophers who have been studied by feminist philosophers meticulously. Immanuel Kant, the hero of Enlightenment, excludes women from the public, political and economic spheres and even sees them as lacking the capacity to achieve individual independence. Spinoza's tenets are rather similar to those of Kant. However, his philosophy has features that set him free from widespread criticism of feminist philosophers and even make his philosophy a source and supporter of feminist studies. The present article intends to explain the views of these two philosophers in this regard and examine their similarities and differences. To this end, first Kant's views on women were examined, then Spinoza's attitudes. Finally, the great point of Spinoza's philosophy, which unlike Kant's philosophy draws attention to some feminist thinkers.

2. DISCUSSION

2.1 The Dignity of Women in Kant's Philosophy

Immanuel Kant held the opinion that man has a special place in the system of creation. Of course, it is not only Kant who assigns a superior status to human in comparison to other creatures, but human beings have long thought that they are different from and superior to other living beings. According to Kant, man has an intrinsic value or dignity that makes him beyond any value. Therefore, human must be end not means. Nevertheless, animal is not of such a status. In his idea, the animal is a means for a man to reach his desired ends. For Kant, the animal is not morally important; rather, it is man who is worthy of living and should never be seen as a means to an end, rather the end itself. Kant adhered to this standpoint of his so much so that he considered it as the ultimate law of ethics. Like some other philosophers, he believed that morality could be summed up in a principle of obedience, and that all moral requirements and duties could be derived from it.

He called this ultimate principle, *Absolute Truth*, based upon which we must behave in such a way that we want the result from our action to become a general law. In other words, human must behave in a way to be regarded as end rather than means. When Immanuel Kant says that man should be considered only as an end because he's beyond any value and has inherent dignity, he wants to determine the dignity and position of man and he has a basis for this reasoning. First, he thinks that the value of objects and animals is simply because they are the means by which human beings can reach their ends. Secondly, and the more important basis for a man that he has an intrinsic value, namely dignity is that man is a creature with intellect; that is, a rational and free agent who can decide for himself, set a goal and act under the guidance of reason. Since the moral law is the law of reason, rational beings are the embodiment of the moral law itself, which is to say, if there is no rational being, then morality will not exist either.

Consequently, as proposed by Immanuel Kant, man is the only being who has dignity and should be treated in such a way that this self-esteem is not damaged. According to Immanuel Kant, the use of man as a tool is a violation of human dignity. The apparent meaning of Immanuel Kant's interpretation is that we should strive to promote the goodness, happiness, and wellbeing of man. We should also respect his rights and avoid damaging or harming him. As a whole, we should try to make others achieve their goals. However, Kant's statements have also a profound meaning. Creatures that should be regarded as ends in themselves are rational beings and considering them as end means to respect their rationality. Thus, according to Immanuel Kant, we can never control people or use them to achieve our goals even for good purposes. The question that arises here is: "what does Immanuel Kant mean by a human being who has innate growth and dignity who should be considered as an end?" "Does the word *man* spoken of in Kant's moral philosophy include human as male and female or does he just mean a man?" "Where is woman situated in Kant's moral philosophy?" Kant emphasises the importance of the general applicability of his moral philosophy, saying that not only on human beings, but on all rational beings, it should be applied. He even believes that in the field of ethics, no gap is accepted between opinion and action.

The basis of Kant's moral philosophy is the concept of equal freedom for all rational beings and that no human being should ever be viewed as a means but should always be regarded as the end. He argues that the right to equal liberty for all human beings is indisputable. Nevertheless, some commentators seem to think that Kant's assessment of marriage infracts this general principle of his moral philosophy. According to Kant, the purpose of marriage is not only to increase the human race, but also to humanise the relationship between men and women. He considers marriage as a lifelong contract between couples and regards the extra marital affairs as an example of treating human beings as a means and object which he strongly refutes. He conceives marriage as the commitment of two heterosexual persons to acquire each other's physical attributes throughout their lives. Kant thinks of marriage to be a relationship based upon equal sense of possession.

He raises the question: "Does a woman's obeying of her husband like her master violate the principle of equality in marriage?" He answers "No." His reasoning is based on the natural superiority of husband. It is true that Kant's conclusion was in line with the marriage laws of his time, but his agreement with these laws and the argument for their legitimacy require Kant to argue against his principle of absolute truth. In this regard, he considers the interests, unity and needs of the family, but sacrifices the independence and rights of women to such a degree that he authorises the contract that violates the position of human on oneself. The low position of women with which Kant has no problem is like the position of immature and passive citizens, which was unbearable for Kant as it contradicts human dignity and freedom. It seems

that Kant not only justifies the inferiority of women to their husbands, but also, he argues that women are not required to be granted political rights as they are not independent.

Of course, Kant also deprives workers of the right to vote because they are not self-sufficient either and just like women, need caring; however, at the same time, it underlines that, measures have to be taken so that these passive citizens or subordinates of society can become active and enjoy political rights. Interestingly, here, Kant again does not include women in this statement he makes about passive civilians. "This is a radical idea. It is radical, in the first place, because "care" has not traditionally been among the concerns that made one into a citizen. But changing our understanding of citizenship, while a crucial piece in making care more public, is not the only crucial piece. In order to make care more valued publicly, a change will be required in our fundamental notions of responsibility, so that the problems faced by others in organizing their care work are seen not simply as "their" problem but also as a social and political concern." (Friedman, 2005, p.136)

According to Kant, women can never improve their social and political status just because they are women. There's a clear contradiction in Kant's stance though. "If Kant's moral principles were to apply to all rational beings, why did he not criticise their non-application to the women of his time?" "Why was the moral, legal and political status of his contemporary women justified by him?" Some scholars find the justification for this in the third part of the article, *Observations on the Feeling of the Beautiful and Sublime*. There, Kant states that man is a noble sex and has a deep understanding that requires efforts and struggles, but a woman is a gentle sex who has feelings, kindness and sympathy with subtle insight. Just like Jean Jacques Rousseau, Kant argues that these differences are inherent, and the two sexes must be taught differently. In other words, he abides by the differences between the genders and puts emphasis on these variances. This confirms Spinoza's hypothesis that, "there cannot exist in the universe two or more substances having the same nature or attribute." (Elwes, 2000, p. 5) From Kant's perspective, if women tried to pursue and require rational issues and phenomena, they will damage their natural beauty and bring them nothing but misery. What is more, he thinks that the subject that women should pursue is their husbands. The woman that Kant describes in this article has a talent for any kind of independence and does not need to read books because her role is to make up not to think. She's beautiful and she's engaged to a man; that's enough.

All these descriptions elucidate that Kant does not consider woman within the category of rational beings. The virtue of women is based on beauty and their moral behaviour is based on the desire to be satisfied. Personally, I suppose when Kant emphasizes that that there is no must and no duty for women, it turns out that in his opinion, a woman is not a human being at all because if a woman should be described not with rationality but with sense and delicacy, the person, man, who makes her the charming wife and guardian of the family is no longer needed that the moral theory which can be applied to all rational beings should be applied to her as well. In short, in my opinion, when Kant, in his moral and political philosophy, speaks of human, he only and only means *man*. The evidence for this claim is in the book, *Anthropology from a Pragmatic Point of view*, in which Kant virtually describes his views on male and female.

He also elaborates on their differences and devotes a whole section to this subject. Additionally, in this book, he attributes several characteristics to women. In Kant's judgement, these characteristics and differences between men and women are therefore necessary, unchangeable and purposeful. First, women are naturally weak and timid while men are strong and brave. In line with Kant, Moller (2002, p.108) specifies that, "the union of a man and a woman is a birth. This seems to be meant quite literally: in making love, the man

gives birth to an embryo when he impregnates the woman with his seed. In due course, the woman repeats the man's birth by bearing forth a fully formed child. Thus, in addition to his own procreative function, the man has also assimilated that of the woman. The man gives birth to his child, as an extension of himself." According to Kant, the source of fear in woman is in their biological structures because nature has determined that women give birth to children. He thinks women need male support because of this weakness, but the most important point in this regard is that Kant considers courage to be the essence of virtue, or even the virtue itself. In the article, *what is an answer to the question of Enlightenment?* He considers courage as a necessary condition for a person to become independent. Moreover, in this article, Kant states that: Enlightenment means the departure of human from childhood. Indeed, he regards childhood as the inability to use one's understanding without others' guidance. He goes on by saying that courage is a prerequisite for utilising understanding. Kant reiterates his justification when he says: "children are naturally immature, and their parents are their natural guardians. Woman regardless of age is declared to be immature in civil matters; her husband is her natural curator. However, if she lives with him and keeps her own property, then another person is the curator." (Louden, 2006, p.103)

From the above statement, it can be implied that women will always remain children or minors and will always need care. That is, they will never be freewheeling. However, some might disagree with this generalisation arguing that Kant does not claim that women like children are naturally imperfect and can't express opinions of themselves or have a voting right. Rather, they have no legal capacity to express their ideas or vote. Besides, as women should not go to wars, they should not enter other male-dominated areas or fields either. Speaking from feminist perspective, Sperlin (2001, pp. 137-138) brings up the point that "once sex is given relevance, how women and men are treated has a moral claim. In this case the 'superior' mental and physical qualities of males determine their moral claim to political position and privilege. In this context, equality of opportunity becomes an important concept."

Of course, from what went above, it can be concluded that Kant does not consider women as rational beings. The second characteristic of women in Kant's view is that women can influence men and tame them by using their intelligence and perspicacity that nature has endowed them with. Kant also considers this to be the work of nature and thinks that nature has devised this plan to lead men to morality. This doesn't mean that Kant assumes that women have a unique moral status and thus contribute to men's moralisation, on the contrary, Kant describes women's behaviours childish in this context just as children cause us to behave gently and kindly, women can also lead men to behave politely and humanely. It can be also inferred that attributing childish or childhood to women underscores their immaturity.

Kant explicitly mentions these two features. The third characteristic of women in Kant's view is not explicitly stated but can be deduced from the study of his works. Kant drives the point home in: Woman must reign, man must govern, because desire wants to reign, but understanding wants to govern. He then likens woman to a voluptuous king and the man to a wise minister of such a kingdom. This perception shows that Kant thought that women were characterized by acting out of desire, not out of understanding, and in fact, it is men who have the capacity to reason and the obligation or commitment to it. Fleischacker (2013, p.122) places people of colour and women in the same class claiming that "non-white people and women, if people at all, must be able to act on reason as much as white men, for the Kant of the Groundwork – and therefore must be regarded, equally, as ends in themselves." This third characteristic, which according to some commentators forms the basis of Kant's view of women, has been severely criticized by feminist philosophers because they think that according to Kant's philosophy, independence and freedom are only worthy of rational beings,

and Kant with such a description of women, has driven them out of the realm of wise beings. He's also dispossessed them of their human and civil rights and violated the principles of its political and moral philosophy.

In short, in Kant's view, since women are weak, cowardly and guided by their own desires, in other words, because women cannot act, think and decide autonomously, they need the support and guidance of men; that is, they need the care of their husbands. Although Kant sees marriage as a reciprocal relationship in which both man and woman enjoy equal access to properties and sex, thus expressing his opposition to the exploitation of women, this does not mean that he believes in equality between women and men. As a matter of fact, Kant believes that husband has the right to order, and the wife is obliged to obey. Man is the master of woman because he has natural superiority and is the last decision maker, but it should be noted that the limits of this power and domination, and in Kant's words, the kingdom, is also determined by the husband. Nonetheless, the critical point is that the power and domination that Kant attributes to women are in the realm of desire, which is of little value to Kant.

When it comes to civil equality, Kant points out, "as the Right of the Citizen to recognise no one as a Superior among the people in relation to himself, except in so far as such a one is as subject to his moral power to impose obligations, as that other has power to impose obligations upon him" (Hastie, 2010, p.167). In fact, the ability to rule on the basis of reason is important to Kant, and he thinks that woman does not have such an ability. On the one hand, Kant states in *The Foundations of the Metaphysics of Morals* that the value of a moral act is that it is performed by duty. On the other hand, in the article, *Observations on the Feeling of the Beautiful and Sublime*, it is stipulated that the virtue of a woman is beauty and the virtue of a man is honor. He thinks that a woman avoids evil not because it is immoral and unjust, but because it is morally ugly. Virtuous acts for women are acts that are morally beautiful. No duty or obligation is tolerable for women. With attention to morality, Wood (2017, p.67) asserts that "moral progress since Kant's day consists in our changing understandings about all these matters. The changes are most conspicuous regarding commonality in diversity of cultures and races, in the equality of men and women, in the deepening appreciation of the importance and variability of sexuality in human life, and perhaps most of all, the relations of our absurdly rare and anomalous species – the only rational, self-comprehending, and self-directing species we now have any reason to believe exists anywhere – to the vastness of nature surrounding it, and equally to its own precarious and self-endangered future."

He goes on to say that it is difficult for him to believe that the subtle sex is capable of acting on principles. Of course, he also remarks that the ability to act based upon principles is also rare among men. That women perform moral acts out of desire and because they are beautiful and do not accept any obligation and action based on a duty, means that their actions are not moral in Kant's view because they are not out of duty or sense of responsibility. From the points mentioned in Kant's articles, it seems that from Kant's perspective, women should be under the lifelong protection of men. They are not competent in the field of legal affairs, and cannot appear in court, nor can they work in the realm of economics. Consequently, they rely on their husbands to manage their lives. In addition, according to Kant, women do not have civil rights. Kant places women among passive citizens; Kant also considers men, who are not their own masters, as passive civilians; but the difference between the status of women and men who are among the passive citizens, is that in Kant's view, these men can become active civilians by promoting their position, but women do not have the ability to do so.

The key point is that placing women among the passive citizens, who do not have the ability to become active civilians has repercussions. Therefore, they lack all the legal characteristics

of the mentioned citizenship in the metaphysics of morality. In other words, they first lack the legal freedom to oppose the laws that they, as civilians, have not agreed with. Secondly, they do not enjoy civil equality, according to which no one is superior to another, and they are expropriated from civil independence that is to say, every citizen is not dependent on the will and support of any member of society. In this regard, 'Chidley maintains that liberty, power, and rule, should be in the whole and not in one man or few' (Broad & Green, 2007, p. 81). Accordingly, in the words of Kant, women in existence and support depend on the will of men. Men are the guardians and masters of women, and women must obey the laws that they have no right to oppose or disagree with. As a result, according to Kant, women do not have the capacity for independence because they act out of desire and not out of reason and understanding. Among Kant's feminist commentators, some such as Susan Moller Okin, and Joan W. Schott, have strongly criticized his views on women, and some like Mari Mikola, have tried to soften these harsh criticisms. But what cannot be denied is that although criticisms against him are perfectly and rightly justified, Kant thought within the social structure of his day and age, and so perhaps it is possible to empathize a little with his defenders.

2.2 The Dignity of Women in Spinoza's Philosophy

Spinoza refers to the discussion of women and gender differences between human beings to a limited extent. One of them mentioned in this regard is in the fourth section of *Ethics*. There, he refers to the story of the creation of *Adam and Eve*, and at the same time to the intellectual equality of man and woman proposing that in nature, there is nothing more useful to *Adam* than his wife. Furthermore, Spinoza refers to *Adam* in this passage as *free man*. According to him, when man placed himself in the rank of animals lower than himself, he began to imitate their emotions and lost his freedom. This implies that Spinoza holds the scales even between men and women in nature. In the last few lines of his treatise on politics, Spinoza, while incompletely discussing the rule of democracy, bereaves women of participation in government and provides reasons for this. His first argument for not giving women the right to take part in politics in a democracy is to recognize their natural weakness. He considers them to have a weaker intellectual power than men. Spinoza relies on experience in this regard. "Because there is no evidence in the past that men and women ruled together, but men have always ruled, women have been mostly subordinate and both sexes have always lived in harmony.

Be that as it may, "one respect in which a feminist conception of practical moral discourse differs from that of classical discourse ethics is that it addresses directly issues of discursive equality and openness in situations inevitably structured by power" (Calhoun, 2004, p.234). If women were naturally equal to men and had equal ability and strength (characteristics that make up human power and rights), surely there would be many nations in which women and men had ruled together, as well as nations in which women ruled and men obeyed them. Nevertheless, such examples are not found anywhere. Having scrutinized these issues, one can come across a contradiction in Spinoza's words. On the one hand, in his treatise on ethics, he refers to the natural intellectual equality of men and women, and on the other hand, in his treatise on politics, he accentuates their inequality. Spinoza also mentions this feminine weakness in his other works. In the introduction to the *Divine Political Treatise*, he refers to it as "Womanish Tears", and in *Ethics*, he mentions that as "Unmanly Compassion". According to Spinoza, feminine compassion is an obstacle to reason. Hence, due to this feminine compassion, women lack tenacity according to which everyone tries to maintain his

existence only under the guidance of reason. This weakness causes them to be dominated by their husbands and it reflects their political views.

Spinoza's second argument for denying women the right to make an appearance in politics and democracy is based on analyzing men's feelings towards women. He argues that because men often love women out of lust, they measure women's ability and wisdom by their beauty, and they detest any kindness that their beloved woman shows to other men. Equality between men and women in government jeopardizes peace. The third and main reason Spinoza excludes women from taking part in politics is that they cannot meet the independence need, which is a prerequisite for engaging in a democratic government. Needless to say, Spinoza designates some conditions for those who have the right in a democratic system to vote and run the country. Some of these conditions are as follows: Having the citizenship of the country, being autonomous and being good doer. Kant puts forward the issue of citizenship since foreign nationals do not have the right to vote and play a part in the administration of the country. By imposing the condition of independence, he means excluding women, children, servants and minors from participating in a democratic government.

What deprives women, servants, children and minors of having to do with a democratic government is their lack of independence from their husbands, masters and fathers. In his treatise on politics, Spinoza speaks of the proportions of "independence" or "dependence" of individuals. In his opinion, the degree of dependence and independence of each person depends on the degree of their power, that is, the more power a person has, the more self-governing they become and the less power, the more dependent. Each person's level of power also depends on the degree of his being active. For Spinoza, being active means having more imaginative faculties or more lively emotions. Indeed, Spinoza considers the self as the imagination of the body. The essence, in his view, is composed of complete and incomplete imaginations. The complete imagination of man is the evaluator of reason, and the imperfect imagination of human prepares the ground for delusion. A complete imagination is the one that, if we consider it in itself and without its relation to the subject of the image, has all the characteristics and internal signs of a correct imagination. A genuine imagination, on the other hand, is an imagination that conforms to the subject of the imagination or what is conceived. According to Spinoza, correct imagination and complete imagination are one thing, which is called correct in terms of external properties and symbols and is called complete in terms of internal properties and symbols. In his letter to Tschirnhaus, he writes that he finds no other difference between a complete idea and a correct idea, except that the word *correct* refers only to the conformity of the idea with its conception, while the word *complete* refers to the intrinsic nature of imagination.

This implies that there is no real difference between a complete notion and a correct notion other than this incidental or external association. Misconceptions, of course, do not correspond to the subject of the imagination or what is imagined. Incomplete perception, because it is valid in itself and regardless of the subject of perception or the perceived, does not have the properties or internal signs of an accurate perception. Thus, the incomplete and incorrect conception must also be single thing. according to Spinoza, emotions are those states of the body and its perceptions that affect the power of the body's activity, that is, the power of the body's activity increases, decreases, strengthens, or prevents it through them. He calls the emotions of which man himself is the only cause, or in other words, man is the full cause of them, active emotions, or actions.

From what has been said, it is evident that Spinoza believes that man is able to transform incomplete ideas or passive emotions into complete notions or active sensations and achieve

more activity, power and independence. In his opinion, in order to achieve such a situation, one should have more interaction with the world and understand more objects, because Spinoza believes that if the body has more power and talent to perceive more objects, the essence of that body can perceive more objects as well. The greater the understanding of the self, the better the stability of its being or conatus. Increasing conatus means increasing virtue. Power and virtue are one thing for Spinoza. So, the increase in conatus also leads to an increase in the power of the self. The more the power of the self, the more independent the person becomes. Nowhere in the works of Spinoza do we find a passage in which it is said that only men have the capacity to become more rational and nonaligned. He forbade only male and female servants and minors because they were not adequately self-contained to mingle with political affairs.

The result is that women, who in Spinoza's time had less interaction with society than men, had less activity, power and independence than men. Perhaps, that's the reason Spinoza bereaves women of civil rights. Being a woman in society, and when Spinoza lived, imposed severe restrictions on the power, pleasures, and virtues of women and prevented the expansion of their body and self, making the self of women different from that of men who were not exposed to such social constraints. One reason for this claim can be found in the works of seventeenth-century feminist women. For instance, Margaret Cavendish criticizes the neglect, humiliation, and ridicule of women by men in her community, explaining that this intellectual climate has led women to live in dull ignorance. She also criticizes the lack of access to education for women of her time. What is more, Damaris Masham argues that mothers should raise their daughters to use their intellect instead of relying on the opinions of others.

On this side, "Astell recommends a moral education for women: one that will instil them with an enduring disposition to virtue, that will create good habits of mind that will enable moral agents to regulate their wills in accordance with reason, and to cultivate a loving, generous temper of mind toward other people" (Broad, 2015, p. 145). Mary Astell emphasizes the need for formal academic education and the study of the Cartesian method of women's intellectual development. From what has been cited, we can understand the importance of the role of society in the upbringing of human beings. Thus, it can be claimed that although at the time of creation, Adam and Eve were granted equal, compatible and agreeable nature and harmony, in the course of history, Eve's daughters could not grow their social bodies as much as men did, and this led to the famous announcement of Spinoza in the seventeenth century that says: Because seventeenth-century women have not reached the necessary level of intellectual development in the social sphere, they should not take part in government and political matters. Spinoza's political writings indicate that no matter how the nature of women is, regarding their social status, their capacity cannot emulate or be equal with men's capability.

Of course, this backwardness of the female social body¹ may have been a valid reason for Spinoza to consider women socially weaker, to put them in a lower position, and to prohibit them from taking up with politics; but according to Spinoza's philosophy, it is always possible that people separate from their social environment and build a new society that will help increase their body and self-power more than the previous social environment. Thus, Spinoza's theory lays the foundation for women's participation in political affairs and events provided that they reach the required intellectual power, to be exact.

¹ The natural body is the body with which we are born, in other words, our biological body; nevertheless, the social body is the body that is formed during the experiences of social life.

2.3 A Comparison of Spinoza and Kant on Women

Spinoza and Kant both agree on the qualities they attribute to women. Both point to a weak spot in women that hinders their rational behavior. Spinoza referred to this weakness with the terms "Womanish Tears" and "Unmanly Compassion." Kant also considers women to be naturally weak and cowardly. According to Kant, the source of women's fear lies in their biological structure. It is because nature has decreed that women give birth to children. Therefore, presumably they must be faint-hearted in order to protect their children. Both Spinoza and Kant stress the emotional impact of women on men. However, Spinoza considers it negative and as a reason to justify the exclusion of women from the political structure of society. Whereas Kant considers it positive and as a map of nature for the moral guidance of men. Given these points, "in ignoring the roles for emotion and tradition in human life, they say, Kant helped foster a contempt for women and for non-white peoples, and an attitude in which members of these groups can legitimately be used as tools for the supposedly more rational projects of Western white men. The result has been a world in which employers treat their workers as fodder for their own interests, men scorn and inflict violence on women, and white people regard non-whites as subhuman" (Fleischacker, 2013, p.93). Finally, both Spinoza and Kant regard women as passive civilians and strip them of the right to fall in with political affairs. These philosophers argue that women lack independence, which is a prerequisite for citizenship.

The definition of both is self-sufficiency and being unaffected by others. Therefore, in the opinion of both philosophers, their contemporary women do not have the ability to join political affairs. The difference between them is that Spinoza considers men and women equal in nature but believes that they are not equal in terms of social status. Kant, on the other hand, believes that women are inferior to men both in nature and social status and lack some characteristics that make men rational, independent and civils. Kant considers the essence of woman to be simply desire and the essence of men as wisdom or understanding, but in Spinoza's philosophy, such a thing cannot be observed. As has been noted by Spinoza, rationale refers to complete imaginations evaluating the soul or self. The self is composed of complete and incomplete imaginations. Complete imaginations evaluate human reason or intellect, and incomplete imaginations assess his interactions. According to Spinoza, desire is the very nature of man, conatus, or his effort, in that it is at the same time related to both the self and the body. Conatus is an intrinsic propensity of everything or creature to maintain its existence and ameliorate.

In other words, the agent of negating any creature is not within the being itself, and if there is no external factor, the being will continue to exist forever. As it is clear, Spinoza's argument is about humans in general be it a man or a woman. If his complete imaginations are more than his imperfect imaginations, he'll be wiser, more complete and more independent. On the whole, "analysing the way concepts of male friendship guard the entry to both politics and philosophy, Derrida notes that a wide range of writers, including Michelet, Montaigne, Nietzsche, and Aristotle, presume that women are 'not yet' ready for proper, virtuous friendships, and thus cannot be considered to be suitable politicians or philosophers in the present. He thus argues that "the form or the pretext of 'not yet' is a key method in the exclusion of women from the public realm" (Hutchison & Jenkins, 2013, p.226). Thus, Spinoza's philosophy seems to pave the way for women to take part in social and political affairs, provided they compound their complete imaginations and become wiser and more autonomous. Like Spinoza, Kant excludes passive citizens from participating in politics. Passive civilians, in his view, like Spinoza, include women and a group of men. But Kant, unlike Spinoza, believes that only men who are passive civilians can ultimately function

as citizens in society on condition that they be educated and gain independence so that ultimately, they can work like a citizen in society.

The important point is that although it is possible to justify and empathize with both philosophers, given their time of living and intellectual atmosphere in their era about their anti-feminist views and the deprivations that they had imposed on women because they were immensely influenced by the ongoing events and propensities of their time, the important point is that Kant's philosophy by describing women as irrational beings (if this interpretation is valid) systematically illuminated the irrational and unimaginative theories of his time as if Kant, as in the field of theoretical philosophy, was the analyst and justifier of the dominant science of his time; by the same token, as for women, he also justified the dominant mentality of his time. It should also be noted that, in the modern era, even women thinkers themselves have expressed some ideas under the influence of the prevailing thoughts of their time which were close to the views of male philosophers of the modern era.

According to Margaret Cavendish, the reason women do not become mathematicians or logicians is because of their soft brains. For this reason, she gave the right to the men of her time not to involve women in government because she thought that women's brains were different from men's. Mary Chandley likewise criticizes women's reasoning skills, arguing that intellectual work is too much for women and thus sees them as superficial thinkers. (Broad: 9-10: 2003, Broad).

3. CONCLUSION

Spinoza and Kant, two modern European philosophers, have thought about women, especially their civil rights, and both have barred women from tying up with politics. Although both have similar views on women in politics, they have adopted different attitudes among feminists because of the characteristics of philosophy and the views they have presented about the feminine nature. Without a doubt, Spinoza is regarded as an important ally of feminist philosophy because of his unique theory of the self and body as well as his particular theory concerning the nature of self as a significant support for feminism. Nonetheless, that is not the case for Kant for his stance is quite different. He has been severely criticized by some feminists because in his book, women do not have the capacity for independence since they act out of desire or sentiment than of understanding or intellect. By and large, "Robin Schott says that "Western culture" is committed "to a form of asceticism that requires not only the social subordination of women, but the existential and cognitive suppression of emotion and sensuousness that historically has been identified with women." (Fleischacker, 2013, p.125)

REFERENCES

- Broad, J & Green, K. (2007). *Virtue, Liberty, and Toleration: Political Ideas of European Women, 1400–1800*. New York: Springer Publications. pp.81, 132
- Broad, J. (2015). *The Philosophy of Mary Astell: An Early Modern Theory of Virtue*. USA: Oxford University Press. pp.145, 161
- Calhoun, C. (2004). *Setting the Moral Compass: Essays by Women Philosophers*. UK: Oxford University Press. pp.74, 234
- Fleischacker, S. (2013). *What is Enlightenment?* London & New York: Routledge Publications. pp.93, 122-123, 125
- Friedman, M. (2005). *Women and Citizenship*. UK: Oxford University Press. p.136

- Hutchison, K & Jenkins, F. (2013). *Women in Philosophy: What Needs to Change?* UK: Oxford University Press. pp.173, 226
- James, S & Palmer, S. (2002). *Visible Women Essays on Feminist Legal Theory and Political Philosophy*. USA: Hart Publications. p.160
- Kant, I. (2010). *The Philosophy of Law: An Exposition of The Fundamental Principles of Jurisprudence as the Science of Right*. Translated from the German by W. Hastie, B.D, Edinburgh: The Lawbook Exchange. p.167
- Kant, I. (2006). *Anthropology from a Pragmatic Point of View*. Translated and edited by Robert B. Loudon, UK: Cambridge University Press. p.103
- Moller, V, S. (2002). *Philosophy Without Women: The Birth of Sexism in Western Thought*. Translated by Peter Cripps, London: Continuum Publications. p.108
- Sperlin, L. (2001). *Women, Political Philosophy and Politics*. Britain: Edinburgh University Press. pp.137-138, 157
- Spinoza, B. (2000). *The Ethics, Part I: Concerning God*, Translated by R.H.M Elwes, Pennsylvania: Penn State Electronic Classics Series Publication. p.5
- Wood, A. (2017). *Formulas of the Moral Law (Elements in the Philosophy of Immanuel Kant)*. UK: Cambridge University Press. pp. 23-24, 67

KARABAKH REALITIES AND HISTORICAL REVIEW

Nigar Mustafayeva

Senior specialist, The Institute of Caucasus Studies

ABSTRACT

The basis of Armenian settlement to the territory of Karabakh was laid in 1805 by concluding the Treaty of Kurakchay. Right after the conclusion of Kurakchay Treaty that confirmed the transfer of the Karabakh Khanate under the protectorate of Russian Empire, the mass settlement of Armenians residing in Iran and Ottoman Empire began.

The main objective of Armenian settlement was to strengthen the position of Russian Empire in Karabakh which was geographically close to Iran and Ottoman Empire. It would be impossible to consider the groundless territorial claims of the Armenians to the Azerbaijani lands, especially to Karabakh, outside the prism of the occupation policy pursued by Russian Empire in this region. Armenians have been able to falsify the documents of the time very professionally for 100 years and found ways to Russia and European countries and took more realistic steps to implement their ideas and territorial claims that does not reflect any historical reality.

During the last century since the Treaty of Kurakchay, the ethnographic map of Karabakh has changed significantly, thus laying the groundwork for the Armenians' unfounded territorial claims in Karabakh.

In the historical and political situation established by the outbreak of World War I, the Bolshevik Revolution, the fall of Tsarist Russia and the establishment of independent Azerbaijan, Armenia and Georgia in the South Caucasus, the territorial claims of Armenians in Karabakh became more intense and bloodier.

All the facts confirm that the local population of Karabakh have been Azerbaijanis and Armenians are the nations brought to this land later.

The article, which examines the Armenian claim to Karabakh, will shed light on the historical and political events that took place between 1918 and 1923.

Keywords: Karabakh, Azerbaijan, armenian territorial claims, South Caucasus, Russian Empire, Soviet Union, Turkey, realities

INTRODUCTION

Karabakh is one of the ancient settlements of Azerbaijan. The word "Karabakh" is of Turkish origin and is derived from the words "Kara" and "bag". "Kara" is used in Turkish to mean "big", "thick", "dense", and "bag" means "garden". The territory of Karabakh was part of the ancient Albanian state (2).

The invasions of the Arab caliphate in the 7th century did not bypass Karabakh. Even after the collapse of the Caliphate, there was no Armenian state among the revived states in its territory. The Mongol marches, then the Hulagu state, Karabakh under the rule of the Aghgoyunlu and Garagoyunlu states, later became part of the Safavid government. After the death of Nadir Shah Afshar (1736 - 1747), the ruler of the Afshar state, which included Karabakh, khanates were established in the territory of Karabakh. Panahali khan laid the foundation of Karabakh khanate. As Panahali khan became stronger in Karabakh, the destructive activity of the separatist feudal lords against him, who opposed the territorial integrity of the khanate, began to increase. From 1783, Russia also began to enter Karabakh.

Russia was trying to establish a Christian state in the South Caucasus in order to gain support. It was not possible to stop Russia, which intensified its occupation activities in all regions of Azerbaijan. Jar-Balakan, Ganja khanate and finally Karabakh khanate were united with Russia.

The resettlement of Armenians to Karabakh in the 19th century

With the conclusion of the Turkmenchay Treaty, the Karabakh Khanate became part of Russia as an Azerbaijani, Muslim land. As Tsarist Russia occupied the lands of Azerbaijan, it pursued a policy of Armenianization of the population so that they could become stronger in these lands. Article 15 of the Turkmenchay Treaty, signed in 1828, reflected the resettlement of Armenians from Iran to Azerbaijan. The Russians chose Karabakh to resettle the Armenians. Although two years have passed since the signing of the agreement, 18,000 Armenians have already been relocated from Iran to Karabakh and 84,000 from the Ottoman Empire. The number of unofficial migrants exceeded 200,000. Due to these resettlements, the number of Armenians in the ethnic composition of Karabakh has increased en masse. Thus, Tsarist Russia created Armenian regions in the territory of Yerevan, Nakhchivan and Karabakh khanates.

The resettlement policy lasted for decades. Russian Caucasian scholar N. Shavrov wrote: "More than 1 million out of 1.3 million Armenians in the Caucasus are foreigners" (4, pp. 59-61). Despite all this, in 1832, 64.4% of the population of Karabakh were Azerbaijanis and 34.8% were Armenians. (5, p.26).

Tsarist Russia created all type of large-scale opportunities for Armenians. Armenians moved en masse to Karabakh and began to fight for the realization of the baseless idea of a "Greater Armenia" and did not hesitate to commit the most heinous crimes for it. The main component of the idea of a "Greater Armenia" was the destruction of the local population in Karabakh, Nakhchivan, Yerevan and other parts of Azerbaijan. As the treachery and military uprisings against the Ottoman state that began in the 1890s failed, the Armenians began to look for this opportunity in Azerbaijan (5, p. 26).

The resettlement of Armenians to Karabakh in the twentieth century, the acts of massacre and genocide committed by them

Starting from 1905, Armenians began massacres and genocide against the Azerbaijani people in Karabakh. Taking advantage of the historic opportunity created by the First World War, the Armenians revolted in the Ottoman Empire in 1915 to establish the mythical state of "Greater Armenia" under the auspices of Tsarist Russia. As the uprising failed, they placed all their attention and military units on Azerbaijani soil. Armenian militants serving in the Russian army united and dealt a heavy blow to the Azerbaijani people. In March 1918, thousands of people died in Baku. The process continued throughout all Azerbaijan.

In May 1918, the Azerbaijani people escaped from Russian captivity and established the Azerbaijan Democratic Republic. Although Karabakh was also part of the Azerbaijan Democratic Republic, Armenia has made unfounded claims to Karabakh. After the claim was rejected, the Armenians brutally and ruthlessly attacked the civilian population in Shusha against the Azerbaijani people. Chairman of the Parliament of the Azerbaijan Democratic Republic Alimardan bey Topchubashov stated during his talks with the Minister of Foreign Affairs of the Ottoman Empire on November 18, 1918 in Istanbul:

"The Karabakh issue raised by the Armenians is not a question of 5 or 10 villages, the dispute is over 4 pins - Shusha, Javanshir, Jabrayil and Zangazur. This is the territory of such a khanate, where the number of Armenians and Muslims is not equal. They moved here from Turkey after the war with Russia."

The next crime of the Armenians against the Azerbaijan Democratic Republic was committed in Shusha on March 22, 1920. Despite the repulse of their first attacks, the army of the Azerbaijan Democratic Republic was divided into two parts and lost its independence, unable to withstand the XI Red Army coming from the north. Soviet power was established in Azerbaijan, and thus the processes around Karabakh entered a new stage.

The Karabakh issue in the 1920s

A completely new history began to be written in the South Caucasus. The process of Sovietization in Azerbaijan had a serious impact on the political and economic life of Karabakh. The Karabakh region has entered a new period in its political history. Moscow drew a new map of the region in line with its interests.

The struggle was already between Dashnak Armenia and Soviet Azerbaijan. Armenians skillfully used the abolition of the national army in Soviet Azerbaijan to organize attacks on Karabakh, Nakhchivan and Zangazur. The Azerbaijani communist government relied on Moscow in this matter. The point is that the Soviet leadership also had a different view of the Karabakh conflict. The Caucasus Bureau of the Russian Communist Party, led by Grigory Orjonokidze, supported the annexation of Karabakh and Zangazur by the Azerbaijani government. Although the reason was that ethnic Azerbaijanis outnumbered Armenians in the region, this was not the case. The Bolshevik government was actually planning the Sovietization of Armenia. In addition, if the process of Sovietization in the South Caucasus was completed, it was intended to put military and political pressure on Iran and Turkey. This line coincided with the position of the leadership of Soviet Azerbaijan. Unfortunately, Moscow did not continue this line. Moscow has refused to support Baku in Azerbaijan's territorial dispute with Armenia. This was explained by the fact that there was no rapprochement between Turkey and Azerbaijan in the region, and the biggest obstacle in this way would be Armenia.

After the end of the Sovietization process in Armenia in November 1920, the Karabakh issue became an internal problem, and its consideration began only on the instructions of the Caucasus Bureau of the Central Committee of the Russian Communist Party. In May 1921, a special commission consisting of representatives of all three South Caucasus republics, headed by Kirov, was established at the plenum of the bureau to determine the boundaries between the republics.

After the establishment of the Soviet Union, the fate of Karabakh was left to the newly established Transcaucasian Country Committee. On November 26, 1924, the Committee adopted the Regulations on the Establishment of the Nagorno-Karabakh Autonomous Region, and the law was sent to the Central Committee. Thus, Karabakh, an ancient and integral part of Azerbaijan, was artificially divided into lowland and mountainous parts. Later, as a result of the settlement policy in the mountainous part, the growing Armenian population was given autonomy and expelled from Azerbaijan. The opinion of the local Azerbaijanis living there was not taken into account when taking these steps. The issue of granting autonomy to the Nagorno-Karabakh Autonomous Region was not on the basis of any scientific-geographical division, but simply a cunning step in favor of the ethnic Armenians, so that they could establish a new state.

Armenians living in Armenia, Nagorno-Karabakh, and even abroad did not remain silent during the Soviet era, and whenever the opportunity arose, they used every option to separate Karabakh. As relations between the Soviet Union and Turkey cooled, Armenians immediately used the anti-Turkish campaign to sign petitions and demand Moscow's approval. Even if these requirements were not met, it indicated the emergence of new hearths.

For 70 years, Nagorno-Karabakh was kept part of Azerbaijan. Although Azerbaijan has been pursuing a policy of socio-political and comprehensive economic development in its ancient homeland of Karabakh over the years, the separatist calls launched by Armenian nationalist ideologues in Nagorno-Karabakh since the late 1980s have reverberated. Since 1987, the Miatsum movement has been active in Armenia. Zori Balayan and other Armenian writers, poets and scientists made speeches that increased separatist tendencies in Armenian society. Unfortunately, the Central Committee of the Soviet Union did not properly assess the situation and was not interested. Taking advantage of the gaps, the Armenians skillfully adopted an unconstitutional decision on December 1, 1989 to annex Nagorno-Karabakh to Armenia. Moscow turned a blind eye to this. Unfortunately, there were those in the Azerbaijani leadership at that time who betrayed their people and made concessions to the Armenians.

The Karabakh issue in the 1990s

Immediately after the bloody events of January 20, the crisis of statehood in the country had to be resolved. The savior of the Azerbaijani people, Heydar Aliyev, exposed Moscow the next day and returned to Azerbaijan, Nakhchivan. At that time, Nakhchivan suffered greatly from the effects of the blockade and Armenian attacks. The Armenians greatly expanded the scale of the military operation. The horrific act of genocide in Khojaly in 1992 gives a clear idea of the scale of Armenian atrocities. 613 Azerbaijanis were killed in this genocide operation carried out with the support of the 366th Motorized Rifle Regiment of Russia. Of those killed during the Khojaly genocide, 63 were children and 106 were women. 487 people were injured, 1275 people were taken prisoner, most of them were the elderly, women and children, 8 families were completely destroyed. Khojaly was engraved in history as one of the most obvious examples of centuries-old hostility of Armenians against Azerbaijanis.

Tens of thousands of Azerbaijanis were killed in the Karabakh war, and 100,000 people were expelled from their native lands. The lands came under Armenian occupation.

A ceasefire was declared in May 1994 and the great leader Heydar Aliyev managed to stop the war. From this period, Azerbaijan entered a new stage. Billions of economic projects have been launched. Statehood was restored in Azerbaijan. Special attention was paid to army building. Azerbaijan's true voice was heard in all international organizations and Azerbaijan's territorial integrity was recognized. All these successes are connected with the name of Heydar Aliyev. One of the main reasons why the majority of Azerbaijani youth were sent to the rear during the Soviet era was their poor knowledge of Russian. (7) Some of them were sent to military units that taught specialties. The vast majority of young people were sent to construction and service units. This situation worried Heydar Aliyev very much, no doubt, the existence of such a situation was done to distract Azerbaijanis from military service. To overcome this concern, military patriotic education was strengthened, and new requirements were set for the preparation of young people for military service. First of all, increased attention was paid to the teaching of Russian in schools, a separate institute for training Russian language teachers was established, a faculty for primary military training was opened at the Azerbaijan State Pedagogical Institute, military games were held among schoolchildren. Organizational work in this area has been strengthened by the republic's leadership. The

situation with conscription in Azerbaijan has been repeatedly discussed under the leadership of Heydar Aliyev with the participation of relevant officials, and the necessary decisions have been made. Within the country, the interest of young people in military specialties was increased, for this purpose, the opportunities of the clubs of the Voluntary Aid Society to the Army and Aviation were widely used. From the 70s of the XX century, the issue of training professional military personnel was raised as one of the main tasks of the Azerbaijani people. As a result of all this, the conscription of young people has been improved, and the number of Azerbaijanis sent to military units providing special training has increased. (3)

THE RESULT

President of the Republic of Azerbaijan Ilham Aliyev, tirelessly throughout his rule, voiced at all prestigious events that Karabakh is an integral part of Azerbaijan, and always kept the right position of Azerbaijan in the attention of the world community. The Azerbaijani army has been improved and acquired the most powerful weapons in the world. Professional staff and officers have been trained. As a result, the 44-day Patriotic War, which began on September 27, 2020, returned Karabakh to its rightful owner, Azerbaijan. The Azerbaijani army has made great progress with few casualties.

The Second Karabakh War ended with the complete victory of the Republic of Azerbaijan, which liberated the lands occupied by the Armenian armed forces. This 44-day war has had a positive effect not only on the military-political life of the region, but also on ensuring international security. Turkey has supported Azerbaijan in its just struggle since the first day of military operations, providing it with political and diplomatic support. Azerbaijan has received great support from both official circles and the public from the first hours of the war. On September 27, Turkish Defense Minister H. Akar stated that he was on the side of Azerbaijan, emphasizing that Armenia's position is the biggest obstacle to peace and stability in the South Caucasus. (10).

In the following days, Foreign Minister Cavusoglu visited Baku as a clear example of Turkey's support for Azerbaijan. During these visits, the Turkish minister reiterated that Azerbaijan can always count on a friendly country. (11).

According to the tripartite statement signed by the President of the Republic of Azerbaijan, the Prime Minister of the Republic of Armenia and the President of the Russian Federation, a complete ceasefire in the Nagorno-Karabakh conflict zone from 01:00 Baku time on November 10; and the construction of new transport communications connecting the Nakhchivan Autonomous Republic and the western regions of Azerbaijan. Azerbaijan's military victories, especially the liberation of Shusha from enemy captivity, played a decisive role in the fate of the war, resulted in Armenia's recognition and capitulation of its defeat, forcing Armenia to return Kalbajar, Agdam and Lachin regions to Azerbaijan. According to the decree of the President of the Republic of Azerbaijan Ilham Aliyev dated December 3, 2020, considering the historical significance of the city of Shusha and its liberation from occupation, it was decided to celebrate "Victory Day" on November 8 each year.

LIST OF REFERENCE:

1. Dağlıq Qarabağ münaqişəsi. Azərbaycan Respublikası Prezidentinin İşlər İdarəsinin Kitabxanası.2005.səh 113
2. https://az.wikipedia.org/wiki/Da%C4%9Fl%C4%B1q_Qaraba%C4%9F

3. <https://mod.gov.az/az/pre/22521.html>
4. N. N. Şavrov, Novaya Ugroza Russkomu Delu v Zakavkazie, St. Petersburg, 1911, s. 59–61)
5. Tadeusz Swietochowski, Müslüman Cemaatten Ulusal Kimliğe Rus Azerbaycanı 1905–1920, İstanbul, Bağlam, 1988, s. 26
6. Qarabağ tarixi, 7-ci sinif, Qasım Hacıyev, Əyyub Əbdüləzimov, səh 9
7. Qasım Hacıyev. Qarabağlı hərbiçilər (Çar və AXC ordusunun zabitləri). Bakı. Təknur, 2011, 250 s.
8. Qasım Hacıyev .Heydər Əliyevin Dağlıq Qarabağa Erməni iddialarına qarşı mübarizəsi.
9. Qasım Hacıyev. Vladimir Kazimirovun “Qarabağa sülh” arzusu və əsl niyyəti. Bakı. Təknur, 2011, 131 s.
10. Bakan Akar’dan Azərbaycan’a mesaj: Kardeşlərimizin yanındayız // <https://www.yenisafak.com/video-galeri/gundem/bakan-akardan-azerbaycana-mesaj-kardeslerimizin-yanindayiz-2210581> (28 sentyabr 2020)
11. Dışişleri Bakanı Çavuşoğlu Bakü’de // <https://www.trthaber.com /haber/gundem/disisleri-bakani-cavusoglu-bakude-527465.html> (1noyabr 2020)

HOW DID YOUNG CONSUMERS FEEL ABOUT BEING A CONSUMER DURING THE COVID-19 QUARANTINES?: AN ASSESSMENT WITH THE COLLAGE TECHNIQUE

Sevtap Ünal¹, Nisa Akın²

¹İzmir Kâtip Çelebi University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences,
Department of International Trade and Business Administration, İzmir, Turkey.

²İzmir Kâtip Çelebi University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences,
Department of Business Administration, İzmir, Turkey.

ABSTRACT

In this study, the emotions and thoughts felt by young people during the COVID-19 quarantine period and their reflection on their behavior as consumers were examined. The study was carried out with 22 participants through online tools with the interview method and the collage technique was used to collect the data from the participants. Content analysis and ZMET (Zaltman Metaphor Elicitation Technique) were used in the analysis of the data. Maxqda qualitative data analysis program was used for content analysis. According to the results, the participants experienced both positive and negative emotions, with negative emotions being more intense during the closure period. While negative emotions were determined as anxiety, fear, captivity, loneliness, uncertainty, and laziness, positive emotions were determined as awakening, hope, and simplification. During the quarantine period, there have been radical changes in the consumption behaviors of young consumers, especially in terms of content and quantity. In addition to online consumption, the frequency of both using and consuming social media (buying some services like hobbies or education) has also increased. According to the ZMET analysis in the research, it has been determined that there are four deep metaphors (container, transformation/change, resource, and control) during the quarantine period for young consumers.

Keywords: Consumer Behavior, Projective Techniques, Collage Technique, ZMET (Zaltman Metaphor Elicitation Technique), COVID-19

INTRODUCTION

The COVID-19 pandemic that started in China in 2019 has spread rapidly all over the world. With the rapid spread of the pandemic, an atmosphere of panic prevailed all over the world. Uncertainty and fear had a big impact on the panic at the beginning of the pandemic. People rushed to buy supplies and cleaning supplies to the extent that they plundered the markets. During the quarantine period, online sales exploded. While the sale of basic necessities has increased, there have been significant decreases in demand for luxury goods and fashion-related products. All these developments reflect the actively visible extent of COVID-19. Its reflection on psychological and social life has made itself felt in much more complex dimensions. During the lockdown and isolation from relatives due to health concerns, experts warned and supported people to seek psychological support. Because both physical and spiritual well-being are important for the future of humanity. Just as the immune systems of the human body defend against physical diseases, it is also possible for humans to protect themselves psychologically. This is called the “behavioral immune system (BIS)”. BIS is expressed as the person who tries to escape and protect himself from any contamination. Psychologically and behaviorally, individuals become defensive (Costa et. al., 2003; Wang, et. al., 2020). Young people, on the other hand, faced difficulties and opportunities in many aspects during this process. Understanding the behavioral immunity of young people, both

physically and psychologically, especially during restriction periods, interpreting their lasting effects on consumption psychology has become an important need for many brands. Understanding feelings, thoughts and behavioral changes of today's young people that will establish tomorrow's societies by this process, which changes many habits in our lives from education to consumption, participation in economic life to social life, will be effective in determining behavioral assumptions about consumption structures and the new normal consumption habits to be found after these periods, especially in uncertain, risky and out-of-control crisis moments such as pandemics. This study was conducted in order to see the impact COVID-19 has had on people's inner worlds and to find out how young consumers who are physically and psychologically protected within the scope of BIS are in the process. It is aimed to have information about the functioning of the minds of young consumers in the period of COVID-19 by learning what young people experience and feel as "consumers" during the quarantine period. For this purpose, the collage technique, one of the qualitative methods considered effective in reaching the consumer mind, was used in the study. The collage technique is a visual and verbal evaluation system that is also used in psychiatric treatments, revealing people's deep thoughts and feelings. Collage is more successful than many methods in reflecting the inner world of the consumer with its verbal and visual methods (Havlena and Holak, 1996; Cody, 2015). In this study, firstly, theoretical information about the BIS and collage method was given. In the second part, the findings obtained from collages reflecting the feelings of young consumers during the quarantine period were included, and the study was concluded with evaluations and recommendations regarding the research findings.

LITERATURE REVIEW

All physical systems can cope with pathogens and it is a somewhat inherent organism. Although the body's immune system mostly is thought of as a biological context, it also has a psychological dimension that prevents people from the initial transmission of pathogens. This protection system is called a behavioral immune system (BIS) that operates the same logic as the psychological immune system. BIS may promote the early detection and behavioral avoidance of people exhibiting disease-relevant cues (Mortensen, et. al, 2010; Schaller and Park, 2011). The behavioral immune system is composed of psychological mechanisms that encourage disease-avoidance. BIS works like the biological immune system and promotes prophylactic behavior, defending the organism against contamination (Schaller, 2011). BIS is highly sensitive towards a stimulus that is potentially contaminated and after perception, adaptive psychological responses are generated. When this process is ongoing some kind of disgusting emotional experiences appear and accompany cognitive knowledge structures in memory to find the best avoiding way. In addition to the signal-detection BIS, the evaluation process considers a cost/benefit problem. An individual roughly calculate the consequences of any contamination and his vulnerability and if the relative ratio signals the avoidance benefits are more than to be infected the person probably can choose to avoid the pathogens. Even they are oversensitive to the clues. In some situations, the prominence of potential infection might be the cause of hostile behaviors toward out-groups (Schaller and Park, 2011). BIS theory mentioned that people could develop negative effects and negative cognition to protect themselves from potential contamination. Facing the potential threat, people establish prevention behaviors and obey in-group's norms. According to Schaller and Duncan (2007), BIS supports people to stay with in-group members than the out-group members. BIS increases negative attitudes toward out-groups. Increasing public health emergencies induces more negative emotions and cognitive assessments. On the other hand, this favorable protection system, in the long term, might dismantle the balance of psychological mechanisms

which results in overreacting to any disease or excessively avoidant behaviors (Li et. al., 2020). Since any kind of disease or crisis caused by public health emergencies can be reflected directly in emotions and cognition, it is essential to monitor psychological changes in pandemic time within emotional and cognitive signals. Several methods are used to measure consumers' emotions and thoughts through qualitative to quantitative. But the most appropriate way to measure emotions is qualitative methods. To understand consumers' minds we need deep information that reveals their subconscious. Projective techniques like collage making give researchers to get latent feelings and thoughts (Costa et. al., 2003).

The collage technique contains the construction of collage that reflects an opinion, view, and feeling of a person in a non-verbal form. There is a saying "a picture is worth 1000 words" (Saunders, 2009; Hamrouni and Touzi, 2011). Collage technique is the method of inquiring individuals to amplify their thoughts, beliefs, and attitudes about daily lives, relations, events, products, etc. The most powerful attribute of the collage method is reflecting metaphorical thinking and bringing out latent emotions, concerns and ideas. Collage-making generates the largest number of data per participant (Holbrook and Pourchier, 2014). Butler-Kisber and Poldma (2010) define collage as: "collage, taken from the French verb "coller" (to stick), is the process of using fragments of found images or materials and gluing them to a flat surface to portray phenomena". Davis and Butler-Kisber (1999) describes colleagues as "interior shapes of mental space" and identified followed; a collage is a flexible composition that is assembled gradually and additively; as each new part is included, the intuitive relationships among the various parts are ordered and re-ordered until a convincing overall pattern or schema is achieved. It had been a discussion that the colleague technique could be an alternative to the Thematic Apperception Test due to its convenience for multicultural appraisal and treatment. Collage technique had been used mostly in advertising strategies but consumer behavior was limited. Accepting experiential offering could prove companies' distinctive competition advantages and help with neuroscience techniques collages have paid more attention to the method. The collages method has some advantages like providing a combination of visual and verbal information about consumer imagery (Havlena and Holak, 1996).

MATERIALS AND METHOD

In the study, it is purposed to reach the depths of the minds of young consumers to learn about the feelings and thoughts of being a consumer during COVID-19 quarantines using the collage technique and free associations. In this way, it is also aimed to learn the feelings of young consumers regarding the epidemic and quarantine process during the period of complete closure, their perception of being a consumer during this period, and the reflections of all these on consumption. Research questions determined more specifically to achieve these objectives of the research are as follows: (i) what were the feelings and thoughts of young consumers when the epidemic occurred?; (ii) what has changed in their life as a consumer in the period of lockdown?; and (iii) what are their expectations from the future as a consumer going through this process?. An in-depth look at consumers' emotions, thoughts, and perceptions provides valuable information for many areas of marketing and consumer behavior. One of the effective ways to provide this information is to analyze the reflections and associations of the complex consumer mind with projective techniques, as demonstrated in many studies (Haire, 1950; Hussey and Duncombe, 1999; Tıgılı, 2003; Boddy, 2005; Khoo-Lattimore et al., 2009; Herz, 2010; van Schalkwyk, 2010; Swanson and Wald, 2013; Nunez, 2015, Erbaş, 2018). Studies show that such techniques tend to reach accurate data in obtaining deep knowledge, feelings and thoughts, especially in in-depth interviews or focus group

studies, and participants are often willing to participate in such studies. When the goal is to capture deep feelings and cognitions, especially in complex and uncertain situations, such projective techniques can serve as a basis for consumer research and facilitate understanding of consumer connections to products, services, and brands. For this reason, it was aimed to use projective analysis to discover the perceptions of young consumers about being a consumer, especially in an uncertain period such as an epidemic, and collage technique was used in data collection. Zaltman Metaphor Elicitation Technique (ZMET), which makes use of the power of deep metaphors to explain subconscious values, attitudes, and behaviors among projective techniques, was used in this study (Zaltman and Zaltman, 2008). This metaphor approach, which is based on the representation of a situation, concept, thought, and emotion with another connotation, is based on the expression of associations with images through visual materials (Lakoff and Johnson, 1980). In this context, young consumers were asked to visualize their experiences of being a consumer during the pandemic period with concepts that evoke them and turn this experience into a story in writing. Participants were encouraged to think within the framework of the specified research questions, and they were first asked to complete their collages. After the participants completed their collages, one-on-one interviews were conducted with them about the pictures, images, and figures they used in their collages. The interviews were deciphered and converted into a written format, and the researchers were subjected to content analysis, and cause-effect analysis was applied to the associations. Maxqda qualitative data analysis program was used to perform these analyzes. The research was carried out with 22 university students. Participants are students of Izmir Kâtip Çelebi University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences. Of the participants with an average age of 20, 13 were women and 9 were men. The convenience sampling method was used in the selection of the participants, and a sample that was easy to access representing the relevant universe was chosen, especially during the pandemic process in which complete closure occurred.

The study, which started during the lockdown, was carried out conditionally on the online meeting platform Zoom, during the closures that continued until February 2021. In the first of these meetings, participants were informed about the collage technique. The purpose of the study, expectations from the participants, concerns of the participants, information about the research process, and the responsibilities of the participants were clarified in this meeting. Afterward, the participants were expected to submit their images in digital formats such as .jpg or .ppt. Then, one-on-one interviews were conducted with each of the participants through these images. Considering the pandemic process, an online method was preferred for these one-to-one interviews. With 22 participants, 1270 minutes of recording, each lasting an average of 45 minutes, was achieved. These records were deciphered by the researchers and made ready for analysis. The data obtained from the interviews, where the interviewers were asked to transfer their images to collages through narration, were subjected to content analysis and examined by performing cause-effect analysis. At this point, Zaltman's method of revealing metaphor was used in the detection of deep cognitive and emotional states in the minds of young consumers. Maxqda qualitative data analysis program was used in analyzing the data and obtaining the findings. Some examples of the collages from the participants are given in Figure 1 when the participating young consumers were asked to depict the emotions and feelings associated with being a consumer in the full closure of the COVID-19 pandemic process, by making a collage, and to explain the reasons for choosing the images they used.

Figure 1. Examples of Participants' Collages



RESULTS AND DISCUSSION

Collage studies and expressions created to understand the feelings and thoughts of young consumers as consumers during the lockdown of the pandemic, their changing consumption habits in their lives, and their expectations as a young consumers for the future were first analyzed to understand the connotations of these research questions have created on them. Collage and narratives of the participants were first subjected to cause and effect analysis for metaphor evaluation. This method tried to understand why the participants preferred the symbols and images they used in collages. In this way, many of the reasons that make the participants think and feel the relevant images were obtained by the ladder method. In this part, based on each image in the whole collage, it was tried to learn what the underlying feelings and thoughts were, and a common pool of values was created for all participants. These values allow us to understand the magnitude, frequency, and rating of the feelings and ideas that the pandemic and total closure make young consumers feel and think. Accordingly, the common key concepts that emerge in the participants' feelings and thoughts about being a consumer in the pandemic are as follows, in order of frequency of emphasis by the participants:

Table 1. Emotions and Thoughts of the Young Consumers in the Pandemic

Positive Emotions and Thoughts	Negative Emotions and Thoughts
Awakening, Hope	Anxiety, Fear
Simplification	Captivity, Loneliness
	Uncertainty
	Laziness

As seen in Table 1, young consumers have had more negative feelings and thoughts during the pandemic. Concepts such as anxiety, fear, captivity, loneliness, uncertainty, and laziness represent the negative emotions that the participants felt intensely during the complete closure. In the study, anxiety, worry, and fear were visualized by the participants in the metaphors that emerged at the most basic level. Participants stated that they depicted their anxiety with figures and images such as drugs, pills, masks, viruses, thinking man/woman, sweat drop on the forehead, big sea waves, and a person looking out of the house. One of the female participants using the thinking human figures said *"The thinking woman figure expresses that I have concerns about my future in the process of staying at home."* (P7), while

the other participant said *“The thinking man expresses my tense and thoughtful waiting and waiting with curiosity and anxiety about what will happen in the future.”* (P16). The most intense negative emotions that followed anxiety and fears were captivity and loneliness. Participants stated that they often painted these feelings with images of iron bars, prisons, islands, traps, houses, aquariums, and cages. Participants also expressed that their feelings of uncertainty and laziness were intense during the pandemic with the images they added to their collages. One of the participants, who associated their feelings of laziness with hammocks, said, *“Spending time sitting in the hammock reminds me of the lazy times we spent lying at home during quarantine days.”* (P21). Participants who experienced intensive feelings of uncertainty mostly expressed this feeling by associating it with depression, fear, and fright when explaining the images they used. When we examine the expressions that emphasize the feeling of captivity, one of the participants expressing the feeling of captivity with iron bars said, *“With online shopping, the food we buy to meet our basic needs is brought to our door and this situation makes me feel as if I was in prison, I was desperate and just living as a prisoner by taking only the food I need.”* (P18). Another participant emphasizing the feeling of being in prison explained this feeling with the metaphor of an aquarium. This participant, who said that he felt like a fish in an aquarium, explained his sense of captivity by using the expression *“Who knows, maybe the fish we feed in the aquarium also felt like people who had to spend their time at home right now all over the world.”* (P13).

In addition to all these negative emotions, many participants also felt the need to visualize the positive feelings and thoughts that this quarantine and complete closure process experienced at the beginning of the pandemic. In this context, the participants stated that this experience, which they usually experience with negative emotions, feeds positive feelings such as hope and simplification in them and is an awakening process for themselves and the world. Some of the participants used visuals such as sun and sunrise and stated that these images made them feel awakening and hope. A participant who made use of the sunrise image from these participants stated that the sunrise feeds positive emotions in her and said: *“The reason I prefer to use the sun image rising between the mountains in my collage is that I consider these quarantine days as a period of awakening and I think that it is the harbinger of a new beginning, the age.”* (P4). A participant who imagines the freedom she will experience at the end of this whole process with a kite figure expresses the positive emotions and thoughts she feels beside her negative emotions, saying, *“I think that every bad thing gives birth to something good. The important thing is to face today and accept the present. As this awakening reminds me of the hope brought by a kite flying in the sky, I finally added it to my collage.”* (P14). Feeling the hope and happiness of participating in artistic activities such as concerts as one of the online socialization tools, another participant with a similar feeling imagined it with the picture of a woman playing guitar and narrated it with the following words: *“The visual of a woman playing guitar tells us that being at home is not an obstacle to socializing and that I can reach the same pleasure in that atmosphere with mini-concerts in various ways via social media.”* (P3). Among the positive feelings and thoughts of the participants, many expressions contain references to positive young consumer attitudes regarding the awakening of nature. For example, the participant using the flying bird image also included a fruit-bearing tree image in his collage. When asked why he used this imagery, the participant gave the following statements: *“The reason I put the fruit tree image is that we see nature cleansed now. Even though staying at home is bad for us, I am very happy with the benefits it has for nature.”* (P11). A participant who emphasized awakening described it as an awakening for both nature and her personal development. In this participant’s collage, while referring to the awakening of nature using palm trees, she narrated it as *“the happiness I feel because of staying at home and being a part of the process in allowing the polluted nature to breathe a little”* (P3). One of the participants explained the idea of awakening by identifying

it with simplification in consumption and visualized these concepts with the eye symbol. This participant expresses what the eye symbol makes him think: *“I used the eye symbol because I see this quarantine process as a period of awakening. The world has begun to simplify in every aspect and this is manifested in consumption.”* (P17). One participant who thinks that the unconscious consumption behavior created by stockpiling at the beginning of the pandemic process has transformed positively with the development of online shopping opportunities interprets this as a need for simplification in consumption and makes the following statements: *“I think it is very sad as a young person to stay at home and only consume in these days when we are going through difficult times. During the quarantine, we saw that the value of many products that we do not use increased a lot. We have understood the importance of being a conscious consumer and doing our shopping by thinking of other people on these bad days. We’ve learned that it’s very wrong and selfish to stock up on the house or pretend you can’t find anything. We now know that we all need things in common. We have learned that when everyone gets what they need, we will lighten the burden of both the producer and the dozens of people working for us.”* (P11).

In the study, the participants were also asked about the transformation in their consumption habits, as well as their feelings as young consumers, their thoughts and expectations regarding the future consumption process. The visuals and metaphors they included in their collages were analyzed by subjecting them to cause-effect analysis to understand the deep meanings underlying them, and the findings in the table below were reached:

Table 2. Associations Regarding the Transformation in the Consumption Habits of the Participants

Conversion in Consumption Structure	Online Shopping
	Socializing Online
Expended Products and Services	Digital Platform Services
	Health and Wellness Products and Services
	Hygiene and Cleaning Products
	Food Products
	Clothing Products
	Hobby and Leisure Products
Transformation of Consumption Concerns	Stock and Consumption Frenzy
	Savings and Simplification

As can be seen from Table 2, the period of complete closure during the pandemic process has been a period in which consumers tend to shop more due to curfew restrictions. For example, a participant said, *“In this process, we are in, I generally prefer to do my shopping or other needs over the internet.”* (P5), another participant stated that she expressed this process with computer visuals and said: *“The computer tells me that I was doing online shopping in this period and online shopping was very popular and reliable. She expresses that I love online shopping because of this reliability.”* (P15). Many participants who previously shopped from marketplaces and e-commerce sites on the internet stated that they used and preferred these online channels more than before. Some of them even included the names/brands of some applications and websites they use frequently in their collages. One of these participants included the logo of an application he used in his collage and said, *“I was already a person who liked to spend time at home and preferred online shopping. However, this application is a shopping application that I use more than usual and is now an indispensable application for the house.”* (P21). Another finding that supports this online socialization transformation in consumption is that the participants stated that digital platforms took the most place in the expenditure items. For most of the participants, it was determined that the expenditures made

on some products and services in consumption items increased more. Among these, the participants included images that express that they consume digital platforms the most in their collages. One participant stated the reason why he used it in his collage, where he prepared a visual of many online shopping applications: *"The reason why the application is mixed here is that we now spend our lives by communicating through applications, not physically socializing, and that we use these digital platforms the most in this process."* (P13). Among the digital platforms, some young consumers also stated that they consume digital games the most. One of the participants said the following while narrating this situation: *"While passing time, I have my most enjoyable moments while playing games. I play games and watch TV series from 12 a.m. to 4 p.m."* (P10), another, by including the game console image in his collage, expressed the reason for using this image as follows: *"Since I was very bored at home and staying away from communication with people, I turned to buy games that I could play with my friends."* (P16). Participants expressing in their visuals that food expenditures are the main item in consumption expenditures are also quite high. One of the participants expresses this situation by using the food basket visual as follows: *"The biggest problem these days, when we are locked up at home and isolated ourselves, is consumption. In particular, we shop online or have to go to the supermarket to complement our food shortages."* (P4). However, the participants who experience new learning processes for hobby and leisure activities and add a new class to their expenditure items are also at a considerable level. Some of the participants, who stated that sports, well-being, and health expenses frequently increased during this period, stated that they included yoga, meditation, and similar routines in their lives and that these were reflected in the expenditure items in the products and services they purchased. One participant described this situation as follows: *"I was going to the gym before the pandemic, but since I stopped leaving the house, I bought a dumbbell set online and I continue to do sports from home as a member of a paid home fitness program."* (P11). In addition, many participants included many product images such as masks, cologne, disinfectants, and medicines in their collages and stated that their expenditures for these products increased. Many consumers stated that this process was quite instructive for the consumer, even though there were transformations and increases in the items and services on which they are spent, and included images that visualize this situation in their collage. One of the participants stated the following, referring to the positive images she used: *"I am aware of the consumption process in this quarantine process (vitamins, hygiene products, masks, medicines, hobby products, and etc.) but this quarantine process reminded me of simplification and made my collage in line with this feeling."* (P2). In addition to many participants who emphasized the importance of conscious consumption and simplification in consumption, expenditures increased and this process turned into a consumption frenzy for them. While one of the participants reflected on this situation on her collage with discount symbols, she explained the reason for using this image as follows: *"I already had a disease of shopping unnecessarily and I frequently shop for clothing because I constantly see discount pages on social media during this boring period. Red and percent-numeric signs became the center of attention completely, so I wanted to use this image."* (P3). Another participant described this need for stocking in his collage, emphasizing the stocking situation, with the following statements: *"During this quarantine period, consumers started to stockpile cleaning materials and food as if they could never reach them again."* (P9).

When the collages of the participants were evaluated within the scope of the ZMET analysis, which deals with the effect of deep metaphors in the marketing industry put forward by Zaltman and Zaltman (2008), it was determined that young consumers felt four basic deep metaphors in the full closure process. The deep metaphors obtained by accessing the subconscious of young consumers participating in the research with ZMET are given in Table 3.

Table 3. Young Consumers' Deep Metaphors for Total Shutdown

Deep Metaphors
Container
Transformation/Change
Resource
Control

According to Zaltman and Zaltman (2008), there are seven deep metaphors: balance, journey, transformation/change, container, connection, resource, and control. When the collages of the participants were analyzed through the use of ZMET, it was found that young consumers had four deep metaphors regarding the full closure process, as given in Table 3. Collage comments with the content of “you are in control” or “you can control your life”, which reduce the feeling of losing control of the participants, reveal the wishes and feelings of the subject of control in the consumer’s subconscious. This metaphor is supported by the transformation that already exists in people, that is, the transformation into a good state. While conveying their collages, the participants often emphasized that this process expresses a social, environmental, and vital transformation and change. Participants also frequently emphasized the container metaphor. Rather than the restrictive feature of being at home and in quarantine during the full closure process, the participants expressed this process as a period of protecting themselves from external negativities. The participants, who stated that they understood the importance of having resources that will provide spiritual satisfaction and happiness as well as the basic things that help to survive as a source of life, often referred to the deep metaphor of resources in their collages. When evaluated based on the ZMET analysis, it can be mentioned that there is a process and completion in the metaphor theme of young consumers participating in the study. During the full closure process experienced in the COVID-19 pandemic, the participants hope to regain control and reach the desired transformation, namely the new normal life, thanks to the protective effect of the material and moral resources they have and the environment and conditions they are in. In this context, the process followed by the participants in the transformation of metaphors can be explained in the following order: resources, container, control, and transformation/change.

CONCLUSION

In the event of negative experiences such as COVID-19, societies need to remain in physical and mental well-being. Therefore, analyzing the inner worlds of individuals and helping them is an important step to be taken for recovery. It is very useful to determine the reflection of the experiences of the young generations and consumers, who have high future concerns, in their current and possible future well-being and the transformations in their behaviors. In this study, it was examined how the inner worlds and emotions of young individuals reflected on their behavior as consumers during the COVID-19 period. According to the findings, the common key concepts that emerge in the participants’ feelings and thoughts in the pandemic are more negative emotions like anxiety, fear, captivity, loneliness, uncertainty, and laziness. In addition to all these negative emotions, many participants mentioned positive feelings and thoughts like an awakening, hope, and simplification. However, most positive emotions and expectations are related to the post-pandemic period, which represents a kind of new beginning. Simplifying life and awakening about nature is a reflection of the awareness about the damage done to the world, which has become evident with the pandemic. Considering the habits of consumers in this period, the most obvious behavior is online purchases in terms of both frequency and quantity. At the same time, priorities in shopping have changed, and health and hygiene products have taken an important place. In addition, the use of social media has increased both in terms of consumption (receiving various online services,

entertainment, hobbies, education, etc.) and socialization. A connection with the world has begun to be established through social media. The deep metaphors reached as a result of ZMET analysis in the study are as follows: container, transformation/change, resource, and control. The state of closure and inability to do anything, which is frequently expressed and visualized by the participants, expressed the metaphor of the container. The house, which is frequently emphasized by the participants, served as a container that both protects and restricts people. The metaphor of transformation/change, on the other hand, expresses the new and beautiful beginnings that the participants hope to reach after the pandemic experience, which includes the negative situations and experiences they experienced in total closure. The deep metaphor of resource expresses people's re-perceiving the resources of life and discovering material and spiritual resources through the pandemic. Control, another metaphor identified in the findings, expresses that people have lost their balance with the full shutdown and pandemic process, and this creates negative feelings on young consumers.

REFERENCES

- Boddy, C. R. (2005). Projective Techniques in Market Research: Valueless Subjectivity or Insightful Reality? A Look at the Evidence for the Usefulness, Reliability and Validity of Projective Techniques in Market Research. *International Journal of Market Research*, 47(3): 239-254.
- Butler-Kisber, L. and Poldma, T. (2010). The power of visual approaches in qualitative inquiry: the use of collage making and concept mapping in experiential research. *Journal of Research Practice*, 6(2).
- Cody, K. (2015). Hearing muted voices: the crystallization approach to critical and reflexive child-centric consumer research. *Young Consumers*, 16(3): 281-300.
- Costa, A. I. A.; Schoolmeester, D.; Dekker, M. and Jongen, W. M. F. (2003). Exploring the use of consumer collages in product design. *Trends in Food Science and Technology*, 14(1-2): 17-31.
- Davis, D. and Butler-Kisber, L. (1999). Arts-based representation in qualitative research: collage as a contextualizing analytic strategy. Paper presented at annual meeting of American Educational Research Association. Montreal, April 19–23.
- Erbaş, S. (2018). Tüketici Marka Bilgisi: Hikaye Anlatıcılığı ve Kolaj Tekniği Üzerine Bir Araştırma - Consumer Brand Knowledge: A Research On Storytelling and Collage Technique. *Elektronik Sosyal Bilimler Dergisi*, 17(67): 1077-1091.
- Haire, M. (1950). Projective Techniques in Marketing Research. *Journal of Marketing*, 14(5): 649-656.
- Hamrouni, A. and Touzi, M. (2011). Technique of collage for store design atmospherics. *Qualitative Market Research: An International Journal*, 14: 304-323.
- Havlena, W. J. and Holak, S. L. (1996). Exploring Nostalgia Imagery Through the Use of Consumer Collages. In *NA - Advances in Consumer Research Volume 23*, eds. Kim P. Corfman and John G. Lynch Jr., Provo, UT : Association for Consumer Research, Pages: 35-42.
- Herz, M. F. (2010). Exploring Consumers' Brand Image Perceptions with Collages—Implications on Data Collection, Data Analysis and Mixed Method Approaches. In *Aktuelle Beiträge Zur Markenforschung. Tagungsband Des 3. Internationalen Markentags*, Mayerhofer, Wolfgang , and Secka, Marion , eds. Wiesbaden, Germany: Gabler, 121-144.

- Holbrook, T. and Pourchier, N. (2014). Collage as Analysis: Remixing in the Crisis of Doubt. *Qualitative Inquiry*, 20: 754-763.
- Hussey, M. and Duncombe, N. (1999). Projecting the right image: using projective techniques to measure brand image, *Qualitative Market Research*, 2(1): 22-30.
- Khoo-Lattimore, C.; Thyne, M. and Robertson, K. (2009). The ZMET Method: Using Projective Technique to Uncover Hedonic Factors Underlying Consumer Home Choice. *The Marketing Review*, 9 (2): 139-154.
- Lakoff, G. and Johnson, M. (1980). *Metaphors We Live By*. University of Chicago Press, USA.
- Li, S.; Wang, Y.; Xue, J.; Zhao, N. and Zhu, T. (2020). The Impact of COVID-19 Epidemic Declaration on Psychological Consequences: A Study on Active Weibo Users. *International Journal of Environmental Research and Public Health*, 17(6): 2032.
- Mortensen, C. R.; Becker, D. V.; Ackerman, J. M.; Neuberg, S. L. and Kenrick, D. T. (2010). Infection breeds reticence: the effects of disease salience on self-perceptions of personality and behavioral avoidance tendencies. *Psychological Science*, 21(3): 440-447.
- Nunez, K. (2015). Projective Techniques in Qualitative Market Research. American Marketing Association San Diego (Online). Available at: <https://sdama.org/knowledge/projective-techniques-qualitative-market-research/> (Accessed December 13, 2020).
- Saunders, S. G. (2009). Scenario planning: a collage construction approach. *Foresight*, 11(2): 19-28.
- Schaller, M. (2011). The behavioural immune system and the psychology of human sociality. *Philosophical Transactions of The Royal Society B Biological Sciences*, 366: 3418-3426.
- Schaller, M. and Duncan, L. A. (2007). The behavioral immune system: Its evolution and social psychological implications. In Forgas, J. P.; Haselton, M. G. and von Hippel, W. (Eds.), *Evolution and the social mind: Evolutionary psychology and social cognitions*, Routledge/Taylor & Francis Group, Psychology Press, New York: 293-307.
- Schaller, M. and Park, J. H. (2011). The Behavioral Immune System (and Why It Matters). *Current Directions in Psychological Science*, 20(2): 99-103.
- Swanson, S. R. and Wald, K. A. (2013). A Picture is Worth a 1,000 Words: Using Collage to Explore Students Beliefs and Feelings about Marketing. *Marketing Education Review*, 23(1): 11-16.
- Tıǧlı, M. (2003). Kalitatif bir pazarlama araştırması yöntemi: ZMET (Zaltman metafor çıkarım tekniği). *İletişim Fakültesi Dergisi*, 0(17): 297-305.
- Van Schalkwyk, G. J. (2010). Collage Life Story Elicitation Technique: A Representational Technique for Scaffolding Autobiographical Memories. *The Qualitative Report*, 15(3): 675-695.
- Wang, C.; Pan, R.; Wan, X.; Tan, Y.; Xu, L.; Ho, C. S.; Ho, R. C. (2020). Immediate psychological responses and associated factors during the initial stage of the 2019 coronavirus disease (COVID-19) epidemic among the general population in China. *International Journal of Environmental Research and Public Health*, 17(5): 1729.
- Zaltman, G. and Zaltman, L. (2008). *Marketing Metaphoria: What Deep Methapors Reveal About The Mids of Consumers*. Boston, MA: Harvard Business School Press.

THE ROLE OF PHANTASY IN THE EFFECT OF EMOTIONS ON RISKY INVESTMENT INTENTION

Selim Aren¹, Hatice Nayman Hamamcı²

¹Yildiz Technical University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Department of Business, Istanbul, Turkey.

²Yildiz Technical University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Department of Business, Istanbul, Turkey.

ABSTRACT

In this study, the mediating role of phantasy in the effect of emotions on risky investment intentions was investigated. In this context, seven emotions, which are anxiety, fear, hope, happiness, anger, excitement and sadness, were discussed. The data were collected using an online questionnaire with a convenience sampling method between May 2020 and January 2021, and a total of 1193 questionnaires were obtained. The data were analyzed using SPSS and AMOS software. According to the results of the analysis, it was determined that the emotions of anxiety, happiness, anger and excitement positively affect risky investment intention. On the other hand, it was observed that the emotion of sadness negatively affects the risky investment intention. We found that the emotions of fear and hope did not affect risky investment intention. According to the results of the mediating effect of phantasy, it was found that there was partial mediation in the emotions of anxiety, sadness and excitement, and full mediation in fear. In addition, according to the indirect effect scores, the mediation effect on other emotions, except fear, was statistically significant. Finally, it was found that phantasy has a positive and statistically significant effect on risky investment intentions.

Keywords: phantasy, emotions, risky investment intention, decision making.

1. INTRODUCTION

Although it has been thought that emotions should be avoided in the decision-making process for many years, emotions are related to the cognitive system in the decision-making process (Emmerling and Cherniss, 2003; Fessler et al., 2004). Raghunathan and Pham (1999) also stated that many important decisions are made in situations where there is emotional intensity. In other words, approaches that ignore the emotions and feelings of investors are incomplete (Aren and Hamamcı, 2021).

Although neoclassical finance ignores emotions in financial decision-making processes because it is incompatible with rationality, emotions are real and affect many decisions, including financial decisions. This effect does not always have to be negative, awareness is created in response to the emotions of the individual, and if this awareness is combined with information, it can also have positive effects on decisions (Aren and Hamamcı, 2020). The investment process involves uncertainty, and uncertainty brings about a variety of emotions, such as fear, anxiety, hope, and pleasure. If individuals' emotions of fear and anxiety increase, they avoid investing, while on the contrary, they prefer to invest if their emotions of hope and pleasure outweigh (Aren and Hamamcı, 2021). Also, Kugler et al. (2012) state that emotions can be affected by risky decisions and can also affect them. The authors tested emotions, risk and decision-making through various experiments and stated that emotions are effective in risk-taking. In addition, Lee and Andrade (2015) state that the relationship between emotions and risk has a complex structure.

On the other hand, emotional finance draws attention to the importance of unconscious processes (Taffler, 2018). In this direction, researching the effect of phantasy, which is an unconscious process, on decisions has gained importance in recent years (Aren and Hamamcı, 2021b). This is because the factors affecting the decision processes are not only conscious states. Phantasy refers to the unconscious beliefs and desires of individuals. At the same time, phantasy is a reality specially created by the mind, unlike shared reality (Jimenez, 2016). Investors will be excited about a new financial asset in the market with the effect of phantasy and will want to own the related asset or, on the contrary, they will fear and avoid taking the asset. In both cases, there is an unconscious event that affects the investment intentions and decision-making processes of individuals.

This study aimed to investigate the effect of emotions on risky investment intention and whether phantasy has a mediating effect on this relationship. In this context, emotions and phantasy were explained in the literature review, which is the second part of the research, and the relationships between these variables and risk were revealed. In the third part, the methodology is included and the data set of the research, the research model and the scales used were mentioned. In the fourth part, the research model was analyzed and in the conclusion, the findings were evaluated.

2. LITERATURE REVIEW

2.1. Emotions

Emotion is an individual's feelings about external stimuli, contains physical and psychological elements and affects judgment and behavior (Aren and Hamamcı, 2020). Barford (2017) states that emotions create a set of reactions in response to certain situations. Emotions are evaluated as positive and negative, and their effects on risk differ. They can affect the decision-making processes of individuals both separately and by combining several emotions (Li, 2011).

Ekman and Friesen (1986) mentioned six basic emotions: happiness, sadness, anger, fear, disgust, and surprise. Aren and Akgüneş (2018, 2018b) focused on four basic emotions happiness, sadness, anger and fear in their work. In this context, seven different emotions anxiety, fear, hope, happiness, sadness, anger and excitement, were discussed in this study.

Anxiety: Anxiety is an emotion defined by high arousal, low control and uncertainty (Raghunathan and Pham, 1999). It appears as an emotional response to tense and worrisome thoughts and leads to conservative behaviors (Wilt et al., 2011). This emotion negatively affects self-confidence and triggers risk aversion (Raghunathan and Pham, 1999; Tiedens and Linton, 2001; Han et al., 2007; Lee and Andrade, 2011). Anxious individuals focus on the negative consequences of future events and believe that these consequences are more likely to occur (Lerner and Keltner, 2001). Although anxiety is disturbing, it has positive effects on behavior (Brooks, 2014). It warns individuals against imminent threats to their environment and thus serves an important survival function (Kouchaki and Desai, 2015).

Fear: This is the reaction of individuals to the dangers that develop with their past experiences and has both physical and emotional dimensions (Aren and Akgüneş, 2018b). In other words, in order for fear to be experienced, it must be experienced or known as knowledge (Aren and Hamamcı, 2020). In addition, Lerner and Keltner (2001) state that fear stems from uncertainty. The individual fears uncertainty if he or she has suffered damage in the past as a result of uncertainty or knows that uncertainty causes harm. Considering the relationship between fear and risk, many studies in the literature have found that risk appetite and fear are inversely related (Lerner and Keltner, 2001; Fessler et al., 2004; Crisan et al.,

2009; Kuhnen and Knutson, 2011; Habib and Cassotti, 2015). In contrast, Bagneux et al. (2012) stated that it increases risk appetite. Kugler et al. (2012) also stated that individuals with an emotion of fear in lottery-based choices are more risk averse than those who are angry. In addition, Foo (2011) stated that individuals who experience fear and hope are more prone to perceiving risk. At the same time, the author stated that individuals experiencing fear perceive high uncertainty about outcomes and their individual control becomes limited.

Hope: This can be defined as the positive beliefs about an outcome that individuals wish to have in the future (Aren and Akgüneş, 2018b). The main factor that creates an emotion of hope is the best result (Hayenhjelm, 2006). Reimann et al. (2014) stated that individuals can experience fear and hope together. Aren and Hamamcı (2020) also stated that the best example of this situation is financial assets and that investors can have these two emotions together when buying financial assets. Looking at the relationship between hope and risk, Aren and Akgüneş (2018) did not find a relationship between risky investment intention and hope.

Anger: The negative emotion felt towards an individual who knowingly and willingly commits a mistake is defined as anger, and unlike sadness and fear, it is the emotion against the person who caused the relevant result, not the result (Aren and Hamamcı, 2020). For this emotion to occur, the event must occur, and for this reason, Aren and Akgüneş (2018) and Foo (2011) emphasize that it is related to certainty. Considering its relationship with risk, it was observed that anger increases the risk appetite (Lerner and Keltner, 2001; Gasper and Clore, 2002; Maner and Gerend, 2007; Angie et al., 2011; Habib and Cassotti, 2015; Szasz et al., 2016). Similarly, Kugler et al. (2012) stated that when there is an increase in anger, individuals are less risk averse. Foo (2011) also stated that these individuals are prone to perceive the risk as less. In addition, while men make more risky decisions when they are angry, women's risky investment intentions do not differ according to anger (Fessler et al., 2004).

Sadness: This is a painful emotion that individuals experience in their normal life routines. What a person feels when they lose something that their value is defined as painful. Sadness can be associated with overestimating the consequences of negative situations and having full knowledge of losses (Dijk, 2017). For investors, losing money is an event that is painful and therefore causes an emotion of sadness (Aren and Hamamcı, 2020). Results regarding the relationship between sadness and risk differ (Campoz-Vaquez and Cuilty, 2014). While Li (2011) and Murgea (2016) stated that sadness causes risk aversion, Raghunathan and Pham (1999) stated that it increases risk appetite. Campoz-Vaquez and Cuilty (2014) also found that sad people avoid risk in a gain environment, but on the contrary, they want more risk than normal in a loss environment.

Happiness: Happiness expresses the state of emotional well-being and is characterized by the reactions of joy, contentment and satisfaction (Kalvans, 2012). Diener (1984) based happiness on three elements: subjectivity, positive measurements, and qualifications and measures covering all aspects of an individual's life. Myers and Diener (1995), on the other hand, stated that the emotion of happiness has three interrelated but independent dimensions: the relative presence of positive emotion, the absence of negative emotion, and life satisfaction. Of these, while positive and negative emotions are emotional components, life satisfaction is the cognitive component.

Excitement: This is a positive and pleasant emotion that can increase the performance of individuals (Jamieson et al., 2010). It is characterized by optimism and positive evaluations (McConnell, 1993). Excited individuals focus on the positive results of future events and believe that they can achieve positive results (Jamieson et al., 2010; Brown and Curhan,

2013). Lee and Andreda (2015) also state that high physiological arousal is a basic emotional component of excitement.

2.2. Phantasy

Phantasy is a concept that is among the basic concepts of emotional finance literature and is frequently used in publications (Aren and Hamamcı, 2021). Phantasy is defined as unconscious desires and beliefs (Taffler and Tuckett, 2010; Raines and Leather, 2011) and is often used to express unconscious dreams (Aren and Hamamcı, 2021). In other words, the power of phantasy stems from its unconsciousness (Taffler, 2018). At the same time, phantasy appears to be a defense mechanism. Due to this feature, it also leads to the emergence of various biases in the behavioral finance literature. Phantasies, on the one hand, give the person the feeling that s/he has done and thought about things that s/he did not think or did in the past (hindsight); on the other hand, it also gives the ability to control events (illusion of control) and a sense of self-overconfidence (Aren and Hamamcı, 2021).

Decision processes are affected by both conscious and unconscious situations (Turnbull and Solms, 2007; Bargh and Morsella, 2008). In this direction, phantasy, as an unconscious process, affects both behaviors and preferences even if the individual is not aware of it (Taffler, 2014). When investors encounter a new financial instrument, they either get scared or get excited and want to buy the related asset (Aren and Hamamcı, 2021). In this context, phantasy and phantastic objects play an important role in understanding decision-making processes (Tuckett and Taffler, 2008). The phantastic object is the mental representation of phantasy and fully meets an individual's wishes and desires (Raines and Leather, 2011; Taffler, 2014). In fact, all assets in financial markets have the potential to be phantastic objects (Taffler, 2018). An asset with this quality increases the emotion of excitement as it makes welfare easier (Raines and Leather, 2011). When the anxiety of missing the opportunity is added to the excitement felt, the investor's desire to own the asset as soon as possible occurs, and the environment is created for phantasy in the market (Taffler, 2014; Taffler et al., 2017). Ultimately, phantasy and phantastic objects cause investors to pursue pleasure and increase risky investment intention (Eshraghi and Taffler, 2014; Aren and Hamamcı, 2021).

3. METHODOLOGY

3.1. Research Aim

The aim of this study was to examine the effects of anxiety, fear, hope, excitement, happiness, anger and sadness on risky investment intention and whether phantasy has a mediating effect in the relationship between these variables. In this way, the effect of unconscious phantasy on decision-making processes was revealed.

3.2. Data Set

The data were collected online between May 2020 and January 2021 using the convenience sampling method. In total 1193 questionnaires were obtained. The survey participants answered all the questions completely. Four demographic questions were asked in the survey age, gender, educational status and marital status.

Considering the demographic structures of the participants, 47.8% were men and 52.2% were women. While 78.3% were in the 20-30 age group, 13.7% were 31-40, 4.4% were 41-50 and

3.5% were in the 51+ age group. Similarly, 62.5% of the participants had an undergraduate degree, 24.6% were high school, 11.2% were masters/PhDs and 1.7% were primary/secondary schools. Finally, 80% of the participants were single and 20% were married. In other words, the majority of the participants were single individuals in the 20-30 age group with a bachelor's degree. In terms of gender, there was almost equal distribution.

Table 1. Demographic Factors

		N	Percent
Age	20 – 30	934	78,3
	31 – 40	164	13,7
	41 – 50	53	4,4
	51 +	42	3,5
Gender	Male	570	47,8
	Female	623	52,2
Education	Primary School	20	1,7
	High School	293	24,6
	Undergraduates	746	62,5
	Masters/Doctorate	134	11,2
Status	Single	954	80,0
	Married	239	20,0

3.3. Variables and Research Model

In addition to four demographic variables, nine other variables- anxiety, fear, hope, happiness, anger, sadness, phantasy, and risky investment intention- were used in the study. The scale information and the number of items regarding the variables are shown in Table 2.

Table 2. Variables and Scales Used in the Study

Variables	Items	Scales
Anxiety	7	Grable, Heo and Rabbani (2014)
Fear	5	Aren ve Akgüneş (2018)
Hope	4	Aren ve Akgüneş (2018)
Happiness	6	Joseph et al. (2004)
Anger	5	Aren ve Akgüneş (2018)
Sadness	3	Aren ve Akgüneş (2018)
Excitement	5	Chanaka ve Wright (2009)
Phantasy	6	Aren ve Hamamcı (2021)
Risky Investment Intention	4	Aydemir ve Aren (2017)

The model developed in accordance with the purpose of the research is shown in Figure 1.

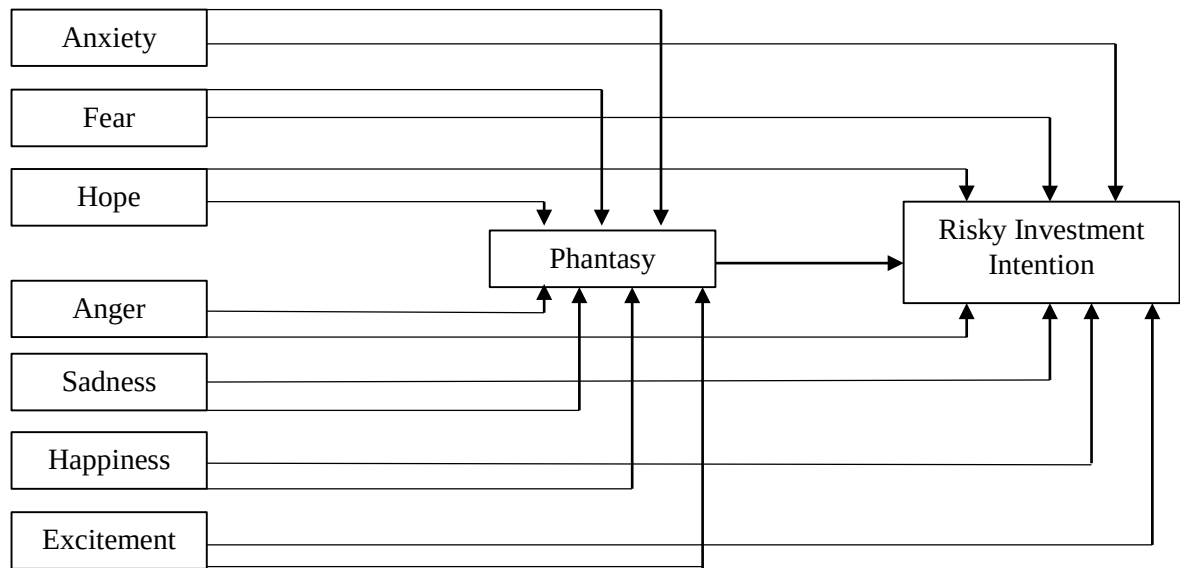


Figure 1. Research Model

4. ANALYSIS

Structural equation modeling (SEM) was used to test the research model and analyses were performed using the AMOS 24 program. The goodness-of-fits results obtained for the research model are presented in Table 3. Then, analyses regarding the mediation effect were made and are reported in Table 4.

Table 3. Goodness of Fit Indices

CMIN/DF	RMSEA	GFI	IFI	CFI	TLI	NFI	RFI
3,063	0,042	0,900	0,953	0,953	0,948	0,932	0,925

According to Table 3, all index values obtained for the model were found to be in accordance with the threshold values accepted in the literature (Yaşlıoğlu, 2017). In other words, all of these values show that the research model is appropriate and statistically significant.

Table 4. Mediating Effect of Phantasy on the Effect of Emotions on Risky Investment Intention

Line	Relationships	β	S.E.
1	Anxiety → Phantasy	0,102*	0,018
2	Anxiety → Risky Investment Intention	0,148***	0,024
3	Phantasy → Risky Investment Intention	0,396***	0,052
4	Indirect Effect	0,012 (0,010 – 0,055)	
5	Fear → Phantasy	0,067**	0,021
6	Fear → Risky Investment Intention	0,033	0,028
7	Phantasy → Risky Investment Intention	0,396***	0,052
8	Indirect Effect	0,014 ((-0,003) – 0,052)	
9	Hope → Phantasy	0,006	0,047
10	Hope → Risky Investment Intention	0,073	0,067
11	Phantasy → Risky Investment Intention	0,396***	0,052
12	Indirect Effect	0,030 ((-0,056) – 0,063)	

13	Happiness → Phantasy	0,081	0,047
14	Happiness → Risky Investment Intention	0,112*	0,064
15	Phantasy → Risky Investment Intention	0,396***	0,052
16	Indirect Effect	0,029 ((-0,011) – 0,102)	
17	Anger → Phantasy	0,038	0,029
18	Anger → Risky Investment Intention	0,047**	0,040
19	Phantasy → Risky Investment Intention	0,396***	0,052
20	Indirect Effect	0,019 ((-0,017) – 0,060)	
21	Sadness → Phantasy	-0,136***	0,025
22	Sadness → Risky Investment Intention	-0,196***	0,035
23	Phantasy → Risky Investment Intention	0,396***	0,052
24	Indirect Effect	0,017 ((-0,091) – (-0,024))	
25	Excitement → Phantasy	0,421***	0,024
26	Excitement → Risky Investment Intention	0,173***	0,031
27	Phantasy → Risky Investment Intention	0,396***	0,052
28	Indirect Effect	0,020 (0,131 – 0,210)	
* $<0,05$; ** $<0,10$; *** $<0,001$; (Not: β = Standardized regression estimation values were taken into account; 5000 Bootstrap sample; %95 confidence interval)			

In Table 4, the results regarding the mediating effect of phantasy on the effect of emotions on risky investment intention were reported. According to the table, the effect of emotions on phantasy is shown in lines 1-5-9-13-17-21-25, and it is seen that the emotions of anxiety, fear, sadness and excitement affect phantasy in a statistically significant manner. In this way, it has been shown that these emotions trigger phantasy.

When lines 2-6-10-14-18-22-26 are examined, it is seen that the relationship between emotions of anxiety, happiness, anger, sadness, excitement, and risky investment intention is statistically significant. While sadness negatively affects risky investment intention, others affect them positively. Contrary to the literature, it was found that fear has no effect on risky investment intentions.

The bootstrapping technique was used to determine the mediating effect of phantasy, and the analyses were performed using the AMOS 24 program. As a result, the indirect effect between anxiety and risky investment intention was found to be 0.012 and the 95% confidence interval was 0.010-0.055; since this interval did not include 0, the indirect effect between these variables was found to be statistically significant. The indirect effect between fear and risky investment intention was determined as 0.014 and 95% confidence interval (-0.003) - 0.052, and since this interval includes 0, the indirect effect between these variables was not statistically significant. The indirect effect between hope and risky investment intention was determined as 0.030 and 95% confidence interval (-0.056) - 0.063, and since this interval includes 0, the indirect effect between these variables was not statistically significant. The indirect effect between happiness and risky investment intention was determined as 0.029 and 95% confidence interval (-0.011) - 0.102, and since this interval includes 0, the indirect effect between these variables is not statistically significant. The indirect effect between anger and risky investment intention was determined as 0.019 and 95% confidence interval (-0.017) - 0.060, and since this interval includes 0, the indirect effect between these variables is not statistically significant. The indirect effect between sadness and

risky investment intention was determined as 0.017 and 95% confidence interval (-0.091) – (-0.024), and the indirect effect between these variables was statistically significant since this interval did not include a value of 0. The indirect effect between excitement and risky investment intention was found to be 0.020, and the 95% confidence interval was 0.131 - 0.210, and since this interval did not include 0, the indirect effect between these variables was found to be statistically significant. In summary, the mediating effect of phantasy on the emotions of anxiety, sadness and excitement was significant.

5. CONCLUSION

In the study, the relationship between the emotions of individuals and their risky investment intentions and whether phantasy has an effect on this relationship was investigated. Within the scope of the research, the emotions of anxiety, fear, anger, happiness, excitement, hope and sadness, which are among the basic emotions, were preferred.

According to the results of this research, a total of 1193 people participated in the study. The majority of participants were young, single and undergraduate graduates. In terms of gender, there was almost equal distribution. According to the research model, the mediating effect of phantasy on seven emotions was tested and reported as shown in Table 4. According to the results of the analysis, it was determined that there is partial mediation in the emotions of anxiety, sadness and excitement, and full mediation in the emotion of fear. However, no mediator effect was found for the other emotions. Considering the indirect effect scores of the mediation effects found, the mediating effect of phantasy on the effects of anxiety, sadness, and excitement on risky investment intention was also found to be statistically significant. Despite this, the mediating effect of phantasy on the effect of fear on risky investment intention was not statistically significant. In addition, it was found that the emotions of anxiety, happiness, anger and excitement positively affect the risky investment intention. This means that when the effect of these emotions on investors increases, the tendency toward risky investments increases. On the contrary, sadness negatively affects risky investment intentions. In other words, when the level of investors' sadness increases, their risky investment intentions decrease. It was determined that the emotions of fear and hope had no effect on risky investment intentions. In addition, it was found that phantasy positively and statistically affected the risky investment intention.

According to these findings, it is clear that emotions affect investor decisions. In other words, contrary to the rationality claimed by neoclassical finance, investors are under the influence of both emotions and phantasy, which is an unconscious process. It is important for investors to be aware of these emotional processes and develop their emotional skills in order to make their decision-making processes more effective. We think that it will make an important contribution to the literature by considering more than one emotion in the study and incorporating phantasy into the model and revealing a holistic result. In addition, the large sample size and the fact that this sample is young and highly educated show that these people are willing to invest and have the potential to follow innovations. In future studies, it would be useful to explain similar situations by preferring different emotional finance variables such as herd behavior and narratives as mediating variables.

REFERENCES

1. Angie AD, Connelly S, Waples EP, Kligyte V 2011. The Influence Of Discrete Emotions On Judgment And Decision-Making: A Metaanalytic Review. *Cognition And Emotion*, 25 (8): 1393-1422.

2. Aren S, Akgüneş AO 2018. Duyguların Yatırım Kararı Üzerine Etkisinin Yapısal Eşitlik Modeli ile Değerlendirilmesi. *International Journal of Academic Value Studies*, 4(19): 363–371.
3. Aren S., Akgüneş A.O., (2018b). Dört Temel Duygunun Bireylerde Risk Alma Davranışı Üzerindeki Etkisi, *İşletme Araştırmaları Dergisi*, 10(3), 362–378.
4. Aren S, Hamamcı HN 2020. Relationship between risk aversion, risky investment intention, investment choices: Impact of personality traits and emotion. *Kybernetes*, 49(11): 2651-2682. DOI: <https://doi.org/10.1108/K-07-2019-0455>
5. Aren S, Hamamcı HN 2021. Emotional Finance: Determinants of Phantasy. *Kybernetes*, 50(5): 1250-1276.
6. Aren S, Hamamcı HN 2021b. The impact of financial defence mechanisms and phantasy on risky investment intention. *Kybernetes*, Vol. ahead of print. DOI: 10.1108/K-10-2020-0695
7. Aydemir SD, Aren S 2017. Do the effects of individual factors on financial risk-taking behavior diversify with financial literacy?. *Kybernetes*, 46(10): 1706–1734.
8. Barford A 2017. Emotional responses to world inequality. *Emotion Space and Society*, 22: 25–35.
9. Bargh JA, Morsella E 2008. The Unconscious Mind. *Perspectives on Psychological Science*, 3(1): 73–79.
10. Brooks AW 2014. Get Excited: Reappraising Pre-Performance Anxiety as Excitement. *Journal of Experimental Psychology: General*, 143(3): 1144-1158.
11. Brown AD, Curhan JR 2013. The polarizing effect of arousal on negotiation. *Psychological Science*, 24: 1928-1935. DOI: 10.1177/0956797613480796
12. Campo-Vaquer RM, Cuilty E 2004. The role of emotions on risk aversion: A Prospect Theory experiment. *Journal of Behavioral and Experimental Economics*, 50(2014): 1-9.
13. Chanaka J, Wright LT 2009. An empirical investigation into e-shopping excitement: antecedents and effects. *European Journal of Marketing*, 43(9/10): 1171-1187.
14. Crisan LG, Pana S, Vulturar R, Heilman RM, Szekely R, Druga B, Dragos N, Miu AC 2009. Genetic contributions of the serotonin transporter to social learning of fear and economic decision making. *Social Cognitive and Affective Neuroscience*, 4(4): 399-408.
15. Diener E 1984. Subjective Well-Being. *Psychological Bulletin*, 75(3): 542–575.
16. Dijk O 2017. Bank run psychology. *Journal of Economic Behavior and Organization*, 144(Dec): 87-96.
17. Ekman P, Friesen WV 1986. A new pancultural facial expression of emotion. *Motivation and Emotion*, 10: 159 –168.
18. Emmerling RJ, Cherniss C 2003. Emotional intelligence and the career choice process. *Journal of Career Assessment*, 11(2): 153-167. DOI: 10.1177/1069072703011002003
19. Eshraghi A, Taffler RJ 2014. Heroes and Victims: Fund Manager Sense-making, Self-legitimation and Storytelling. Unpublished working paper, Warwick Business School.
20. Fessler DMT, Pillsworth EG, Flanson TJ 2004. Angry men and disgusted women: An evolutionary approach to the influence of emotions on risk taking. *Organizational Behavior and Human Decision Processes*, 95(1): 107-123. DOI: 10.1016/j.obhdp.2004.06.006
21. Foo MD 2011. Emotions and Entrepreneurial Opportunity Evaluation. *Entrepreneurship Theory and Practice*, 35(2): 375-393. DOI: 10.1111/j.1540-6520.2009.00357.x
22. Gasper K, Clore GL 2002. Attending to the big picture: Mood and global versus local processing of visual information. *Psychological Science*, 13(1): 34-40.
23. Grable J, Heo W, Rabbani A 2015. Financial Anxiety, Physiological Arousal, and Planning Intention. *Journal of Financial Therapy*, 5 (2): 1-18. DOI: <https://doi.org/10.4148/1944-9771.1083>

24. Habib M, Cassotti M 2015. Fear and anger have opposite effects on risk seeking in the gain frame. *Frontiers In Psychology*, 6 (March): Article 253.
25. Han S, Lemer JS, Keltner D 2007. Feelings and consumer decision making: The appraisal-tendency framework. *Journal of Consumer Psychology*, 17: 158-168. DOI: 10.1016/S 1057-7408(07)70023-2
26. Hayenhjelm M 2006. Out Of The Ashes: Hope and Vulnerability As Explanatory Factors In Individual Risk Taking. *Journal of Risk Research*, 9(3): 189-204.
27. Jamieson JP, Mendes WB, Blackstock E, Schmader T 2010. Turning the knots in your stomach into hows: Reappraising arousal improves performance on the GRE. *Journal of Experimental Social Psychology*, 46: 208-212. DOI: 10.1016/j.jesp.2009.08.015
28. Jimenez PJ 2016. Unconscious fantasy (or phantasy) as clinical concept. *The International Journal of Psychoanalysis*, 98(3): 1-16.
29. Joseph S, Linley PA, Harwood J, Lewis CA, McCollam P 2004. Rapid assessment of well-being: The Short Depression–Happiness Scale (SDHS), *Psychology and Psychotherapy: Theory, Research and Practice*, 77: 463–478
30. Kouchaki M, Desai SD 2015. Anxious, threatened, and also unethical: How anxiety makes individuals feel threatened and commit unethical acts. *Journal of Applied Psychology*, 100 (2015): 360-375.
31. Kugler T, Connolly T, Ordóñez LD 2012. Emotion, Decision, and Risk: Betting on Gambles versus Betting on People. *Journal of Behavioral Decision Making*, 25(2): 123-134. DOI: 10.1002/bdm.724
32. Kuhnen CM, Knutson B 2011. The influence of affect on beliefs, preferences and financial decisions. *Journal Financial and Quantitative Analysis*, 46(3): 605–626.
33. Lee CJ, Andrade EB 2015. Fear, excitement, and financial risk-taking. *Cognition and Emotion*, 29(1): 178-187. DOI: 10.1080/02699931.2014.898611
34. Lerner JS, Keltner D 2000. Beyond valence: Toward a model of emotion-specific influences on judgment and choice. *Cognition and Emotion*, 14(4): 473–493.
35. Li Y 2011. Emotions and New Venture Judgment In China. *Asia Pacific Journal of Management*, 28(2): 277-298.
36. Maner JK, Gerend MA 2007. Motivationally selective risk judgments: Do fear and curiosity boost the boons or the banes?. *Organizational Behavior and Human Decision Processes*, 103(2): 256 –267.
37. McConnell AR, Bill CM, Dember WN, Grasha AF 1993. Personality through metaphor: Optimism, pessimism, locus of control, and sensation seeking. *Current Psychology*, 12: 195-215. DOI: 10.1007/BF02686802
38. Murgea A 2016. Seasonal affective disorder and the Romanian stock market. *Economic Research-Ekonomska Istrazivanja*, 29(1): 177-192.
39. Myers GD, Diener E 1995. Who Is Happy?. *Psychological Science*, 6 (1): 10–19.
40. Raghunathan R, Pham MT 1999. All negative moods are not equal: Motivational influences of anxiety and sadness on decision making. *Organizational Behavior and Human Decision Processes*, 79(1): 56–77
41. Raines JP, Leather CGS 2011. Behavioral finance and Post Keynesian-institutionalist Theories of Financial Markets. *Journal of Post Keynesian Economics*, 33(4): 539–553.
42. Reimann M, Nenkov GY, MacInnis D, Morrin M 2014. The Role of Hope in Financial Risk Seeking. *Journal of Experimental Psychology: Applied*, 20(4): 349 – 364.
43. Szasz PL, Hofmann SG, Heilman RM, Curtiss J 2016. Effect of Regulating Anger and Sadness on Decision-Making. *Cognitive Behaviour Therapy*, 45(6): 479-495.
44. Taffler RJ, Tuckett DA 2010. *Emotional Finance: The Role of the Unconscious in Financial Decisions*, New Jersey: John Wiley & Sons, Inc., 95–112 pp.

45. Taffler RJ 2014. Emotional Finance: Theory and Application. WBS Working Paper, 14 October 2014.
46. Taffler, RJ, Spence C, Eshraghi A 2017. Emotional economic man: Calculation and anxiety in fund management. *Accounting, Organizations and Society*, 61: 53–67.
47. Taffler RJ 2018. Emotional finance: investment and the unconscious. *The European Journal of Finance*, 24(7–8): 630–653.
48. Tiedens LZ, Linton S 2001. Judgment under emotional certainty and uncertainty: The effects of specific emotions on information processing. *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology*, 81: 973–988. DOI:[10.1037//0022-3514.81.6.973](https://doi.org/10.1037//0022-3514.81.6.973)
49. Turnbull OH, Solms M 2007. Awareness, Desire, and False Beliefs: Freud in the Light of Modern Neuropsychology. *Cortex*, 43(8): 1083–1090.
50. Tuckett D, Taffler R 2008. Phantastic objects and the financial market's sense of reality: A psychoanalytic contribution to the understanding of stock market instability. *International Journal of Psychoanalysis*, 89(2): 389–412.
51. Wilt J, Oehlberg K, Revelle W 2011. Anxiety in personality. *Personality and Individual Differences*, 50: 987–993.
52. Yaşlıoğlu MM 2017. Sosyal Bilimlerde Faktör Analizi ve Geçerlilik: Keşfedici ve Doğrulamalı Faktör Analizlerinin Kullanılması. *Istanbul University Journal of the School of Business*, 46(Special Issue): 74-85.

**THE REGULATION OF VACCINATION IN THE NATIONAL LEGISLATION OF
THE REPUBLIC OF MOLDOVA**

Senior lector. Dr. Virginia ZAHARIA

Moldova State University, Faculty of Law, Department of International and European Law,
Chisinau, Republic of Moldova

3rd year student, **Veronica POZNEACOVA**

ORCID ID: <https://orcid.org/0000-0003-0762-5049>

Moldova State University, Faculty of Law, Chisinau, Republic of Moldova

ABSTRACT

The coronavirus epidemic provoked the development of discussions that constantly arise in society about the necessity of vaccination. Due to the coronavirus pandemic, several states have adopted regulatory provisions governing mandatory vaccination of some social categories of people. This decision was influenced by the need to guarantee and ensure public health. In accordance with the vision of some researchers, ensuring public health allows the restriction of individual rights. In this context, some people have addressed to the European Court of Human Rights, considering that the state violates their rights by introducing compulsory vaccination. In this study, we analyze the national legislation of the Republic of Moldova in order to determine whether in our state could be introduced mandatory vaccination. The purpose of this article is to determine if the vaccination would be obligatory or faculty, to establish our right that refers to vaccination, to analyze the conditions that guaranty us the safety vaccination. Plus we evaluated the current situation of the vaccine from COVID 19. In this study we determined that in the Republic of Moldova vaccination is voluntary except for an exhaustive list of vaccines that must be administered to children. Therefore, in accordance with the actual normative provisions the state could not introduce and implement compulsory vaccination from coronavirus.

Keywords: human rights, vaccination, epidemic, state, legislation, illness.

THE IMPACT SUPERVISORY SUPPORT AND COWORKER SUPPORT THROUGH CREATIVE WORK INVOLVEMENT

Dr. Muhammad Zia Ur Rehman

Associate professor, Dept of Leadership and Management Studies, National Defence
University

Dr. Zekeriya Nas

Associate Professor, Yuzuncu Yil University

Mr. Arslan Ali & Mr. Adil

Research Scholars, Federal Urdu university of Arts Science and Technology

ABSTRACT

This study shows the importance of Supervisory support and coworker support for creative work involvement which provides encouragement and helps to employees' by supervisors and coworkers and helps them to work creatively which also increased their level of motivation. The supportive environment given to the employees by their supervisor's which shows that the supervisor value their contribution and cared about their well being and they retain satisfied with the job and working environment due to which employees' participate more efficiently and loyally to increase the efficiency and performance of the organization which helps the organization earn more profit. Social exchange is essential for the organization because that only boost the energy and creativity among the employees and co-workers. This study highlights the importance of social exchange relationship that raised the amount of creative thinking among the workers and higher outcomes further creative thinking in corporations is important as a result of day by day there's advancement in technology that is merely attainable once there are sturdy social exchange relationship within the organization.

Keywords: Supervisory support, coworker support, creative work involvement, Feel of energy

INTRODUCTION

BACKGROUND OF THE STUDY

The social exchange theory has positive result on staff social exchange will occur once there's attraction among the people if they're expecting to keep company with them in some pleasing method, and their attention within the calculable social rewards motivates them. These relationships produce certificatory atmosphere between supervisor and coworker in a corporation during which people support one another. it's assumed that once there's supervisor & coworkers support for workers, their support encourages them to figure a lot of effectively and with efficiency that additionally enhance their creative thinking within the employee's work certificatory atmosphere increase the amount of satisfaction among the workers of the organization which suggests the support is positive .when the organization atmosphere isn't certificatory there'll be discontentment among staff that have an effect on their creative thinking. The direct participation of employees to assist organization fulfill its mission and meet its objectives by applying their own concepts, proficiency and efforts towards determination issues and creating selections in forming a state of affairs during which individuals have a sway on selections and actions that have an effect on their professions.

RESEARCH QUESTIONS

1. What is creative work involvement?

Creative work involvement is mediated in sequence. First by meaningfulness in work and meaningfulness at work, and then by thriving, such that relational leadership instills a sense of meaningfulness, which in turn enables members to thrive and thereby display greater creative work involvement

2. How do we understand relationship of supervisor and coworker?

The relationship between supervisor and Coworker is that when employees feel supportive and encouragements through the behavior of Supervisor and Coworker employee evaluate the environment i.e. whether supportive or not. If the employee of the organization believes that the coworker and supervisor are supportive enough they work with more motivation and with more creativity. When employees feel that they are given enough support they work with more innovative ideas and value the support given to them by their supervisor and coworker.

SIGNIFICANCE OF THE STUDY

This study entails the importance of social relationship and also the impact of supervisor and coworker support through inventive work involvement. It describes that however vital the higher-up & coworkers support for workers, their support encourage them to figure with a lot of effectiveness and with efficiency that additionally enhance their creative thinking within the employee's work. Certificatory atmosphere increase the amount of satisfaction among the workers of the organization.

Literature Review

Providing encouragement/emotional help to the employees of the organization the staff feel extremely supportive and work accordingly more creatively and efficiently because the support provides them motivation towards their performance (Wang Xue, & Su, 2010). When the employees' feel/observe that the supervisor is supportive and the environment is supportive for creativity he/she perform with creativity because the support provides them motivation towards their performance (Wang Xue, & Su, 2010). Supervisory support is defined as employees' belief concerning the extent to which supervisors value their contributions and care about their well-being. Employees need motivation to expend greater efforts and more personal resources in innovative tasks when supervisor exhibit their individual consideration toward followers, followers are likely to perceive support from their supervisors often feel obligated to pay back supervisors' favors or kindness by helping supervisors to reach their stated goals (Eisenberger et al. 2002). Creativity and innovation is an area where supervisors can have a strong impact on employee creativity through their influence on the context within which employees work (Shalley and Gilson, 2004).

A person who works in a similar role or a similar level within organization can have a negative or positive impact on the working environment. He/she can make the work place pleasant or unpleasant place to spend your time. There have been numerous studies done on the perception and actuality that one is cared, has assistance available from other people, and that one is part of a supportive social network if the social relation among the employees' of the organization is stronger then it leads towards job satisfaction, ultimately their minds will be more creative. There shouldn't be communication gap between the coworkers it create hurdles in the performance of the organization so for successful organization strong social relationship required among the employees (Hodson, 1997). The co-workers should

communicate to each other on daily basis, help each other in every task given to them then it will make the work easier and eventually less burden on the co-worker. In retail industry, it is necessary for the co-worker and employees to be in contact on day to day basis by doing this they will share their knowledge and ideas which provide encouragement and ultimately increase in work efficiency (Zhou and Georage 2001). When the co-workers and employees perform better the organization should give them reward in the form of bonuses and increments or to promote them on a higher rank. By doing this the co-workers and employees will worker harder and produce more output (Eisenberger, Huntington, Hutchison & Sowa, 1986). Colleagues may share their knowledge and expertise when an employee is faced with a difficult and unusual task for which a solution is not already available. Scott and Bruce, (1994). This was a summary of the research and practice implications from: Chiaburu, D. & Harrison, D (2008). *D Performance Journal of Applied Psychology*. Vol.93 (5), 1082-1103. When talking about employee's contribution it is usual to discriminate between direct and indirect participation. Indirect participations refer to the connection of employee characteristic in decision making process.

Content Analysis

This study shows the importance of Supervisory support and coworker support for creative work involvement. It provides encouragement and helps to employees' by supervisors and coworkers helps them to work creatively which also increased their level of motivation. Supervisory support provides encouragement and support through which the employees' feel the work place supportive for creativity which not only helps the organization to increase its efficiency but also to the employees' to show their skills and efficiency in the work. Employee involvement is not the objective of the organization it is a manner that how people work with creativity and loyalty for the success of the organization.

This study highlights the importance of social exchange relationship which increased the level of creativity among the employees and better outcomes as well. Creativity in any firm is essential because day by day there is advancement in technology which is only possible when their will be strong social exchange relationship in the organization.

Linking between Supervisory Support and Coworker Support:

It is supposed that supervisor and Coworker link is that when employees feel supportive and encouragements through the behavior of Supervisor and Coworker employee evaluate the environment i.e. whether supportive or not. If the employee of the organization believes that the coworker and supervisor are supportive enough they work with more motivation and with more creativity. When employees fell that they are given enough support they work with more innovative ideas and value the support given to them by their supervisor and coworker (Eisenberger et al., 1986).

Linking between Supervisory support and Creative Work Involvement

It is assumed that creativity is derived when the environment is supportive and encouraging. Creativity is the result of supportive supervisor and coworkers which makes the environment consideration for creativity which means that if the expected help and support is given to the employees they will work with more creativity (Ekvall, 1996), It is assumed that support and favor are the tools for supportive environment and creativity comes from supportive environment because employees evaluate the environment whether it is supportive or not by the support and favor given to them or by the behavior of their supervisor (Ahmed, et al., 2012; stokols, et al., 2002).

METHODOLOGY AND ANALYSIS

For the purpose of study we examine 26 Construction Firms, located in Lahore which was taken as population. These 26 Companies was covering by 52 teams. Those Companies were employing 25-45 as they were medium sized firms. Each team was led by a team leader and they were employing two hundred and fifty employees. The HR Department of the respective firm selects the team; it requires an approval letter from respective authorities of the firm before investigating the case. The investigative teams employed peoples with different job titles and

S.NO	Questionnaire Send	Questionnaire received	Percentage %
1.	40	37	97 %
2.	40	38	98 %
3.	40	36	96 %
4.	40	39	99 %
5.	40	38	98 %

Designations. Those employees were urged to submit their research survey at two points of time (T-1= Feb, 2017 and T-2 May, 2017). At T-1 those employees were questioned about supervisor and coworker support while at T-2 employees described their feeling of energy and team-leaders asked about employee creative work involvement.

In this study we use simple random technique, thus 200 questionnaires were distributed to employees at T-1 , from which 190 filled questionnaire were received. At T-2 only those employees responded who have filled questionnaire earlier. Only one hundred and eighty seven were received back as three employees were not present and the rest of the ten employees filled questionnaire incomplete. For both T-1 and T-2 we have only one hundred and eighty seven complete filled questionnaires.

INSTRUMENTATION

The study uses the questionnaire of (Yoon & Lim 1999) for Supervisory support and Coworker support, (Tierney et al., 1999) for Creative work involvement. The questionnaires were used as medium of data collection, administrated by the firm at both phases of the study. The linkage between the three variables are interlink with each other and their effect on each other are discussed for each variables use different scale Not at all true, Rarely, Sometimes, Often, Very True.

Response Rate

In this study we use simple random technique, thus 200 questionnaires were distributed to employees at T-1, from which 190 filled questionnaire were received. At T-2 only those employees responded who have filled questionnaire earlier. Only one hundred and eighty seven were received back as three employees were not present and the rest of the ten employees filled questionnaire incomplete. For both T-1 and T-2 we have only one hundred and eighty seven complete filled questionnaires.

Reliability analysis

A tool or technique that is used to calculate measures of scale that should constantly reflect the construct it is measuring. We are using Cronbach's alpha for our research.

S. No	Variable	Item	Alpha
1.	Supervisory support	03	0.70
2.	Coworker support	03	0.78
3.	Creative work involvement	09	0.97

Descriptive statistics

Maximum numbers of respondents were male with the average age of 28-35 years and with experience of 6.20 years 80% and the remaining were female 20%. Maximum numbers of employees are from low level of jobs (69.31%) and associations of remaining employees were with middle level jobs (30.69%). There are 60% employees who are married and 40% employees were unmarried.

Correlation Analysis

This study shows that social exchange is essential for building relationship among supervisor and coworker and employees. Because Supervisor and Coworker support boots the energy level of employees of the organization. Supervisory and Coworker support is directly associated with employees performance, because their support raises the self confidence and motivation level and ultimately enhance their creativity. Creativity is directly interconnected with coworker & supervisory support, working environment, motivation and satisfaction of employees. So this shows that social exchange relation has direct impact on creativity.

Regression Analysis

Regression analysis shows social exchange relation has direct impact on creativity and creativity is linked with the satisfaction of employees of the organization. If supervisor and coworker support the employees in every task, conduct monthly/weekly meetings, involve employees in decision making, provide supportive working environment (which in terms of moral values and monetary benefits) these all leads towards the satisfaction of the employees and resultantly that compel them to work with zeal and zest and creatively.

CONCLUSION AND DISCUSSION

After the study we conclude that the Supervisory support and coworker support is necessart for creative work involvement. It provides encouragement and helps to employees' by supervisors and coworkers helps them to work creatively which also increased their level of motivation. Supportive environment create satisfaction among employees and increase the efficiency and performance of the organization which helps the organization earn more income. Strong social exchange relationship boosts the energy and creativity among the employees and co-workers. This research shows that social exchange relationship increased the level of creativity among the employees and produce better result as well.

Recommendation

As the study comprised a little advance and uninvestigated amplitudes it endeavor a few appropriate connotation of the research. One of the most essential ramifications of this investigation is to feature the importance of social exchange alliance in developing creativity at work. This study values the grant of social exchange relations which could be abused to win creative entanglement of workers.

REFERENCES

- Ahmed, I., Ismail, W. K. W., Amin, S.M., Ramzan, M., & Khan M.K. (2012). Theorizing antecedents of perceived organizational support: A literature review approach. *Middle-East Journal of Scientific Research*.
- Amabile, T. M. (1988). A model of creativity and innovation in organizations. In B. M. Staw, & L. L. Cummings (Eds.), *Research in organizational Behaviour*
- Chiaburu, D. & Harrison, D.(2008).D Performance *Journal of Applied Psychology*.
- Dr. Jevon Powell 2011.Article of Supervisory support,
- Eisenberger, Huntington, and Hutchison & Sowa, 1986, perceived organizational support: Reducing the negative influence of coworker withdrawal behavior, *Journal of Management*,
- Ekvall, G. (1996). Organizational climate for creativity and innovation. *European Journal of Work and Organizational Psychology*,
- Eisenberger, R. (2002). Percieved organizational support: A review of the literature *Journal of Applied Psychology*,
- Hodson, R 1997, Group relations at work: Solidarity, conflict and relations with management. *Work and Occupations*,
- Michael D. Mumford, Sven Hemlin, *Handbook of Research on Leadership and Creativity*
- Stokols, D., Clitheroe, C., & Zmuidzinas, N. (2002), Qualities of work environments that promote perceived support for creativity. *Creativity Research Journal*.
- Shalley (2004). The effects of personal and contextual characteristics on creativity: where should we go from here *J. Manage*,
- Scott and Bruce (1994). Determinants of innovative behavior: A path model of individual innovation in the workplace. *Acad. Manage. J.*
- Shalley, C. E., Zhou, J, & Oldham, G.R. (2004). The effects of personal and contextual characteristics on creativity: Where should we go from here? *Journal of Management*.
- Scott, S. and Bruce, R.(1994). Determinants of innovative behavior: a path model of individual innovation in the workplace, *Academy of Management Journal*,
- (Wand Xue, & Su, (2010).influence of work support on employee creativity: An empirical examination in the Peoples Republic of China African. *Journal of Business Management*).
- Zhou, J. and J. M. George (2001), "When job dissatisfaction leads to creativity: Encouraging the expression of voice." *Academy of Management Journal*
- Zhou, J., & Shalley, C. E (2003). Research on employee creativity: A critical review and directions for future research. In J. Martocchio (Ed.), *Research in personnel and human resource management*, England, Elsevier: Oxford.

ILLEGAL ACTIVITIES IN KARABAKH BEFORE THE II.KARABAKH WAR

Aynur Azimzada

Research Fellow, Azerbaijan National Academy of Sciences,
Caucasus Studies Institute, Baku, Azerbaijan

ABSTRACT

The article examines the current situation in the liberated Azerbaijani lands. The investigation noted the illegal activities of the Armenian side in Karabakh during the occupation, illegal companies operating there, destroyed material and natural resources, burned forests. At the same time, international conventions, resolutions, etc. violated by Armenia are reflected in the article.

Keywords: Azerbaijan, Karabakh, Armenia

INTRODUCTION

Armenia's groundless territorial claims against Azerbaijan, put forward since the early 20th century, exacerbated in 1988. Following declaration of its independence, Armenia further stepped up its baseless claims to Azerbaijan's Karabakh and Nakhchivan territories. This resulted in the occupation of 20 percent of Azerbaijani territory in 1991-1993, including Nagorno-Karabakh, as well as the adjacent seven districts, namely, Aghdam, Jabrayil, Fizuli, Kalbajar, Gubadli, Lachin, and Zangilan.

Armenia, which was pursuing political and economic terror against Azerbaijan, set the stage for economic separatism in the occupied territories of the Azerbaijan Republic, in violation of international law. About 7,000 Azerbaijani enterprises halted their operation in the aftermath of the war¹.

Significant financial damage was inflicted to the country. It is common knowledge that the occupied Nagorno-Karabakh region is very rich in mineral deposits and waters. Gold, silver, copper, iron, zinc, granite, marble, precious stones, fire-resistant clay and other deposits are available there. According to official estimates, there are 155 mineral deposits of different types in the occupied territories [8]. Armenia, which presently operates these fields, claims to have become one of the world's major exporters of precious metals. The Soyudlu-Zod gold field, located in Azerbaijan's Kalbajar district, the Gizilbulag gold deposit in the Aghdere district and Vejnali in Zangilan are being operated by the Armenian government.

Canada's First Dynasty Mines (FDM) company was previously engaged in operating the Soyudlu field in Kalbajar. 73 percent of the deposit is located in the Armenian-occupied Kalbajar district of Azerbaijan². Though the operation of the field was suspended in 1992, US specialists tackled geological exploration in the area in 1996. Over 40 tons of gold were discovered as a result of the exploratory activities. In September 1997, Armenia's Ministry of Commerce and Industry and FDM signed a \$63.3 million contract on ore extraction. FDM assets are owned by Sterlite Gold LTD, headed by Markus Randolph. Having acquired 50 percent of stock in Armenia's state-run Ararat Gold Recovery Company in 1998, FDM launched gold production. The company became its sole owner after purchasing the other half of the shares in 2002.

¹ Economic Impact of the Nagorno-Karabakh Conflict", <https://intpolicydigest.org/2017/04/12/economic-impact-of-the-nagorno-karabakh-conflict/> “

² Dağlıq Qarabağdakı xarici şirkətlər, 27.04.2012, <http://sesqazeti.az/news/analytics/219219.html>

Armenian Copper Programme (ACP), which is engaged in black copper production, produced 9,500 tons of this product in 2004 after processing 40,000 tons of concentrate from the Vejnali gold deposit in Zangilan. In 2003, 6,300 tons of copper were processed using 24,000 tons of concentrate.

The Armenians mainly began plundering natural resources in the occupied territories in the early 2000s. Since 2016, companies producing gold, marble, silver, copper and other natural resources have been operating in the occupied Azerbaijani territories, including Nagorno-Karabakh and seven surrounding districts. Though the Azerbaijani government has consistently issued protest notes to the countries where the companies illegally doing business in the occupied regions are based, saying their operation was unlawful and ran counter to international norms, the countries in question charged that they could not interfere with the matter under the pretext of those businesses being privately owned.

According to Azerbaijan's Ministry of Ecology and Natural Resources, some 30 enterprises producing gold and other precious metals operate in the self-proclaimed "Nagorno-Karabakh Republic" and the surrounding districts, though this is denied in Khankandi (Stepanakert) and Yerevan³. All of those businesses are owned by Armenia. However, a number of world countries have played a significant role in the illegal investments made in the occupied territories. US, Russian, Canadian, Swiss, British, French, German, Spanish, Dutch companies as well as those from other countries have been involved in the formal plundering of minerals and raw materials in the territories of the Azerbaijan Republic.⁴

Armenian economy minister Andranik Khachatryan said in 2016 that "more than 160 companies have invested in Nagorno-Karabakh". "Whereas foreign investors previously were accessing the market as the founders of new companies, recently there has been an upward trend in the number of joint ventures. The average bulk of the drawn funds accounts for approximately 10 percent of the total investments. Foreign investments are now becoming involved in the process of the expansion of active local firms," he said⁵.

These companies are appropriating both natural resources and the intangible wealth of Azerbaijan. These include, among other companies, AtaVank-Les CO, Arvard CO, Yerkir Tour CO, Minasian CO, Artsakh Gorg Ltd. (USA), Mika Ltd. (Britain), Sirkap Armenia CO, Haik Watch And Jewellery CO, Andranik Shpon CO (Switzerland), Australia Nairi Ltd., Sasun CO (Iran), First Dynasty Mines, Sterlite Gold Ltd., and Grand Tobacco (Canada). Moreover, Aurubis AG, Zeppelin Baumaschinen GmbH (Germany), Zeppelin Armenia LLC, Strathcona Mineral Services Ltd. (Canada), Atlas Copco (Sweden), and Tamrock (Finland), etc. cooperate with a number of illegally operating Armenian companies⁶. Furthermore, Sterlite Gold Ltd., Sirkap Armenian, Base Metals, Manex and Valex, Armenian Copper Programme, and First Dynasty Mines extracted 22.9 tons of gold in 2001-2016 in Nagorno-Karabakh and other occupied Azerbaijani territories and delivered it to Armenia.

Overall, Armenia has turned the occupied Karabakh region's territory, which possesses rich natural resources, into a safe haven for "offshore" companies, and the "Karabakh clan" headed by former president Serzh Sargsyan has been created there. The companies illegally operating in Karabakh form a part of Sargsyan's multi-billion business empire, which

³ Rüstəm Məmmədov, Xaqani Məmmədov. Müasir beynəlxalq hüquq nöqtəyi-nəzərindən Azərbaycanın işğal olunmuş ərazilərində Ermənistanın qanunsuz və hüquqa zidd fəaliyyəti. Bakı, 2017, s.17

⁴ Qarabağ: bildiklərimiz və bilmədiklərimiz. //Qafqaz Universiteti. BMAM, Bakı, 2010, s. 141,148

⁵ Over 160 companies with foreign participation registered in Karabakh, 01.06.2016, <https://gagrule.net/over-160-companies-with-foreign-participation-registered-in-karabakh/>

⁶ Report by the Ministry of Foreign Affairs of the Republic of Azerbaijan. Illegal economic and other activities in the occupied territories of Azerbaijan, 2016, s.48, 65-66

includes the “Hadrut winery” run through Mika Group that is comprised of three smaller wineries active in the Nagorno-Karabakh region, as well as “Mika-Karabakh”, a jewellery producing company⁷. The ongoing monopoly over the Armenian economy has led to further enrichment of the country’s ruling political class. The facts cited in Armenian sources confirm that in addition to the looting of natural resources in the occupied Azerbaijani territories, former presidents Robert Kocharyan and Serzh Sargsyan facilitated the use of these areas by the international drug mafia⁸.

hat faced plundering the most – next only to gold – in the occupied regions of Azerbaijan. The occupied mountainous area of the Caucasus Minor is Azerbaijani territory that is rich in forests. Armenia is also carrying out operations in these areas, which account for about 25 percent of Azerbaijan’s overall forestry (or 246,700 hectares). Thus, Armenians arriving in great numbers from Armenia and other countries massively fell trees of valuable species in the Kalbajar, Lachin, Gubadli and other regions and sell them abroad as a semi-finished product. In the city of Shusha, rare perennial trees from Karabakh forests are used for fuel, which is a major manifestation of Armenian vandalism. Construction work was carried out in the reserve area of the Topkhana Forest; 1,500 to 2,000 oak trees that had been available in an area of Shusha called Hacha Yal for many years were chopped and taken away by the Armenians. In addition, the Lachin forests spanning 25,000 square kilometers have been destroyed since 1995 for furniture manufacturing purposes. In the Aghdam mountain mass, Armenian servicemen burned down 17,457 hectares of pastures, rendering them unusable. Politicians and lawmakers of numerous countries have witnessed and confirmed all these facts. At the same time, forests with rare tree species, significant subsoil resources and sources of water rich in minerals are being exploited in the Gubadli district. Extraordinary natural habitats with rich flora and fauna are being destroyed. Hazelnuts with the height of up to 25 meters in Kalbajar, the Oriental sycamores covering 107 hectares of land in the Zangilan district that are unmatched in Europe, walnut and other valuable trees have been completely felled by the Armenians and used as a clothing material⁹.

Azerbaijan’s Karabakh region is also rich in mineral and medicinal waters, and springs. Mineral water deposits with tremendous curative properties, such as the world-known Yukhari Istisu, Ashaghi Istisu, Keshdek, Garasu, Tutkhun, Mozchay, and Goturlusu, are available in Kalbajar, and there are natural springs containing healing water with more than 600 mineral substances in Gubadli¹⁰.

Realizing that their presence in the occupied territories is temporary, the invaders are trying to take advantage of this. They are not only bolstering their economy by plundering natural resources but are also trying to garner international recognition for their country. According to the Azerbaijani Foreign Ministry’s report titled “Illegal economic activity in the occupied territories of Azerbaijan”, the Armenians, who gained a demographic advantage as a result of the relocation of Azerbaijanis, continue pursuing their economic activities internationally. As part of these activities, which are supported by Armenia, valuable minerals, forests and agricultural goods are illegally exploited in the territories such as Lachin, Shusha, Zangilan, Gubadli, Kalbajar, Khojavand and put on sale in world markets as those of Armenian origin.

According to preliminary estimates drawn up by the working group in charge of evaluating the loss and damage from the occupation of the territories of the Azerbaijan Republic by the

⁷ Destitution of the Armenian people or Sarkisyan’s business empire, 10.01.2014, <http://newtimes.az/en/politics/2385>

⁸ Vüsal Qasimli, Zaur Şiriyev, Zülfiyyə Vəliyeva. İran-Ermənistan münasibətləri: geosiyasi reallıq, siyasi iddialar. Bakı, 2011, s.22

⁹ Qeyri-qanuni təbii ehtiyatlar axtarışı, http://garabagh.net/content_174_az.html

¹⁰ Bulaqlar, http://garabagh.net/content_87_az.html

Armenian armed forces, environmental damage worth 244.4 billion USD was inflicted during the occupation period. The damage resulted from the destruction of overall bio-diversity and forests, rendering soil unusable, environmental pollution and contamination of the sources of water, and the plundering of mineral deposits¹¹.

Overall, the Armenia-Azerbaijan Nagorno-Karabakh conflict has inflicted damage worth up to 50 billion USD to the Azerbaijani economy. The lingering conflict has also caused challenges for Azerbaijan in the implementation of several international projects. In particular, in the course of building the Baku-Tbilisi-Ceyhan oil pipeline and the Baku-Tbilisi-Erzurum gas pipeline, investing companies pledged financial aid if the pipelines would be routed via Armenia. A similar problem emerged with the financing of the Baku-Tbilisi-Kars railway project. As a result, Azerbaijan had to assume financing of Georgia's \$200 million share in the project¹².

Azerbaijan continues asserting its rights in line with international norms. The UN Security Council's consecutive Resolutions No. 822, 853, 874 and 884 urging an unconditional pullout of the Armenian troops from the occupied Azerbaijani territories were passed in 1993. Similar resolutions were issued by the UN General Assembly, PACE, OSCE, OIC and other organizations. The Azerbaijan Republic has been working internationally for many years to achieve restoration of its territorial integrity and regain its tangible and intangible resources, which are being plundered. Though relevant demands have been put forward to Armenia, the country's government not only ignores them but also continues pursuing false propaganda claiming that these territories have historically belonged to Armenians, which contributes to making Armenia known internationally as a rogue state.

These arbitrariness of the Republic of Armenia ended as a result of the Second Karabakh War. However, the Armenians did not reconcile with the defeat and used their last days in these lands for terrorism. Thus, according to the joint statement of the leaders of Azerbaijan, Armenia and Russia, the Republic of Armenia had to return the Kalbajar region to the Republic of Azerbaijan by November 15, 2020. Taking advantage of this period, the Armenians either cut down many valuable trees in the Kalbajar forests or burned them altogether. In addition, they deliberately set fires in Shusha forests using toxic and difficult-to-extinguish substances, destroying rare forest cover. Fires caused by white phosphorus bombs cannot be extinguished, nor can they be extinguished naturally, and such fires last a long time. This is environmental terrorism. All this is a violation of international conventions on ecology and the environment, to which Armenia is a party, including the UN Convention on the Prohibition of Military or Any Other Hostile Use of Environmental Change Methods.

The Republic of Azerbaijan, which restored its territorial integrity as a result of the Second Karabakh War, has already taken control of the natural resources in these territories and has taken the first steps for the effective development of those natural resources.

REFERENCES

1. Report by the Ministry of Foreign Affairs of the Republic of Azerbaijan. Illegal economic and other activities in the occupied territories of Azerbaijan, 2016, s.48, 65-66
2. Qarabağ: bildiklərimiz və bilmədiklərimiz. //Qafqaz Universiteti. BMAM, Bakı, 2010, s. 141,148

¹¹ İşğal olunmuş ərazilərin ekoloji vəziyyəti, <http://eco.gov.az/az/111-isgal-olunmus-erazilerinekojiv-eziyyeti>

¹² Rüstəm Məmmədov, Xaqani Məmmədov. Müasir beynəlxalq hüquq nöqtəyi-nəzərindən Azərbaycanın işğal olunmuş ərazilərində Ermənistanın qanunsuz və hüquqa zidd fəaliyyəti. Bakı, 2017, s.17

3. Vüsal Qasimli, Zaur Şiriyev, Zülfüyyə Vəliyeva. İran-Ermənistan münasibətləri: geosiyasi reallıq, siyasi iddialar. Bakı, 2011, s.22
4. Rüstəm Məmmədov, Xaqani Məmmədov. Müasir beynəlxalq hüquq nöqtəyi-nəzərindən Azərbaycanın işğal olunmuş ərazilərində Ermənistanın qanunsuz və hüquqa zidd fəaliyyəti. Bakı, 2017, s.17
5. Destitution of the Armenian people or Sarkisyan's business empire, 10.01.2014, <http://newtimes.az/en/politics/2385>
6. Dağlıq Qarabağdakı xarici şirkətlər, 27.04.2012, <http://sesqazeti.az/news/analytics/219219.html>
7. Orkhan Baghirov, "Economic Impact of the Nagorno-Karabakh Conflict", 19.04.2017 <http://blogs.shu.edu/journalofdiplomacy/2017/04/the-economic-impact-of-the-nagorno-karabakh-conflict-and-ensuing-developments/>
8. Qeyri-qanuni təbii ehtiyatlar axtarışı, http://garabagh.net/content_174_az.html
9. İşğal olunmuş ərazilərin ekoloji vəziyyəti, <http://eco.gov.az/az/111-isgal-olunmus-erazilerinekoloji-veziyyeti>
10. Over 160 companies with foreign participation registered in Karabakh, 01.06.2016, <https://gagrul.net/over-160-companies-with-foreign-participation-registered-in-karabakh/>
11. Bulaqlar, http://garabagh.net/content_87_az.html

NIKOL PASHINYAN'S FAILURE FOREIGN POLICY IN ARMENIA

Gunel Gurbanova

Chief specialist, Azerbaijan National Academy of Sciences,
Caucasus Studies Institute, Baku, Azerbaijan

ABSTRACT

There were hopes that Prime Minister Nicole Pashkina, who came to power in Armenia through the "Street Revolution" in 2018, would choose peace in Yerevan, ending the previous government's aggressive policy. However, calling herself "liberal" and "humanist", Nicole Pashinyan took a completely radical position, turning 180 degrees from the political views of the opposition on the conflict. At the same time, the number of social protests in Armenia is growing and the government is facing stricter requirements.

Keywords: Armenia, foreign policy, diaspora, Nagorno-Karabakh

INTRODUCTION

As a result of the "velvet revolution" in Armenia under the guise of holding democratic elections in 2018, Nicole Pashinyan seized the post of Prime Minister with adventurous ideas. N.Pashinyan's coming to power was so coincidental that for a long time the process did not go beyond the level of street games. The events that took place in Armenia after N.Pashinyan's seizure of the post of Prime Minister, as well as the growth of internal dissatisfaction, lead the occupying country to a deeper abyss. From the first days of coming to power, Pashinyan predicted that he would not be able to solve any of the country's problems in the short term. Even in the long run, he does not have the ability and capacity to solve the problems facing his country. Because there are no opportunities and bases for solving social problems.

The mysterious decisions made by N.Pashinyan, a street politician with one hand at the foot of the West and one hand at the foot of the North, his foggy speeches, measures taken and so on. It is leading Armenia, which is in an economic crisis, to the abyss, not to development. N.Pashinyan, who came to power through the "street revolution", soon put the hopes of the Armenians in their eyes. In fact, there were those who predicted that the process could have negative consequences. A number of Armenian politicians and experts began to talk about the threat to the Armenians with his appointment as Prime Minister. Most political experts said that Armenians saw Azerbaijan as a savior. As the real identities of the street democrats became clearer, the situation in the country became more tense. Entrepreneurs are leaving the country because of the country's criminalization, politicians are being persecuted, repressed, and even the conflict between the church and the Armenian government, which has played a strong role in Armenian politics for centuries, has intensified. On an unprecedented level, ordinary people began to demand the resignation of the Catholicos. The struggle between the two clans in the occupied territories of Azerbaijan, in Khankendi, revealed Sargsyan's desire to strike at Pashinyan from the occupied Nagorno-Karabakh region. The attitude towards the separatist Bako Sahakyan, who heads the toy regime in the Nagorno-Karabakh region, caused Sargsyan's supporters to take action. Even security officers sent from Yerevan beat the local population and arrested 15 people ¹.

¹ Rəsmi İrəvanın siyasi iflası: ermənilər Azərbaycanı xilaskar görürlər, 12.06.2018, <http://newtimes.az/az/processes/trends/5678/>. [12.11.2018]

Armenia's aggressive policy on an international scale and Nicole Pashkina's failed diaspora policy have damaged the "impenetrable, strong" image of international public opinion. The clashes between Armenians and Azerbaijanis in different countries of the world in 2020 played a decisive role in this process. Thus, although the Armenians hoped to gain the political support of the great powers by provoking the Azerbaijanis, their attempt backfired.

Countries such as France, Russia and the United States, where the Armenian diaspora is strong, also did not officially support them. On the contrary, the US Congress adopted a resolution to investigate the situation of IDPs in the occupied territories of Azerbaijan. At the same time, the US House of Representatives did not accept the amendment proposed by the Armenian lobby to suspend military support to Azerbaijan ².

Despite being a military ally of Armenia, Russia has rejected Prime Minister Nicole Pashkina's offer to support military operations against Azerbaijan. Moreover, the Collective Security Treaty Organization responded to Armenia's call for help with silence. If we compare what is happening today with the situation 15-20 years ago, we can see a significant change. Because the strength of the Armenian diaspora and lobby has previously been a serious obstacle to Azerbaijan's voice in the international public opinion on the Nagorno-Karabakh conflict, but now it is observed that this problem has disappeared.

Following these events, peaceful protests by Azerbaijanis in Los Angeles, the political center of Europe, Brussels, Belgium, and several other countries further aggravated the Armenian Diaspora and the Armenian government. In doing so, the Yemeni diaspora introduces a savage image to the world, exposing the hypocrisy of Armenian Prime Minister Nicole Pashkina, who portrays herself as a peacemaker.

It should be noted that Pashkina's non-peace-loving, aggressive nature is neither the first nor the last. Although he has repeatedly spoken of peace, he has demonstrated that his statements run counter to the doctrine of reconciliation. That is why Pashinyan, seeing the exposure, vented his anger on the Armenian Commissariat for Work with the Diaspora. Following the failure of the Armenian Diaspora, Pashinyan launched a clean-up operation at the Commissariat for Work with the Diaspora, and 13 people, including high-ranking officials, had to resign. This is an indication that there are serious problems in the activities of the Armenian Diaspora, and that the Azerbaijani Diaspora is helpless in the face of pressure ³.

Pashkina's statement "Karabakh is Armenia and the point" made in August 2019 can be considered the most obvious example of his dragging the region into war. The point is that the former leadership of Armenia denied the idea that Yerevan controlled the occupied territories of Azerbaijan. With this statement, Pashinyan, in fact, abandoned the traditional policy of the former leadership. At that time, his statement was sharply criticized by the co-chairs of the OSCE Minsk Group, the main international mission with a mandate to coordinate the talks between Armenia and Azerbaijan.

The 30-year war, which continued with Armenia's open territorial claims to Azerbaijan's historical lands and ethnic provocations, ended on November 10 with a historic victory of the Azerbaijani Army's 44-day counter-offensive after Armenia's military provocation on September 27. The successful end of the Patriotic War changed the balance of forces in the region and created a new reality. Today, there is no status quo that lasts for 30 years. The status issue is off the agenda. Instead, the implementation of plans to restore the destroyed cities and villages of Karabakh has begun ⁴.

² <http://newtimes.az/az/processestrends/5996>

³ <https://aqreqator.az/az/siyaset/943221/> Paşinyanın uğursuz diaspor siyasəti. 13.08.2020.

⁴ <https://apa.az/az/xeber/siyasi/Nikol-Pasinyanın-muharibə-gtirib-cixaran-mlri-coloredTHLILcolor-607726>

As a result, the number of social protests in Armenia is growing and the government is facing stricter requirements. Thus, in the first months of the revolution, people who believed in Pashinyan and followed him stood up because they saw that he was not able to get the country out of a difficult economic situation. This shows that the events in Armenia may worsen in the coming years. Both the weak economic opportunities of the country, and his inability to speak as harshly as before in political life, as well as the inexperience of N. Pashniya, caused such a situation. The socio-economic conditions of the occupying country have not changed for the better, on the contrary, the situation has worsened⁵.

REFERENCES

1. Rəsmi İrəvanın siyasi iflası: ermənilər Azərbaycanı xilaskar görürlər, 12.06.2018, <http://newtimes.az/az/processestrends/5678/>. [12.11.2018].
2. Paşinyanın uğursuz diaspor siyasəti. 13.08.2020, <https://aqreqator.az/az/siyaset/943221>
3. <https://apa.az/az/xeber/siyasi/Nikol-Pasinyanin-muhariby-gtirib-cixaran-mlri-coloredTHLILcolor-607726>
4. İşğalçı ölkə yeni ixtişaşlar burulğanında, 20.03.2019, <http://www.movqe.az/news/siyaset/131149.html> [15.05.2019]
5. <http://newtimes.az/az/processestrends/5996>

⁵ İşğalçı ölkə yeni ixtişaşlar burulğanında, 20.03.2019, <http://www.movqe.az/news/siyaset/131149.html> [15.05.2019]

**ECONOMIC AND SOCIAL EFFECTS OF SMUGGLING WITH MULES FOR
REGIONAL PEOPLE OF NEIGHBORING PROVINCES OF IRAN, IRAQ AND
SYRIA**

Ehlinaz TORUN KAYABASI

Assoc. Prof. Dr. University of Kocaeli/ Faculty of Agriculture, Department of Agricultural
Economics, Kocaeli, Turkey.

ORCID ID: 0000-0001-9081-4734

Orhan YILMAZ

Prof. Dr. Ardahan University, Faculty of Engineering, Department of Food Science, Ardahan,
Turkey.

ORCID ID: 0000-0001-5237-2883

ABSTRACT

This paper has been prepared in order to investigate the economic and social effects of smuggling with mules on the local people in the provinces neighboring Iran, Iraq and Syria in the Eastern and Southeastern Anatolia Region. About 100 years ago, mules were raised in the mountainous regions of the Black Sea, the Marmara Region and the Taurus mountain range in Turkey. Today, mules are bred mainly in the mountainous regions of Ordu, Batman, Van, Hakkari, Sirnak, Mardin, Icel and Balikesir. All mules are illegally imported from Iraq. In the provinces bordering Iran, Iraq and Syria, mules are used for border trade between Turkey and two neighboring countries. The borders of Turkey are protected by the soldiers of the Turkish Armed Forces. Therefore, there is no special border guard unit in Turkey. Geographical conditions and living conditions in these border provinces are very harsh. Therefore, arable land and livestock activities are very limited. Local people have low education and income level. For this reason, many local people prefer border trade or smuggling with mules between the two countries for economic reasons

Keywords: *Equus mulus*, border smuggling, economic impact, social impact.

INTRODUCTION

In history mules used to use widely in Turkey. After mechanization started in middle of 1900's, number of mule population decreased year by year. Engine vehicles such as tractors substitute not only mules but also camels, donkey and horses in rural areas (Yilmaz and Wilson 2012^{1,2}, Yilmaz et al 2012^{1,2}, Yilmaz and Wilson 2013). The mules are raised in provinces of Sirnak, Mardin, Hakkari and Van in the southeast and east of Turkey. All the mules are illegally imported from Iraq. The province of Mardin is next to Syria and Iraq border, the province of Sirnak next to Iraq border, the province of Hakkari has border to both Iraq and Iran, and the province of Van is next to Iran border. In these provinces mules are only raised places which are close to country border (Yilmaz et al 2014).

In these provinces mules are only used for border trading between two countries. Mules are carried some food stuff such as sugar from Turkey to those countries and they brought fuel-oil from Iran and some items such as cigarette from Syria and Iraq. Mules are escorted by owners in Iraq border, but mules are released in Iran land which is near to Turkish border and they arrive to Turkish land on their own. These clever animals definitely know the track and find their way in night time (Yilmaz et al 2014).

Turkish borders are guarded by army soldiers and in Turkey there are not a special border guards. Because of European Union membership process, Turkish Government will provide special border guards in several years. In these border provinces geographical conditions are too harsh and therefore there is limited arable land and animal husbandry. Local people have low education and income. Hence some of them prefer border trading between two countries (Yilmaz et al 2014).

WHAT IS MULE?

A mule is a crossbred hybrid of the species of donkey and horse. In the world mules are known as patient and sure-footed animals. They are also sturdy, long-lived, stubborn animals (Yarkin 1962, Anon 2011^a, Yilmaz 2016). Even though the diploid chromosome number is 64 for horse and 62 for donkey, mule has 63 chromosomes (Trujillo 1991). Hence both male and female mules are sterile and cannot reproduce, although they have all genitals. There were only few evidence that mule reproduced (Anderson 1939, Jones 1985, Anon 2011^a, Anon 2011^b, Yilmaz 2016).

HISTORY

According to scientists the archaeological evidences are not very clear, but ancient texts confirm that mules were found in Anatolia during the first part of the 2nd millennium BC as both chariot and riding animals for important people (Michel 2004, Yilmaz and Wilson 2012^b). It doesn't necessarily mean they were bred there. According to one source suggests that mules were first bred from donkeys and horses in Mesopotamia and Anatolia in the 3rd century BC, when horses from the north met donkeys from the south (Kugler et al. 2008), and about 3,000 years after the appearance of donkeys first domesticated (Rossel et al. 2008). However, there is also speculation that the Hittites who used to live in Anatolia used mules as mounts for war leaders and bannermen before the Third Century (Dent 1972). This was because the hybrid vigor of the donkey-horse cross resulted in the 14-hand-height (142 cm) animals being possibly one hand (10 cm) taller than the local horse, so generals and standard-bearers were more easily seen by troops (Yilmaz and Wilson 2012^b).

The mule was later also used by the Turkish armies, both by the commanders and the cauldron drummers, who transmitted orders from the leaders to the troops. Light or semi-coloured mules were even more prominent in key combat positions (Dent 1972).

In modern Turkey, the mule continues to be of cultural importance as it is represented in folk tales and dances throughout much of the country (Aydin 2012). Therefore, mules are an important element of Turkey's cultural, social and economic heritage and have continued to make an important contribution to national biodiversity and sustainable production in rural areas throughout history. In addition to domestically bred mules, there has probably always been significant cross-border movement of animals. This may have been the case, especially in the east and southeast of the country where Kurds also live in Iraq and Iran neighboring Turkey (Yilmaz and Wilson 2012^b).

PRESENT SITUATION

In the middle of twentieth century there were 170,000 mules in Turkey. This number nearly doubled in the following years by reaching 324,000 in 1977. The numbers have been held at this level for another five years since the mule population was in a steady decline. In 2009,

the number of mules in the country was the lowest recorded, the actual number being around 51,500 mules (Anon. 2011^c). It is unknown why mules, whose numbers began to decline rapidly since the early 1970s, retain their numbers longer than donkeys (Yilmaz and Wilson 2012). Mules are the fewest horses in Turkey, representing about 11% of the total complement of this group, compared to 39% of horses and 50% of donkeys (Yilmaz and Wilson 2012^b).

Nowadays mules are mainly found in four regions of Turkey:

1. Southeast and eastern Turkey, under the Southeast Taurus Mountains, in Batman, Şırnak, Mardin, Hakkari and Van, almost entirely Kurdish-owned areas in the provinces close to the national border with Syria, Iraq and Iran.
2. Southern Turkey, in the hilly and mountainous regions of the Central Taurus Mountains in Mersin (formerly Icel) province, mostly owned by the pastoral and semi-nomadic Yörük people.
3. In western Turkey, south of the Sea of Marmara and east of the Mediterranean, and around the Kaz Mountains in Balıkesir province, where the main owners are Yörüks.
4. North-central Turkey, south of the Black Sea and at the northern foothills of the Canik Mountains in Ordu province (Yilmaz and Wilson 2012^b)

Most mules are not bred in the country, but are imported from neighboring Iraq. These imports are technically illegal because there is little or no formal transfer of place or owner when animals enter Turkey. In the provinces of Şırnak, Mardin and Van in the southeast, all animals are from Iraq. Hakkari province has borders with both Iraq and Iran, but it is only Iraq that provides mules to Turkey here. In these provinces, mules are bred only near the borders of the country (Yilmaz et al. 2014).

All mules in the Mersin region are imported from Iraq to Turkey and pass through the east/southeast collection area before being brought to Mersin. Even more surprising is the fact that the Balıkesir mules also came from distant Iraq and were later transported to the far northwest of Turkey. Ordu province seems unique in Turkey as it is the only mule assembly area where mules are raised in the 21st century. Here local donkey jacks are used to produce mules on Canik horse mares. Canik's main route is north-central Anatolia close to the Black Sea and is mainly in the Canik Mountains, and this horse breed is named after him. It is a very confident-footed horse that is well adapted to rugged and mountainous areas where it nests (Yilmaz et al. 2012^a) and is therefore probably an ideal ancestor for mules.

WHAT DO MULES DO?

At the present time mules transporting some foodstuffs such as sugar from Turkey to these countries bring fuel oil from Iran and cigarettes from Iraq on their return. In smuggling to Iraq, the mule is accompanied by its owners along the way. However, in smuggling to Iran, mules are released in Iranian lands close to the Turkish border, and the mules spontaneously reach Turkish lands. These intelligent animals certainly know the way and find their way at night without being confused (Yilmaz et al. 2014).

About a century ago the mule was used by both Ottoman and Western armies in the First World War (1914-1918). Little is known about their actual use by the Ottomans, but there is substantial information about their use by the Western allies. Elements of the Indian Army and the Australian and New Zealand Army Corps (ANZAC) made extensive use of mules in the battles around Gallipoli in the summer and autumn of 1915. It was thought to be the

Dardanelles Campaign from Jewish refugees from Syria and the first all-Jewish unit to enter the war in almost two millennia. Led largely by Sikhs, who refused to leave because they thought their successors would not take good care of their mules, the Indian Mule Corps consisted of eight units of 96 mules, each carrying ammunition, medical supplies, and signaling equipment (Alexander 1917, Yilmaz and Wilson 2012^b). It has been said that horses or motor vehicles cannot face the challenges of Anzac (Bean 1921). In 1915 there were 1,889 mules at Anzac Cove, of which at least 296 were killed and 599 injured (Alexander 1917, Yilmaz and Wilson 2012^b).

It is noteworthy that mules in modern Turkey are mainly found in a country that can be considered classic for this durable and sturdy-footed breed. There are few or no roads in these mountainous areas, so motor vehicles are largely hindered and horses have insufficient strength, endurance and agility to work here. This superiority of mules in more difficult terrain can be expected from their location in other countries such as the Nepal highlands, high-altitude natural resource poor areas of central Mexico (Velázquez et al. 1998, Yilmaz and Wilson 2012^b), and Lesotho, where mules are used at altitudes and are not suitable for wheeled transport in forestry conditions (Dlamini and Sigwane 2007, Yilmaz and Wilson 2012^b).

Another feature of mules in Turkey is their relations with minority groups such as Kurds and Yörüks. These groups are also poor in natural and financial resources. In the Kurdish regions of eastern and southeastern Turkey, mules are used extensively in cross-border trade, much of which is illegal. The main goods transported are oil products of Iranian origin and cigarettes from Iraq. Animals are often left unattended outside of Turkey and left unaccompanied to return home alone. While national borders are patrolled by the military, there seems to be some tacit acceptance of smuggling. The reasons for this may be related to the European Union accession process, as well as to the authorities' belief that further repression of the Kurds will lead to greater separatist activities and terrorism (Yilmaz and Wilson 2012^b, Yilmaz et al. 2014).

The rocky areas of the Southeast Taurus Mountains, in which Mersin Province is located, are largely unsuitable for agriculture, but are well afforested. The Yörük people continued their semi-nomadic and pastoral existence and used their mules to transport wood and other forest products here, contributing to their income and improving their livelihoods (Yilmaz and Wilson 2012^b, Yilmaz et al. 2014).

Although Balıkesir has some hilly and mountainous areas in the northwest, the environment here is less demanding than Mersin and the Mediterranean influence allows olive cultivation. In addition to the transportation of wood and forest products, the nomads also rent their mules to local farmers for the transportation of life and olive oil (Yilmaz and Wilson 2012^b, Yilmaz et al. 2014).

Canik Mountains of Ordu province have better soils than many parts of Turkey. Hazelnut is an important agricultural output from this region and its transport is one of the main activities of mules (Yilmaz and Wilson 2012^b, Yilmaz et al. 2014).

Others are used by cattle and sheep breeders who go to the mountains to carry camping gear and other small necessities. Many mules in Turkey are accustomed to old age. In a study conducted in the southeast of the country, 24% of mules were over the age of 10 and some were still used over the age of 30 (Yilmaz and Wilson 2012^b, Yilmaz et al. 2012^b). In other countries, use is common at an older age: in Morocco, for example, 54% of mules slaughtered for meat were 10-15 years old and 19% were older than 15 years (Belemlih and Chemlal 2007, Yilmaz and Wilson 2012^b).

CONCLUSIONS

Mule has been around for four thousand years in Turkey. They were used in warfare, as both riders and pack animals, and in agriculture and transport. They have lost much of their former value, replacing mechanical and electrical energy in many areas. They still retain some importance in hilly and mountainous areas, especially for resource-poor minority groups. The downward pressure on the figures (the mule population from 51,500 animals in 2009 was less than one-sixth of the 324,000 heads found in the country in 1977) will continue, and this, combined with the limited and fragmented geographical distribution of the species within the country, will add to some of Turkey's national heritage and will adversely affect pet biodiversity. However, their breeding should be encouraged and supported as part of the country's historical and cultural heritage.

REFERENCES

- Alexander, H.M. 1917. *On Two Fronts, Being The Adventures Of An Indian Mule Corps In France And Gallipoli*. William Heinemann, London.
- Anderson, W. S. 1939. Fertile Mare Mules. *Journal of Heredity* 30:548-551.
- Anonymous, 2011^a. www.britishmulesociety.org.uk (accessed on 28.03.2011)
- Anonymous, 2011^b. en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mule (accessed on 2.04.2011)
- Anonymous. 2011^c. *Turkey in statistics 2011*. Turkish Statistical Institute, Ankara.
- Aydin, A.F. 2012. The donkey and mule in Turkish folk songs and dances. Paper presented at the Donkey Conference @ SOAS, 8-9 May 2012, School of Oriental and African Studies, London University, London England. <http://www.soas.ac.uk/history/conferences/donkey-conference/>. Accessed June 15, 2012.
- Bean, C. E. W. 1921. *Official History Of Australia In The War Of 1914–1918: Volume I – The Story Of ANZAC From The Outbreak Of War To The End Of The First Phase Of The Gallipoli Campaign, May 4, 1915*. Angus and Robertson, Sydney.
- Belemlih, A., and Chemlal, M. 2007. Working Practices In The Trade In Horses, Donkeys And Mules Slaughtered In Morocco. Pp.147–152. In: *The Future For Working Equines: The Fifth International Colloquium On Working Equines: Proceedings Of An International Colloquium Held At Addis Ababa University, 30 October-2 November April 2006*, Addis Ababa, Ethiopia (Pearson, R.A., Muir, C.J. and Arrow. M.F. eds.), The Donkey Sanctuary, Sidmouth.
- Dent, A. 1972. *Donkey: The Story Of The Ass From East To West*. George G. Harrap & Co. Ltd, London.
- Dlamini, A.M., and Sigwane, T.S. 2007. Management and welfare of draught mules in Swaziland. pp.189–191. In: *The Future for Working Equines: The Fifth International Colloquium on Working Equines: Proceedings of an International Colloquium held at Addis Ababa University, 30 October-2 November April 2006*, Addis Ababa, Ethiopia (Pearson, R.A., Muir, C.J. and Arrow. M.F. eds.), The Donkey Sanctuary, Sidmouth.
- Jones, W. E. 1985. A Fertile Female Mule. *Journal of Equine Veterinary Science* 5 (2): 87-90.
- Joshi, B.R. 2003. Improving the health and working conditions of pack mules: experiences from the hills and mountains of Nepal. pp.149-158. In: *The Future for Working Equines: The Fifth International Colloquium on Working Equines: Proceedings of an International Colloquium held at Addis Ababa University, 30 October-2 November April 2006*, Addis

- Ababa, Ethiopia (Pearson, R.A., Muir, C.J. and Arrow. M.F. eds.), The Donkey Sanctuary, Sidmouth.
- Kugler, W., Grunenfelder, H.P., and Broxham, E. 2008. Donkey breeds in Europe: inventory, description, need for action, conservation (Report 2007/2008). Monitoring Institute for Rare Breeds and Seeds in Europe/SAVE Foundation, St Gallen.
- Michel C. 2004. The *perdum*-mule, a mount for distinguished persons in Mesopotamia during the first half of the second millennium BC. pp.190–200. In: PECUS. Man and animal in antiquity. Proceedings of the conference at the Swedish Institute in Rome, September 9-12, 2002 (Santillo Frizell, S. ed.), The Swedish Institute in Rome, Rome.
- Rossel, S., Marshall, F., Peters, J., Pilgram, T., Adams, M.D., and O'Connor, D. 2008. Domestication of the donkey: Timing, processes, and indicators. *Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci.* 105: 3715–3720.
- Sonmez, R. 1973. At Yetistirme (Ozel Zootezni). EgeUniversitesi Ziraat Fakultesi Yayinlari: 141. EgeUniversitesi Basimevi, Izmir.
- Thiruvenkadan A. K., Kandasamy, N. and Panneerselvam. 2008. Coat colour inheritance in horses. *Livestock Science*, 117: 109-129.
- Trujillo, J. M., Stenius, C., Christian, L. C. and Ohno S. 1991. Chromosomes of the horse the donkey and the mule. *Chromosoma*, Volume 13, Number 3, 243-248.
- Velázquez, L., Zamora, V.Y., and Arriaga, C. 1998. Las mulas y caballos de trabajo en sistemas de producción campesinos del altiplano central de México: el caso de una comunidad Mazahua del Estado de México. pp.239-247. In: 3er Coloquio Internacional sobre Equidos de Trabajo, 5 al 9 octubre de 1998, Universidad Nacional Autonoma de México. Facultad de Medicina Veterinaria y Zootecnia, Universidad Nacional Autonoma de México, (Guerrero, M.M.E., Hernández, R.M.P. and Vargas, A.M. eds.), Ciudad de México.
- Yarkin, I. 1962. Atcilik. AnkaraUniversitesi Ziraat Fakultesi Yayinlari:40, Ders Kitabı:20. AnkaraUniversitesi Basimevi, Ankara.
- Yilmaz, O., Wilson R. T. 2012^a. The Domestic Livestock Resources of Turkey - Mules. 8th May 2012, The Biennial Donkey and Mule Conf. SOAS of London Uni. London, UK.
- Yilmaz, O. and Wilson, R. T. 2012^b. The Domestic Livestock Resources of Turkey: Status, Use and Some Physical Characteristics of Mules. *Japanese J. of Equine Sci.* 23 (4): 47-52.
- Yilmaz, O., Boztepe, S., and Ertugrul, M. 2012^a. Phenotypic characteristics of Turkish mules. *Int. J. Agric. Biol. (Pakistan)* 14: in press.
- Yilmaz, O., Boztepe, S., Ertugrul, M., and Wilson, R.T. 2012^b. The domestic livestock resources of Turkey: national horse history, breed descriptions and conservation status. Proceedings of 53rd Annual Meeting of EAAP, 29 August 2012, Bratislava Slovakia.
- Yilmaz, O., Boztepe, S. ve Ertugrul, M. 2012^a. Phenotypic Characteristics of Turkish Mules. *International Journal of Agriculture and Biology*.14: 450–452.
- Yilmaz, O., Boztepe, S. and Ertugrul, M. 2012^b. Some Phenotypic Traits of Mules Raised in Sirnak Province of Turkey. *Journal of Livestock Science*.3: 94-97.
- Yilmaz, O. and Wilson, R. T. 2013. The Domestic Livestock Resources of Turkey: Occurrence and Control of Diseases of Horses, Donkeys and Mules. *Journal of Equine Veterinary Science*. 33 (12): 1021-1030.

Yilmaz, O., Coskun, F., Erturk, Y. E. and Ertugrul, M. 2014. Use of Mules in East of Turkey. Hydra Mule and Donkey Conference, Greece 10-12 October 2014. SOAS of London University, London, UK.

Yilmaz, O. 2016. Some Body Measurements of Turkish Mules. The SOAS Mule and Donkey Conference, London 8-9 October 2016. SOAS of Uni. of London, London, UK.

CUSTOMARY LAW: CONTENT AND FUNDAMENTALS

Nurushova Gunel Giyas

Baku State University, Faculty of History, PhD student, Baku, Azerbaijan

ABSTRACT

From the earliest times, there have been norms in human society regulating mutual relations. Such norms have become a pattern as a result of long-term repetition from generation to generation and have gradually become the legal system of any society for being continuous feature. Such a legal system, characterized by its concreteness, conventionality and legacy, also improved and along with regulating people's behavior, played a key role in solving important, decisive issues and making important decisions in society. In this regard, customary law was the primary law system came across in most of the world's peoples and had been the basis of many social institutions. It is interesting that the absence of any written norms, the customs based on the habits formed the core of such an ancient, primitive law system. Each generation is obliged to hand down the customs to the next generation which passed down them by their ancestors. So that, even the strictest rules of ancient customs had not disappeared for a long time. Later, even when the legal system was formed as a written, statutory regulation, some features of customary law were preserved. In present times, it is possible to see remains of customary law in most peoples of the world. In the provinces, remote rural regions, social norms based on customary law are more observed than in urban areas. In general, this law is based on the features of the integrity, unity, collective responsibility and fairness of society.

Keywords: customs, law, society, peoples of the world, norms, behavior

INTRODUCTION

Customary law can be considered as a preliminary version and form of law. Of course, customary law has changed in some respects depending on the existing socio-political environment, but the interests of the ruling class have always been protected, and even spontaneous customs have at least reflected the supremacy of patriarchal rules. People preferred the customary law, which had been engrained in their minds for a long time before and after the establishment of the state, and at times they considered it important to follow custom, preferring the state law to it. Another interesting point is that at early phases of the state formation it was considered normal to apply customary law in cases of the law not to cover all areas and lawlessness.

MATERIALS AND METHODS

The scientific explanation of the concept of "customary law", known among scholars since ancient times, began in the XIX century. Until modern times, terms such as "archaic law, ancient law, informal law, early law, tribal law, primary law, people's law, primitive law, local law, traditional law, etc., and various explanations have been used to explain customary law.

For a long time, customary law was associated with the establishment of state bases of power. Even in the legal literature, this law was considered basic as the pre-state norm and was accepted as the oldest section of law, even after their sanction by the state. Some researchers explain customary law as a set of legal traditions representing the interests of the ruling class or the state, others interpret it the initial form of historically formed positive law [1, 39-45]. At the same time, in the period of primitive community society, established customary law regulated relations between tribes and community members, and by the end of the period, individuals, not the whole community, were considered as subjects of it. In the period of state formation, customary law evolves and the legal system emerges at the stage of early class society. From this stage, a formal legal system representing the interests of the state have begun to suppress this law.

As a rule, traditional societies are based on the preservation of sociocultural communications, a stable social structure accompanied by the regulation of all spheres of life on the basis of traditions and

hierarchy. Sometimes, it was even possible to reach a socio-economic agreement by any verbal agreement [6, 233-245]

Of course, such systemic functions have played an important role in the socio-cultural and social life of Azerbaijani society from ancient times to modern times. Even if some of them disappear and are regulated by state law, others them have retained their relevance to modern times [4, 89-101].

Although Caucasian Muslims have different local characteristics in their traditions, it has traditionally been possible to see many common aspects in the legal system. If we look at the history of the region before the Russian occupation, we can see that custom has always played a key regulatory role. Many problems were solved by the decision of the judge of the village or community court, the advice and consent of the elders. As a rule, in contrast to the closed meetings, a meeting was held in the courtyard of the Juma Mosque, in the center of the village, and meetings and trials were held in the mother tongue. The decision was mostly written in Arabic or in the native language using Arabic alphabet. In order to gain legal status to the written document, the names of the witnesses from the meeting participants, verses from the Quran were written and confirmed by seal and signature [3, 6-9]. Such documents related to customs were kept in mosques; more important documents were intertwined on the walls of public buildings and mosques.

The interesting thing is that a person who violates a habit was not punished alone; the family, tribe, and village, etc. to which he belonged were responsible as well. Such an approach showed the importance of collective responsibility, the behavior of every member of society for the collective. This was, on the one hand, an expression of bigotry and, on the other hand, an indication of the importance for everyone to abide by the prohibitions [2, 101-109]. Therefore, the damage caused to another tribe, community, or ancestry was compensated by the opposite side, a fine in the prescribed amount was paid as a ransom for cattle, wheat or money. At times, those who violated the custom were expelled along with their families. The most serious crimes were theft, abusing the honor and identity, or murder. The "blood money" was paid for the death, sometimes the killer was killed, and his parents' property was confiscated [3, 6-9].

In traditional societies, methods such as forgiving the wrongdoer and leading him to the right path were also used. The most common of these methods was swearing on the Holy Qur'an. In society, overseeing this system has always been the responsibility of an elder or an old woman. Therefore, the role of elders in society could also be an indicator to what extent moral values are preserved. It is known that in primitive society, the human collective was led by a "great mother" or "great father", and then ancestry, tribal leadership were formed. In any case, the protection of customs and unity, regulation of the relationship not only between people, but also between human and nature, were carried out by the same elders. In the most difficult situations for the whole collective, it was possible to cope with the difficulties caused by any nutrition- or climate-related natural disasters at the expense of traditions under parental supervision. Therefore, members of the community usually tried not to break the prohibitions of customary law. It was by customary law that the division of labor within the tribe was regulated, various family problems were solved, the security of the whole ancestry was ensured, in short, integrity and unity were preserved. Customary law and the society of elders who control this right are our moral values we have been able to bring to this day.

Another interesting aspect of customary law was its local character. The existing rules had legal force only in the community, in the village. However, the rules of conduct within the family were performed in accordance with unwritten, unofficial law and custom. Pre-Islamic family life norms of customs such as respect for elders, sexual discrimination, endogamy, circumcision, etc. remained so even after the adoption of Islam because they were not against the Sharia.

Although the population of Azerbaijan adhered to the rules of Islam, in our regions, the widespread use of different clothing, musical instruments, and women's freedom within the family and in society was sharply manifested. In this regard, there was a different environment in Azerbaijan, such as the

struggle of Islamic and non-Islamic norms and their coexistence. This can be clearly seen in folk literature, especially in the epos "Dada Gorgud". In the epos, it depicts the elder - Dada Gorgud, who serves for preserving, observing and transmitting customs as a symbolic indicator of the institution of elders, it explains in detail the position of women in society, the relationship between parents and children, the older and younger generations, family and intergenerational relations as well.

The strength of institutions in society is made possible by a special control mechanism. Rules of conduct of people is regulated by a special control system in social institutions. This often leads to standardization. T. Parsons, American researcher (1902-1979) explains the customary law as "social control". According to him, this control mechanism prevents any negative tendencies that may occur in people's behavior and activities [6, 78-82]. Thus, as an unwritten customary law, he implies the possibility of normalization of human interactions as a result of social control. It is known that the activities of each person or each social group in society can not be left out of social control. Of course, public morality, customs and traditions take precedence in this control. They are interconnected as a system and have a self-regulatory function.

Customary law is a form of a more general system of regulatory influences on people's behavior by society. Its distinctive feature is regularity, formality, determination of normative requirements, provision of sanctions. The customary law system is also accepted as a social norm in modern times. These norms are reflected in ideology, philosophical and ethical views, artistic creativity and so on. Customary law regulates people's behavior socially and can create social order.

RESULTS

In Azerbaijani society, like other Caucasian peoples, there was a generally accepted customary law, which was associated with the sociocultural development of its local inhabitants. Most of the moral norms have reached modern times in customs, traditions and rituals. It is interesting that customs often become a settled system, an adopted code in the form of the mentality of each nation. Customary law performs a number of socio-cultural functions. The main functions are these such as integrative - regulation of family and intra-ethos relations, peacemaking - resolving conflicts between different societies and ethnic groups, communicative - controlling the mutual transmission of identical taboos and instructions between individuals and social institutions, identification - allowing to understand belonging to any sociocultural group.

DISCUSSION

Customs are ancient norms and they have become a habit because they are repeated continuously for a long time. Certain behaviors have gradually become a pattern in this way and created a socio-legal norms in society. Such norms, passed down from generation to generation, required everyone to behave in the same way. Because such behavior was considered right by the ancestors and its violation was unacceptable. The customary law, which was unwritten, mostly oral, and strictly enforced, was considered equally legal for all members of society. Therefore, it is stated that the law has formed on the basis of the customary law.

CONCLUSION

In the whole Caucasus, customary law has the same meaning, although it is used in "urf, haqq, tora, khel, batl" and other expressions. In this regard, it was possible to encounter similar common customs and behaviors in a number of issues among the Muslim population, including Azerbaijan. This law includes the supremacy of the elders institution, customs such as hospitality, fatherhood, generosity and so on. Unlike Islamic law and the European legal system, customary law assigns collective responsibility for any violation of the law. This is one of the important factors in maintaining the unity of society.

REFERENCES

1. Artemova O.U. 1987. Personal and social norms in the early primitive community. M., Science, ., 204 s
2. Bobrovnikov V.O. 2002. Muslims of the North Caucasus: custom, law, violence. Essays on the history and ethnography of the law of Nagorny Dagestan. M .: Eastern literature, . - 368 p.
3. Islam in the territory of the former Russian Empire. Encyclopedic Dictionary. 2001. Issue 3. - M .: Publishing company "Eastern Literature" RAS, 184 p.
4. Misrokov Z.Kh. 2002. Pages of History. The phenomenon of Adat and Muslim law of the peoples of the North Caucasus in the processes of transformation of Russian statehood (XIX - early XXI centuries). M .: Nauka, p. 113
5. Pozdnyakov E.A. 2016. Philosophy of State and Law. M., ed. Whole World, 344 p.
6. Parsons T. 2018. Social system. - M .: Academic project - 529 p.

ECONOMIC AND STRATEGIC INTEREST OF CHINA AND INDIA IN CENTRAL ASIA

Rehana Kanwal

P.h.d Scholar, Department of Islamic Studies, National College of Business Administration and Economics, Lahore, Pakistan.

ABSTRACT

Politically, economically, strategically and geographically Central Asia is regarded as the Heart of Asia. This region is the hub of the natural resources. It becomes a battle ground of those states which have interest in its hydrocarbon reserves. China being the neighboring country of Central Asian Republics and being an industrially advanced country is in dire need of the oil and gas reserves of Central Asia. India being the agricultural and industrially flourishing and bloom state is eager and trying to secure its correspondence with Central Asian Republics. The paper examines the ongoing competition between China and India for the resources of Central Asia. It argues that like the “Great Game”, in the “New Great Game”, the Sino-India competition includes competition for access to resources, the development of military alliances and the use of strategic relationships with other powers to restrain the rise of the opposing nation. In this article, both China and India are described as competitors in this region for each other irrespective of different problems and obstacles.

Keywords: Landlocked region, Resources, Great Game, Strategic Interests, Economic Interests, Shanghai Corporation, Obstacles.

**STUDENT ACHIEVEMENTS IN YUNUS EMRE'S LITERARY WORK
RISALETU'N-NUSHIYYE**

Prof. Dr. Cem Tuna¹ & Graduate student Büşra Turan²

¹Recep Tayyip Erdogan University, Faculty of Education, Department of Educational Sciences, Rize, Turkey

²Recep Tayyip Erdogan University, Graduate School of Education, Department of Educational Sciences, Rize, Turkey

ABSTRACT

Yunus Emre is one of the greatest, most beautiful and most prominent values of Turkish language, literature, cultural history and spirit. One of his two known works is Risâletü'n-Nushiyye. The work can be considered as an instructive work, an educational book for followers and readers. In this work, six topics are covered in order: Spirit and Reason, Arrogance and Opinion, Anger and Wrath, Patience, Miserliness and Jealousy, Backbiting and Lies. In this study, the student achievements that should be found in a healthy individual and healthy society were examined in Yunus Emre's work called Risâletü'n-Nushiyye. The study is based on "Advices from Yunus Emre to a Passenger" prepared by Mustafa Tatçı and published by H Publishing in 2020. The study is based on document analysis, one of the qualitative research methods. The couplets in the 'Risaletü'n Nushiyye' were read and the research questions were answered. The lines related to the acquisitions that should be gained to the students were determined as findings, and content analysis, one of the qualitative data analysis, was applied to the findings. The data collected for this purpose is firstly as student achievements; It is conceptualized as using reason, contentment, humility, anger control, patience, generosity, truthfulness and love. Later, it was arranged logically according to the concepts that emerged and the themes explaining the data were determined as the definition, characteristics, results and solution of student achievements. As a solution, human greed must be combated and replaced by greed. Self-love and arrogance, which are superior to others, can be overcome with the support of good friends and teachers by imitating them. Humility should replace arrogance. Anger does great damage to the person's personality. Here reason guides the value of patience rather than anger. The stinginess and jealousy is a feature that puts people under stress and darkens the inner world of a person. Miserliness is poison, generosity is the antidote. When an individual shares his wealth with those in need, he can get rid of stinginess and jealousy. Gossip and lying are not inherited traits. It is a learned trait. The mind is a good guide and helper in this regard. The mind says that the solution is truth, when truth is the criterion of man, his actions and words will be true.

Keywords: Yunus Emre, Risâletü'n-Nushiyye, Student, Achievement.

INTRODUCTION

Yunus Emre is one of the classic figures of Turkish history and literature (Demirci, 2008). He is one of the greatest, most beautiful and most prominent values of Turkish language, literature, cultural history and spirit. He has represented the most beautiful Turkish language, the language of love and meaning of the Turkish nation for about seven hundred and fifty years. He is the perfect human model, the pole star in the history of love, happiness and eternity. He is the gift of the Turkish nation to humanity and also be one of great love, happiness, belief and aesthetic genius. (Tatçı, 2014). A rich heritage belonging to Yunus Emre, such as space, written and oral culture, and a sofa, has both local and universal characteristics (Yıldırım, 2021; Demirci, 2008).

Yunus Emre's poems were collected in his two known works, "Risâletü'n-Nushiyye and Divan". Risaletu'n-Nushiyye; It is an advice book that gives advice to a well-behaved, perfect human candidate on how to discipline his soul. Divan, on the other hand, is a work of poems about divine love and the perfect human being (Tatçı, 2014; Tatçı, 2020; Yıldırım, 2017; Avşar, 2013).

The narration of Yunus Emre leaves an impression on the reader and the listener. He creates deep meanings with few words, he does not deceive the word. He captures a powerful expression with the simple words it uses from the folk language and creates a vast world in minds and hearts. He embodies many abstract concepts that people have difficulty in comprehending and uses the principles of teaching from concrete to abstract and the clear use of language (Yıldırım, 2017).

In his hymns, Yunus Emre focused on universal concepts such as love, love, knowledge, morality, absolute truth, existence, existence, God, religion and human being discussed at all times and places. His works can be considered an immortal classic, as he presents unique views (Tatçı, 2014). He is a powerful person who knows how to make the light of the heart reflect on the hearts in the field of love in poetry (Kasım, 1979).

Human; It can be defined as a social creature that lives in a cultural environment as a society, has the ability to think and speak, can comprehend the universe as a whole, and can change and shape it as a result of its findings. One of the most important characteristics of man is that he is a being that can be trained. Human gains knowledge, skills, attitudes, values and habits through education and training. This process, which begins in the family in human life, continues at school, in the environment, and continues throughout life.

The Ministry of National Education prepares formal and non-formal education plans and programs in Turkey. The root values in the curriculum are justice, friendship, honesty, self-control, patience, respect, love, responsibility, patriotism and helpfulness (MEB, 2020). These values are covered more broadly in all courses.

MATERIALS AND METHODS

One of the two known works of Yunus Emre is Risâletü'n-Nushiyye. Risâletü'n-Nushiyye can be considered as an instructive work and educational book for disciples and readers. There is a perfect symbolism and allegory in the work. "The land of the heart, the soldiers of the soul and spirit, the sultan, the property, the throne, the sergeants, the spies, the messengers, the wise advisers, the thieves, the thief..." are used as symbols. This allegorical structure was consciously chosen by Yunus Emre to make the subject easier to understand. In this representative world, the symbols mentioned are identified and spoken. Here, the arts of simile, metaphor, diagnosis and intact are used.

In the introduction to the work, the creation of Adam, the four elements and the reason, faith and science are explained. Then, six topics are covered in order: Spirit and Reason, Arrogance and Conviction, Anger and Wrath, Patience, Miserliness and Jealousy, Backbiting and Lies. In this study, student achievements that should be found in a healthy individual and healthy society were examined in Yunus Emre's work called Risâletü'n-Nushiyye.

The subjects covered in the work concern everyone, from a head of state to an ordinary citizen who has to know how to live and behave at home and on the street. In this respect, the work is a bedside book for anyone who wants to know, find and be himself (Tatçı, 2020). Yunus Emre, who received a good madrasa education, influenced and educated Anatolian people and those on the path of Sufism for centuries with his mystical views (Y. Akyüz, 2020).

Therefore, he is considered a non-formal educator and his students can be considered as a whole society. Every education has a purpose and objective, in other words, its achievements. Earnings; It is a characteristic that is suitable to be expressed as a behavioral change or behavior that is decided to be gained through planned and organized experiences (Demirel, 2007). In this work, he tried to make the readers gain gains by providing value education to his students (Dinçer, 2016).

In the study, "Advices from Yunus Emre to the Traveler" prepared by Mustafa Tatçı and published by H Publications in 2020, "Yunus Emre Divan-ı Theology" published by H Publications in 2014, "Risâletü'n-Nushiyye ve Divan-ı Yunus Emre Karaman Copy"" prepared by Yusuf Yıldırım and published in Duru Bulgur Publications in 2017 was taken as a basis and other works were also used.

The study is based on document analysis, one of the qualitative research methods. The couplets in the 'Risâletü'n Nushiyye' were read and the research questions were answered. The lines related to the acquisitions that should be gained to the students were determined as findings, and content analysis, one of the qualitative data analysis, was applied to the findings. The data collected for this purpose were first conceptualized as using the mind, contentment, being humble, anger control, patience, generosity, truth and love, then organized in a logical way according to the emerging concepts, and the themes explaining the data accordingly were the definition of student achievements, its characteristics, The results were determined as the solution.

RESULTS

Yunus Emre states that there are two powers in human beings, the nafs and the spirit, and each of them wants to manage the emotional area called the heart. He explains that the nafs consists of bad habits such as greed, self-conceit and discord among people, and that it is necessary to get rid of these bad habits in the sight of Allah and in society.

Key arı can gerek şah hazretinde

İrilmadın tura sultan katında (Tatçı, 2020, 68)

(It is necessary to get rid of these bad habits in the sight of Allah and in society.)

The first achievement: Opinion. The first example is the fight against greed. Greed; man's constant desire to acquire property is to devote all his labor, effort and life to this path. A greedy person is not content with what he has, he is never satisfied. These people do not benefit the society, nor do they think about the Hereafter.

Yunus Emre, a non-formal educator, tells his students that a greedy person will fall into negative and bad situations. He recommends reason as a way out of this situation. Man is a thinking being, he can know himself, society and the universe through thinking. People who think about their own characteristics will be able to see their positive and negative aspects. He will be able to improve his positive aspects and will try to get rid of his negative aspects.

Gelüp aklun öninde tapu kıldı

Hak'a şükreyledi çün anı buldı (Tatçı, 2020, 71)

(The mind is a power of thinking, understanding and comprehension that needs to be consulted and asked for help.)

The mind listens, thinks, understands and comprehends the words of the client one by one and carefully. She reacts him not to worry and offers a solution. The solution is contentment,

contentment with what one has, lack of excessive love of possessions, and richness of the heart. When conviction comes, it drives away greed. Greed is poison, contentment is the antidote.

Anı gördi kaçır nefis haşeratı

Gör indi nitedür Halik sıfatı (Tatçı, 2020, 78)

(When conviction comes, it drives away greed. Greed is poison, contentment is the antidote.)

When conviction dominates the affective field of man, he finds peace. This peace will affect his life and he will be happy. People begin to lead a comfortable life.

Yunus Emre states that these words are unique and very valuable. He says that he must first fulfill these words, listen to his own advice and internalize it. Internalized words turn into behavior and have a greater impact on others. Here, there may be people who take Yunus Emre as a model, and they can learn by taking a model. Yunus Emre is the teacher of everyone without discrimination. He speaks the words to be said for the sake of Allah.

Niçe sözün varısa sana söyle

Has u am gönlünü şey'u'llah eyle (Tatçı, 2020, 88)

(Internalized words turn into behavior and have a greater impact on others.)

The second achievement: Arrogance. As a word arrogance, it means to consider oneself great, to be arrogant, to belittle others. It is forbidden in the Qur'an, and it is stated that Allah does not like arrogant people (Karagöz, 2010). An arrogant person is not mentally healthy. To be arrogant; It is a paranoid and narcissistic personality disorder (Köknel, 1999). It includes an egocentric, arrogant mindset and behavior, inconsiderate behavior towards other people, a lack of empathy, and an extreme need to get fans (Adler, 1989).

According to Yunus Emre, arrogance is one of the evil forces in the war of good and evil forces in man. Arrogance is like a bandit, what he does is evil to people. Arrogance is known to everyone as a negative personality trait. The arrogant person only boasts of himself in public.

Özinden özge kimseyi beğenmez

Yüce yerde turur aşağı inmez (Tatçı, 2020, 91)

(The arrogant person does not boast anyone without himself. He considers himself great.)

Arrogance is an empty thought, it is not right to linger with them. The profession of the arrogant person is to be arrogant, his thought is crude. Habits such as arrogance, hatred and hypocrisy should be disciplined (Tatçı, 2020). Arrogance should not be seemed as a goal, it is not beneficial, on the contrary, it is harmful. Skilled people who overcome their arrogance should be sought.

Hüner gözle hüner ere iresin

Er ile varasın dostı göresin (Tatçı, 2020, 99)

(If you associate with skilled people, you will be a skilled person. And you will reach the truth.)

Yunus Emre here focuses on the support of friends, teachers and teachers. Pursuant to the proverb, 'If you lie down with dogs you will rise up with fleas', it is an important way to look for those with good temperament, to find them and to establish friendships with them in the struggle of arrogance. One of the ways of learning is modelling (Eyyam, Doğruer & Meneviş, 2012). People need positive models to overcome their arrogance and be humble. Of course, over time, there will be an exemplary person who overcomes arrogance. The mind, which is the greatest helper of man, says that the remedy for arrogance is humility:

İşit imdi akıl ne der gör ana

Ki alçaklık durur meded canuna (Tatçı, 2020, 108)

(The mind says that: “the remedy for arrogance is humility”)

Çün alçaklık iriştı kibr erine

Bakadur bir kişiyi bin görüne (Tatçı, 2020, 108)

(When humility reaches the soldiers of arrogance, arrogance looks a thousand although it is only one person.)

Yunus Emre makes the following determination: What is rare is not what is seen less. Even a little humility is valuable. A little humility banishes a lot of arrogance. He who shows humility wins, overcomes arrogance, and humility prevails in his inner world. Peace in the inner world envelops the outer world. When arrogance is gone from the heart, it does not come back.

The third achievement: Patience. One of the bad habits in humans is anger. Anger; It is the anger, the feeling of revenge and the desire to punish, which a painful bad behavior awakens in the soul of the person (Karagöz. 2010). In the work; It is emphasized that no one can stand in the face of anger, that no one can see, that it is the only thing to kill, that it defies death, that as a hero it disrupts peace and order everywhere, and that he dries up wherever he goes.

Buşu dirler bana benem bahadır

Düzenlik bozmağa her yirde hazır (Tatçı, 2020, 116)

(Anger defies death, It looks like a hero that disrupts order everywhere.)

Anger can also be in the person who seems calm. It leads even those who are called saints astray. When there is an explosion of anger, the Sufi man has no face to look at anyone. Sufi regrets not being able to control his anger and apologizes. Anger is intertwined with people.

Yakın yirde turur sakın buşudan

Hak esrügi durur buşu unudan (Tatçı, 2020, 122)

(Anger is intertwined with people. When there is an explosion of anger, the Sufi man has no face to look at anyone.)

Unless one struggles with anger, if a person prays and reads the Qur'an, his deeds will not benefit. Worship should not remain in form. By living instead of talking, one can go down to the essence of truth.

Niçe devran kim anda rahle urdun

Okuyup aşr u ayet yolda turdun (Tatçı, 2020, 134)

(Unless one struggles with anger, if a person prays and reads the Qur'an, his deeds will not benefit.)

Mind asks who will restore the order that anger has disturbed. Defines the problem from the problem solving steps, collects information and reaches a solution. The solution is patience, patience is like a very strong, sharp sword. The anger that comes suddenly, without a trace, disappears when patience comes. When patience comes, order and peace come. The work of those who are friends with patience will be peace and pleasure. The person attains a state of psychological well-being. Patience is food for the soul, patience must be internalized.

Görilmez oldı izi belürmez

Niçe izi hiç tozı belürmez (Tatçı, 2020, 138)

(The anger that comes suddenly, without a trace, disappears when patience comes.)

Şunun kim dünyede sabr ola yarı

Safa vü zevk olur her lahza karı (Tatçı, 2020, 139)

(The work of those who are friends with patience will be peace and pleasure.)

The fourth achievement: Generosity. Stinginess; It is a feeling that drives the individual to the ambition of acquiring property and prevents them from spending and helping. It means refraining from doing goodness and generosity with the effect of this feeling (Karagöz, 2010). Jealousy, on the other hand, means that the individual wants the material and spiritual opportunities of others to be taken away from him or that those opportunities are passed on to him/her (Karagöz, 2010). Yunus Emre states that these two traits have been in man for a long time and should be protected from them. He says that people with this feature are stressed and devour themselves internally, although their bodies are strong. Thus, whatever a person does, he does to himself, his evil touches himself. Here again one has to struggle with oneself.

Bu ne haldür sana iy faydasuz can

Ki yokdur gayretün iy kaydasuz can (Tatçı, 2020, 150)

(Jealous people are stressed and devour themselves internally. Here again one has to struggle with oneself.)

The stingy person's hands are tied, just as the hands of criminals are tied, in other words, he does not go to spend. This is a bad feature. One way to get rid of stinginess and envy is to share profits. Man should observe himself and his environment. He should see his own shortcomings and see those in need around him. By giving zakat and charity, the inner world of a person begins to be cleaned. In fact, when zakat and charity are shared with the poor, it cleans and enriches the earnings.

Zekatsuz hayvanat sadakasuz mal

Ne berhurdar ola bunun gibi hal (Tatçı, 2020, 153)

(The stingy person's hands are tied. By giving zakat and charity, the inner world of a person begins to be cleaned.)

Another way to combat stinginess and jealousy is to stay away from bad friends. Just as those who make friends with the thief have no end, they will be harmed and even die. Greed and jealousy make a person worse than death. A person dies once, a jealous person dies a thousand times a day. If a person recognizes his own characteristics, he can save himself from bad comrades.

Sana yoldaş olanı sen bilürsen

Seni kurtarasın togru gelürsen (Tatçı, 2020, 155)

(If a person recognizes his own characteristics, he can save himself from bad comrades.)

A stingy person has entered the right of slavery by not sharing what he has. In fact, he violated human rights. It was as if a lightning bolt had struck the heart of the miser and darkened his heart. It killed the humanity inside. Those who cannot provide justice in themselves cannot provide justice in society. The miser is harmful to himself, the society and the state. The miser normally does not accept education. But a stingy and not jealous guide, a teacher leads him to reason. Reason listens to it and offers generosity as a solution. When generosity comes, stinginess goes.

Tamam oldu çü söz sahavet irdi

Hasenat yüzinden nikabı gitti (Tatçı, 2020, 182)

(When generosity comes, stinginess goes.)

If a person cannot afford to give something, at least he should take heart and make heart. This is generosity and the vein of stinginess is cut off. This is good counsel and it saves students from bad actions.

Uçugun yogısa gönüllere git

Boyun virmez tamarun katı sekit (Tatçı, 2020, 203)

(If a person cannot afford to give something, at least he should take heart and make heart.)

The fifth achievement: Truth. Gossip; It means to talk to someone in his absence with words that he does not like. In Islam, great value is attached to the principle of personal immunity from human rights. Accordingly, mentioning about a person's material, spiritual, moral and religious faults in his absence is considered gossip. Likewise, conversations about that person's family fall into the same category. In Islam, lying alongside gossip is forbidden and is a sin (Karagöz, 2010).

According to Yunus Emre, gossip is a learned and acquired habit, not an innate feature of human beings. It is a feature that humans should not have. If a person has this in himself, he has not been able to become a mature person with personality.

“Ki gaybet canıla kadimi degül

Ki gaybet kandası ademi degül” (Tatçı, 2020, 208)

(Gossip is a feature that humans should not have. If a person has this in himself, he has not been able to become a mature person with personality.)

Another feature of the gossip is that s/he is embarrassed, disgraced and condemned because s/he behaves undesirably in the environments where s/he is speaking. The act of speaking without the need to ask questions is finally defeated.

“Kimün kim agz’içinde gaybet ola

Sorusuz cümle yirde mat ola” (Tatçı, 2020, 209)

(The gossip's act of speaking without the need to ask questions is finally defeated.)

Those who gossip and lie eat and drink but are not happy. They don't even notice the beauties around them. For example, the sun rises, the moon comes out, but they miss these magnificent sights. It is as if they are in a sleep of heedlessness, in the dark, their eyes are closed to the realities of the world. In fact, their ears are also closed to the truth, they do not

want to hear the right words. These people do not accept criticism and always see themselves as justified.

“Gözün görmez dirisem kakıyasın

O tamardan beni hod dokıyasın” (Tatçı, 2020, 222)

(It is as if they are in a sleep of heedlessness. Gossipers and liars do not accept criticism.)

This person is a raw person who can't see the truth, can't hear, is visually and hearing impaired.

The goal cannot be reached without effort. Just as no product can be obtained without digging the soil, work is required to clean the heart. Achieving the goal is a process, it takes time, so be patient. A person should gain good habits and characteristics. This transformation depends on a lot of effort. The goal cannot be achieved just by dreaming, it is necessary to take action. Just as you buy sugar by paying money and eat sugar in this way, you have to pay a price to become a mature person. This price is that the person who gossips quits and starts speaking correctly, never giving up on it.

“Sagıncıla kişi şekker yimedi

Bahasın virmeyince alımadı” (Tatçı, 2020, 213)

(Just as you buy sugar by paying money and eat sugar in this way, you have to pay a price to become a mature person.)

The eye, which is one of the sense organs of human beings, is important in perceiving, interpreting and expressing the environment. The one who does not see cannot understand, and the heart cannot do anything when the eye does not see. There is a relationship between the eye and the heart, first the eye sees, then the taste of love. The longing for the one who is out of sight remains in the heart.

“Kamu sevgü dadın evvel göz alır

Anunçün hasreti gönülde kalur” (Tatçı, 2020, 226)

(First the eye sees, then the taste of love.)

In this case, the concept of eye training emerges. Eye training should be given to people and they should be made aware of looking correctly. If the eye looks at the environment and the universe from the heart, with the eye of the heart, then the ear will begin to hear the truth. He who hears the right speaks the truth, he is full of knowledge of the truth, he is well-equipped.

“Çü hakdan gayrı sözi yokdur ayruk

Hakı tuyan kişiler hakkıla tok” (Tatçı, 2020, 233)

(He who hears the God, speaks the God, he is full of knowledge of the God, he is well-equipped.)

A person in this situation realizes his mistake and listens to the voice of his conscience. His heart is narrowed, sad and regretful. Gossip and hatred forced and damaged him. Themind will be a real solution.

“Diyüp ahvalini derdin yiniler

Akıl şahenşehirinden çare diler” (Tatçı, 2020, 240)

(When a person realizes his mistake, The mind will be a real solution.)

That person presents all his characteristics and state. Thereupon, reason relegates the work to righteousness. He asks the truth to hurry to help this gossiping, lying person. The man of truth summons his soldiers. Truth immediately dispels gossip.

“Gör imdi togrulık bir neler eyler

Yıkar gaybet evin kara yir eyler” (Tatçı, 2020, 241)

(Truth immediately dispels gossip.)

When the criterion of man is righteousness and he looks at it with truth, all his bad behaviors will come out of him and he will be freed from his bad habits.

“Togurlık göstere göz bakışına

Ki senden cümle yavuz iş taşına” (Tatçı, 2020, 250)

(When the criterion of man is righteousness and he looks at it with truth, all his bad behaviors will come out of him.)

Integrity is valuable, it has a high value, it is in high places, it is in authorities. The righteous are in love with the truth. Those who love friendship find truth.

“Aşıkdur togrulığa togru canlar

Togurlığı bulur dostı sevenler” (Tatçı, 2020, 242)

(The righteous are in love with the truth. Those who love friendship find truth.)

DISCUSSION

Yunus Emre emphasizes that there are bad and good habits in the affective field of human beings, and the need to fight against them. He identifies vices as greed, self-loathing, anger, stinginess, jealousy, gossip, and lying. If these bad habits dominate a person's inner world and affective area, a person cannot be a mature person. They cannot become conscious of being human, to live humanely, and cannot live peacefully and happily. In fact, this person can be considered a raw, immature, inferior being because he has not achieved human dignity. His life is wasted and he dies in this world without any benefit or even as a loss.

As one of the first representatives of the tradition of giving advice in Anatolia (Akın, 2014), Yunus Emre, a non-formal educator, advises his students, those who listen to him, and those who read his books and poems, to consult their minds first. Mind; It has the power to distinguish right from wrong, good from bad, beautiful from ugly, right from wrong. When he evaluates the human situation with the criterion of reason, he will see the harms of bad habits and will be able to find a solution. Bad habits must be replaced by contentment, humility, anger management, patience, generosity, truthfulness, and love. Those who acquire these will be happy and peaceful, and it will be beneficial for everyone.

The conviction that Yunus Emre wants the student to have, being humble, anger control, patience, generosity, helpfulness, truthfulness, honesty, love, friendship, self-control, justice, responsibility are compatible with the general objectives of the Turkish Education System (E. Akyüz, 2020). It is aimed to raise individuals with spiritual values at every level of the Turkish education system. These values are compatible with the root values in the curriculum of the Ministry of National Education and the values in the Primary Education Religious Culture and Moral Knowledge course curriculum (MEB, 2017).

CONCLUSION

The greed in human beings must be combated and replaced by greed. Self-love and arrogance, which are superior to others, can be overcome with the support of good friends and teachers by imitating them. Humility should replace arrogance. Yunus Emre emphasized the importance of humility in reaching his goal in his own journey on the path of Sufism, and guided and gave education to the reader. Anger greatly harms the personality of the person and almost destroys the beauties that exist in the person. Reason guides the value of patience rather than anger. A little patience will be enough to control anger, and people will be able to attain inner peace. The stinginess and jealousy is a feature that puts people under stress and darkens the inner world of a person. Miserliness is poison, generosity is the antidote. When an individual shares his wealth with those in need, he can get rid of stinginess and jealousy. Gossip and lying are not inherited traits. It is a learned trait. In this case, the first thing to do is to reveal the current situation and think about it. He should reveal why he went these ways, what he gained and what he lost. By using his mind and consulting his mind, he can get rid of the harms of gossip and lies. The mind is a good guide and helper in this regard. The mind shows the solution is truth. Truth drives gossip and lies out of one's mind. In this case, the inside of the person is cleaned. When the criterion of man is righteousness, his actions and words will be correct. Truth becomes a way of life and dominates every moment of life.

REFERENCES

- Adler A, 1989. The art of knowing people. Istanbul: Say Distribution.
- Akin C, (2014). Yunus Emre's risaletü'n nushiyye and examples of advice type in Kyrgyz literature.
- Language and Literature Studies, P. 10, Summer 2014, 209-217 pp.
- Akyüz E, (2020). Children's law. Ankara: PegemA Publications.
- Akyüz Y, (2020). Turkish education history BC. 1000- a.s. 2020. Ankara: PegemA Publications.
- Avşar Z, (2013). Advice book. Ankara: Eskişehir 2013 Turkish World Capital of Culture Agency Publications.
- Demirci M, (2008). Rights and public love in Yunus. Istanbul: H Publications.
- Demirel O, (2007). Curriculum development in education. Ankara: PegemA Publications.
- Dincer M, (2016). Legacy of an anatolian sufi from a psychological perspective: case of dolphin emre. spiritual
- Psychology and Counseling, 1, 27-45. <http://dx.doi.org/10.12738/spc.2016.1.0004>
- Karagöz İ, (2010). Dictionary of religious concepts. ed. Ismail Karagoz. Ankara: Publications of the Presidency of Religious Affairs.
- November N, (1979). A complete and complete Yunus Emre Divan. Istanbul: Istanbul Maarif Bookstore.
- Köknel Ö, (1999). Mental health in daily life. Istanbul: Alfa Publishing and Distribution.
- MEB, (2021). Religious culture and ethics course curriculum. Available at: <http://mufredat.meb.gov.tr/ProgramDetay.aspx?PID=318>. (20.08.2021).

MEB, (2017). Primary education religious culture and ethics course (4, 5, 6, 7 and 8th grades) curriculum. Available at:

https://dogm.meb.gov.tr/meb_iys_dosyalar/2017_08/17174424_DinKulturu_4-8.siniflar_2010.pdf (20.08.2021).

MEB, (2020). Secondary school physics course (Grades 9, 10, 11 and 12) curriculum and guide. Available at:

https://ikhal.meb.k12.tr/meb_iys_dosyalar/34/14/300422/dosyalar/2020_05/22134306_201812103112910-ortaoYretim_fizik_son.pdf (20.08.2021).

Tatci M, (2014). Yunus Emre Divan-i Theology. Istanbul: H Publications.

Tatci M, (2020). Yunus Emre gives advice to the traveler. Istanbul : H Publications.

Yildirim Y (2017). Risaletü'n-nushiyye and divan-ı Yunus Emre Karaman copy. Istanbul: Duru Bulgur Publications.

***REVIEWING THE EFFECTS OF EASTERN MEDITERRANEAN'S MARITIME
DELIMITATION PROBLEMS ON THE SAFETY OF MARINE TRANSPORTATION
CORRIDORS**

Assoc. Prof. Dr. Gökçe Çiçek CEYHUN

Bursa Technical University, Maritime Faculty, Maritime Business Administration Dept.,
Bursa, Turkey

ABSTRACT

It is a well-known fact that the sharing of the terrestrial areas of the countries in the world has been completed to a large extent. On the other hand, the fact of increasing population and scarcity of resources has caused nations to pay more attention to sea areas. In this context, one of the important matter is the problem of delimitation of sea areas, especially between neighboring or riparian countries. Because these limitation problems are related to the security problems as well as the economic factors for the countries. Within the scope of this study, the effects of the delimitation problems of Eastern maritime boundaries on the safety of Turkey's marine transportation corridors were examined.

Keywords: Maritime delimitation, safety, Marine transportation corridors

INTRODUCTION

Security is one of the most vital elements for all countries in the world. When compared to ensuring the security of terrestrial areas, ensuring the security of maritime areas has brought about quite different problems for countries. This issue is very important in terms of affecting the international transport corridors, especially in regions where the maritime areas are not bordered by mutual or riparian countries.

According to the differences in the legal regime of the seas, various areas in the seas can be classified as follows (Sur, 2006, 295):

- Areas within national boundaries (inland waters, territorial seas, archipelago waters and, to a certain extent, international straits),
- Places outside national borders that, by the proclamation of the coastal state, have certain functional exclusive powers (contiguous zone, exclusive economic zone, exclusive fishing areas). The continental shelf, on the other hand, does not form depending on the declaration, but includes a large part that extends beyond the national borders.
- The open sea, which is not under the jurisdiction of any state, is a separate area where everyone can freely enter and benefit.

Transportation corridors are connection channels that enable transport networks to fulfill their functions effectively. At the same time, a transport corridor is a route through which a significant flow of freight is transported by a combination of different modes of transport. A transportation corridor is a set of roads formed from different combinations of sea, inland waterway, land and air transportation systems between hub centres (Çetin, 2007, 27). In this context, maritime transport routes are the corridors that connect the ports, which are the main element of the sea / land connection, at a distance of kilometers. Although they have strategic locations and mandatory transit points, they are subject to physical limitations (coasts, winds, sea currents, reefs, ice) and political limitations (Özer, 2010, 20).

In this study, the effects of the delimitation problems in the Eastern Mediterranean maritime areas on the security of the transportation corridors in this area were evaluated. Although it is possible to deal with these effects from many different perspectives, in this study, mainly the concepts of territorial waters, continental shelf and exclusive economic zone have been evaluated in terms of United Nations Convention on the Law of the Sea (UNCLOS).

1. CONCEPTS REGARDING MARINE JURISDICTIONS

In the doctrine, sea areas are divided into two main groups; the sea part subject to national jurisdiction and the sea part beyond the national jurisdiction. The prominent concepts in maritime areas within national borders are inland waters, territorial seas, archipelago waters and straits. Within the scope of this study, inland waters and territorial waters will be briefly discussed. The basis of the legal regime in inland waters, which is considered as a part of the state's territory, is the sovereignty of the coastal state. Moreover, territorial water is the term used to describe the sea belt that surrounds the land of a state and extends to the open sea (İnan, 1976, 13; Çelik, 1977, 111; Gündüz, 2009).

Sea areas outside national borders are contiguous zone, exclusive economic zone, continental shelf and offshore areas. This study will focus on the exclusive economic zone and the continental shelf. Exclusive economic zone (EEZ) is the sea area that gives exclusive economic rights and powers to the coastal state starting from the territorial sea baseline, the water layer remaining in the 200-mile wide sea area and the seabed and its subsoil (Toluner, 1996, 273; Sur, 2006, 333; Kuran, 2007, 215). Besides, the continental shelf is the sea bed of the landlocked country of the coastal state that continues naturally under the sea and its underground name (273; Akin, 1978, 251; Meray, 1979, 128; Pazarcı, 1984, 395).

2. LIMITATION OF SEA AREAS IN THE EASTERN MEDITERRANEAN

The Eastern Mediterranean is an important geography where the delimitation of all maritime areas has not been completed. Recent developments in interstate relations in the Eastern Mediterranean have placed the delimitation of sea areas with Turkey's neighbors in the Eastern Mediterranean among the priority issues that need to be resolved (Koç, 2006, 270). In this context, especially the practices of neighboring countries have been decisive in the development and progression of the delimitation problems.

However, a consensus could not be reached on how to share among the riparian states in the Eastern Mediterranean. The parties have different thesis about the maritime jurisdiction areas between Turkey and the Greek islands of Crete, Kaşot, Rhodes, Çoban, and Meis Island in the Eastern Mediterranean, which are located in the Aegean but one side faces the Eastern Mediterranean. Greece, which advocates that the islands also have a continental shelf and adopts the principle of equal distance, gives full effect to the islands in front of the Turkish coasts of Rhodes and Meis, and argues that they have the same sea area as Turkey and that the continental shelf delimitation between them should be made according to the principle of equal distance. On the other hand, Turkey states that maritime jurisdiction areas such as continental shelf or EEZ areas should not be recognized for the islands in the light of relevant legal principles in the delimitation between Greece and the Eastern Mediterranean. How much maritime jurisdiction the aforementioned Greek islands will have should not be determined according to the principle of equal distance, but in the light of the delimitation to be made between the mainland of Turkey and Greece. In addition, considering the long coasts of Turkey, these islands should not cut off the sea areas and should not block the extension of these areas in line with the principle of "not closing" (Avan, 2020, 91).

The Greek Cypriot Administration of Southern Cyprus (GCA) declared an EEZ with a width of 200 miles with the laws that came into force after being published in its Official Gazette dated April 5, 2004. GCA signed EEZ agreements with Egypt on February 17, 2003, with Lebanon on January 17, 2007, and with Israel on December 17, 2010. The Greek Cypriot government has made all these agreements on behalf of a single country, almost ignoring the Turkish Republic of Northern Cyprus (TRNC). Since the said restrictions cover Turkey's possible continental shelf and EEZ areas, Turkey has formally communicated its opposition to these agreements to the relevant countries and the United Nations (UN).

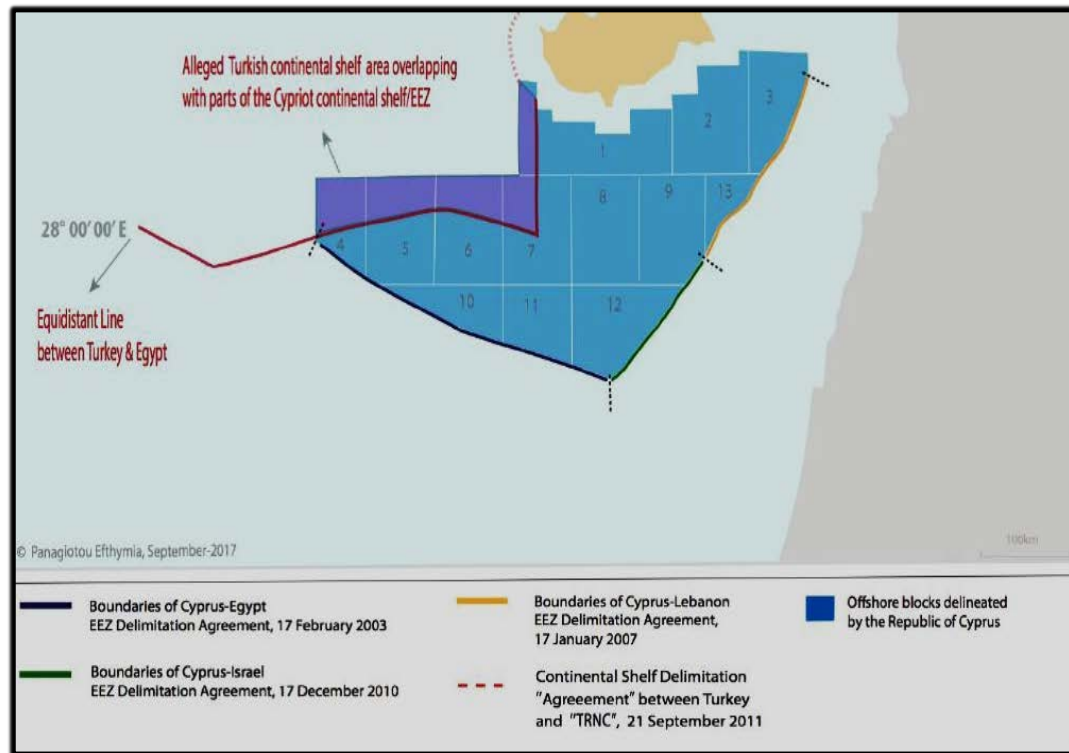


Figure 1. Map Application of the EEZ Border of the GCA

Source. Tsakiris vd., 2018, 12

GCA's declaration of an EEZ by ignoring the maritime jurisdiction areas in Turkey's maritime area violates Turkey's exploration and drilling rights on hydrocarbon deposits. In addition, 5 of the 13 parcels (parcels no. 1, 4, 5, 6, 7) granted by the Greek Cypriot administration to Israel conflict with Turkey's maritime jurisdiction areas brought Turkey and Israel face to face. After the oil/natural gas exploration license granted by GCA to Israel conflicted with Turkey's maritime jurisdiction areas, GCA was protested and said, "Turkey is not allowed to engage in unauthorized oil/natural gas exploration/drilling activities by foreign companies in these areas, as it was before. and will take all necessary measures to protect its rights and interests on the continental shelf (www.insamer.com). On the other hand, Turkey signed a continental shelf delimitation agreement with the TRNC on September 21, 2011. One day after this agreement, TRNC granted natural resource exploration and operation licenses to TPAO in seven blocks (determined parcels), and an agreement was reached between TPAO and TRNC on the details of exploration activities on November 2, 2011. Some of the licensed areas are located in the south of the island and coincides with the areas

determined by GCA. GCA of Cyprus sometimes expresses its objections on the grounds that the TRNC is not authorized to make this agreement and issue a license (Acer, 2009, 10).

Despite the reactions of Turkey and the TRNC, GCA started new tender processes in the 2nd, 3rd, 9th and 11th parcels at the beginning of 2012. TRNC concluded this second tender in November 2012, and parcels 2 and 3 were awarded to the partnership of Italian ENI and South Korean KOGAS companies, parcel 9 to French TOTAL, NOVA - TEC and GPB Global Resources, the subsidiary of Russian GAZPROM, to GPB Global Resources. The parcel 11 was tendered to the French TOTAL company (www.insamer.com).

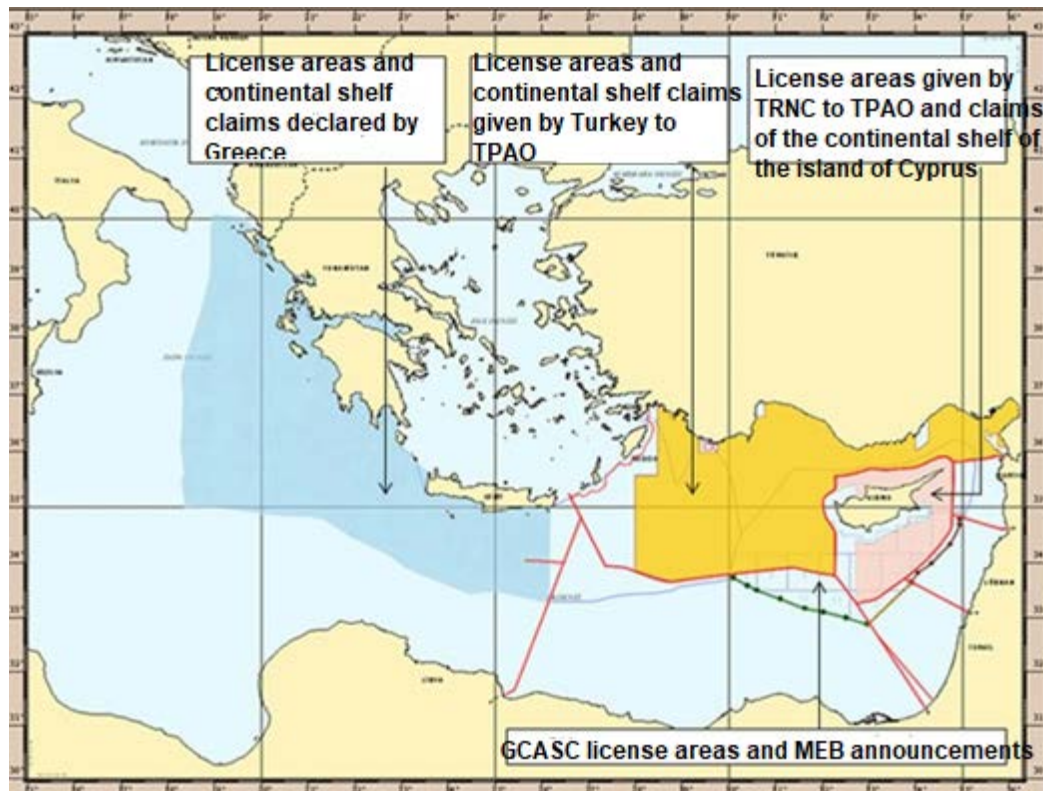


Figure 2. Turkey's Probable EEZ Border and License Areas

Source. www.insamer.com

After all these developments, the "Memorandum of Understanding on Security and Military Cooperation" was signed between Turkey and the Libyan Government of National Accord on November 27, 2019, and the "Memorandum of Understanding on the Limitation of Maritime Jurisdiction", which aims to protect the rights of the two countries arising from international law.

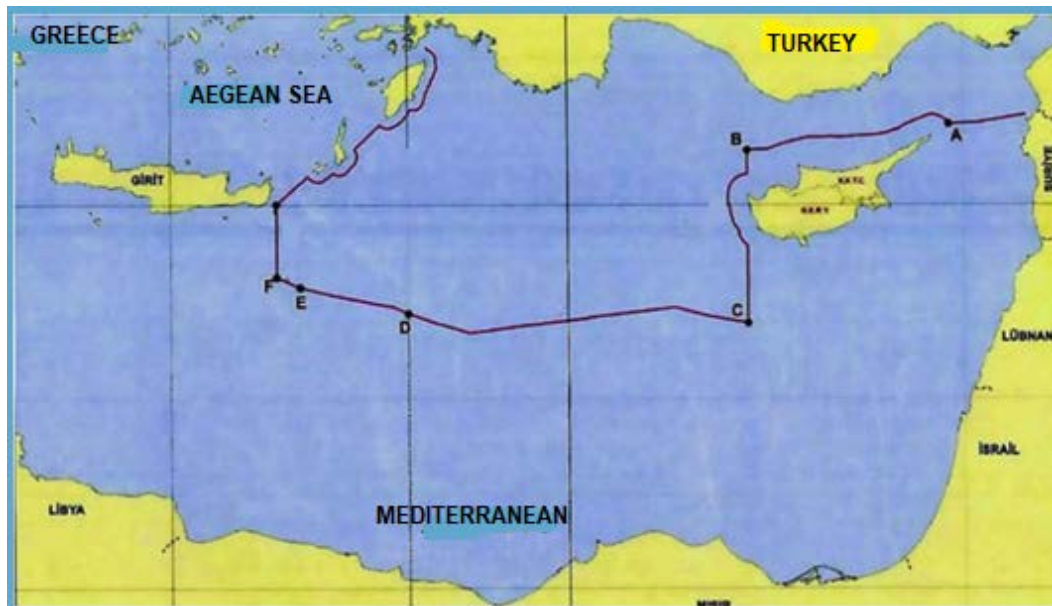


Figure 3. Maritime Jurisdiction Boundaries Between Turkey and Libya

Source. www.enerjiportali.com

Two important provisions of the agreement regarding delimitation are very important. The first of these is to state that in case of natural resources starting from the EEZ of one of the parties and extending to the EEZ of the other party (corresponding to the determined border), the two countries can cooperate on agreements to be formed for the exploitation of such resources (article IV, par. 2). The second important point is that if Turkey or Libyan states starts negotiations with the third state on the limitation of the EEZ, mutual information and negotiations will be held before making a final agreement (article IV, par. 3) (Acer, 2019, 12).

3. THE EFFECTS OF EASTERN MEDITERRANEAN'S MARITIME DELIMITATION PROBLEMS ON THE SAFETY OF MARINE TRANSPORTATION CORRIDORS

One of the factors that is considered to be important in the relationship between the problem of delimitation of maritime areas and transportation corridors is security. In the formation of transportation corridors, besides many factors such as time, cost, historical routes, legal and administrative conditions, the most important and priority issue is the security of the used sea area. The first condition of trade is to deliver the goods subject to maritime trade safely to the buyer. The transportation corridor is a route formed as a result of thousands of flights. The route followed by a ship or transport vehicle did not form a corridor, and the security problems experienced in all voyages prevented many geographically very convenient routes or land routes from turning into corridors. Activities such as war and piracy increase the insurance premiums of the ships and sometimes exclude the ships from insurance. High freight rates due to risk disable important transit routes that may be corridors. The concept of security, which is effective in the formation of transportation corridors, is also closely related to sea areas. In the declaration of territorial seas, which is an important indicator of sovereignty, this issue is worth examining carefully, since the security element affects not only the country that declared the territorial sea, but also the riparian countries.

Within the scope of this study, the Eastern Mediterranean marine transportation corridors examined in terms of the limitation problem in maritime areas are as in Figure 4. It is considered that the security of the ships using all these routes and these marine corridors is in interaction with the relations of the countries that have an effect on the delimitation of sea areas.

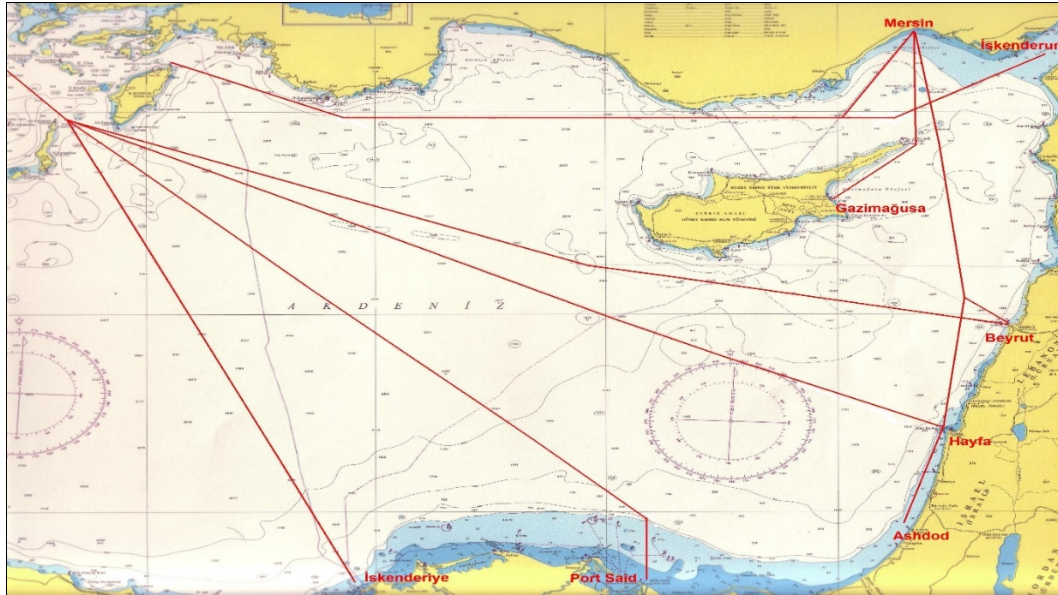


Figure 4. Marine Transportation Corridors Passing through the Eastern Mediterranean

Source. Author

Although regimes such as transit passage and innocent passage are foreseen according to the status of the sea, it is thought that the debate of belonging in the seas will also affect the commercial routes used in these passages. The fact that the routes to be followed by commercial ships in some sea areas are dependent on the transit regime affects the freedom in these areas. Therefore, it is possible that the decisions on the restriction will have an impact on international trade. In this sense, it is possible to establish this relationship mostly in terms of inland waters, territorial waters and the exclusive economic zone, which is gradually becoming the continuation of the territorial waters. Considering the activities and initiatives of the GCA regarding the exclusive economic zone, it is considered that having more rights in the Eastern Mediterranean will enable to show efficiency in the maritime trade routes passing through here.

One of the sources used to determine the relationship between maritime areas and maritime transport corridors in terms of maritime trade is UNCLOS (United Nations Convention on the Law of the Sea), which greatly affects international regulations on these issues. Articles 21 and 22 of UNCLOS are important for the connection between sea areas and transport corridors. When the aforementioned articles, which emphasize the rights of the coastal state especially in the territorial waters and explain how the ships of other states can be affected, are evaluated, although innocent passage is foreseen for commercial vessels, it is considered that the coastal state can also be effective in determining transportation corridors since it is authorized to regulate traffic separations.

For this reason, it is useful to mention the details of the “laws and rules of the coastal state regarding harmless passage” regulated in Article 21 (<https://www.un.org>):

1. The coastal State may adopt laws and regulations, in conformity with the provisions of this Convention and other rules of international law, relating to innocent passage through the territorial sea, in respect of all or any of the following:

- (a) the safety of navigation and the regulation of maritime traffic;
- (b) the protection of navigational aids and facilities and other facilities or installations;
- (c) the protection of cables and pipelines;
- (d) the conservation of the living resources of the sea;
- (e) the prevention of infringement of the fisheries laws and regulations of the coastal State;
- (f) the preservation of the environment of the coastal State and the prevention, reduction and control of pollution thereof;
- (g) marine scientific research and hydrographic surveys;
- (h) the prevention of infringement of the customs, fiscal, immigration or sanitary laws and regulations of the coastal State.

2. Such laws and regulations shall not apply to the design, construction, manning or equipment of foreign ships unless they are giving effect to generally accepted international rules or standards.

3. The coastal State shall give due publicity to all such laws and regulations.

4. Foreign ships exercising the right of innocent passage through the territorial sea shall comply with all such laws and regulations and all generally accepted.

Here, it is useful to draw attention to the a, b, c and d clauses of the 1st Article. Because the coastal state is responsible for regulating the safety of navigation and maritime traffic in its territorial waters, it can play a role in shaping the maritime transport corridors in this context and may make changes in the existing transport corridors when necessary due to its right to regulate maritime traffic. However, the coastal state aiming to protect maritime navigation aids and systems and other equipment and facilities may, if necessary, change the transit routes of the transport corridors by making changes in this equipment. On the other hand, the coastal state, which is responsible for both protecting submarine resources and taking necessary measures to prevent and reduce environmental pollution, may change the routes of transportation corridors in order to protect marine resources, if necessary. These situations, which give the coastal state the right to determine the transportation corridors, may cause disruption of international trade from time to time, and sometimes delays, albeit indirectly. Considering that it is so important for ships to arrive at loading and unloading ports on time, especially in the maritime sector, and even the ability to fully fulfill the obligations in the contracts is measured in hours, it is likely that the slightest change by the coastal state that may affect the transportation corridors will have an impact on international trade.

Another UNCLOS provision that is thought to be effective in determining the relationship between maritime areas and transportation corridors in terms of maritime trade is Article 22. It is considered that this article of the Convention has an impact on the relationship between maritime areas and transportation corridors in terms of arranging " Sea lanes and traffic

separation schemes in the territorial sea ". Indeed, according to Article 22 (<https://www.un.org>):

1. The coastal State may, where necessary having regard to the safety of navigation, require foreign ships exercising the right of innocent passage through its territorial sea to use such sea lanes and traffic separation schemes as it may designate or prescribe for the regulation of the passage of ships.

2. In particular, tankers, nuclear-powered ships and ships carrying nuclear or other inherently dangerous or noxious substances or materials may be required to confine their passage to such sea lanes.

3. In the designation of sea lanes and the prescription of traffic separation schemes under this article, the coastal State shall take into account:

- (a) the recommendations of the competent international organization;
- (b) any channels customarily used for international navigation;
- (c) the special characteristics of particular ships and channels; and
- (d) the density of traffic.

4. The coastal State shall clearly indicate such sea lanes and traffic separation schemes on charts to which due publicity shall be given.

Having the right to place lighthouses and navigation signs or being decisive about these signs and schemes is an indication that a country can have an impact on determining maritime transport corridors.

Although the regulations will not prevent maritime trade, having a say in these regulations gives the country an advantage in directing the maritime traffic. Although the purpose of establishing navigational aids, beacons and traffic passage patterns at sea is primarily to ensure the safety of transportation, establishing these regulations also brings about being effective in directing maritime traffic and having control power in determining commercial routes. A country that can be decisive in this sense will be in a stronger position in possible problems and this power will bring prestige to the country in question.

On the other hand, when it is considered in terms of ships carrying dangerous goods, it is seen that the rights of the coastal state are much more than the rights on other ships. Particularly, demanding tankers, nuclear powered ships and ships carrying radioactive substances or other inherently dangerous or harmful substances to use only the transportation routes determined by the coastal state, is considered as the most obvious indicator of the effectiveness of the coastal state in the transportation corridors, especially according to the 2nd paragraph of the 22nd Article.

CONCLUSIONS

With the effect of decreasing resources and increasing population, it is of great importance to have information about maritime jurisdiction areas and to engage in ownership activities in these areas. All the developments evaluated within the scope of this study are an indication that delimitation struggles in the maritime jurisdiction areas will increasingly continue between neighboring or riparian countries in Eastern Mediterranean. This problem has a high potential to affect the way the ships using the Eastern Mediterranean pass through the maritime transport corridors and the security of these corridors.

Finally, Turkey's practices regarding maritime jurisdiction areas and marine transportation corridors in this region, which is in a remarkable position in terms of its strategic location, have a great importance that will shape the future of the region by affecting the Eastern Mediterranean countries and all countries and all vessels using this sea area. For this reason, it is very important for all countries that are neighbors or riparian countries to the Eastern Mediterranean to closely monitor all developments in the region, to take necessary precautions, and to ensure the security of maritime transport corridors and maritime trade.

**This study includes some citations from PhD thesis of the author.*

REFERENCES

- Avan A. (2020). Doğu Akdeniz Deniz Yetki Alanları Sorunu: Türkiye'nin Politikası ve AB'nin Yaklaşımı, Avrasya Etüdleri, 91-118. (<https://www.avrasyaetudleri.com/uploads/articles/58/esengul-ayaz-avan.pdf>)
- Çelik, E. (1977). Milletlerarası Hukuk Cilt II/1, İstanbul Üniversitesi Hukuk Fakültesi, Fakülteler Matbaası, İstanbul.
- Çetin İ. (2007). Deniz Ticaretinin Geliştirilmesinde Ulaştırma Ağları İçin İlgi Analizleri :Türkiye-Almanya-Çin Uygulaması. Dokuz Eylül Üniversitesi, Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Doktora Tezi, İzmir.
- Gündüz, A. (2009). Milletlerarası Hukuk, Temel Belgeler- Örnek Kararlar. Beta, İstanbul.
- İnan, Y. (1976). Devletler Hukuku Bakımından Kıyı Suları Balıkçılığı ve Sorunları. Ankara İktisadi ve Ticari İlimle Akademisi Yayınları, No: 96, Ankara.
- Kuran, S. (2007). Uluslararası Deniz Hukuku. Arıkan Basım Yayın, İstanbul.
- Koç M.(2006). Uluslararası Hukukta Deniz Alanlarının Sınırlandırılması Gelişmeleri ve Türkiye'nin Deniz Alanlarının Sınırlandırılması. Doktora Tezi, Ankara Üniversitesi, Sosyal Bilimler Enstitüsü, Uluslararası İlişkiler Anabilim Dalı, Ankara, 2006, ss.270- 271.
- Meray, L. (1979). Uluslararası Hukuk ve Uluslararası Örgütler. Ankara Üniversitesi Basımevi, Ankara.
- Oxman H. (1999). The Application of the Straits Regime Under the UN Convention on the Law of the Sea in Complex Geographic Situations such as the Aegean Sea. International Conference The Passage of Ships Through Straits, Athens.
- Özer D.(2010). Türkiye'de Deniz Ulaştırma Politikaları Oluşturma süreci ve Stratejik Analizler, Dokuz Eylül Üniversitesi Yayınları, İzmir.
- Pazarcı, H. (1984). Kıta Sahaneliği Kavramı ve Ege Kıta Sahaneliği Sorunu, Aziz Köklü'nün Anısına Armagan. A.Ü. Siyasal Bilgiler Fakültesi Yayınları No: 535, Ankara.
- Sur M. (2006). Uluslararası Hukukun Esasları, Beta, İzmir, 2006.
- Toluner, S. (1996). Milletlerarası Hukuk Dersleri. Beta, İstanbul.
- Acer Y.(2019). Doğu Akdeniz'de Deniz Yetki Alanları ve Türkiye-Libya Mutabakatı, SETA Yayınları ISBN: 978-625-7040-02-0
- <https://www.enerjiportali.com/tag/deniz-yetki-alanlarinin-sinirlendirilmesine-iliskin-mutabakat-muhtirasi/> 10.09.2021
- <https://www.insamer.com/tr/uploads/pdf/rapor-dogu-akdeniz-enerji-rekabeti.pdf>, (13.09.2021)
- https://www.un.org/depts/los/convention_agreements/texts/unclos/unclos_e.pdf, (10.09.2021)

DEMOGRAPHIC CONDITIONS AND MIGRATION IN ARMENIA

Sargiyya İmamali

Research Fellow, Azerbaijan National Academy of Sciences, Caucasus Studies Institute,
Baku, Azerbaijan

ABSTRACT

The article examines the current demographic situation and migration processes in Armenia and its consequences. The author notes that the acceleration of migration processes in Armenia, which is in a difficult economic and social situation, has led to a demographic crisis in the country. At the same time, poverty, unemployment and low living standards in the country are accelerating migration processes in the country.

Keywords: Armenia, demography, migration, population, crisis

If we look at the history, we can see that during the First World War, after the failure of the Armenians to establish a state in Eastern Anatolia, their ideas of creating an Armenian state on Azerbaijani lands began to be propagated. Armenians were displaced from different countries - Iran and Turkey in the early 19th century and settled in these areas. The "Armenian province" created as a result of the policy pursued by Tsarist Russia, especially Nicholas I, in the territory of Western Azerbaijan led to the settlement of Armenians in their historical lands, and the deportation of Azerbaijanis from their historical and ethnic lands, the destruction of Azerbaijani villages.

Although the Armenian population was repeatedly relocated to Armenia from abroad during the Soviet era, the demographic situation did not return to normal and the population remained quantitatively uncertain. One of the reasons for the rapid decline of the population in Armenia was the recent (1988) forcible deportation of about 300,000 Azerbaijanis from this country. Mass migration from Armenia, which has recently experienced an economic crisis, has exacerbated the country's demographic situation.

Long-term demographic changes - declining birth rates, rising mortality, aging, unemployment and rising migration - have created serious demographic problems in Armenia. The Statistical Committee of the Republic of Armenia has been publishing the population of the country since 1990. The population of the Republic of Armenia has been declining since 1992. However, according to these data, the lowest population was recorded in 2019. According to the National Statistical Service of the Republic of Armenia as of June 1, 2019, the permanent population of the country was 2 million 961 thousand people. These figures are the latest data published by the National Statistical Service of the Republic of Armenia. Compared to the beginning of 2019, the number of permanent residents decreased by 6,000 people.¹ According to these indicators, 1 million 900 thousand people live in cities and 1 million 69 thousand in villages. According to official statistics for 2019, 64% of the permanent population of the Republic of Armenia is able-bodied (16-62 years), 21.5% is below working age (0-15 years), and 14.1% is 63 years old constitutes the upper population.

Of course, the Armenian government has falsified the figures enough to hide the demographic crisis in the country, and in fact the permanent population in Armenia is smaller. However, even when comparing official statistics, it is clear that the population of Armenia decreased by 8.5% in 2010-2016 alone. According to the report of the National Statistical Service of the

¹ Ժողովրդագրական իրավիճակը Հայաստանում 2019 թվականին, 31.05.2020, <https://www.lragir.am/2020/02/05/514896/>

Republic of Armenia, the population was 1 million 898 thousand in cities and 1 million 81 thousand in villages. According to unofficial data, currently the population of Armenia does not exceed 1.5 million.²

Due to these and other reasons, the birth rate in Armenia has decreased, and the death rate has increased, which has a negative impact on natural growth. Compared to last year, the death rate in Armenia increased by 0.9%, while the birth rate decreased by 2.7%. According to experts, the birth rate in Armenia has halved over the past 25 years. In general, natural population growth decreased by 9.9%. Migration issues also played a key role here. Migration expert Rubert Yeganyan noted that the first reason for these indicators is low wages, the second main reason is socio-psychological factors. Socio-economic problems prevailed in Armenia in the 1990s, and today socio-psychological problems prevailed.³ In addition, the number of marriages in the country has decreased. In 2012-2016, the number of marriages decreased by 2,769 or 14.5%. Divorces increased by 398 or 12%. While the number of marriages in the 1990s was 28,233 and the number of divorces was 4,347, in 2015 the number of marriages was 17,603 and the number of divorces was 3,669. Compared to 2016, the number of marriages in 2017 decreased by 6.5%, and the number of divorces increased by 11.2%. The main reason for the situation in marriage and divorce is the existing socio-economic problems within the family, the high level of poverty. According to 2015 data, 29.8% of the Armenian population is poor and 18.5% of the population is unemployed.⁴ Also, the Ministry of Justice of the Republic of Armenia has prepared acts on the main causes of deaths in the country. This list includes diseases of the circulatory system, accidents, poisonings, respiratory diseases, infectious diseases, etc. In 2017, the most common causes of death were diseases of the circulatory system (8425 people). According to the January-June 2017 report, the number of deaths among children aged 0-1 has doubled compared to the 2016 report. It can be considered that one of the main causes of this disease and death is monoethnicity, and the other reason is the artificially poisoned environment.

The main indicators of natural growth of the Republic of Armenia: ^{5,6}

year	2015	2016	2017	2019
Birth	18667	18393	17169	16111
Death	14 682	14 403	14709	13790
Growth	3985	3990	2460	2321
Marriage	8582	7739	7234	7406
Divorce	1900	1753	1949	1793

The demographic situation in Armenia is approaching a crisis and gradual depopulation, ie the death rate exceeds the birth rate. The main causes of depopulation include a number of factors. For example, children born in the 1990s are now of marriageable age who refuse to

² Հայաստանի ժողովրդագրական վիճակը ճգնաժամային է. Ծնելիությունը նվազում է, արտագաղթը՝ ավելանում .08.06.2015 <http://www.1in.am/1696560.html>

³ Հայաստանի բնակչության թիվը. Նոր տվյալներ. 01.31.2017

⁴ Հայաստանի դեմոգրաֆիկական ճգնաժամը. 28.03.2017 <http://ampop.am/demographic-crisis-in-armenia/>

⁵ ՀԱՅԱՍՏԱՆԻ ՀԱՆՐԱՊԵՏՈՒԹՅԱՆ ՍՈՑԻԱԼ-ՏՆՏԵՍԱԿԱՆ ՎԻՃԱԿԸ 2019թ.

⁶ Հայաստանի Հանրապետության Սոցիալ-Տնտեսական Վիճակը 2017թ. Հունվար-Հունիսին>> https://www.armstat.am/file/article/sv_06_17a_520.pdf. [10.02.2018].

have children due to the war and economic crisis in the country. At the same time, one of the main reasons is emigration.⁷

As is well known, migration is the process by which individuals or social groups change their place of residence voluntarily or under the influence of certain factors. Migration is one of the main threats to Armenia's social security system. There is no family in Armenia where at least one of its members is not subject to migration. The main causes of migration include economic crisis, mass unemployment, corruption, political, psychological and transport factors. According to the methodological clarifications of the Statistical Indicators published by the Statistical Committee of the Republic of Armenia (formerly the National Statistical Service) in 2020, "The index of permanent population of each administrative unit began to form in 2011. The total number of non-temporary persons is indicated. As for the inclusion of non-temporary persons in the permanent population, the Statistics Committee of the Republic of Armenia explained that the number of non-temporary persons is added to the permanent population for less than 1 year. Then the demographic situation in Armenia began to deteriorate. The resumption of the country's industry, first of all, led to the cessation of activities of enterprises and branches of large industrial associations in cities and villages, which led to mass unemployment in Armenia. It is the basis of the daily mass migration of Armenian citizens. According to the United Nations, the American Pew Research Center has concluded that 25% of the Armenian population, about 937,000 people, live outside Armenia. According to these indicators, Armenia ranks fourth in the world after Bosnia and Herzegovina, Albania and Jamaica. The majority of migrants from Armenia, about 56%, settled in the Russian Federation. According to these indicators, European countries accounted for 15%, the United States and Canada for 9.5%, and other countries for 19.5%. Most migrants prefer to have Armenian communities in these countries. According to a report released by the European Economic Commission, the total number of Armenian migrants in Belarus in 2015 was 383, while in 2014 it was 220. According to research conducted in Armenia, 27% of the country's population is prone to internal migration and 30% to external migration. According to the official statistics center of Armenia, the number of permanent residents in Armenia has decreased by 1.3% or 40,700,000 over the past 3 years (January 2015 - April 2018). The main trends in the field of emigration prevail among young people in the country. There are various reasons for this mass emigration:⁸

Types of migration in Armenia and distribution by countries.⁹

Types of migration	Russia	Ukraine	USA	European countries	Other countries
Permanent migration	71.0	9.1	4.6	8.1	1.3
Labor migration	96.2	2.0	0.5	0.6	0,6
Educational migration	56.4	0.6	7.3	26.3	9.5

⁷ Демографический кризис в Армении: причины и возможные выходы, 11.07.2019, <https://jam-news.net/демографический-кризис-в-армении-при/?lang=ru>

⁸ Միգրացիան Հայաստանում <https://ampop.am/migration-in-armenia/>

⁹ 8. Միգրացիան և զարգացումը Հայաստանում առկա իրավիճակի ուսումնասիրություն. http://employment.am/up/attach/attach_arm10.pdf

- Low standard of living
- Inadequate working conditions
- Opportunity to get better working conditions abroad
- The desire to get a good education

As a result of changes in the economic and social situation, 1 million people (this was 20% of the population registered in Armenia after independence) permanently migrated from Armenia to Russia, Ukraine, the United States, Western and Eastern Europe. Currently, about 60,000 migrant workers work in Russia, especially in the construction sector. Migrants leaving the country do not want to return to Armenia permanently. Because the opportunity to find a normal job in Armenia is still limited. According to the World Bank, remittances sent home by migrants from Armenia in 2006 amounted to \$ 1 million, or 19% of GDP. In the first 10 years of independence, there was a negative balance in the migration of the urban population (-23.5% per thousand), and in the migration of the rural population -9.8% per thousand. This is explained by the fact that the closure of industrial enterprises in cities has led to high unemployment. On the other hand, as a result of the privatization of lands in these years, as a result of the creation of new jobs in rural areas, there was a certain influx of population from cities to villages.¹⁰ According to the official data of the Statistical Committee of the Republic of Armenia, 28 years after the declaration of independence (1992-2019) the difference between those who came to Armenia and those who left is 1,120,000. This is 31% of the population enumerated at the beginning of 1991 (3,575,000 people).

According to a study conducted by the Armenian branch of the Friedrich Elbert Foundation among young people, the following are the main reasons for wanting to go to other countries.

11

1. The desire to improve the quality of life - 35.6% of respondents
2. Getting a better job - 30.8% of respondents
3. Opportunity to get a better education - 12.6% of respondents
4. Availability of better opportunities for private business - 4.2% of respondents

According to the Statistics Committee of the Republic of Armenia, the number of migrants in Armenia in 2019 was 16,000. In 2018, this figure was 18,000, in 2017, 24,000, and in 2016, 25,000. In 2019, despite the relatively small balance of migration, natural growth in the country has slowed. Thus, the natural increase in 2016 was 13 thousand, in 2017 - 10 thousand, in 2018 - 10 thousand, and in 2019 - 9 thousand.

Thus, the deplorable demographic situation in Armenia for various reasons has led to the demographic crisis of the already economically and socially difficult situation in this republic. Therefore, the Republic of Armenia is currently the least populated country in the South Caucasus

¹⁰ Միգրացիան և զարգացումը Հայաստանում առկա իրավիճակի ուսումնասիրություն.
http://employment.am/up/attach/attach_arm10.pdf

¹¹ Հայաստանի Հանրապետության Սոցիալ-Տնտեսական Վիճակը 2017թ. Հունվար-Հունիսին.
www.armstat.am/file/article/sv_06_17a-_520.pdf

REFERENCES

1. Հայաստանի ժողովրդագրական վիճակը ճգնաժամային է. Ծնելիությունը նվազում է, արտագաղթը՝ ավելանում .08.06.2015 <http://www.1in.am/1696560.html>
2. ՀԱՅԱՍՏԱՆԻ ՀԱՆՐԱՊԵՏՈՒԹՅԱՆ ՍՈՑԻԱԼ-ՏՆՏԵՍԱԿԱՆ ՎԻՃԱԿԸ 2017թ. ՀՈՒՆՎԱՐ-ՀՈՒՆԻՍԻՆ>> https://www.armstat.am/file/article/sv_06_17a_520.pdf
3. Հայաստանի բնակչության թիվը. Նոր տվյալներ. 01.31.2017
4. Հայաստանի դեմոգրաֆիական ճգնաժամը. 28.03.2017 <http://ampop.am/demographic-crisis-in-armenia/>
5. ՀԱՅԱՍՏԱՆԻ ՀԱՆՐԱՊԵՏՈՒԹՅԱՆ ՍՈՑԻԱԼ-ՏՆՏԵՍԱԿԱՆ ՎԻՃԱԿԸ 2017թ. ՀՈՒՆՎԱՐ-ՀՈՒՆԻՍԻՆ>> https://www.armstat.am/file/article/sv_06_17a_520.pdf
6. Демографический кризис в Армении: причины и возможные выходы, 11.07.2019, <https://jam-news.net/демографический-кризис-в-армении-при/?lang=ru>
7. Միգրացիան Հայաստանում <https://ampop.am/migration-in-armenia/>
8. Միգրացիան և զարգացումը Հայաստանում առկա իրավիճակի ուսումնասիրություն. http://employment.am/up/attach/attach_arm10.pdf
9. МИГРАЦИЯ ИЗ АРМЕНИИ НА ФОНЕ ФАНТАЗИЙ О НОВОЙ КОНФИГУРАЦИИ ВЛАСТИ. 08.07.2017 <http://russia-armenia.info/node/41126>
10. Հայաստանը արտագաղթի ճիրաններում, կամ ինչու է շարունակաբար նվազում Հայաստանի մշտական բնակչությունը, <https://hetq.am/hy/article/113405>
11. Հայաստանի Հանրապետության Սոցիալ-Տնտեսական Վիճակը 2017թ. Հունվար-Հունիսին. www.armstat.am/file/article/sv_06_17a_520.pdf
12. За последние 5 лет от армянского гражданства отказались 15 тыс. человек, 10.01.2018. <https://easily.com/ru/news/2018/01/10/zaposlednie-5-let-ot-armyanskogo-grazhdanstva-otkazalis-15-tyschelovek>
<https://easily.com/ru/news/2018/01/10/za-poslednie-5-let-otarmyanskogo-grazhdanstva-otkazalis-15-tys-chelovek>
13. Ժողովրդագրական իրավիճակը, ՀՀ վիճակագրական կոմիտե,
14. Ժողովրդագրական իրավիճակը Հայաստանում 2019 թվականին, 31.05.2020, <https://www.lragir.am/2020/02/05/514896/>
15. ՀԱՅԱՍՏԱՆԻ ՀԱՆՐԱՊԵՏՈՒԹՅԱՆ ՍՈՑԻԱԼ-ՏՆՏԵՍԱԿԱՆ ՎԻՃԱԿԸ 2019թ. ՀՈՒՆՎԱՐ-ՀՈՒՆԻՍԻՆ30.05.2020 https://armstat.am/file/article/sv_06_19a_520.pdf
16. Հայաստանի Հանրապետության Սոցիալ-Տնտեսական Վիճակը 2017թ. Հունվար-Հունիսին>> https://www.armstat.am/file/article/sv_06_17a_520.pdf. [10.02.2018].
17. H. Marzpanyan, R. Markosyan, N. Xachatryan ՄԻԳՐԱՑԻԱՅԻ ՌԻՍԿԵՐԸ ԵՎ ՄԱՐԴԿԱՅԻՆ ԿԱՊԻՏԱԼԻ ՎԵՐԱՐՏԱԴՐՈՒԹՅՈՒՆԸ,
18. İ. Bayramov. Qərbi Azərbaycan: tarixi həqiqətlər və ya Ermənistanın etnik təmizləmə siyasəti. Bakı: “Çıraq”, 2012, 282 səh

COMPARATIVE ANALYSIS OF TURKISH TAX WEDGE WITH OECD COUNTRIES

Filiz Giray

Bursa Uludağ University, Economics and Administration Sciences Faculty, Public Finance
Department, Bursa, Turkey

ABSTRACT

Payroll taxes are one of the types of income taxes which are the main public income. It is increasingly important to know the tax burden that the labor force pays on the income it provides. It is increasingly important to know the tax burden that the labor pays on the income it provides. The level of this burden affects many macroeconomic variables, especially employment, the informal economy. The indicator used to measure this burden, expressed as payroll taxes, is the tax wedge. The tax wedge is especially important in economies where high unemployment and informality are common. Especially in countries such as Turkey, where the unemployment rate is high, it is important to know the elements that are effective at the level of the tax wedge. The aim of this study is to determine the level of tax wedge in Turkey in comparison with other OECD countries and to examine its impact on employment. According to the findings of the study, the tax wedge in Turkey is quite high in OECD countries. The main reason for this high level is social security contributions from tax wedge components. This is an element that contributes to the problem of unemployment in our country.

Keywords: Tax Wedge, Unemployment, Social Security Contribution, Personal Income Tax, Payroll Taxes

INTRODUCTION

The cost of labor comes at the beginning of the elements that determine the supply and demand for labor. Liabilities paid for the labor factor are included as payroll taxes. These liabilities are personal income tax and social security contributions. The increase in capital mobility combined with globalization has led to the shift of the tax burden on labor income. Payroll taxes should not just be seen as a source of funding. These are determinants of macroeconomic factors such as the cost of employment, the level of employment, the level of shadow economy, competitiveness, and economic growth. This study focused on the effects of the tax wedge on employment as an indicator of the cost of labor. Empirical research in this area shows that increasing the tax wedge, which is an indicator of increase the cost of labor, has a negative impact on employment and increases informality in economy. But income tax and social security contributions, called payroll taxes, are sources of financing for public services. Social security contributions are sources of funding for social security services in many countries, like in Turkey. It is suggested that the reduction in these incomes could lead to disruption of social security services, which include pensions, unemployment payments and health care. With this argument, a dilemma may arise. But payroll tax policies can be implemented in a way that does not create this dilemma for sustainable economic development. That's why the level of tax wedge in a country is important. In this study, it was aimed to show the level of the tax wedge in Turkey in comparison with other OECD countries and to examine its impact on employment. The OECD countries of which Turkey is a member consist of developed and developing countries. In this way, the tax wedge in Turkey can be evaluated from the point of view of both groups of countries. Thus, based on the findings obtained, recommendations will be made on the payroll tax policies followed in Turkey, especially in the fight against unemployment. First, the concept and scope of the tax wedge

will be explained in the study. In the second section, previous literature on the tax wedge is given. In the third section, the tax wedge in Turkey and other OECD countries are examined in comparison. After the methodology and data to be applied are announced, the tax wedge and unemployment relationship will be announced within the scope of Turkey and OECD based on statistical data. The results will be evaluated in conclude section.

1. TAX WEDGE CONCEPT AND SCOPE

There are two liabilities as the cost of the labor factor. These are expressed in the literature as payroll taxes. Payroll taxes include two elements. These are income tax (personal income tax) and social security contributions. The concept used in terminology to measure this burden in the form of payroll taxes is the tax wedge. The tax wedge is the difference between the cost of labor for the employer and the net income decoupled by labor (OECD, 2020a). In other words, a tax wedge is a percentage of the cost of labor consisting of the employee's income tax and Social Security contributions plus the tax that the employer pays for the employee. From an employee's point of view, the tax wedge determines how much revenue it will receive after its obligations to the state (Hodge & Hickman, 2018: 2).

Social Security contributions (premiums), one of the two elements of the tax wedge, are also expressed in public finance as social parafiscal income. Social parafiscal revenues, also referred to as tax-like revenues, are revenues that rank second important in public revenues after tax revenues (OECD, 2020). Although income tax and Social Security contributions, which are two elements of the tax wedge, have common characteristics, they are sources of public financing that have different aspects. These differences can be sorted as follows:

- Social security contributions are collected for use in the financing of social security services. With this nature, social security contributions are different from taxes (Tügen, 1993:10). Income tax from wage, like other taxes, is collected without prior knowledge of the place of use.

- Another difference in social security contributions from income tax is that these contributions are shared by the labor force and the employer. From the employer's point of view, the cost of the labor is the sum of wages, income tax and the premium he pays for his employee, i.e. the Social Security contribution.

- Progressive tax rate schedule is applied in individual income tax. Therefore, ability to pay taxation can be realized. A flat rate is applied in social security premiums.

- Some discharges, such as minimum living allowance, disability allowance, child benefit, can be applied in favor of labor income in income tax. It promises to implement the principle of separation, which stipulates that labor income, which is a means of ensuring tax justice, is taxed less than capital income. Discharges are not applied in the calculation of social security contributions.

In the calculation of both income tax and Social Security contributions, the base is gross wage.

Unemployment, expressed in a narrow sense as underemployment, is an important problem for both developed and developing countries in terms of economic and social costs. Although there are many elements that cause unemployment in an economy, empirical studies have shown that the tax wedge is a crucial element for unemployment. Therefore, the parameter that is focused in theory and practice in the tax wedge is unemployment.

A change in the total tax wedge would affect the gross cost of labor's employment. As a result, labor demand and employment will be affected due to the change in the gross cost of labor employment (Kesselman, 1996: 171). Because an increase in the tax wedge means an increase in labor costs in a country, it will lead to a decrease in labor demand, hence an increase in unemployment and/or informal employment. There is uncertainty in theoretical analysis about the impact of payroll taxes on the labor market. The direction of this effect is explained by some conditions, such as the unemployment rate, the bargaining power of labor. The share of payroll taxes paid by employers is seen as a benefit for the employee while it is a cost for the employer. In this case, an increase in payroll taxes will be reflected in employees from firms in the form of lower wages (Kugler, Kugler, 2009: 335).

When payroll taxes are evaluated in terms of incidence of taxation, the ability to reflect the social security contributions paid by the employee to the employer is quite difficult, especially in an environment of high unemployment. The employer is more likely to reflect payroll taxes by lowering wages or increasing prices, although demand depends on price flexibility (Brittain, 1971:111; Moore, 1983: 499; Dye, 1985: 89; Hurebe-ormaetre, 2015: 742).

Because a high tax wedge means a high cost of labor, most relevant economic research indicates a negative relationship between the tax wedge and employment. In other words, when income tax and/or Social Security contributions increase in a country, the employee's employment cost will increase, employment will fall, and unemployment will increase (Hodge & Hickman, 2018: 4). For employers, it seems that reducing the payroll tax burden, increasing the level of employment, or increasing wages have a positive effect in favor of the labor factor.

The high tax wedge affects also labor supply. Income tax and social security contributions received on labor earning will reduce the disposable income of labor. In terms of income tax burden, the labor will tend to make a choice between work (income effect) - leisure (substitution effect), and in a system with an increased rate, the tax wedge will be an important determinant of wages and unemployment. The high tax wedge would make working in informal economy more attractive. In terms of social security contributions, labor will be able to turn to the informal area. There will be no tax and social security contributions payments in the informal economy (Ederveen and Thissen, 2004: 11, 18).

2. PREVIOUS LITERATURE

Several studies have been conducted by academics and international organizations on the tax wedge. Some of these studies are based on national level, while some are based on international comparisons. In most studies, it was concluded that decreasing the employment tax burden increases the level of employment, while some studies found no relationship between the tax wedge and the level of employment.

Gruber (1997) in a study conducted for Chile to assess the effects of payroll taxes, the reaction of firms against falling payroll taxes was to give higher wages to more employees. The impact of the reduction in payroll taxes on the level of employment has been more limited. In his study, which examined the effects of tax policies on the labor market, Nickell (2003) concluded that a 10% increase in the tax wedge would reduce the entry of the working population into the labor market by 2%. Šeparović, (2009), examined the effects of the tax wedge on unemployment in Croatia in comparison with OECD countries. The study shows that Croatia has a high tax wedge, which negatively affects employment. Góra et al. (2006) investigated the impact of the tax wedge on skilled and unskilled labor using a horizontal cross - section analysis for 27 countries consisting of OECD and EU countries in the period

1997-2003. They came to the conclusion that the tax wedge strongly reduces the employment of unskilled labor, while its impact on skilled labor is not statistically significant.

Predrag and Biljana (2012) reached the result that is the negative relationship between the tax wedge and employment in their study based on data from 23 OECD and EU countries. Hernández (2012) examined the labor market relationship between payroll taxes in Colombia with a general equilibrium analysis. As a result of the analysis, it was found that the removal of payroll taxes will reduce unemployment by one percentage point. Álvarez-Martínez, Polo (2014) stated that a reduction in the social security contribution paid by the employer to the employee would increase the optimal labor-to-capital ratio of the manufacturer by reducing the cost of labor. In his study of the impact of social security contributions on employment, Iturebe-ormatxe (2015) suggested that these payments negatively affect employment. Reducing the employer premium burden to reduce unemployment should be preferred, as it will create little loss of welfare.

There are studies on the tax wedge in Turkey.

In the study of Nar (2015), which examines the practice of tax wedges in Turkey, it is stated that the tax wedges are high. Kutbay et al. (2018), they examined the effect of the tax wedge on the minimum wage on unemployment in Turkey with causality and co-integration tests with the data of 1988-2015 periods. According to the study findings, a 1% increase in the tax wedge increases the unemployment rate by 0.71%, and a one-unit increase in the minimum wage increases the unemployment rate by 0.002 units. As part of these results, it was stated that instead of reducing the minimum wage, taxes and social security contributions calculated on the minimum wage should be reduced.

In an empirical study conducted by Yılcı et al. (2019), between the tax wedge and unemployment relationship for OECD countries was analyzed by the panel causality test for 2000-2017. As a result of the analysis, it is shown that a one-way causal relationship from the tax wedge to unemployment occurs in Hungary, Mexico and Poland. However, they concluded that there was no causal relationship in the Czech Republic, Korea and Turkey. Uşun (2019) conducted a study of tax wedges for 8 family types based on data between Turkey and OECD countries between 2007-2017 years. The study notes that regulations other than the minimum living allowance to lower the tax wedge are largely aimed at reducing the total cost of the employer's labor and increasing employment.

Akalin (2021) the effect of tax wedges on unemployment rates in 36 OECD countries was investigated by the GMM method during 2000-2019 periods. Economic growth, inflation and commercial openness were also used as independent variables in the study. As a result of the study, it was found that an increase in the tax wedge increases overall, male and female unemployment rates, but the effect of the tax wedge on increasing unemployment is greater in men. From the point of view of independent variables, it was concluded that there was an inverse relationship between economic growth, inflation and trade deficit and unemployment rates.

3. TAX WEDGE IN TURKEY AND OECD COUNTRIES

In this section, the development of the tax wedge in Turkey as of the 2000s and its impact on employment will be examined by comparing OECD countries.

3.1. Methodology and Data

In this section, statistical data for Turkey and OECD countries will be analyzed to show the impact of the development of the tax wedge used to measure the size of payroll taxes in

Turkey compared to other OECD countries. These data consist of the tax wedge, income tax on labor income, social security contributions that employees and their employers pay for the employee, and unemployment rates. In the study, income tax was taken as a personal income tax on labor earning. In some countries, other taxes other than income tax can be charged. For example, stamp duty in Turkey is also a tax levied on gross wages. But only income tax was taken, since it would be more accurate to compare between countries to receive the tax imposed by all countries. These data are taken from OECD reports (Tax wedge) and stat. OECD reports calculate tax wedge rates on eight family types. In this study, a tax wedge calculated on the entire average income of a single person without children was taken. The average tax wedge was taken as a percentage of the labor cost.

3.2. Tax wedge and Employment Analysis

In Turkey, tax wedge elements consist of income tax, employee's social security contribution and employer's contributions. In addition to income tax in our country, stamp duty is levied at a rate of 7.59 per thousand on gross wages.

In the 2000s, the tax wedge in Turkey and OECD countries is shown in Table 1. The OECD average of tax wedge was 36.4% in 2000, 35.7% in 2005, 35.4% in 2015 and 34.6% in 2020. It fell to 34% in 2009, but in 2011 the tax wedge increased again to 35%. It has fallen to 34.6% in 2020. Over the period 2000-2020, the OECD average tax wedge fell by about 2 percentage points. Countries with the highest tax wedge in 2000 are listed as Hungary, Germany, France, Belgium, Sweden, respectively. Belgium is the country with the highest tax wedge in the following years. The main reason for this is that Belgium is one of the highest minimum wage paying countries in Europe (Nar, 2015: 691). The highest country ranking in 2020 is Belgium, Germany, Austria and France. These countries are European countries. Although there are some exceptions (except Switzerland, Iceland), the tax wedge in European countries is usually above the OECD average for 2000 years, while other OECD countries have a lower-than-average tax wedge.

In terms of income tax in the 2000s, the OECD average was 16.2% in 2000 and 15.6% in 2005. It has fallen to 15.5% in 2015 and 13.1% in 2020. Countries that are also above the OECD average in income tax are mostly European countries. The highest income tax rankings for the year 2000 are Denmark, Belgium, Finland, Sweden and Australia. The 2020 ranking consists of Denmark, Iceland, Australia and Belgium. In the tax wedge, the number of countries where income tax is weighted is relatively small. These countries are Iceland, Australia, USA, Denmark, Ireland and New Zealand (Table 1).

The weight of social security contributions paid by employees and employers varies among countries. This difference is related to the social security financing method adopted by countries. In 2000, the Netherlands (24.0%) was the country where an employee paid the most social security contributions, while France (42.9%) was the country where the employer paid the most social security contributions. In 2020, Lithuania (19.2%) was the country where the most employees paid social security contributions, and France (26.6%) was the country where the employer paid the most social security contributions. In countries with the highest rates, there is a decrease in both employee and employer burden. However from the point of view of the OECD average, the share of employer contribution is relatively higher. . In more than half of OECD countries, the contribution of employees and employers is more than 20% (Table 1). Considering that social security contributions are used in the financing of social security services, this ratio is important. In some countries, for example, Denmark, social security contributions are low because most welfare expenditures are financed by general tax revenues (European Commission, 2020:30).

Table 1: Total Tax Wedge in OECD Countries (% of labor cost)

	2000				2005				2015				2020			
	TV ¹	IT ²	LSC ³	ISP ⁴	TV	IT	LSC	ISPC	TV	IT	LSC	ISPC	TV	IT	LSC	ISPC
Belgium	51.1	29.0	14.0	32.7	55.5	28.0	14.0	32.7	55.3	21.6	10.8	22.9	51.5	19.2	11.0	21.3
Germany	52.7	22.7	20.5	20.5	52.1	20.8	21.4	20.5	49.4	16.1	17.2	16.2	49.0	15.7	16.8	16.6
Austria	47.3	12.9	18.0	31.0	48.1	15.0	18.0	31.0	49.5	13.1	14.0	22.4	47.3	11.4	14.0	21.9
Switzerl and	22.9	11.3	6.6	6.6	22.2	11.5	6.0	6.6	22.2	10.5	5.9	5.9	22.1	10.1	6.0	6.0
Nether- land	40.0	9.6	24.0	10.7	38.9	11.1	11.2	10.7	36.2	15.2	12.1	8.9	36.4	14.5	11.1	10.8
Luxem- bourg	35.8	17.0	11.6	11.2	33.4	14.1	11.7	11.1	38.3	16.0	11.4	10.9	37.7	14.6	10.8	12.1
Norway	38.7	23.0	7.8	12.8	37.2	21.2	7.8	12.8	36.6	17.9	7.3	11.5	35.8	17.0	7.3	11.5
France	50.4	15.6	13.4	42.9	50.5	15.2	13.6	42.9	48.5	10.7	10.3	27.5	46.6	11.7	8.3	26.6
Iceland	28.8	25.3	0.1	4.8	32.0	28.0	0.1	4.8	34.0	26.7	0.3	7.0	32.3	26.0	0.3	6.0
Sweden	50.1	26.6	7.0	32.9	48.0	24.1	7.0	32.9	42.7	13.5	5.3	23.9	42.7	13.4	5.3	23.9
Australia	31.0	26.6	0.0	6.4	24.2	24.2	0.0	6.0	28.4	22.7	0.0	5.6	28.4	22.7	0.0	5.6
USA	30.8	17.3	7.7	8.6	30.4	16.6	7.7	8.6	31.7	16.5	7.0	8.1	28.3	15.5	7.1	7.6
Denmark	41.5	32.5	9.0	0.0	38.5	30.5	8.0	0.0	36.4	35.8	0.0	0.8	35.2	35.3	0.0	0.0
UK	32.6	17.4	8.4	10.0	33.9	17.6	9.2	10.0	30.8	12.8	8.4	9.7	30.8	12.6	8.4	9.8
Ireland	35.3	24.0	3.5	12.0	30.3	19.5	3.3	12.0	27.5	14.2	3.6	9.7	32.3	18.8	3.6	10.0
Finland	47.5	26.9	7.0	26.0	44.4	24.7	6.4	26.0	43.9	18.4	6.7	18.7	41.2	16.9	8.6	15.7
Japan	29.8	6.4	13.3	14.4	27.7	6.7	11.8	14.4	32.2	6.7	12.4	13.1	32.7	6.8	12.5	13.3
Korea	16.4	2.3	6.7	8.9	17.3	2.8	7.1	8.9	21.9	4.9	7.6	9.4	23.3	5.4	8.1	9.7
Italy	47.0	19.9	9.2	34.0	45.9	18.8	9.2	34.0	49.0	17.5	7.2	24.3	46.0	14.8	7.2	24.0
Spain	38.6	13.5	6.4	30.6	39.0	13.9	6.4	30.6	39.6	11.6	4.9	23.0	39.3	11.4	4.9	23.0
Canada	32.9	19.1	5.9	11.6	31.9	16.2	7.6	11.6	31.6	14.1	6.8	10.8	30.4	14.3	6.8	9.4
Greece	38.7	5.7	15.9	28.0	41.2	8.7	16.0	27.7	39.3	7.1	12.4	19.7	40.1	8.0	12.5	19.7
Israel	29.6	18.0	8.1	4.9	25.5	13.2	8.0	4.9	21.6	8.9	7.5	5.1	22.4	9.6	7.5	5.3
New Zealand	19.4	19.4	0.0	0.0	20.0	20.0	0.03	0.0	17.6	17.6	0.0	0.0	19.1	19.1	0.0	0.0
Turkey	40.4	14.3	14.0	19.5	42.8	15.5	15.0	21.5	38.3	12.4	15.0	17.5	39.7	14.1	15.0	17.5
Czech Republic	42.6	9.9	12.5	35.0	43.7	11.5	12.5	35.0	42.8	9.2	8.2	25.4	43.9	10.4	8.2	26.3
Estonia	41.3	21.9	0.0	33.0	39.9	18.8	1.0	33.0	39.0	12.6	1.2	25.3	36.9	10.4	1.2	25.3
Slovenia	46.3	13.5	22.1	19.9	45.6	12.6	22.1	19.9	42.6	9.7	19.0	13.9	42.9	10.0	19.0	13.9
Portugal	37.3	11.6	11.0	23.8	36.8	10.8	11.0	23.6	42.1	14.0	8.9	19.2	41.3	13.2	8.9	19.2
Hungary	54.7	23.2	12.5	41.8	51.0	20.1	13.5	41.8	49.0	12.5	14.4	22.2	43.6	12.7	15.7	15.3
Poland	38.1	6.7	21.1	16.8	38.7	6.4	21.8	16.8	34.7	5.0	15.3	14.4	34.8	5.4	15.3	14.1
Lithua- nia	-	18.9	9.0	27.0	-	-	-	27.0	-	-	-	-	36.9	16.0	19.2	1.8
Slovak Republic	42.1	8.2	12.0	38.0	38.4	8.8	13.4	38.0	41.3	7.4	10.2	23.8	41.2	7.8	10.3	23.2
Latvia	-	25.8	3.0	31.2	-	-	-	31.2	-	-	-	-	41.8	13.5	8.9	19.4
Chile	7.0	0.0	7.0	0.0	7.0	0.0	7.0	0.0	7.0	0.0	7.0	0.0	7.0	0.0	7.0	0.0
Mexico	12.7	0.9	1.5	11.7	14.7	3.1	1.5	11.6	19.7	8.0	1.2	10.5	20.2	8.4	1.2	10.5
Colom- bia	-	0.0	0.0	0.0	-	-	-	0.0	-	-	-	-	0.0	0.0	0.0	0.0
OECD Average	36.4	16.1	9.5	18.9	35.7	15.6	9.5	18.2	35.4	15.5	9.59	17.7	34.6	15.1	9.7	16.3

Sources: OECD Stat.

1: Tax wedge, 2: Income Tax, 3: Employee's social security contributions, 4. Employer's social security contributions

When the tax wedge is evaluated in the context of Turkey, the tax wedge was 40.4% in 2000, 42.8% in 2005, 38.3% in 2015 and 39.7% in 2020. A trend is seen in the tax wedge in the form of an increase and then a decrease. The decline in the tax wedge in Turkey has had an impact on the implementation of the minimum wage, which began in 2016. Despite the decline, the tax wedge in Turkey is higher than the OECD average. In 2020, Turkey is the 14th of 37 OECD countries with a rate of 39.7% is ranked. With this rate, it has a higher tax wedge than the OECD average of 5.1% (Figure 1).

As shown in Figure 1, the tax wedge in Turkey shows an upward trend in 2001. There was a significant fall in Turkey in 2008. The tax wedge decreased from 42.22% in 2007 to 38.72% in 2008. This decrease was 36.74% in 2009. In later years the tax wedge increased. The OECD also saw a significant decline in 2009. In the OECD, it was the same trend in general until 2020, while in 2020 it was a decline.

In Turkey, the reduction in the tax wedge in 2008 has the effect of minimum living allowance, insurance premium incentives and minimum wage support, which began to be implemented as of 01.01.2008. Of these incentives, the minimum living allowance reduces the employee's tax burden, while insurance premium incentives and minimum wage support are practices that reduce the employer's employment costs.

32 of the Income Tax Law No. 193. article 16 of the annual gross amount of the minimum wage applied to workers older than 16 working in the industrial sector; 50% for the taxpayer himself, 10% for the spouse who does not work and does not have any income, 7.5% for the first two children, 10% for the third child, 5% for the other children, separately for each of the children. Since the minimum subsistence allowance is more effective at the low wage level, its impact on the tax wedge decreases at high wages (Uşun, 2019:448).

Insurance premium incentives Social Insurance and General Health Insurance Law (No. 5510 81. article 1, paragraph) “in the first paragraph of Article 4 of this law of subparagraph (A) in the running of private sector employers insured under this article, the first paragraph of subparagraph (A), according to disability, old age and death insurance premiums, the employer's share of the financier to five percentage points corresponding to the amount paid. Premium stock acquired by the Treasury belonging to the employer in order to run the insured employers with respect to the monthly premium and service documents in accordance with this law within the legal period of the Social Security Administration, withholding tax and premium service to give statements to the Ministry of Finance of the insured, the insured shares corresponding to the amount of insurance premiums for all by the amount of employer stock that is not belonging to legal undertaken by the Treasury at the time of payment of premium to the Social Security Institution, it is essential that there is no administrative fine and related delay penalty and delay increase debt.” The tax wedge of employers who benefit from this incentive can be reduced from 33.51% to 32.77% (Uşun, 2019:448).

As of 01.01.2016, the minimum wage support is as follows: January December 2016, the total number of premium payment days for insured persons reported from workplaces covered by the law is multiplied by TL 3.33 per day and the amount to be found is deducted from the insurance premiums that these employers will pay to the institution and covered by the Treasury”.

*

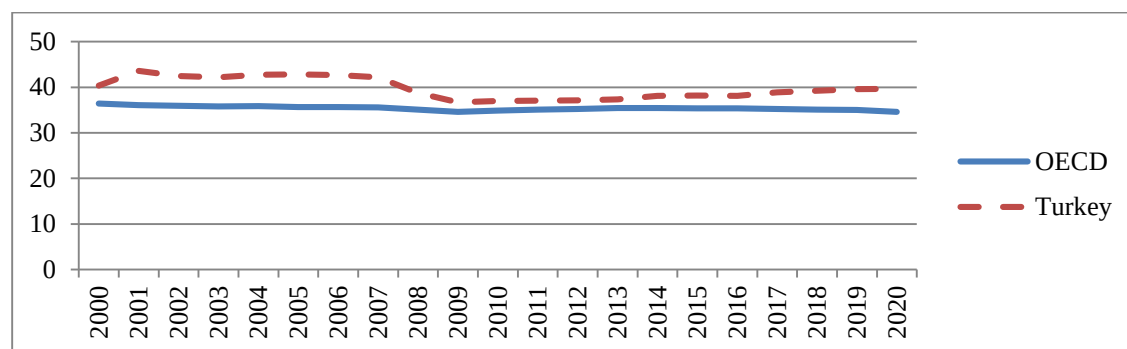


Figure 1: Average Tax Wedge (% Labor Costs) *

*Single personal 100 % of average earnings, no child.

Source: OECD Stat.

The average income tax on labor income in Turkey was 14.3% in 2000, 15.5% in 2005, 12.4% in 2015 and 14.1% in 2020. In terms of these rates, Turkey averages out of OECD

averages (2000 % 16.1, 2005 % 15.6, 2015 % 15.5, 2020 % 15.1) references. This case indicates that the relative share of income tax in the tax wedge is low. As mentioned above, most OECD countries have the same situation.

From the point of view of social security contributions, employee's contribution rates are 14% in Turkey in 2000, 15% in 2005, 15% in 2015 and 15% in 2020. The OECD averages are 9.5% in 2000, 9.5% in 2005, 9.5% in 2015 and 9.7% in 2020. As can be seen, the social security contribution burden on employees is higher than OECD rates in all years. Employer's contribution load for Turkey is 19.5% in 2000, 21.5% in 2005, 17.5% in 2015 and 17.5% in 2020. Although employee's contribution rates have been reduced by law 5510, as mentioned above, these rates are also lower than the OECD average (2000 % 18.9, 2005 % 18.2, 2015 % 17.7 and 2020 16.3%).

The reason for the continued high rates of social security contributions is the need for financing for the social security system, because the budget of the Social Security Institution in Turkey has been running a deficit since 1990. Budget deficits are due to reasons such as inability to achieve efficiency in premium collection, inefficiency in the evaluation of funds, erosion of income caused by inflation, and increasing active/passive¹ imbalance.

The main negative effect that the high tax wedge creates in economies is increasing unemployment. Employment is one of the areas where payroll taxes are effective. For this reason, it would be useful to examine the employment relationship of the tax wedge for Turkey and other OECD countries.

The relationship between the tax wedge and the unemployment rate is shown in Table 2. According to the data in Table 2, the unemployment rate is also high in countries with a high tax wedge. But there are exceptions to this situation. In Scandinavian countries, for example, the unemployment rate is below the OECD average, although the tax wedge is high. In 2020, the tax wedge is 35.8% in Norway, 42.7% in Sweden and 35.2% in Denmark. These rates are higher than the OECD average (34%. 6) high. However, unemployment rates were 4.60% in Norway, 8.29% in Sweden and 5.65% in Denmark in the same year. Except Sweden, the rate in these countries is below the OECD average (7.15%). Similar results of these countries are seen in the study of Daveri and Tabellini (1997). It is stated that this comes from the fact that these countries plan employment better due to a greater understanding of the social state.

In countries where the share of income tax in the tax wedge is high relative to social security contributions (Iceland, Australia, the United States, Denmark, Ireland and New Zealand), the unemployment rate was below the OECD average (Table 2).

Table 2: Unemployment Rate and Tax Wedge in OECD Countries (% Labor Costs)

	2005		2010		2015		2020	
	TV ¹	UER ²	TV	UER	TV	UER	TV	UER
Belgium	55.5	8.43	55.93	8.31	55.3	8.50	51.5	5.55
Germany	52.1	11.28	49.05	6.96	49.4	4.63	49.0	3.83
Austria	48.1	6.03	48.17	5.19	49.5	6.15	47.3	6.03
Switzerland	22.2	-	22.10	4.80	22.2	4.80	22.1	4.82
Netherlands	38.9	5.88	38.10	5.00	36.2	6.89	36.4	3.83
Luxembourg	33.4	4.65	35.27	4.58	38.3	6.46	37.7	6.71
Norway	37.2	4.52	37.29	3.73	36.6	4.50	35.8	4.60
France	50.5	8.88	49.90	9.27	48.5	10.35	46.6	8.03
Iceland	32.0	2.88	33.36	8.30	34.0	4.51	32.3	6.43
Sweden	48.0	7.64	42.76	8.57	42.7	7.40	42.7	8.29

¹ The active-passive ratio is the ratio that shows how many people will finance a pensioner.

Australia	24.2	5.03	26.83	5.21	28.4	6.06	28.4	6.46
USA	30.4	5.06	30.75	9.61	31.7	5.29	28.3	8.09
Denmark	38.5	4.84	35.94	7.76	36.4	6.30	35.2	5.65
UK	33.9	4.82	32.58	7.86	30.8	5.38	30.8	4.55
Ireland	30.3	4.63	30.88	14.57	27.5	9.93	32.3	5.85
Finland	44.4	8.40	42.29	8.54	43.9	9.46	41.2	7.72
Japan	27.7	4.42	30.23	5.05	32.2	3.38	32.7	2.77
Korea	17.3	3.75	20.14	3.70	21.9	3.59	23.3	3.94
Italy	45.9	7.78	47.18	8.54	49.0	12.03	46.0	9.28
Spain	39.0	9.16	39.75	19.87	39.6	22.0	39.3	15.53
Canada	31.9	6.75	30.39	8.11	31.6	6.94	30.4	9.56
Greece	41.2	10.08	39.98	12.75	39.3	24.9	40.1	16.44
Israel	25.5	8.99	20.72	6.63	21.6	5.24	22.4	4.33
New Zealand	20.0	3.82	16.99	6.22	17.6	5.40	19.1	4.60
Turkey	42.8	9.50	36.98	11.15	38.3	10.33	39.7	13.14
Czech Republic	43.7	7.94	42.13	7.29	42.8	5.06	43.9	2.55
Estonia	39.9	7.97	40.09	16.58	39.0	6.16	36.9	6.78
Slovenia	45.6	6.54	42.54	7.30	42.6	9.03	42.9	5.00
Portugal	36.8	9.23	37.13	12.58	42.1	13.03	41.3	7.12
Hungary	51.0	7.17	46.61	10.80	49.0	6.63	43.6	4.13
Poland	38.7	17.92	34.21	9.67	34.7	7.53	34.8	3.16
Lithuania	-	8.31	-	19.47	-	9.13	36.9	8.52
Slovak Republic	38.4	16.37	38.10	14.50	41.3	11.50	41.2	6.70
Latvia	-	10.05	-	17.84	-	9.88	41.8	8.10
Chile	7.0	9.23	7.00	8.15	7.0	6.33	7.0	10.77
Mexico	14.7	3.59	15.98	5.38	19.7	4.35	20.2	4.43
Colombia	-	-	-	11.84	-	8.96	0.0	16.13
OECD Average	35.7	6.84	34.65	8.52	35.4	6.89	34.6	7.15

Source: OECD Stat.

1: Tax wedge, 2: Unemployment rate.

Figure 2 shows the unemployment rate in Turkey and the OECD as an average. The unemployment rate in Turkey is well above the OECD average. In 2020, the difference was approximately 2 times. After 2015, the difference between the unemployment rate in Turkey and the OECD average has increased decisively. This, in turn, shows that unemployment is a serious problem in our country. Although the unemployment rate until 2013 was similar to the OECD average, after 2013 the OECD average showed a falling trend until 2019, but increased with slight fluctuations in Turkey until 2018, but rose rapidly in 2018 with the economic recession in the country.

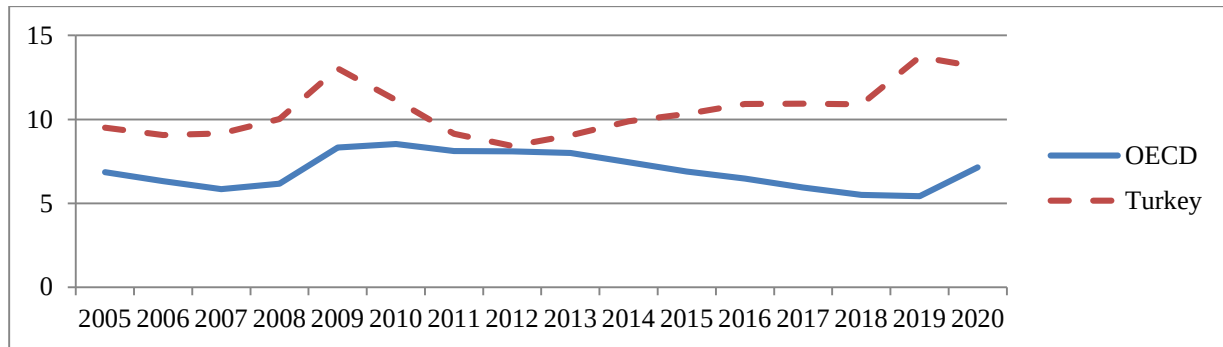


Figure 2: Unemployment Rate in Turkey and OECD countries (%)

Source: OECD Stat.

Combating the high unemployment rate in Turkey is much more important. It will be useful to look at the relationship of the tax wedge components with unemployment. Figure 2 shows the unemployment rate with income taxes as a percentage of gross domestic products for Turkey and the unemployment rate. The trend of these two variables was paralleled until 2008, while the unemployment rate increased significantly in 2008, 2009 and 2010, while the income tax decreased. This reflects the impact of the global crisis. Although the unemployment rate rose rapidly after 2015, there was no significant change in income tax.

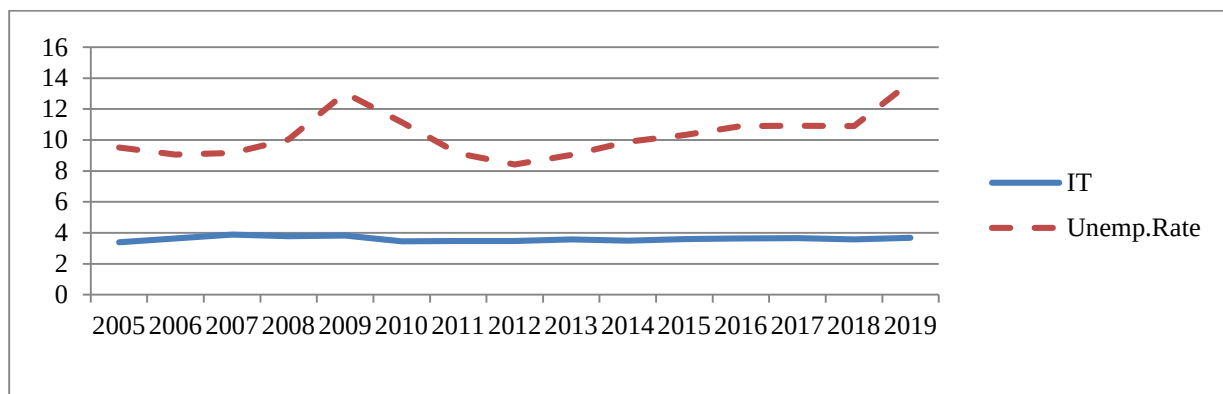


Figure 2: Unemployment Rate and Income Tax (IT) as Percentage of GDP in Turkey

Source: OECD Stat.

The trend of the unemployment rate with social security contributions as a component of the tax mix in the 2000s is shown in Figure 3. Except the acceleration due to the 2008 economic financial crisis, these two variables usually follow the same trend.

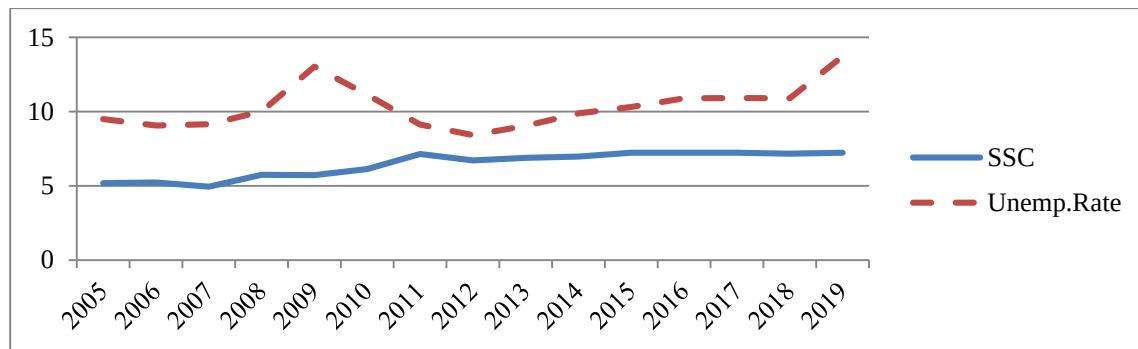


Figure 3: Unemployment Rate and Social Security Contributions (SSC)
as Percentage of GDP in Turkey

Source: OECD Stat.

3.3. Results

Therefore, in order to reduce the negative effects on the economy, especially unemployment, by lowering the tax wedge, it is necessary to reduce social security contributions in Turkey. Thus, the burden of social security contributions in Turkey will have reached the level of most OECD countries. However, reducing social security contributions can also lead to financing problem of social security services. As suggested in the studies, it is stated that the problem of financing will not arise by shifting the burden to direct income taxes. For example, Steiner (1996) in his study for Germany investigated reducing social security contributions and financing them with direct taxes and stated that unemployment could be reduced in this way. Buscher et al. (2001) analyzed the effects of the reduction in social security contributions on employment. They state that the reduction in social security contributions should be financed by direct taxes in order not to create budget deficits. In their study, Kunze and Schuppert (2010) state that unemployment can decrease if the reduction in social security contribution rates is financed by taxes levied on capital. According to Hernández (2012), the elimination of payroll taxes and their substitute by other taxes will reduce unemployment.

DISCUSSION

The level of the tax wedge, which is an indicator of the cost of labor, is important for economies. One of the effects of the high tax wedge is to increase unemployment. It is important to know the relationship between the tax wedge and unemployment in Turkey, where the unemployment rate is high. The tax wedge in Turkey is higher than the OECD average. The tax wedge in the fight against unemployment should be reduced. However, income tax and social security contributions, which are elements of the tax wedge, make up a significant part of the total public revenues. Deducting them must be financed with other sources so as not to create a public financing deficit.

CONCLUSION

With the increase of globalization, the importance of tax policies to audit taxes on labor income has increased due to the increasing efforts of countries to create a more competitive tax system internationally. The tax wedge, which is an indicator of the cost of labor, consists mainly of three elements. These include the individual income tax received on labor income, the social security contributions paid by the employee and the share of the contribution paid by the employer to the employee. These are included in the literature as payroll taxes. Income

tax and social security contributions have common points, but they are public revenues that differ.

Income tax, which is one of the components of the tax wedge, is the means of financing public services. Social security contributions are the source of financing of social security services. The height of these incomes, called payroll taxes, means that the tax wedge is high. But the high tax wedge creates economic, social negative effects. At the beginning of these negatives, there is a reduction in employment, that is, an increase in the unemployment rate. That is why the level of the tax wedge is important for the country's economies. In this study, the level of the tax wedge in Turkey was evaluated comparatively with other OECD countries and the effect on employment was examined. The average tax wedge for the OECD was 36.4% in 2000 and 34.6% in 2020. In the period 2000-2020, the OECD average tax wedge decreased by about 2 percentage points. It is seen that the majority of countries with income tax as an element of the tax wedge above the OECD average are European countries. The contributions of employees and employers in more than half of the OECD countries are more than 20%. In addition, the share of employer' contributions in Turkey is relatively higher than in OECD countries. From the point of view of Turkey, it amounted to 40.4% in 2000, 42.8% in 2005, 38.3% in 2015 and 39.7% in 2020. Although there has been a serious decline in some years, the rate in 2020 is quite high and is quite higher than the OECD average (34.6%). The effect of minimum subsistence allowance, insurance premium incentives and minimum wage support on the decrease in the tax wedge in Turkey is. The unemployment rate is also high in OECD countries with a high tax wedge in terms of the relationship between unemployment and the tax wedge. The share of income tax in the tax wedge across the OECD was lower than the OECD average in countries with high social security contributions (Iceland, Australia, USA, Denmark, Ireland and New Zealand), the unemployment rate was lower than the OECD average. The unemployment rate in Turkey is quite high (13.4%), which is about twice the OECD average (7.15%). Looking at the unemployment relationship from the point of view of the components of the tax wedge, there is no relationship between income taxes and the change in the unemployment rate. On the other hand, there is a greater relationship between the unemployment rate and social security contributions. In light of these findings, it is necessary to reduce the tax wedge in Turkey.

The social security contribution burden, which is very high in the fight against unemployment in Turkey, should be reduced to the OECD average level, especially by reducing the employer's contribution share. Income tax and social security contributions included in the tax wedge are important sources of public income. In order for this situation not to create disruptions in social security services, the burden can be shifted to direct taxes by expanding the tax base. Empirical studies on this issue show that this practice gives a positive result in reducing unemployment. In addition, by solving some structural problems seen in the field of social security in Turkey (such as effective audit, collection), the loss of income caused by the decrease in social security contribution rates can be compensated.

RESOURCES

Akalin, G 2021. 'OECD Ülkelerinde Vergi Takozu ve İşsizlik İlişkisi', *Uluslararası Ekonomi ve Yenilik Dergisi*, 7 (1), 37-49.

Álvarez-Martínez, MT and Clemente, P 2014. "Reduce Employers' Social Security Contributions and Control Labor Fraud: Remedies for Spain's Ailing Economy?", *Economic Systems Research*, 26(2).

Brittain, JA March, 1971. 'The Incidence of Social Security Payroll Taxes', *The American Economic Review*, 61(1), 110-125.

Buscher, H S, Buslei, H, Göggelmann, K, Koschel, H, Schmidt, TFNV, Steiner, P. W. 2001. 'Empirical Macro Models under Test. A Comparative Simulation Study of the Employment Effects of A Revenue Neutral Cut in Social Security Contributions', *Economic Modelling*, 18, 455-474.

Daveri, F and Tabellini, G 1997. *Unemployment, Growth and Taxation in Industrial Countries*, Washington: World Bank.

Dye, RF April-June, 1985. 'Payroll Tax Effects on Wage Growth', *Eastern Economic Journal*, XI(2), 89-100.

Ederveen, S and Thissen, L 2004. 'Can Labour Market Institutions Explain Unemployment Rates in New EU Member States?', *Working Paper*, No. 27, European Network of Economic Policy Research Institutes.

European Commission, (2020). *Taxation Trends in the European Union*, Luxembourg:

Góra, M, Radziwill, A, Sowa, A and Walewski, M 2006. 'Tax Wedge and Skills: Case of Poland in International Perspective', *CASE Network Reports*, (64).

Gruber, J July, 1997. 'The Incidence of Payroll Taxation: Evidence from Chile', *Journal of Labor Economics*, 15 (3), 72-101.

Hodge SA & Hickman B 2018, The Importance of the Tax Wedge on Labor in Evaluating Tax Systems, https://files.taxfoundation.org/20180913095728/Global-Primer_tax_wedge.pdf, (Erişim Tarihi: 11.09.2021).

Hernández, G 2012. 'Payroll Taxes and the Labor Market: A Computable General Equilibrium Analysis', *Latin American Journal of Economics*, 49(1), 99-123.

Iturbe-Ormaetxe, I 2015. 'Salience of Social Security Contributions and Employment', *International Tax Public Finance*, 22(5), 741-759.

Kesselman, JR June, 1996. "Payroll Taxes in the Finance of Social Security", *Canadian Public Policy/Analyse de Politiques*, 22(2), 162-179.

Kugler, A, Kugler, M January, 2009. 'Labor Market Effects of Payroll Taxes in Developing Countries: Evidence from Colombia', *Economic Development and Cultural Change*, 57(2), 335-358.

Kunze, L and Schuppert, C 2010. 'Financing social security by taxing capital income: A bad idea', *FinanzArchiv/Public Finance Analysis*, 66(3), 243-262.

Kutbay, H, Gerede, C and Aksoy, E Mayıs, 2018. 'Asgari Ücret Üzerindeki Vergi Takozunun İşsizliğe Etkisi', *Vergi Raporu*, 224, 96-114.

Moore, RL December, 1983. 'Self-Employment and the Incidence of the Payroll Tax', *National Tax Journal*, 36(4), 491-501.

Nar, M 2015. 'Ücret Gelirleri Üzerindeki Vergi Yüğü: Vergi Takozu Uygulaması', *International Journal of Human Sciences*, 12(1), 685-705.

Nickell, S 2003. "Employment and Taxes," *CESifo Working Paper*, No. 1109, Center for Economic Studies and Ifo Institute (CESifo).

OECD 2020a. *OECD Revenue Statistics 2019, Tax Revenue Trends in the OECD*, 2020.

OECD 2020b. *Economic Outlook*.

Šeparović, A 2009. 'The Influence of the Tax Wedge on Unemployment in OECD Countries in Comparison with Croatia', *Financial Theory and Practice*, 33(4), 449-463.

Steiner, V 1996. 'Employment and Wage Effects of Social Security Financing – An Empirical Analysis of the West German Experience and some Policy Simulations', *Discussion Paper*, No. 96–14.

Trpeski, Pand Tashevskaa, B 2012. 'Labour Tax Wedge in the Republic of Macedonia – Trends and International Comparison', *Annales Universitatis Apulensis Series Oeconomica* 14(2), 571-585, <http://oeconomica.uab.ro/upload/lucrari/1420122/24.pdf>. (Eriřim Tarihi: 11.09.2021).

Tügen, K 1993. *Parafiskalite ve Parafiskal Gelirler*, İzmir: Anadolu Matbaacılık.

Uřun, E 2019. 'Türkiye ve Diğer OECD Ülkelerinde Vergi Takozu', *Yönetim ve Ekonomi*, 26(2), 435-452.

Yılancı, V, Yavuz, H, İnce, T Ocak-Haziran 2019. 'Seçilmiş OECD Ülkelerinde Vergi Takozu-İřsizlik İliřkisi', *Maliye Dergisi*, 176, 286-297.

193 sayılı Gelir Vergisi Kanunu.

5510 sayılı Sosyal Sigortalar ve Genel Saęlık Sigortası Kanunu.

INNOVATION AND ECONOMIC GROWTH IN EASTERN EUROPEAN COUNTRIES

Prof. Dr. Özcan KARAHAN

Bandırma Onyedi Eylül University, Faculty of Administrative and Political Sciences,
Balıkesir, Turkey

ORCID ID: 0000-0002-1179-2125

ABSTRACT

In today's economies, where technological improvements gain huge importance in the production process, having strong innovative capacity has become the most important factor to reach sustainable economic growth. The causality relationship from innovation to economic growth has been widely investigated in the literature. However, some economists advocate the "feedback hypothesis" that asserts a bidirectional relationship between innovation and economic growth. In order to shed light on these discussions in the literature, our study aims to analyse the causality relationship between innovation and economic growth in the 11 emerging economies of Eastern Europe. Accordingly, the relationship between the number of patents and per capita income between 2000 and 2017 have been examined by using dynamic panel data methodology based on Generalized Method of Moments (GMM) estimators. Empirical results show that there is a bidirectional relationship between innovation and economic growth in Eastern European countries. Thus, the findings obtained from the Eastern European experience are compatible with the results of the researches focusing on developed countries. Besides, bidirectional causality relationship indicates that there is a positive cycle between innovation and economic growth in the newly developing economies of eastern Europe. In terms of policymaking, this finding shows that policymakers in the Eastern European areas have an important role to play in maintaining this positive cycle. Accordingly, economic policies aimed to increase economic growth should focus firstly on increasing the innovation capability of the whole economy.

Keywords: Innovation, Economic Growth, Eastern European Countries.

1. INTRODUCTION

Achieving consistently high growth rates in order to increase social welfare is one of the most important goals of policy-makers. Therefore, research on the sources of economic growth constitutes one of the most important areas of study in the literature. Throughout history, many factors from natural resources to physical capital and human power have been examined as determinants of the economic growth process. In the framework of the "new economy" paradigm, it seems that total economic growth related to the accumulation of new knowledge in the production process is essential. It has been argued that technological improvements and economic growth are two faces of the same coin, two non-separable aspects of new knowledge accumulation in the production process (Roberts, 2000:11). Consequently, developed economies have been experienced a dramatic structural change depending on accelerating technological improvement based on expansion innovation capability.

The term "innovation-driven economy" used to call new economy results from a fuller recognition of the increasing role of innovation in economic growth (OECD, 1996, p.3). Indeed, in the last period, the relationship between the phenomenon of innovation and economic growth has been intensely demonstrated. In general terms, innovation can be defined as the realization of changes and innovations that will create added value in the

product form and production process. In this way, innovation is accepted as one of the most important dynamics of economic development. Accordingly, economies that are competent in innovation reach sustainable high growth rates by increasing their efficiency in their production processes. In addition, it is determined that the countries that are active in innovation gain superiority in the increasing international competition environment with the increase in productivity. Thus, the growth of competition between countries with globalization has increased the importance of innovation for national economies.

In the new economic environment, economic growth ensures that access to new sources of knowledge to create new products and production processes is now more important. In the literature, the importance of innovation for sustainable economic growth has been clearly demonstrated, especially with reference to the examples of developed countries. Therefore, it is widely accepted today that the level of development of countries is closely related to their innovation capabilities. As a result, innovation policies have become an important part of economic growth policies. In fact, effectively designing policies that will activate the dynamics of the innovation process has become a fundamental growth strategy. In other words, if policymakers aim to stimulate economic growth, the strategic focus should be placed on expanding the innovative capacity of the economy. Economic policies aimed at supporting innovation-oriented activities have gained great importance, especially in order to achieve a competitive advantage in foreign trade and implement the export-based growth strategy. Thus, defending the innovative capacity of the economy has become an important objective for policymakers to promote productivity growth.

When the literature is examined, it seems that there are many studies that reveal the causality relationship from innovation to economic growth. Thus, widespread opinion named the "supply-leading hypothesis" argues that innovation is the cause of economic growth. On the other hand, some economists advocate the "feedback hypothesis" that asserts a bidirectional relationship between innovation and economic growth. Therefore, the question of how the causality relationship between innovation and economic growth operates is a controversial issue. In order to shed light on these discussions in the literature, this study aims to investigate the causality relationship between innovation on economic growth in emerging economies in Eastern Europe. Accordingly, the relationship between the number of patents and per capita income between 2000 and 2017 has been examined by using dynamic panel data methodology based on Generalized Method of Moments (GMM) estimators.

The remainder of the paper is organized as follows. Section 2. Reviews the related literature based on innovation and economic growth. Section 3 presents data, methodology, and empirical results. The final section concludes and makes some policy implications.

2. LITERATURE REVIEW

The relationship between innovation and economic growth has received considerable attention in the literature. However, the question of how the causal relationship between innovation and economic growth works is a controversial issue. However, it is often argued that innovation has a positive effect on economic growth. Accordingly, it is possible to reach higher growth rates with the increase in productivity provided by innovation. Thus, widespread opinion named the "supply-leading hypothesis" argues that innovation is the cause of economic growth.

There is a lot of empirical evidence in the literature to support the "supply-leading hypothesis", which claims that causality runs from innovation to economic growth. Yang (2006) investigated the role played by innovation in explaining Taiwan's economic growth

for the period 1951-2001. Empirical results supported that increase in domestic patenting leads to increase economic growth in Taiwan. Thus, this paper provides a new piece of evidence on the relationship between innovation and growth in Taiwan. Since innovation is actually positively associated with economic growth, the policy measures adopted by the government to encourage industrial innovation seem to obtain the expected effect. Hasan and Tucci (2010) investigated the link between innovation and economic growth by using global patent data based on a sample of 58 countries for the period 1980-2003. Empirical results indicate that countries hosting firms with higher quality patents also have higher economic growth. Thus, based on the results of this study, the government should attempt to raise the capacity of innovative activities in a country as a basic tool associated with increasing economic growth. Saini and Jain (2011) analysed the data of nine countries in the Asian region for the period 2000-2009. Findings indicated that innovations are the major factor affecting GDP growth rate. Especially, technology based countries' economies were affected by patent applications filed. Adak (2015) focuses on the influence of technological progress and innovation on the Turkish economy. Empiric findings show a significant effect of technological progress and innovation on economic growth. The relationship between total patent applications and GDP was tested by using Engel Granger and Error Correction Models for the term 1980-2013. Pece et al. (2015) study the influence of innovation potential on the long-term economic growth of three major economies of Central and Eastern Europe, namely, Poland, The Czech Republic, and Hungary for the sample period of 2000–2013. The results indicate that innovation and economic growth are positively related. Omar 2019 examined the association between innovation – measured by gross expenditure on research and development (GERD) – and economic performance – represented by real gross domestic product (GDP) – in the MENA region over the period 2000-2016. Empirical results of the panel corrected standard error method highlight the importance of innovation in fostering economic growth. Therefore, MENA governments should support and encourage the private sector's contribution to the innovation sector to promote higher growth. Pradhan et al (2020) examined whether innovation is a key driver of economic growth in 19 Eurozone countries for the period 2001-2006. Accordingly, the paper investigates the Granger causal relationships between innovation and economic growth by using a vector error-correction model. The study finds that in the long run, innovation stimulates economic growth in the Eurozone countries. Thus, the results reveal that Eurozone countries should indeed base their growth strategies on policies that promote innovation and policies. In other words, strong support for innovation will strengthen the competitiveness of existing sectors and lead to new sources of economic growth in the Eurozone.

While many studies show a positive relationship between innovation and economic growth, some studies find a bidirectional causality between economic growth and innovation. In the literature, some economists advocates "feedback hypothesis" that asserts a bidirectional relationship between innovation and economic growth. As the economy begins to grow, the focus gradually shifts to innovations of specific and specialized nature as firms increase their spending on innovation providers such as R&D, infrastructure, and skills development. A country's economic growth provides increased funding for good education and research and development, thus supporting the effectiveness of innovation ecosystems to innovate further. In this case, innovation and economic growth affect each other.

Some studies in the literature empirically indicated that economic growth affects innovation activities or feedback effects, which are the opposite of "innovation leads to economic growth". Sinha (2008) looks at the relationship between patents and economic growth in Japan and South Korea using both individual country and panel data for the term 1963-2005. Empirical results show that a two-way causality between the growth of real GDP and growth

of the number of patents for Japan. Galindo and Mendez (2014) analyse the relationship between innovation and economic growth in 13 developed countries for the term 2002-2007. Empirical results show that a feedback effect is at work: economic activity promotes entrepreneurship and innovation activities, and the latter enhances economic activity. Therefore, policymakers must consider this bidirectional relationship when designing economic policies. Accordingly, upon achieving some suitable economic growth level, policymakers should promote innovative activities in the economy. Altın ve Toktaş (2017) examined the impact of innovation on economic growth by panel data technique using the 1992-2015 period data for 21 emerging market economies. Per capita real GDP series was used to represent economic growth while patent applications represent the innovation variable. After examining the homogeneity of the slope coefficients by the delta test, the existence of a long-run relationship between the series has been proved by the Westerlund (2008) Durbin-Hausman cointegration test. The long-run regression coefficients of the model were estimated by the Panel AMG method. According to the estimation results, there is a two-way causality relationship between economic growth and innovation. Çütçü ve Bozan (2017) investigate the relationship between innovation and the economic growth in G7 countries. Patent applications were taken and panel data analyses were performed with annual data covering 1981-2016 periods. Findings indicated a long-term relationship between innovation and economic growth. The results of the Dumitrescu-Hurlin Causality test show a one-way causality relationship from the growth rate to patent applications. Avila-Lopez et al (2019) aims to analyse the relationship between innovation and per capita economic growth over the long run for 12 Latin American countries for the period 1996-2015. Using the Granger causality test, the study finds the presence of bidirectional causalities between innovation and per capita economic growth in Colombia, Costa Rica, Ecuador Mexico, Panama, Paraguay, and Uruguay. Thus, governments of these countries have an important role in enhancing the innovative capacity of the economy to reach sustainable high growth rates. Thangavelu et al (2021) attempt to understand the feedback effects of economic growth on innovation by analysing the global innovation index (GII) data covering 154 economies over the years 2013–2017. In this paper, they determined the feedback effects of income on innovation at the country level. Thus, their results extend the previous research findings of the bidirectional causality of economic growth and innovation. This study develops a base for detailed research on the behaviour of feedback effects and the causality relationship between innovation and economic growth. Policymakers may consider the difference in the feedback effects of economic growth on the innovation input and innovation output while developing the policies.

3. DATA, METHODOLOGY AND EMPIRICAL RESULTS

There is no consensus in the relevant literature on the causal relationship between innovation and economic growth. While the common view claims that there is a causal relationship from innovation to economic growth, some economists argue that the relationship is reciprocal. In order to shed light on these debates in the relevant literature, this study analyses the relationship between innovation and economic growth in the developing countries of Eastern Europe. Thus, this article aims to contribute to the discussions in the relevant literature by empirically analysing the innovation-economic growth link in Eastern European countries

Depending on availability of annual data from EUROSTAT database, over the period from 2000 to 2017, we have considered 11 Eastern European Countries (EECs) including Bulgaria, Croatia, Czech Republic, Estonia, Hungary, Lithuania, Latvia, Poland, Romania, Slovakia, and Slovenia. The number of patents (PATENT), which are the symbolise the innovation

capability of the economy, indicates the number of patent applications to the European Patent Office (EPO). GDP per capita is taken as an indicator of economic growth (GROWTH).

In order to investigate the relationship between PATENT and GROWTH, dynamic panel data methodology based on Generalized Method of Moments (GMM) estimator developed by Holtz-Eakin et. al (1988) and Arellano and Bond (1991) will be applied. Accordingly, the model can be shown below:

$$y_{it} = \beta_0 + \sum_{j=1}^n \beta_j y_{it-j} + \sum_{j=1}^n \alpha_j \Delta x_{it-j} + F_t + \varepsilon_{it} \quad (1)$$

where (y) and (x) symbolize variables while (F) and (ε) represent individual fixed effect and error term, respectively. Besides, (i) refer to panel unit, (t) represents time, and finally (j) shows the lag number. In order to eliminate the unobserved country-specific effects, equation (1) is differenced to derive the model below:

$$\Delta y_{it} = \sum_{j=1}^n \beta_j y_{it-j} + \sum_{j=1}^n \alpha_j \Delta x_{it-j} + \Delta \varepsilon_{it} \quad (2)$$

As you have seen from equation 2 the Generalized Method of Moments (GMM) estimator offers a solution to this problem by using the appropriate lags of the dependent and the independent variables as instruments. This approach also allows the introduction of more instruments and thereby improves efficiency. Accordingly, based on Wald Test, the null hypothesis that x does not cause y is the joint test that $H_0 = \alpha_1 = \alpha_2 = \dots = \alpha_n = 0$. Thus, rejection of H_0 is interpreted as causality from x to y. In the estimation process of Equation (2), two basic types of diagnostic test can also be conducted. Firstly, the Arellano-Bond (AR) test can be operated for indication of serial correlation in the residuals. The test is actually two separate statistics, one for first order correlation and one for second. If the innovations are i.i.d. we expect the first order statistic to be significant and the second order statistic to be insignificant. Secondly, Sargent Test can be operated for indicating whether the instruments are correlated with the error term. The hypothesis for the Sargan test is that the instrumental variables are uncorrelated to some set of residuals and hence they are valid instruments. Thus, while the Arellano-Bond (AR) test can be operated for indicating of serial correlation in the residuals, Sargent Test can be operated for indication whether the instruments are correlated with the error term.

Based on methodology concerning panel causality model indicated equation (2), in our study we specified and estimated two regressions shown in Equation (3) and (4) below.

$$\Delta GROWTH_{it} = \sum_{j=1}^n \gamma_j \Delta GROWTH_{it-j} + \sum_{j=1}^n \lambda_j \Delta PATENT_{it-j} + \Delta u_{it} \quad (3)$$

$$\Delta PATENT_{it} = \sum_{j=1}^n \theta_j \Delta PATENT_{it-j} + \sum_{j=1}^n \delta_j \Delta GROWTH_{it-j} + \Delta e_{it} \quad (4)$$

where, i : 1, 2, ..., 11, number of countries, t : 2000, 2001, ..., 2017, time period (year) and j: 2 (lag number). GROWTH represents the economic growth variable while PATENT symbolizes the number of patent applications

Before proceeding to panel data analysis based Generalized Method of Moments (GMM) estimator we need to check whether the variables in our model are stationary or non-stationary. Accordingly, IM, Peseran and Shin (IPS) panel unit root tests developed by IM et al (2003) has been employed. The results derived from the panel unit root tests for the variables of economic growth (GROWTH) and the number of patent (PATENT) are presented in Table.1. Panel unit root tests have shown that GROWH and PATENT series are stationary at the levels. However, both series become stationary at the 1 per cent significant level after

their first difference are taken. Thus, it can be concluded that the GROWTH and PATENT series are I (1).

Table 1: Panel Unit Root Test

Variables	IPS	
	Levels	Differences
GROWTH	4.141 (0.16)	-2.742 (0.00) *
PATENT	6.190 (0.24)	-3.114 (0.00) *

Note: p-values in parenthesis and (*) indicates significance at the 1 per cent level.

In the framework of panel equations estimated by GMM, the results of the Wald Causality Test and diagnostic tests for Equation (3) and Equation (4) are presented in the first and second columns of Table.2. We employed the lagged values of the variables as instruments in levels for the first difference equations, for 2 and earlier. Thus, in the framework of panel equations estimate we have tested the validity of the channels through which the effects of innovation on economic growth occur.

The empirical findings shown in Table-2 indicated that innovation has a significant positive impact on economic growth in Eastern European countries. The coefficient showing the impact of lagged PATENT on GROWTH is positive. Thus, empirical findings support the argument that developments of innovation capacity have a positive impact on economic growth in Eastern European countries. Besides, it seems that GROWTH has also a significant influence on PATENT. That means both null hypotheses of non-causality from PATENT to GROWTH and from GROWTH to PATENT are rejected by the Wald Causality Test statistic. In conclusion, the results of the GMM Estimate and Causality Test indicate that there is a bidirectional relationship between innovation and economic growth in Eastern European countries.

Diagnostic test results show that the models are well specified and two lags are appropriate for the panel GMM estimator. Accordingly, the Wald χ^2 test checking the significance of individual coefficients in the model shows that both models are significant as a whole. The AR (1) and AR (2) tests indicate the applicability of models as we expect the first-order statistic to be significant and the second-order statistic to be insignificant. The Sargan test does not reject the validity of the set of instruments in all equations.

Table 2: GMM Estimation and Causality Test

Independent Variables	Dependent Variables	
	$\Delta GROWTH$	$\Delta PATENT$
$\Delta GROWTH_{it-1}$	0, 210 (0,00)*	0, 152 (0,04) **
$\Delta GROWTH_{it-2}$	0, 347 (0,00)*	0, 0987 (0,03) **
$\Delta PATENT_{it-1}$	0, 213 (0,07)**	2, 343 (0,00)*
$\Delta PATENT_{it-2}$	0, 134 (0,04)**	2,681 (0,00)*
Wald χ^2	29.287 (0.00)*	35.11 (0.00)*
AR (1)	-4.98 (0.00)*	-5.45 (0.00) *
AR(2)	-0.27 (0.36)	-0.43 (0.29)
Sargan Test	32.76 (0.415)	29.14 (0.314)
Wald Causality Test	14.47 (0,00)* ($H_0 = \lambda_{t-1} = \lambda_{t-2} = 0$)	2,04 (0,19) ($H_0 = \delta_{t-1} = \delta_{t-2} = 0$)

Note: p-values in parenthesis and (*) and (**) indicate significance at the 1, 5 and 10 per cent levels, respectively.

4. CONCLUSION

Key drivers of sustained economic growth have received considerable attention from development economists. Today, the debates on this subject are handled within the framework of the relationship between innovation and economic growth. The common view is that innovation is an important dynamic of economic growth. In addition, empirical findings suggesting that there is a reciprocal relationship between innovation and economic growth have also been found. Thus, there is no consensus in the literature on the direction of the causal relationship between innovation and economic growth. However, for policy purposes, it is important to know the direction of the causality relationship between economic growth and innovation. Accordingly, to provide a new piece of evidence on the related literature, this study examines the causal relationships between innovation and economic growth. The relationship between the number of patents and per capita income in the 11 Eastern European countries for the period 2000-2017 has been examined by using dynamic panel data methodology based on Generalized Method of Moments (GMM) estimators.

Empirical results show that there is a bidirectional relationship between innovation and economic growth in Eastern European countries. This paper provides a new piece of evidence on the relationship between innovation and growth. The empirical results are in line with the “feedback hypothesis” that advocates a reciprocal relationship between innovation and economic growth. Bidirectional causality indicates that innovation increases economic growth and later this increase in national income creates a demand for innovation in the Eastern European Area. Thus, the relationship between innovation and economic growth is not as simple as we thought, since innovation is not only a reason for economic growth but also likely be a consequence. Policymakers have an important role to play in activating this positive cycle between innovation and economic growth. Thus, findings suggest that to stimulate sustained economic growth in Eastern European countries, policy-makers should give priority to the extension of the innovative capacity of the economies. This will help to foster a positive influence between economic growth and innovation.

REFERENCES

- Adak, M. (2015). Technological progress, innovation and economic growth; the case of Turkey. *Procedia-Social and Behavioral Sciences*, 195, 776-782.
- Altiner, A. ve Y. Toktaş (2017). The Effects of Innovation on Economic Growth in the Emerging Market Economics: Panel Data Analysis. *Journal of Current Researches on Business and Economics*, 7(2), 477-496.
- Arellano, M., Bond, S. (1991). Some Tests of Specification for Panel Data: Monte Carlo Evidence and an Application to Employment Equations. *The Review of Economic Studies*, 58 (2), pp. 277-297.
- Avila-Lopez, L. A., Lyu, C., & Lopez-Leyva, S. (2019). Innovation and growth: evidence from Latin American countries. *Journal of Applied Economics*, 22(1), 287-303.
- Çütçü, İ., & Bozan, T. (2017). The Relationship between Innovation and Economic Growth: Panel Data Analysis on G7 Countries. *Uluslararası Ekonomi İşletme ve Politika Dergisi*, 3(2), 289-310.

- Galindo, M. Á., & Méndez, M. T. (2014). Entrepreneurship, economic growth, and innovation: Are feedback effects at work? *Journal of business research*, 67(5), 825-829.
- Hasan, I., & Tucci, C. L. (2010). The innovation–economic growth nexus: Global evidence. *Research policy*, 39(10), 1264-1276.
- Holtz-Eakin, D., Newey, W. and Rosen, H. (1988). Estimating Vector Autoregressions with Panel Data. *Econometrica*, 56 (6), 1371-1395.
- IM, K., Peseran, H. and Shin, Y. (2003). Testing for Unit Roots in Heterogenous Panels. *Journal of Econometrics*, 115, 53-74.
- OECD, (1996), *The Knowledge-Based Economy*. Paris.
- Omar, N.S. (2019), “Innovation and economic performance in MENA region”, *Review of Economics and Political Science*, Vol. 4 No. 2, pp. 158-175.
- Pece, A.M., Simona, O.E.O. and Salisteanu, F. (2015), “Innovation and economic growth: an empirical analysis for CEE countries”, *Procedia Economics and Finance*, Vol. 26 No. 15, pp. 461-467.
- Pradhan, R. P., Arvin, M. B., Nair, M., & Bennett, S. E. (2020). The dynamics among entrepreneurship, innovation, and economic growth in the Eurozone countries. *Journal of Policy Modeling*, 42(5), 1106-1122.
- Saini, A. K., & Jain, S. (2011). The impact of patent applications filed on sustainable development of selected Asian countries. *International Journal of Information Technology*, 3(2), 358-364.
- Sinha, D. (2008). Patents, innovations and economic growth in Japan and South Korea: evidence from individual country and panel data. *Applied Econometrics and International Development*, 8(1).
- Thangavelu, S., Gunasekar, S., & Jyotishi, A. (2021). Feedback effects of economic growth on innovation: a country-level empirical study. *Journal of Science and Technology Policy Management*.
- Yang, C. H. (2006). Is innovation the story of Taiwan's economic growth? *Journal of Asian Economics*, 17(5), 867-878.

A COMPARISON OF DEMOCRACY INDEXES

Ömer Taylan

Dr., Dicle University, Faculty of Economics and Administrative Sciences, Department of
Political Science and Public Administration, Diyarbakır, Turkey

Ali Çiçek

Dr., Sivas Cumhuriyet University, Yıldızeli Vocational School, Department of Management
and Organization, Sivas, Turkey

ABSTRACT

Mankind has constantly sought the best management model from the ancient past to the present. However, a form of government that can make every single person living happily in a country has not been found yet. The closest system to the ideal management style is the democratic system, which includes civil liberties and political rights, and focuses on human rights. The concept of democracy; It is related to many issues such as civil liberties, political rights, human rights, freedom of expression, and freedom of the press. Therefore, it is necessary to look at many criteria to measure whether the governments are democratic or not. There are some democracy indexes that deal with the criteria on which democratic practices are based on. In this study, the comparison of democracy indexes will be included.

Keywords:Democracy, Democracy Indexes, Polyarchy.

INTRODUCTION

Democracy as a concept, consists of the combination of the words *demos* and *kratos*. In ancient Greek, the word of *demos* is meant the people living in a particular site. The word of *kratos* means power. Therefore, the word of democracy means "the rules by the people" in its common sense (Schmidt, 2001: 13; Taylan, 2021: 64).

The understanding of democracy in Ancient Greece is quite different from today's democracies. In the practice of democracy in ancient times, women, foreigners and slaves did not have the right to vote. Only a limited number of men, determined by certain rules, had the right to vote. Ancient Greek democracy is a first in that large numbers of people act jointly when making political decisions. This is why Ancient Greek democracy is valued in the literature. Democracy practices have been forgotten for centuries after Ancient Greece (Bülbül, 2019: 85). The rediscovery of democracy, which had been forgotten for many years, was achieved with the realization of the revolutions in America, England and France. America won the war of independence against the British and established the democratic system. Various revolutions took place in England that limited the King and a democratic system was established through political parties. In France, the bourgeoisie discovered the "people" against the king and the nobility (aristocracy) and adopted democratic practices. Thanks to democracy, people in many countries have been given the right to vote, political power has been limited and freedoms have been expanded. Today, democracy is defined as the political life style that gives the greatest freedom to the greatest number of individuals, recognizes and preserves the greatest possible diversity (Touraine, 1997 :25).

Democracy practices were severely damaged, especially between the two world wars, and democratic regimes were replaced by authoritarian and totalitarian regimes in this period. Although the similar situation continued to be effective during the Cold War period, democracies have been strengthened around the world, especially since the 1970s. However, there have been differences in the democracy practices of countries that can be considered

democratic. Therefore, many democracy indexes have been put forward to reveal what the criteria of democracy are. According to these indexes, it has been tried to determine whether the countries are democratic or not. Robert Dahl, Tatu Vanhanen, Michael Coppedge and Wolfgang H. Reinicke, Keith Jagers and Ted Robert Gurr created democracy indexes by determining a number of criteria.

ROBERT ALAN DAHL'S POLYARCHY INDEX

The first study on the grading of democracies was made by Robert Alan Dahl with the concept of polyarchy. "Polyarchy means the rule of one or many (as opposed to minority rule)" (2010: 104).

Dahl's term polyarchy is based on seven key features that allow for public opposition and establish the struggle to participate in politics. These seven features are as follows: election of the incumbents, having an inclusive voting right, holding free and fair elections, existence of a legislature, freedom of expression and press, obtaining information from different/alternative sources, organizing/ coalition freedom. When Dahl's polyarchy index is examined, it is seen that this index is clustered around two features. One of these is the participation of adults who have the right to vote and to be elected (degree of political participation). The second is the opportunity to oppose and remove the rulers from work by election. In other words, it is political competition (1971: 3, 151; 1993: 280).

Dahl states that democracy should meet the expectations and wishes of all interest groups in society. In order for this to happen, it is necessary to look at the characteristics of polyarchy. The degree of characteristics of polyarchy determines the quality of democracy.

TATU VANHANEN'S INDEX

Vanhanen developed the index based on Dahl's theory of polyarchy ("political competition" and "political participation"). Vanhanen calculates the political competition by subtracting the vote rate of the strongest party from 100 in a national election (2000: 251, 253).

For example, suppose there are 5 political parties competing in country A. Let the party with the most votes get 60% and other parties (opposition parties) get 40%. According to Vanhanen, this 40% vote rate should be reflected fairly on representation. In other words, the 40 percent share should get 40 percent of the seats in the parliament. For this reason, in Vanhanen's scale, election systems have a special importance. According to Vanhanen, if the votes of all opposition parties in country A are reflected in the parliament, it can be said that the quality of democracy is at a high level.

According to Vanhanen's theory, if only one party has the right to participate in the elections in a country (other political parties do not have the right to participate in the elections), then the power in that country is concentrated in the hands of a single party. Democracy cannot be realized if power is concentrated in the hands of only one party. Democracy is expected to take place under conditions where power sources are spread over a very wide area. If organized groups with permission to participate in the elections are not allowed, the levels of competition and participation are considered zero. If only a small minority of the country's population participates in the elections, the struggle for power will be limited to a small segment of the population. Thus, the majority of the population is excluded from the use of power (1997: 35-36).

Vanhanen's democracy index also means resource distribution. Vanhanen uses only two empirical indicators to measure the degree of resource allocation. Vanhanen only accepts these two empirical indicators as realistic (1997: 27, 35; 2003: 53-54):

- (1) It uses only two simple indicators (participation and competition).
- (2) Both indicators are based on quantitative election data.

Vanhanen thinks that these two simple empirical indicators are enough to measure democracies. But he also admits that not all important aspects of democracy are taken into account. Vanhanen states that there are no satisfactory quantitative indicators to measure the level of civil and political freedoms, which he calls the third dimension of democracy (1997: 5, 27), and as a result, he states that the democracy scales used by all countries should be the same. Because human nature is the same everywhere. This scale also makes a valid measurement all over the world. (1993:303).

THE POLYARCHY SCALE OF MICHAEL COPPEDGE AND WOLFGANG H. REINICKE

Michael Coppedge and Wolfgang H. Reinicke developed a four-variable scale based on Dahl's term polyarchy. Variables in the scale consist of fair and free elections, freedom of association, freedom of expression, availability of alternative information sources (media pluralism) (1990: 51-54).

The first variable on the scale, which is fair and free elections, is divided into three categories. These;

1. Choices made without cheating or coercion
2. Some choices made by trickery and coercion
3. Elections without elections.

Coppedge and Reinicke defined the indicators of the right to vote in these elections by dividing them into four categories. These are universal suffrage, suffrage with partial restrictions, suffrage of the majority of the population, and lack of suffrage (1990: 53-54).

The second variable, which is freedom of association in the scale, is divided into four categories. These;

1. Some unions or interest groups may be restricted or banned, but there are no restrictions on political organisation.
2. Unions, interest groups and some political parties are banned. However, in some cases, membership in official organizations is allowed.
3. Relatively independent organizations are only allowed to exist outside of politics.
4. No independent organizations are allowed. All organizations are either controlled or banned by the government (1990: 54).

The fourth variable in the scale, which is the availability of alternative information sources (media pluralism), was divided into four categories. These;

1. There are alternative sources of information and they are protected by law. If the government owns a significant portion of the media, they are effectively controlled by truly independent or multi-party bodies.

2. Access to alternative sources of information is common. However, priority is given to supporters of the government. The censorship of dissident journalists, the punishment of dissident journalists, and the closure of broadcasts show that government-controlled media is very common.

3. The government is the only authority that allows minorities in society to receive information from alternative sources, even for a short time, on non-political matters. The media is often either directly controlled by the government or party, or is somehow limited by censorship. Foreign media may be available to a small fraction of the population.

4. Official information is not publicly available. All information sources are monopolized by official bodies. Media are considered tools of deception. Foreign publications are generally unavailable (1990: 54).

Coppedge and Reinicke's scale of polyarchy puts the rights to freedom, association and participation centrally. However, there have been criticisms about the scale. For example, the absence of an executive brake and balance variable in the scale was listed as a deficiency (Schmidt, 2001: 267).

KEITH JAGGERS AND TED ROBERT GURR'S DEMOCRATIZATION INDEX

Jagers and Gurr aimed to measure the durability of democracy and thus they stated that historical and regional differences play an effective role in the quality of democracy (1995: 470). However, they did not try to explain these differences by grounding them. In order to measure the quality of democracy, they attributed a special importance to the executive power. Guaranteeing political rights and freedoms is included in the index of Jagers and Gurr, but the degree of realization of political rights is not included in the scale. Therefore, the democracy index of Jagers and Gurr is criticized (Schmidt, 2001: 269).

According to Jagers and Gurr, democracy is accepted as a variable in itself. This variable consists of three interconnected basic elements. The first element includes citizens' expressing their political wishes and preferences about administrators through institutions. The second element includes the guarantee of political rights and freedoms. The third element includes the institutional limitation of the executive or power (1995: 472-473).

According to Jagers and Gurr, the third element of democracy has been neglected or left incomplete by Vanhanen, Coppedge and Reinicke (1995: 470-471). Thus, according to Jagers, Gurr, and Moore, democracy is not just about citizens' capacity to elect political representatives. Democracy is also associated with their ability to establish and operationalize institutional constraints on the exercise of executive power. Therefore, in the third element of democracy, a special emphasis is placed on features such as competition and transparency that prevent the monopolization of the executive power (1990: 78).

Jagers, Gurr, and Moore focus more specifically on the institutionalization dimension of democracy. For this reason, issues such as ensuring the rule of law, controlling the executive power, and not preventing the freedom of the press are accepted as indicators of democracy (1990: 83). Jagers and Gurr cite the United States of America in 1960 as an example of the institutionalization of democracy. According to Jagers and Gurr, human rights violations can occur in the United States despite the effective functioning of institutional structures. To solve this problem, Jagers and Gurr recommend that political participation be fully open, transparent and competitive in the relations between democratic institutions and practices. They argue that public recruitment should not be discriminated on the basis of religion, sect and ethnic difference (1995: 471).

CONCLUSION

Democracy is a form of government with a history of 2500 years, although it is interrupted from time to time. Despite its ancient history, the content of the term democracy is still a matter of debate. In fact, democracy is an ideal and in order to realize this ideal, each individual or community defines democracy in their own way. This situation gives an ambivalence appearance to democracy. Therefore, the content of democracy should be determined and clarified by various criteria. Democracy indexes were put forward to realize this aim. There are many researchers who develop the criteria of democracy and create indexes. However, in this study, the democracy indexes of the researchers, which are mentioned most in the literature, are included. In this study, democracy indexes of Robert Dahl, Tatu Vanhanen, Michael Coppedge and Wolfgang H. Reinicke, Keith Jagers and Ted Robert Gurr were examined.

Dahl, one of the most well-known researchers on democracy indexes, mentions that democracy has 7 criteria. These are the election of those in office, the right to vote, the holding of free and fair elections, the existence of a legislature, the freedom of expression and the press, the freedom of information from different/alternative sources, the freedom of association/coalition of political parties and interest groups. As can be seen, Dahl's democracy index focuses on political participation and political competition. According to Dahl, if the aforementioned 7 criteria are met, the quality of democracy will increase.

Vanhanen, on the other hand, was inspired by Dahl's understanding and developed an index focused specifically on political competition. He also says that power sources should be spread over wide circles. Thus, the power will not be concentrated in one hand.

Michael Coppedge and Wolfgang H. Reinicke also developed a four-variable scale based on Dahl's term polyarchy. The criteria discussed here are fair and free elections, freedom of association, freedom of expression, availability of alternative information sources (media pluralism). However, the lack of a criterion for the executive is criticized.

On the other hand, Jagers and Gurr put executive power at the center of democracy indexes. Their index consists of the freedom of citizens to express their wishes and opinions about the rulers, the guarantee of political rights and freedoms, the institutional limitation of power (managers).

In each of the aforementioned indexes, the following topics are addressed: broad political participation, political competition, freedom of expression, independent media, limited executive, fair elections and freedom of association. However, democracy indexes need to be rearranged according to changing conditions and updated to realize ideal democracy. Only in this way will the desired democratic governments be established.

REFERENCES

- Bülbül, K. 2019. Siyaset bilimi kavramlar kurumlar ideolojiler. Ankara: Liberte Yayınları.
- Coppedge, M. and Reinicke, W. H 1990. Measuring Polyarchy, Studies in Comparative International Development, Vol. 25, No. 1, pp. 51-72.
- Dahl, R.A 1971. Polyarchy: Participation and Opposition, Yale University Press, London.
- Dahl, R.A 1993. Demokrasi ve Eleştirileri (Çev. Levent Köker), Yetkin Basımevi, Ankara.
- Dahl, R.A 2010. Demokrasi Üzerine (Çev. Betül Kadioğlu), 2. Baskı, Phoenix Yayınevi, Ankara.

Gurr, Ted Robert, Jagers, Keith and Will H. M 1990. The Transformation of the Western State: The Growth of Democracy, Autocracy, and State Power Since 1800, Studies in Comparative International Development, Vol. 25, No. 1, pp. 73-108.

Jagers, Keith and Gurr, Ted Robert 1995. Tracking Democracy's Third Wave with the Polity III Data, Journal of Peace Research, Vol. 32, No. 4, pp. 469-482.

Schmidt, M. G 2001. Demokrasi teorilerine giriş (M. Emin Köktaş, Trans.). Ankara: Vadi Yayınları.

Taylan, Ö 2021. 1946 genel seçimlerinin demokrasi bağlamında değerlendirilmesi. Sosyal Bilimler Akademisi Dergisi, 4(1): 62-74.

Touraine, A 1997. What is democracy. New York: Routledge.

Vanhanen, T. 1993. Construction and Use of an Index of Democracy, (Monitoring Social Progress in the 1990s, (ed. David G. Westendorff and Dharam Ghai), Avebury, Aldershot, pp. 301-321.

Vanhanen, T 1997. Prospect of Democracy: A Study of 172 Countries, Routledge, London and New York.

Vanhanen, T 2000. A New Dataset for Measuring Democracy, 1810 - 1998, Journal of Peace Research, Vol. 37, No. 2, pp. 251-265.

Vanhanen, T 2003. Democratization: A Comparative Analysis of 170 Countries, Routledge, London and New York.

IMPORTANCE OF INNOVATION IN SERVICE MANAGEMENT

Rima Mammadova

Ph.D. Candidate, University of Pecs, Hungary

ABSTRACT

Changing market, strong competition, capricious customers, fast technological development influence the growth of all types of companies, especially service companies. Sawhney (2016) argues that service companies should follow different methods of approaching such as innovation. Innovations can help companies to increase their profit margins (Fisher, 1997) and find out what kind of services customers are looking for and how to decrease customers' expenses (Dawar, 2013). This paper aims to examine different literature review on innovation and service management, and how companies can increase their revenues based on these two concepts. The paper ends with a discussion and conclusion.

Keywords: Innovation, service management, resources, capabilities

INTRODUCTION

Changing market, strong competition, capricious customers, fast technological development influence the growth of all types of companies, especially companies that are engaged in service management. Sawhney (2016) argues that the role and features of products in the service companies are different from the manufacturing companies, which means that service companies should follow different methods of approaching. He suggests three key stages for the process of product development: identifying product opportunities for automation; improving products, processing them, then gathering and analyzing data; and monetizing them by using profits from automation and the application of analytics. What about innovation? Can innovation help companies to grow? Regarding these questions, many researchers argue that innovation plays an important role in the growth of companies and managers should pay more attention to the innovation strategy.

Innovations can help companies to increase their profit margins (Fisher, 1997). Innovation helps companies to find out what kind of services customers are looking for and how to decrease customers' expenses (Dawar, 2013). Service companies can increase their revenues by using disruptive innovation. They should listen to their main customers and enhance relationships with them to sustain their results from innovation (Christensen et al., 2015). Using disruptive theory does not mean that companies will explore everything about how to be successful and innovative; however, it will help managers to be more accurate in their forecasting and comprehend how companies can be innovatively successful (Christensen et al., 2015).

This paper aims to examine different literature review on innovation and service management, and how companies can increase their revenues based on these two concepts. The paper ends with a discussion and conclusion.

Innovation and Service Management

Fisher et al. (2017) argue that managers of service companies have to follow the right metrics in order to reveal the exact time to shift from high growth to slow growth. They suggest tracking the following metrics which are able to show when managers should slow the number of the store which they are going to open or to stop them at all: Return on Invested Capital (ROIC), Revenue Per Store and Estimated Revenue Added Per New Store (for further information see Fisher et al., 2017). If the results of the three metrics show that companies

have to stop opening new stores, then managers should pay more attention to the improvement of existing stores in order to increase the revenues of the company through operational improvements.

One of the main goals of all companies is to increase their revenues. Therefore, they use forecasting to avoid loss of money. However, not each forecasting is accurate and forecasting errors can occur. To avoid forecasting errors and decrease forecasting costs, Fisher et al. (1994) suggest companies use accurate responses. According to them, using this approach will help managers to identify forgotten sales opportunities and define the measures of predictable or unpredictable demands for products.

Resources are also valuable for each company in any industry, especially in the service area; however, sometimes managers are not able to administer them. Therefore, Collis et al. (1995) suggest managers how to test and administer the resources and their values. They offer 5 steps for testing the values of resources: the test of inimitability; the test of durability; the test of appropriability; the test of substitutability; the test of competitive superiority (for further information see Collis et al., 1995). After testing the values of resources, Collis et al. (1995) note that companies can build their strategy on resources that will cause an increase in profits. Fisher et al. (2017) also suggest that managers should follow several ways to increase their revenues in service areas: to close unprofitable stores and refresh existing stores; to use analytics tools to attract customers and keep their attention; to pay more attention to the new products or services; to improve human resource management and use new technology; to get benefits from omnichannel strategy and to use customer-facing policies.

According to Sawhney (2016), if the service companies are willing to be successful in their field they have to change the culture of the company and attitudes of the employees. The companies should open a department/unit which will be engaged in the development of products via innovative approaches. The team of department/unit should consist of experts in the business domain, IT, and pricing areas. To evaluate the performance of the product, service companies should use product-based metrics, such as ideas innovated, prototypes formed and automation used.

Generally, managers of the top service companies invest and pay more attention to human resources and new technology to increase the performance of employees instead of preparing profit goals and targeting market shares (Heskett et al., 2008). To increase employee performance and productivity, to get their satisfaction, and to keep their faithfulness, the company needs innovative measurement techniques which can help the company to keep its customers as satisfied and loyal at the same time increase the revenues (Heskett et al., 2008). Heskett et al. (2008) discuss how the service-profit chain creates links between customer loyalty and employee satisfaction and performance which cause profit growth. The relationships among internal service quality, employee satisfaction, employee loyalty, employee productivity, external service value, customer satisfaction, customer loyalty, and growth and profitability are shown in Figure 1.

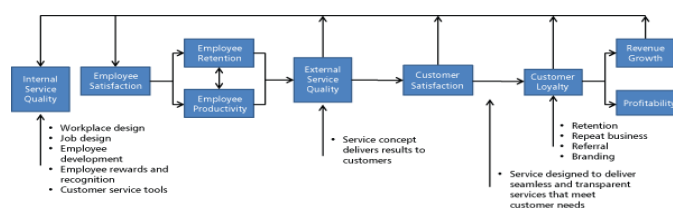


Figure 1. The Links in the Service-Profit Chain (Heskett et al., 2008)

To keep their dominance and influence in the market, companies implement a maturity strategy in the business world, which is rapidly changing. Researchers argue that competitive advantage is not sustainable, therefore, managers should update their strategies and communication tools in order to keep their current customers and attract new ones (Lafley et al., 2017; McGrath, 2013). Along with the maturity strategy, branding is also important for the companies, especially those that manage the services. Companies make innovations inside their brands as well. (Lafley et al., 2017)

Lafley et al. (2017) in their research offer a theory that competitive advantage can be sustainable. They argue that sustainable performance happens when companies offer easy choices to the customers than perfect one, which helps customers not to search for other choices. To do that Lafley et al. (2017) suggest forming a cumulative advantage. To create the cumulative advantage, managers should follow the following rules – to become popular early, to design for habit, to innovate inside the brand, and to keep communication simple.

Despite competitive advantages are not sustainable, McGrath (2013) mentions that traditional methods of strategy are still leading in the market and such approaches can cause strategic failure in the competition. Therefore, she proposes transient advantage which consists of eight major shifts to eliminate such problems that companies could face.

Service companies can increase their revenues by using disruptive innovation. They should listen to their main customers and enhance relationships with them to sustain their results from innovation (Christensen et.al., 2015). Christensen et.al. (2015) mentions that disruptive innovation is not suitable for all kind of companies. It can be useless if managers will not use the right tools for the context. Therefore, they advise that companies that are going to use disruptive innovation should open a new unit where a new disruptive model will be researched and exploited. Disruptive innovation is an excellent challenge for small companies with less resource and it help managers to establish incumbent businesses by improving their services for the ambitious customers. Disruptive innovators first attract unserved customers with improved services or products and after that, they establish positions in the main market (Christensen et.al., 2015).

Pisano (2015) argues that the reason why it is hard to build capacity for innovation is that companies have no strategy for innovation. He mentions that a good innovation strategy is a strategy that shows clear and specific goals, which help the company to build a sustainable competitive advantage. It also helps companies to settle necessary trade-off decisions and supports the business strategy of the company. Pisano (2015) also mentioned that the innovation strategy assists companies to identify how many resources they should direct to the technological innovation and business model innovation. To help companies to define what kind of innovation they should pursue, Pisano (2015) advises using "The Innovation Landscape Map" which contains four categories.

Many scholars write in the works that disruptive, architectural, and radical innovations lead to the growth of the company, but routine innovation is shortsighted (Pisano, 2015). However, we should take into account that this statement is significant for all companies. Companies should see "The Innovation Landscape Map" as complements for improving their profits (Pisano, 2015).

One of the most achievements in innovation history is the innovation of augmented reality. Porter and Heppelmann (2017) write that augmented reality will influence manufacturing and service companies by changing our learning style, decision-making, and interaction with indistinguishable reality. They believe that innovations such as augmented reality will change the service system of companies, their approach to the employee trainings and production of

services/ products, etc. which will be part of companies' strategy and will lead to increase productivity and profits.

Innovation help companies to increase their profit margins (Fisher, 1997). Innovation helps companies to find out what kind of services customers are looking for and how to decrease customers' expenses (Dawar, 2013). Many management capabilities can be copied by other companies (Supply Chain Management At Wal-Mart. IVEY, 907D01; Sadun et al., 2017). Therefore, companies should do something different from their competitors to stay as leaders in the market. For this purpose, Stalk et al. (1992) suggest a "Capabilities-based competition" strategy which defines the main business processes and works hard on these processes. According to Stalk et al. (1992), companies should pay more attention to their service speed, products' or services' consistency, acuity for the customers' requests, agility to the different business environments, and innovation. Leading companies' managers understand that weak innovation doesn't last for a long time, therefore, managers invest the innovations which will last for a long time by improving their capabilities (Pisano et al., 2009).

CONCLUSION

This paper discusses various literature review on innovation and service management. It examines how innovation help companies to increase their revenues. According to the researchers, innovation has a great influence on the company growth, but managers should take into account that not all innovation tools and approach is relevant to all kind of companies. Managers should invest more in any kind of resources, to build strong innovation strategy and management capabilities. It can be concluded that with the help of a well-organized innovation strategy, service companies are able to increase their productability and profitability.

REFERENCES

- Christensen, C.M., Raynor, M.E. and McDonald, R., 2015. What is disruptive innovation? Harvard Business Review, 93(12), pp.44-53.
- Collis, David and Cynthia A. Montgomery., 1995. Competing on Resources: Strategy in the 1990s. Harvard Business Review, July-August, pp.118-128.
- Dawar, N., 2013. When marketing is strategy, HBR, December, pp. 101-108
- Fisher, M.L., 1997. What is the right supply chain for your product?. Harvard Business Review, March-April, pp.105-117.
- Fisher, M., Gaur, V. and Kleinberger, H., 2017. Curing the addiction to growth. Harvard Business Review, 95(1), pp.66-74.
- Fisher, M.L., Hammond, J.H., Obermeyer, W.R. and Raman, A., 1994. Making supply meet demand in an uncertain world. Harvard Business Review, May-June, pp.83-83.
- Heskett, J.L., Jones, T.O., Loveman, G.W., Earl Sasser, W., and Schlesinger, L.A., 2008. Putting Service-Profit Chain to Work, HBR, 1994, Mar-Apr, pp.164-174.
- Lafley, A.G. and Martin, R.L., 2017. Customer loyalty is overrated. Harvard Business Review, 95(1), pp.45-54.
- McGrath, R.G., 2013. Transient advantage. HBR, June.

- Pisano, G.P., 2015. You need an innovation strategy. Harvard Business Review, 93(6), pp.44-54.
11. Pisano, G.P. and Shih, W.C., 2009. Restoring American competitiveness. Harvard Business Review, July-August, pp.114-125.
- Porter, M.E. and Heppelmann, J.E., 2017. Why every organization needs an augmented reality strategy. Harvard Business Review, 95(6), pp.46-57.
- Sadun, R., Bloom, N. and Van Reenen, J., 2017. Why do we undervalue competent management? Great leadership and brilliant strategy won't succeed without operational excellence. Harvard Business Review, 95(5), pp.120-127.
- Sawhney, M., 2016. Putting products into services, HBR, Sept, pp.82-89
- Stalk, G., Evans, P. and Shulman, L.E., 1992. Competing on capabilities: The new rules of corporate strategy. Harvard Business Review, 70(2), pp.57-69.
- Supply Chain Management At Wal-Mart. IVEY, 907D01

LOCATION AND IMPORTANCE OF THE AGRICULTURE SECTOR IN KÜTAHYA ECONOMY

Gülten SEN

Lec..Dr., Kütahya Dumlupınar University, Kütahya Vocational School of Social Sciences

ABSTRACT

The agricultural sector is one of the main factors that make up the economy of countries. The agricultural sector plays an important role in the development of countries. In order for individuals to continue their lives, agricultural products are an indispensable factor. This study is to approach the potential role of the agricultural sector in contributing to economic growth with an analytical view. It can develop a framework for understanding and measuring this contribution. It focuses on the role of the agricultural economy in poverty reduction in the region and the emergence of a market environment that will encourage its growth. The agricultural sector has played important roles in the economic and social development of countries throughout history. It is expected that he will carry out these duties in the future. It is important to use the agricultural land owned for regional development. Kütahya is important in terms of its plant and animal products due to its location, thermal resources, streams and ecological species. The studies carried out in terms of agricultural production and livestock sector of Kütahya are very limited. In the study, information about the agricultural sector activities of Kütahya is given. The effects of the agricultural activities of the region on economic development were tried to be examined.

Keywords: Kütahya, Agricultural Economy, Employment, Development

INTRODUCTION

Agricultural activities are one of the first economic activities in human history. They met the mandatory needs of individuals such as nutrition and dressing from agricultural products. In economic history research, it has been seen that the revolutions experienced in the field of agriculture occurred before the revolutions in the field of industry (Sabuncu, 2019). The place of the agricultural sector in terms of the country's economies is measured by the added value it puts in the general economy. Today, underdeveloped or developing countries strive to reach more modern economic structures than their traditional economic structures. To reach this economic structure is mostly realized by industrialization. It has a connection between the industrialization processes of countries, the demands of economic and social development and their traditional economic structures. There is a directly proportional interaction between the agricultural sector and the industrial sector in the economic development process. For this reason, developed countries that previously had an agricultural-based economy first gave more importance to the agricultural sector and ensured the development of the agricultural sector. They accelerated industrialization activities with resources obtained from the agricultural sector (Tuna, 1993). Agriculture for countries; contributes to national income and employment. It provides capital to sectors with raw materials. Agricultural activities also have an impact on exports. In addition, it has become one of the indispensable sectors due to its contribution to ecological stability with various species. Agriculture, economic, social and environmental scope are given importance by all sectors.(Dogan et al., 2015). the growth in agriculture in the development of the country; that is, it is important to ensure enrichment in the sense of economics. Developing countries cannot talk about economic and social development without the contribution of the agricultural sector. Agriculture in our country; it

is the sector that contributes significantly to exports and gross national product in creating jobs. (Tektaş, 2006; Özşagır, 2008). With the pandemic affecting the world, the importance of agriculture and livestock for societies has been re-understood. Presidential Decree No. 3190 "Decision on Agricultural Subsidies to be made in 2020" entered into force on November 5, 2020. "Purpose and Scope Article 1 This decision was prepared to promote environmentally sensitive agricultural production, increase yield and quality, support research and development projects, ensure the effectiveness of the policies implemented, contribute to the solution of the priority problems of the sector, ensure sustainability and keep agricultural records up to date, and covers the issues related to agricultural supports to be implemented in 2020" and emphasized the importance of agriculture.

In terms of socio-economic criteria, the agricultural sector has a different degree of importance in the economies of countries according to their level of development. Turkey ranks first among European countries in terms of agricultural production value and seventh in the world (Acar and Aytüre, 2010). In 1923, when the Republic of Turkey was founded, the agricultural sector constituted 40% of gross national product. The sector was able to bring this rate to 1970 with minor changes (Dogan, 2018). When individuals make their living through agriculture and livestock, they have organized their customs and lifestyles within this framework. The agricultural sector also guides our social life (Baykara, 2013). Today, the agricultural sector's GDP has fallen to 4.8%. The Ministry of Agriculture and Forestry has adopted the principle of 'Strong Agriculture, Strong Turkey'. Thus, it can be produced for strong, competitive, organized, technology equipped and sustainable models. The objectives of agricultural policies are in the Agricultural Law "ARTICLE 4 – The objectives of agricultural policies; to improve agricultural production in accordance with domestic and external demand, to protect and develop natural and biological resources, to increase productivity, to strengthen food security and security, to develop producer organizations, to strengthen agricultural markets, to increase the level of prosperity in the agricultural sector by ensuring rural development."

The ability of agriculture to help economic growth is related to rapid and permanent developments in agricultural activities. Desired development in agriculture; with the total capital investments to be made in agricultural activities, agricultural supports will be able to realize a desired development in the sector. When the developed countries are examined, it is observed that in addition to being quite good in agricultural sectors, there is more agricultural support. Agriculture, due to its strategic importance in the world; it is the sector supported within the framework of opportunities with agricultural policies in line with the economic structures of the countries. The main purpose of the policies implemented in the sector is to ensure the active use of resources; the creation of a sustainable agricultural sector that examines the characteristics of economic, social, environmental and international development, where it is established, highly competitive (Abay et al., 2004; Bahşı, 2005). Today, support for the agricultural sector is increasing. By registering these supporting practices, they have made manufacturers willing to produce more, implement modern technologies, plan the right business and make arrangements. This position contributed to the increase of agricultural production. The maintenance and implementation of agricultural supports will lead to an increase in agricultural production. This will contribute positively to economic development. Today, support for the agricultural sector is increasing. By registering these supporting practices, they have made manufacturers willing to produce more, implement modern technologies, plan the right business and make arrangements. This position contributed to the increase of agricultural production. The maintenance and implementation of agricultural supports will lead to an increase in agricultural production. This will contribute positively to economic development). (Terin et al., 2013)

KÜTAHYA AGRICULTURE SECTOR AND METARIALS

Kütahya is located in the Central West Anatolia Section of the Aegean Region. The face measurement of the province is 11.632 km². According to 2021 TÜİK data, there are 13 districts, 28 municipalities, 222 neighborhoods and 546 villages in municipalities. According to 2019 TÜİK data, GSHY per capita of Kütahya province was announced as TL 41,820 and GSHY was announced as TL 24,197,100 (thousand). Kütahya, Manisa, Afyonkarahisar is located in TR33 region together with Uşak. According to 2018 TÜİK data, the participation rate of tr33 region, including Kütahya, is 52.8%, the employment rate is 47.6 and the unemployment rate is 9.8%. The labor force participation rate in Turkey is 49%, the employment rate is 41.1 and the unemployment rate is 13.4%. The unemployment rate is lower than the Turkish average. The reason covers four cities in the tr33 region on average. It is not based on kütahya. The migration rate of the province was explained as -0.42 according to TÜİK data. Unemployment is an important problem for the province. According to the 2020 data, Kütahya ranks 34th among the provinces with its exports, according to KÜTSO data, the exports of the province consist mainly of sectors with medium-low technology characteristics.

Thanks to its geographical structure and ecological conditions, Kütahya has significant potential in agricultural production in terms of product diversity and quantity. In the data obtained from TURKSTAT, the population of Kütahya was explained as 579,257 people. 166,155 people live in towns and villages. The ratio of the rural population to the total population is 29%. In 2018, the population of Kütahya was 577,941 people according to the "Address Based Population Registration System (ADNKS)". 404,603 people live in cities. 173,338 people live in towns and villages. The proportion of residents in the village is 30%, and the proportion of residents in the city is 70%. The central population is 266,784. The center, Buny and Simav are the largest districts in terms of population. The total agricultural area of Kütahya province was 3,165,889 in 2019. . The number of farmers registered in the Farmer Registration System was 22,755 and the registered land assets were 1,441,746. Sugar beet production is the first place in terms of agricultural products. In second place is wheat. Chickpeas are widely produced for the production of leblebi in The District of Rabbit. Leblebi production is one of the important commercial activities for The District of Rabbit and the region. High-temperature geothermal resources in Simav district are also actively used in greenhouses. A high amount of products can be produced with greenhouse activities in the district. (Kütahya Vali İl. Gıda Tar. ve Hay. Md. Birifing Rap., 2017: 25).

KUTAHYA DATA

In this study, it consists of secondary data obtained from the Turkish Statistical Institute (TURKSTAT), Victory Development Agency, Ministry of Food Agriculture and Livestock (GTHB), Kütahya Governorate, Kütahya Agricultural Provincial Directorate and other institutions and organizations related to the subject. In addition, the thesis, reports and publications prepared on the agricultural and economic structure of Kütahya province were used in the study.

Table 1: Comparison of Agricultural Areas of Turkey with Kütahya (2020 data)

	Total Area	Grain and Vegetable Areas		Vegetable Garden Area	Fruit And Beverage and Spice Area	Ornmental Plants
		Ekili	Nadas			
Kütahya	3.114.100	2.458.972	490.020	64.781	100.327	-----
Türkiye	231.451.337	156.284.790	31.732.521	7.792.463	35.587.493	54.070

Source: TÜİK

The total area of Kütahya province is 3,114,100 hectares and corresponds to 1.35% compared to the total areas in Turkey, cultivated areas to 1.57%, callous 1.54%, Vegetable and garden area 0.83%, fruit and spice area 0.28%.

Table 2: Kutahya Province Vegetable Production

2018 Plant Production Value	Herbal Production Value (1,000 TL.)	National Share (%)	Nationwide Order
Kütahya	1.098.897	0,69	45
Türkiye	159.142.178	100	-

Source: TÜİK

According to 2018 data, the plant production value of the province is 1.09.897 and its share is 0.69 and ranks 45th among 81 provinces in the ranking.

Table 3: Plant Production 2019 Field Products Data

Product	Turkey Productions(ton)	Kütahya Productions (ton)	Share in Turkey
Sugar beet	18.085.528	268.215	1,48%
wheat	19.000.000	266.356	1,40%
Barley	7.600.000	93.452	1,23%
Potato	4.979.824	25.676	0,52%
Rye	310.000	8.471	2,73%
Total	63.835.101	691.079	1,08%

Source :TÜİK

Sugar beet is important in terms of being the raw material of sugar with high added value. Sugar beet plays an active role not only in the food sector, but also in the shipping, chemical and alcohol industries. For these reasons, sugar beet has a higher economic contribution compared to other agricultural products. Due to the economic contribution of the product, sugar is of strategic importance in the world. (Dikmen and Bozdog, 2018) Sugar beet plays a role in the development of the countryside. It is important that it provides employment opportunities to family members who produce beets in the prevention of migration from village to city, which teaches mechanization to producers (Erdoğan, 2017 ; Kaya, 2015, Dikmen and Bozdog, 2018). Then wheat, barley, potatoes, rye, respectively. Beans and Chickpeas are included in the economic productions of the province.

Table 4: 2019 Fruit Production Data

Ürün Adı	Türkiye Productions (Ton)	Kütahya Productions (Ton)	Share in Turkey
Sourcecherry	182.165	25.972	14,26%
Cherry	664.224	18.037	2,72%
Apple	3.618.752	10.514	0,29%
walnut	225.000	3.737	1,66%
Plum	317.946	3.315	1,04%
Total	22.335.132	74.085	0,33%

Source: TÜİK

Kütahya ranks first at the provincial level in terms of cherry trees and production in our country. Kütahya, the most commonly grown cherry variety is called "Kütahya cherry ". This species is the most widely grown cherry variety in Turkey (Akyüksek, 2020).On 27.02.2020, Kütahya cherry was registered by Kütahya Commodity Exchange.

(<https://kutahya.tarimorman.gov.tr/>, 2020). Agricultural products specific to Kütahya province are as follows (<https://kutahya.tarimorman.gov.tr/Menu/24/Kutahya-Hakkinda>, 2020).- Germiyan Üçbas Garlic, Bunny Leblebisi, Hosni Yusuf Armudu, Gediz Tarhana, Kütahya Cherry, Poppy Diamond, Sumer Bread Wheat, Kumari Chestnut, Civli Cabbage, Registered Grapes in Gediz, Muhat Biberi, Belkavak Bean, Ehrami Karaçam. (Sen, 2021).

Table 5: 2019 Vegetable Production Data

Ürün	Turkey Production (ton)	Kütahya Production (Ton)	Share İn Turkey
Tomato	12.841.990	51.640	0,40%
Pepper	2.625.669	15.534	0,59%
Melon	1.777.059	13.433	0,76%
Onion	2.200.000	9.057	0,41%
Water Melon	3.870.515	8.770	0,23%
Total	31.089.644	134.805	0,43%

Source: TÜİK

Table 6: 2018 Live Animals Value

	Live animal value (1.000 TL)	Share in The Country (%)	Ranking nationwide
Kütahya	1.632.805	1,12	39
Türkiye	146.184.051	100	-

Source: TÜİK

Table 7: Kütahya Animal Presence

Typ	Race	2002	2018	2019
Cattle	Kültür	31.615	126.169	126.138
	Melez	68.302	52.564	60.329
	Domestic Cattle	29.416	13.459	11.633
Total		129.333	192.192	198.100
Water buffalo		1.005	3.947	4.014
Sheep	Merinos	47.641	19.306	22.394
	Domestic Sheep	243.944	324.225	327.207
Total		291.585	343.531	349.601
Goat	Kıl	104.639	139.715	138.016
	Tiftik	26.027	430	337
Total		130.666	140.145	138.353
Total		552.589	679.815	690.068

Source: TÜİK

Table 8: Kütahya Vegetable and Animal Production Values and Livestock Values and Country Rankings

2018 Animal Production Value	Animal Products Value (1000 TL.)	Share Turkey(%)	Turkey ranking
Kütahya	400.720	0,51	39
Türkiye	79.150.212	100	-

Source: TÜİK

In the rural areas of the center and districts, individuals mostly feed poultry for their own needs. Chicken farms in the district of Rabbitli are operated quite modernly. They also sell from the district to Kütahya center and other provinces. Goose production is carried out in Altıntaş, which is a district. Fishing in Badger Dam and other ponds is important in terms of fishing. Honey production in provinces and districts has become an industry. (Aug, 2002: 261).. When the tables are examined, Livestock is 39th among provinces across the country. It is next in line. Given the necessary support, livestock can play an important role in economic development for Kütahya.

Table 9: Kütahya Province Agricultural Product Export Figures

Sector	1-31 Mart 2021		
	2020	2021	% Değişim
Cereals, Pulses, OilSeeds and Products	46,21	65,34	%41,4
Dried Fruits and Products	0,13	34,16	% 25941,4
Fruit and Vegetable Products	1,60	0	-%100
Aquaculture and Animal Products	0	25,52	
Ornamental Plants and Products	0	27,60	
Fresh Fruits and Vegetables	0,15	0,27	% 83,8
olives and olive oil	0,58	0	-%100
Total	48,67	152,89	% 314

Source: TÜİK

Agricultural products remain very low in the foreign trade of Kütahya province. In recent years, the production of dried fruits and products and fresh fruits and vegetables has increased significantly. If export incentives are increased in this direction, it can be useful for the economic development of the province.

Table 10: Contribution of Kütahya Agricultural and Animal Production to the Turkish Economy

Product sector	Contribution to the economy (TL)
Animals	1.287.523.000
Industrial Plants	85.552.383
Fruits	160.347.200
Vegatables	105.198.900
Field and fodder plants	565.365.360
ornamental plants	2.868
Total	2.203.989.711

Source: <https://kutahya.tarimorman.gov.tr/Menu/24/Kutahya-Hakkinda>, 2020.

In 2020, the agricultural sector of Kütahya province contributed TL 2,203,989,711 to our country.

RESULT

Due to its geographical location, Kütahya has a special importance in terms of agricultural production characteristics and diversity. The TR33 region is in the middle position in terms of economy in Turkey. However, when the data are examined, the agricultural sector is below the average in Turkey. This situation is also reflected in foreign trade activities the problems

of the agricultural sector include the reduction of agricultural areas with heritage shares, irrigation not being sufficient in some regions, agriculture in accordance with climate conditions, farmers' lack of education, many of them continuing in the traditional agricultural activity pattern. It is also important that the agricultural input amounts are high, the inadequacy of state subsidies, the envy of the city life of individuals, and the relatively low agricultural employment fees. With the development of industry in Kütahya and its districts, migration movements started from the village to the centers. The population decreased in the villages and the population increased in the cities. More elderly people remained in the villages. Unplanned migrations have increased unemployment. There has been a trend from agricultural employment to industrial and service employment. The development of the agricultural sector in the province will contribute to employment economically by initiating reverse migration. Although there have been significant developments in the agricultural sector in Turkey in recent years, agricultural and animal production in Kütahya has not reached the desired level. Appropriate trainings should be given to farmers engaged in agricultural activities in Kütahya. It would be appropriate to establish unions, especially cooperatives, in order to market the products they produce. Although our country is one of the agricultural countries, it imports animals from abroad. Although the province has large pastures and plains for animal production, animal production has declined. Migrations have also affected the livestock sector. Incentives need to be increased in order to produce. The agriculture and livestock sector has the capacity to solve the unemployment problem in the city. Irrigation problems should be solved within agricultural and livestock activities and new resources should be created. The agricultural sector remains very low in Kütahya foreign trade.

As a result, Kütahya is quite suitable for agricultural activities. A suitable agricultural infrastructure should be established with . More efficient investments should be made. This will encourage agricultural production. Incentives and subsidies from public institutions will increase productivity in the agricultural sector. Investments made in the sector and direct or indirect supports that promote production will contribute to the increase of agricultural production. As a result, the agricultural sector will continue to be a sector that contributes significantly to economic growth as it has in recent years, not a burden on the economy.

REFERENCES

- 2020 Yılında Yapılacak Tarımsal Desteklemelere İlişkin Karar, Resmi Gazete, 3190,5 Kasım 2020.
- Abay, C., Miran, B., Olha E., 2004. Türkiye’de Tarımın Teşvikinde Doğrudan Gelir Desteği Sistemi ve Sonuçları, İstanbul Ticaret Odası Yayınları, İstanbul
- Acar, M. & Aytüre, S. 2014. Dünyada ve Türkiye’de tarım ve tarım politikalarının geleceği, Ekin Yayınevi
- Akyüksek A.B., 2019. Konya İli Doğanhisar İlçesinde Vişne Yetiştiriciliği Yapılandırım İşletmelerinin Ekonomik Faaliyet Sonuçlarının Analizi, Selçuk Üniversitesi , Fen Bilimleri Enstitüsü , Tarım Ekonomisi Ana Bilim Dalı, Yüksek Lisans Tezi, Konya.
- Bahşi, N., 2005. Tarımda Kamu Yatırımlarının Tarımsal Büyüme Üzerine Etkileri. Çukurova Üniversitesi Fen Bilimleri Enstitüsü (Yüksek Lisans Tezi), Adana.
- Baykara, A., 2013. Domaniç Folklor ve Kültür Üzerine Araştırmalar, Ankara, Sage Yayınevi.
- Dikmen, F. H., & Bozdağ, E. G. 2018. Türkiye’de Kamu Şeker Fabrikaları İçin Bir Etkinlik Analizi: 2003-2016. İşletme Araştırmaları Dergisi , 10 (3), 452-470.

- Doğan, S. 2018, Türkiye İçin Tarımın Önemi, <http://www.tesav.org.tr/wp-content/uploads/2018/03> (Erişim 14.09.2021)
- Doğan, Z. , Arslan, S. & Berkman, A. 2015. Türkiye’de Tarım Sektörünün İktisadi Gelişimi Ve Sorunları: Tarihsel Bir Bakış. Niğde Üniversitesi İktisadi ve İdari Bilimler Fakültesi Dergisi, 8 (1) , 29-41
- Erdinç, Z., 2017. Türkiye’de Şeker Sanayinin Gelişimi ve Şeker Sanayinde İzlenen Politikalar. Anadolu Üniversitesi Sosyal Bilimler Dergisi, 17 (3), 9-26.
- Kaya, F., 2015. Küresel ve Bölgesel Şeker Politikalarının Türkiye Şeker Fabrikalarına Etkilerine Bir Örnek; Ağrı Şeker Fabrikası. İstanbul Üniversitesi Edebiyat Fakültesi Coğrafya Dergisi (31), 41-61.
- Kütahya Valiliği, (2017). İl Gıda Tarım ve Hayvancılık Müd. Brifing Raporu. Kütahya.
- Özsağır, A., 2008. Düünden Bugüne Büyümenin Dinamiği, Karaman İktisadi ve İdari Bilimler Fakültesi Dergisi Y:10, S: 14,
- Sabuncu, H. T. 2019. Tarımın Ekonomi Üzerindeki Etkisi Türkiye Örneği. Ekonomi İşletme ve Yönetim Dergisi , 3 (1) , 25-33 .)
- Şen, G.2021. Termal Turizmin Bölgesel Ekonomik Etkilerinin Analizi: Kütahya Örneği. Kütahya Dumlupınar Üniversitesi, Lisansüstü Eğitim Enstitüsü, Doktora Tezi, Kütahya.
- Tarım Kanunu, Resmi Gazete, 5488,18 Nisan 2006.
- Tektaş, M., 2006. Tarımsal Desteklerin Gelir Etkileri: Sosyal Hesaplar Matrisi Uygulaması, Kamu İktisadi Teşebbüsleri Genel Müdürlüğü Hazine Müsteşarlığı (Uzmanlık Tezi)
- Tuna, Y.,1993. Tarımda Verimlilik Artışının Ekonomik Sonuçları: Türkiye İle İlgili Bir Değerlendirme, Ankara, Milli Prodüktivite Merkezi Yayınları, No:487
- www.tuik.gov.tr
- <https://kutahya.tarimorman.gov.tr>
- <https://tim.org.tr/tr/ihracat>

THE RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN EXPORT AND ECONOMIC GROWTH: THE CASE OF ECOWAS*

Prof. Dr. Yusuf Bayraktutan

Kocaeli University, Department of Economics, Kocaeli/Turkiye

ORCID ID: 0000-0002-4453 -3701

Musa Sawaneh

Senior Economist, Directorate of Regional Integration, Ministry of Trade The Gambia

ABSTRACT

Even with the integration efforts, intra-trade in the ECOWAS region is still low. Globally, ECOWAS share of exports remains insignificant due to the region's continuous trade in primary commodities and a series of political upheavals. The export of primary products creates both international price instability and affects domestic income, investment, consumption, and makes ECOWAS susceptible to external and internal shocks. This article uses the panel fixed effect model to investigate the effects of exports on the economic growth of ECOWAS for the 2000–2019 period. The study uses a model for ECOWAS with GDP, gross capital formation, exports, imports, agriculture, and inflation in determining the growth process of the region. Stationarity properties of the variables were investigated and for this, Peseran's CIPS test, which considers the cross-section dependency, was used. The results of the fixed effects model suggested that export does not have a significant impact on the economic growth of ECOWAS. The findings showed that gross capital formation, imports, and agriculture have a positive and significant effect, while inflation has a negative and insignificant effect on the economic growth of ECOWAS. The study recommends that the development of semi-finished and finished product export capability; Political and economic stability and utilizing regional and global mechanisms for problems such as conflicts and epidemics will support the growth performance of ECOWAS.

Keywords: ECOWAS, Economic Growth, Foreign Trade.

** This paper was derived from the master thesis of the second author with the supervision of the first author.*

INTRODUCTION

International trade is seen as beneficial for every country and especially for developing countries as it is both necessary for its welfare and one of the dynamic elements of growth. Absence or insufficiency of natural resources; Outward openness and participation in international trade become inevitable due to labor supply and quality, technological capacity and capability, etc. An economy oriented towards international trade is called an open economy, and the measure of openness is the ratio of a country's exports and imports to its GNP.

The benefit of international trade is that it allows the efficient use of world resources. Rapid population growth is a concern for every policymaker, and international trade needs to meet the demands of the people. Malthus' fear of famine based on population and production rate confirms the contribution of foreign trade. Exports and imports are also important to prevent the Malthusian disaster.

Although it is known that there is no closed economy in the world due to the existence of foreign trade since ancient times, regionalization at the global level has become widespread since the 1950s. Exports and imports of goods and services, exchange of resources between countries

and firms affect growth through the multiplier mechanism. While global trade and financial flows are developing, regional integration arrangements and intra-regional economic connections have become much stronger. The Economic Community of West African States (ECOWAS), which brings the common currency under the name ECO to the agenda, is one of the leading integration initiatives of the African continent.

Exports are a component of aggregate demand (AD) and increased exports will help increase AD and lead to higher economic growth for the country. For example, the success of tourism exports helps the local economy with local hotels, restaurants, and commercial businesses benefiting from increased spending. Rising export revenues can then feed an increase in capital investment expenditures with an accelerating effect. Higher investments increase the productive capacity and export potential of the country. However, the debate on the export-led growth hypothesis or the growth-based export hypothesis still continues, and the debate continues in the literature due to the mixed results of different studies.

Based on the idea that economic growth is necessary for a country's sustainable development, this study aims to analyze the effect of exports on economic growth in the ECOWAS region, which consists of low-income countries, with data for the period of 2000-2019 and panel data. Due to its workforce capacity and low technology use, the ECOWAS region includes 11 least developed countries that are heavily dependent on rain-fed agriculture as their main source of production and income. The 2012 drought, known as the Sahel crisis, caused many disasters in the parties; While hundreds of young people are looking for paid jobs to send money to their "hungry" families and relatives, product losses, food increases, urban-rural migration draw attention.

The rate of export growth in ECOWAS countries fluctuates due to reasons such as institutional development and regulation inadequacies and infrastructure constraints. Lack of outward opening and marketing and various other internal and external restrictions weaken international competitiveness. In the context of the Ricardian theory of comparative advantage, the primary commodity abundance of most countries directly or indirectly affects the region. As a result, these countries have to export their natural resources without processing and import processed or manufactured goods into their countries. Therefore, this study aims to explore the possibility of supporting growth by diversifying the export structure to export more products (primary and manufacturing). In the quest to determine the export-growth relationship, a meaningful explanation of the issue and determining whether there is a long-term relationship will be provided.

With the help of Eviews and Stata software, second-generation Pesaran (CIPS) panel unit root tests to check the stationarity; Hausman test was used to choose between fixed and random effects models.

1. OVERVIEW OF THE ECOWAS ECONOMY

ECOWAS was established in 1975 with the aim of promoting economic cooperation among 15 countries that still have different historical trajectories (colonialization, language and administrative cultures). In West Africa, it occupies an area of approximately 6.2 million square kilometers; and consists of 15 countries that share similar socio-economic conditions. The furthest east-west distance is about 3,400 kilometers; the furthest north-south distance is less than 2,000 kilometers.

The main purpose of ECOWAS is to promote economic convergence among member states in order to raise living standards and promote economic development. It also tries to address some security problems by developing a peacekeeping force for conflicts in the region. Many African

countries are dealing with difficult external conditions. Fluctuating trends in growth rates reflect weak economic performance, which is heavily influenced by both internal and external factors. The main internal factors are the prolongation of social unrest experienced in the previous periods of the 1990s, especially in Liberia, Sierra Leone, Guinea and Ivory Coast, and low value-added monoculture production. In addition to internal factors, the 2014-2016 Ebola epidemic in West Africa started in rural southeastern Guinea, then spread to urban areas and across borders within a few weeks and turned into a regional epidemic within a few months. During these periods, household incomes decreased, and poverty increased in the countries most affected by the virus.

Representing 17% and 30% of Africa's land area and population, respectively, ECOWAS is one of the best performing regions on the continent in terms of production, accounting for 28% of GDP at current prices and 40% of Sub-Saharan African GDP. Growth rates vary considerably over time and between West African countries. Some countries experienced high growth exceeding 7% in 2017 and 2018; 9 countries recorded a growth of at least 5% in the same period. The real growth of the ECOWAS region has been consistently above 5% from early 2000 to 2014, driven in particular by the dynamism of the Nigerian economy (about 70% of the region's GDP), which is West Africa's economic powerhouse.

2. LITERATURE REVIEW

In the theoretical and empirical literature, there are many studies on the relationship between exports and economic growth. The debate of the export-led growth hypothesis (ELGH) and the growth-driven export hypothesis (GDEH) can be traced back to the classical economists on which modern economic thought is based. The classic argument was, in summary, that the parties to the trade would gain if a country exported the goods it produced to countries that could not produce it at less cost. This approach has been criticized by those who argue that the foreign trade hypothesis as the engine of growth may be detrimental to poor developing countries.

There are divergent and contradictory findings in the empirical literature. Although there is a relationship between sample, period, management, etc., export and growth, there are findings showing different directions and sizes of this relationship. The literature review for this study is summarized below.

Boltho (1996) examined the export-GDP relationship in Japan with time series analysis with annual data of three different periods (1913-1937, 1952-1973, 1973-1990). While ELGH was supported for the second term, it was rejected for the other terms.

Vlastou (2010) analyzed the 1960-2000 period data on the GDP, Investment, Labor Force, Government Consumption and Openness variables of 34 African countries with panel unit root, cointegration and causality tests; He concluded that openness has a negative effect on growth.

Tiwari and Mutascu (2011) analyzed the 1986-2008 data of selected Asian countries for the variables GDP, Gross Capital Formation, Labor Force, FDI, Exports with Pooled FEM and REM. The findings show that FDI and exports support growth.

Mishra (2011) analyzed India's 1970-2009 export and GDP data with the help of cointegration and vector error correction model (VECM); reached findings that support the growth-based export hypothesis.

Saeed and Hatem (2017), selected countries (Bahrain, Qatar, Saudi Arabia, UAE, Kuwait, and Oman), 1990-2014 period Export, Import, GDP, Capital, Electricity consumption and Financial

Development variables Pooled FEM, and REM and supported the export-led growth hypothesis.

Xinying, Oppong and Vitenu-Sackey (2019) model for West African countries using panel modified LCC and generalized linear regression method and variables of GDP, FDI Net inflows, Personal remittances, Exports, Inflation, Population, Unemployment, with data from 1991-2017. analyzed. The findings show that exports have a positive effect on growth.

3. MODEL AND ANALYSIS

The main purpose of this study is to analyze the effect of exports on the economic growth of ECOWAS countries using panel data analysis.

The multiple linear equation in the formulation of the model is as follows:

$$GDP_{it} = \beta_0 + \beta_1 GCF_{it} + \beta_2 EX_{it} + \beta_3 IM_{it} + \beta_4 IN_{it} + \beta_5 AGR_{it} + \mu_{it}$$

Here, the dependent variable is GDP, which defines the GDP of country i for period t.

β_0 is the intersection of the equation and the vectors of the equation are $\beta_1, \beta_2, \beta_3, \beta_4$ and β_5 , respectively. Meanwhile, gross capital formation is the country's total investment; exports, income generated by the total sale of goods and services abroad; import, cost of goods and services received from abroad; inflation, rate of increase in prices of goods and services; agriculture, the value of agricultural activities and ϵ represents the error term of the model.

Table 1: Descriptive Statistics on Variables

	GDP	GCF	EX	IM	IN	AGR
Mean	5.389670	24.91524	12.36162	12.80429	6.770340	4.384386
Median	5.685915	23.40941	6.755038	5.653468	4.514321	4.577803
Maximum	44.62241	68.00227	585.2312	399.8918	1.29568	77.15784
Minimum	-36.2716	0.019684	-118.812	-84.9888	-4.35364	-4.7556
Std. Dev.	7.022792	11.36947	42.41518	39.93092	7.518549	10.51723
Number of Observation	300	300	300	300	300	300

In Table-1, the average economic growth rate for the 2000-2019 period was 5.38%. In the same period, as average values for the countries in question, gross capital formation was 24.91%; export 12.36%, import 12.80%; inflation increased by 6.77% and agricultural production increased by 4.38%. Other statistical values are also seen in detail in Table 1.

Table 2: Cross Sectional Dependency Test of the Model

Test	t-statistic	p-value
Breusch-Pagan LM	1.726195	0.0000
Pesaran scaled LM	4.666187	0.0000
Bias-corrected scaled LM	11.76889	0.0000
Pesaran CD	1.810651	0.0189

Since $T > N$ and based on the t-statistics and p-values obtained by different tests as shown in Table-2, the null hypothesis stating that there is no cross-sectional dependence is rejected for all tests. Therefore, Pesaran (CIPS), one of the second-generation tests, was used for unit root testing.

The decision rule used is as follows: If the CIPS statistics are less than the critical value at any significance level, the "unit root exists" H_0 hypothesis is rejected, which means that the variables are stationary. In the results in Table-3, the H_0 hypothesis is rejected because the CIPS statistical values calculated for all variables are less than the critical values at the 1%, 5% and 10% significance level. Therefore, the variables are stationary; that is, it can be said to be integrated into $I(1)$.

Table 3: Second Generation Panel Unit Root Test -Pesaran (CIPS)

Variable	CIPS	CV1	CV5	CV10	Decision
GDP	-4.163	-2.47	-2.26	-2.14	Stationary $I(1)$
GCF	-2.829	-2.47	-2.26	-2.14	Stationary $I(1)$
EX	-4.580	-2.47	-2.26	-2.14	Stationary $I(1)$
IM	-4.462	-2.47	-2.26	-2.14	Stationary $I(1)$
AG	-4.757	-2.47	-2.26	-2.14	Stationary $I(1)$
IN	-3.628	-2.47	-2.26	-2.14	Stationary $I(1)$

Hausman (1978) test was performed to determine which of the random effect model (REM) or fixed effect model (FEM) to use. As it can be seen in Table-4, since the calculated chi-square value exceeds the critical chi-square value and the significance level for the given df, it is concluded that REM is not suitable for this study. This result may be due to the correlation of random error terms with one or more regressors. Therefore, with the findings obtained from the Hausman test, it is concluded that FEM is suitable for this study.

Table 4: Hausman Test

Test Summary	Chi-Sq. Statistic	Chi-Sq. d.f	Prob.
Cross-section random	11.354880	5	0.0448

According to the estimation results presented in Table-5, gross capital formation is in a positive relationship with GDP and the coefficient of this variable is statistically significant. A 1% increase in GCF will increase GDP by 0.10. Imports are positively correlated with GDP, and a 1% increase in imports will result in a 0.217 increase in GDP. Similarly, agriculture appears to be very important in the ECOWAS economy as it has a positive and very significant correlation with GDP. A 1% increase in agriculture will lead to an increase of 0.42 in the region's GDP. As expected, inflation has a negative correlation with GDP, and if inflation increases by 1%, GDP decreases by 0.16. However, unexpectedly, the coefficient on the relationship between exports and GDP was negative and statistically insignificant.

Table 5: Fixed Effects Model

Variable	Coefficient	Std. Error	T-Statistics	Prob.
C	1.567636	1.103827	1.420183	0.1567
GCF	0.103327	0.038520	2.682441	0.0077
EX	-0.008478	0.007449	-1.138080	0.2561
IM	0.021722	0.007727	2.811117	0.0053
IN	-0.116055	0.063427	-1.829748	0.0684
AGR	0.423529	0.029926	14.15268	0.0000
R ²	0.498205			
Adjusted R ²	0.464155			
Prob (F-Statistics)	0.000000			

The results of Durbin Watson and Peseran CD tests show that the model does not have the problem of varying variance, autocorrelation and inter-unit correlation.

Table 6: Diagnostic Tests

Heteroscedasticity	Autocorrelation		Inter-unit Correlation
Modified Wald Test	Baltagi-Wu (1999) LBI Test	Bhargava et al. D-W Test	Peseran CD Test
0.5866	2.0937866	2.68574492	0.0189

In summary, the findings do not support the theoretical expectation for a positive effect of exports on economic growth in the ECOWAS region. In the literature, there are studies that reach similar findings (Boltho, 1996; Vlastou, 2010). Agriculture, imports, gross capital formation and price stability are effective in the economic growth of the ECOWAS region.

CONCLUSION

Economic growth, which is one of the economic priorities of every country at different development levels, is associated with exports and imports as well as domestic components such as consumption, investment and public expenditures. The aim of this study is to analyze the effect of exports on economic growth in the ECOWAS region. With the panel data method and the data for the period of 2000-2019, policy recommendations were developed based on the empirical findings reached by the tests carried out on the model which variables includes GDP, gross capital formation, exports, imports, agriculture and inflation.

Cross-section dependency test results show that the Ho hypothesis without cross-section dependency is rejected. The presence of cross-section dependence in the data required unit root tests and therefore the Peseran CIPS test was applied. Hausman test was used to choose between the fixed effects model and the random-effects model. The result of the p-value of the Hausman test indicates 0.0448, which is less than the 5% significance level. For this reason, the fixed-

effect model was preferred based on the Hausman test. The presence of heteroscedasticity and autocorrelation in the model was tested with appropriate methods.

The results and policy recommendations of this study are based on the empirical findings of the fixed-effect model (FEM). The FEM findings do not statistically confirm that exports affect the growth of the ECOWAS region during the period studied. Inflation has a negative and significant effect on the growth of the region. The findings on gross capital formation have a positive and significant effect on GDP growth. It has also been found that imports have a statistically significant effect on economic growth. Agriculture shows a significant and positive impact on economic growth in the ECOWAS region.

There are 11 countries in the ECOWAS region that are still among the least developed, thus making ECOWAS one of the poorest regional blocs in the world. Based on the analysis findings for this study, policy recommendations for stable growth in the region are as follows:

i. **Exports of semi-finished or finished products:** Most countries in the ECOWAS region export low-income primary products for their economies. The construction of processing facilities will allow countries to convert raw goods into semi-processed or finished goods before exporting.

ii. **Modern farming system:** ECOWAS member countries still use primitive farming systems and human labor or old tools, making their returns low. Modern agricultural management through agricultural mechanization, irrigation systems, seed development, etc. will increase both productivity and foreign exchange earnings through agriculture, which is one of the income and main export sectors.

iii. **Appropriate infrastructure:** Member states lack better infrastructure such as transport, telecommunications and energy that facilitate the movement of people, goods or services. Improvement of the level of integration between member states, as the improvement in infrastructure (transport, telecommunication, energy) with appropriate projects at the regional scale will ensure greater mobility of people and goods; more clearly, it will increase trade and growth performance.

iv. **Human capital:** Investments in education and health, nutrition and shelter should be improved. In way, besides the prevention and/or rapid control of epidemics, the quality of the workforce and its contribution to production and therefore to growth will increase. Considering the low savings and investment capability for the region, the development of human capital will also be attractive for foreign direct investments.

v. **Political and economic stability:** The internal turmoil, examples of which are seen in the region, leads to wastage or misuse of insufficient resources; decrease in growth, employment and price stability rate. In addition to democratic and stable management open to public participation, stable economic administrations that produce policies based on strategic evaluations will improve both growth and integration performance for individual parties and ECOWAS as a whole.

In order for the ECOWAS regional integration area to provide sustainable economic growth in both the short and long term, it will be beneficial to diversify the production of exportable goods, utilize its natural resources, improve agriculture, create better interaction channels and trade policies with third countries and other regional blocks, together with the above suggestions.

REFERENCES

- Acemoğlu, D. (2009). *Introduction to Modern Economic Growth*. New Jersey: Princeton University Press.
- African Development Bank Group (2019). <http://dataportal.opendataforafrica.org/nbyenxf/afdb-socio-economic-database-1960-2020/15.12.2019>.
- Baltagi, B. H. (2005). *Econometric Analysis of Panel Data*, 3rd Edition, New York: John Wiley&Son Inc.
- Bayraktutan, Yusuf (2017). *Uluslararası İktisat*, Kocaeli: Umuttepe Y.
- Bayraktutan, Yusuf (2003). *Bilgi ve Uluslararası Ticaret Teorileri*, C.Ü. İktisadi ve İdari Bilimler Dergisi, 4(2): 170-180
- Boltho, A. (1996). Was Japanese growth export-led? *Oxford Economic Papers*, 48: 415–432.
- Dritsakis, N., and Stamatiou, P. (2017). Causal Nexus between Government Debt, Exports and Economic Growth for Three Eurozone Countries: A Panel Data Analysis. *Journal of Public Economics* 3(1): 47-65
- ECOWAS (Economic Community of West African States, 2010). <https://www.ecowas.int/25.12.2019>
- Gujarati, D. N. (2004) *Basic Econometrics*. 4th Edition, McGraw-Hill Companies
- Hausman, J. (1978). Specification Tests in Econometrics. *Econometrica*, 46 (6): 1251-1271.
- Mishra, P. K. (2011). The Dynamics of Relationship between exports and economic growth in India, 1970-2009, *International Journal of Economic Sciences and Applied Research* 4 (2): 53-70.
- Pesaran, Hashem M. (2007). "A Simple Panel Unit Root Test in the Presence of Cross Section Dependence", *Journal of Applied Econometrics*, 22(2): 265-312.
- Saeed, S., and Hatem, A. (2017). Export and Economic Growth Nexus in the GCC Countries: A Panel Data Approach, *International Journal of Business and Social*, 7(12): 1-9.
- Solow, R. (1956). A contribution to the theory of economic growth, *Quarterly Journal of Economics*, 70 (1): 65-94.
- Tiwari, A. K., and Mutascu, M. (2011). Economic Growth and FDI in Asia: A Panel-Data Approach, *Economic Analysis and Policy*, 41(2): 173-187.
- Vlastou, I. (2010). Forcing Africa to Open up to Trade: Is It Worth It? *The Journal of Developing Areas*, College of Business, Tennessee State University, 44(1): 25-39.
- Xinying, J., and Vitenu-Sackey, P. (2019). The Impact of Personal Remittances, FDI and Exports on Economic Growth: Evidence from West Africa, *European Journal of Business and Management*, 11(23): 24-32.

EXPERIENCE MARKETING IN ARTS

Prof. Dr. Radmila Janicic

Faculty of Organizational Sciences, University of Belgrade

ABSTRACT

The paper present theoretical and practical aspects of experience marketing in arts. Focus of the paper is developing theoretical aspects of experience marketing in arts. In empirical research the paper will present results about segmentation of target groups of art's events, as well as, their satisfaction with arts events, exhibitions, concerts, theatre's events, literature's event and experience about books. The results of empirical research will lead to further theoretical and practical analysis of experience marketing in arts. The theoretical improvement of experience marketing is important, as new concept of marketing approach. Theoretical aspects of experience marketing is based on holistic marketing approach, including integrated marketing communications, internal communication, relationship marketing and social responsible marketing. The paper present modern ways of social communications, by social media, in order to develop experience marketing in arts. Social media gives opportunities for raising art's experiences and get it interactive. Audience can comment art's events and talk with art's authors, what is unique experience. Audience become inspire and lead to develop new art's experiences. It is very important for young generations to improve art's experiences, because the biggest impact on global world changes have education and arts.

Keywords: Experience marketing, arts, social media, marketing strategies.

1. INTRODUCTION

The subject of paper is theoretical and practical approach in experience marketing in arts. Experience marketing in arts is new field of marketing research in academic institutions and scientific marketing associations. Serbian Marketing Association realized Marketing in Arts and Culture as new field of research. The goal of the paper is to develop experience marketing approach in arts. Specific goal of the paper is to enlighten strategies of experience marketing in arts. The paper gives overview of all experience marketing approach, experiential marketing tools, holistic marketing elements, internal marketing, integrated marketing, social responsible marketing and relationship marketing in arts. Key hypothesis of the paper is that implementation of experience and holistic marketing in artistic projects is modern platform for development of arts and culture. Good examples of implementation of experience marketing approach in arts are present in the paper. The paper present examples of exhibitons of Vincent van Gogh, Leonardo da Vinci as good implementation of experience marketing.

2. EXPERIENCE MARKETING, EXPERIANTAL TOOLS AND HOLISTIC MARKETING APPROACH IN ARTS

Artistic projects have impact on social movement, as well as, improve social awareness about social problems. History facts prove that arts develop awareness about future movement. Arts and educations are the base for development of modern society. In that way holistic marketing approach present base for improve artistic projects. Modern society needs interactive communications through modern media. Artistic projects send messages to audiences and, also, listen needs and wants of target audiences. Specific opportunities of social media are that artistic projects can impact on awareness and attitude of public audiences. (Janičić, 2018)

Artistical projects are independant and present attitude of artist, whose present their views of world. (Kolber, 2010)

Holistic marketing approach has challenge in improving planning process of artistic projects. All parts of holistic marketing approaches are important, internal marketing, integrated marketing, relationship marketing and social responsible marketing. Internal marketing strategies improve organizational structures of artistic projects and communications with team workers. Strategies of integrated marketing improve consistent of artistic project's storytelling. Social responsible approach is base for every artistic project. The key message of artistic project is social changes and movement. Strategies of relationship marketing make platforms for clear and direct communications with target audiences of artistic projects. In all these ways holistic marketing approach is base platform for realization of artistic projects. (Kotler, 2017)

Holistic marketing approach has integrated marketing communication with target audiences, which present opportunities for research needs and wants of public, as well as, social movements. It is very important that integrated marketing communications have consistent storytelling with target audiences.

Artistic projects send social impulses to public and call people to think about social problems, ways, social attitude, educations, young people, future, modern civilizations, life, life stories, history, sociology. In that way artistic projects drive people to react, to have attitude, to communicate with other people and to create better world. Artistic projects are creative and drive public to think and feel. (Pelsmacker, 2007)

The creative idea motivate public, as well as, creative idea is original approach, base on imagination. Creative idea has to be clear, simple and inspire. (Reid, 2008)

Strategies of public relations are very important in process of planning of artistic projects. These strategies improve communications and connections between artistic projects and target audiences. (Pelsmacker, 2007)

Strategies of relationship marketing develop and improve communications between cultural institutions and their target audiences. Social responsible approach gives platform for artistic projects, as well as, purpose and message to target audiences. Strategies of relationship marketing have specific impact in leading of artistic projects. They give opportunities of interactive communications with public, through traditional ways of communication and modern, social media. Two way communications give opportunities for listening of wants and needs of public, that shows ways for furture development. (Kotler, 2008)

Media communications are part of artistic projects. Media culture is also culture of high technology. This nee technology gives opportunities for better communications and gives to artistic projects global dimension. (Kelner, 2004)

The experiences are regarded as key concepts in marketing today, there are different views and interpretations about the content of terms. There are two connected concept of experience and experiential marketing. Based on the literature review the authors found that experience marketing is a strategic and a broader term than experiential marketing. Definition of experience marketing is that it is a strategic and holistic marketing of relevant and meaningful experiences, and experiential marketing as a tactical tool that helps to do marketing experientially. (Experience Marketing Association)

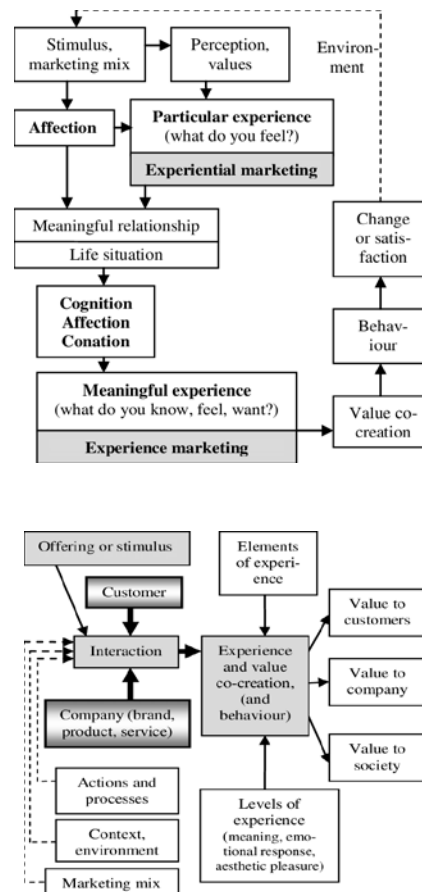


Figure 1: The difference between experience and experiential marketing

(Source: Same, S., Larimo, J., 2012).

Experiential marketing is a marketing technique that creates experiences between brands and consumers. Experiential campaigns use an activation (for example product sampling, immersive experiences, stunts, events, etc.) to bring brands to life and interact directly with the target audience. (American Marketing Association)

3. THE EXAMPLES OF EXPERIENCE MARKETING IN ARTS

3.1. Exhibition "Loving Vincent"

The examples of experience marketing in arts are exhibition "Loving Vincent", about work and life of Vincent van Gogh and "500 years of genius", about work and life of Leonardo da Vinci. Author of paper had opportunity to visit exhibitions in Athens Center of Culture, in organization of Arts Centre "Why Athens". Methodology of analyzing these exhibitions are quantitative methods, observations, experiments, focus groups with arts managers and interviews with visitors.

Observation of the exhibitions is described, including specific moments of visitor's expressions. Interviews with visitors are include in description. Focus group with art's managers of exhibitions was specially interesting, scientifically and practically, because managers gave focus on importance of arts in development of society in one way, and, also, importance of development of culture in the world, emphasizes that education and arts are the most powerful strength in development of the World. The world exhibition about work and

life of Vincent van Gogh, named "Loving Vincent" has shown in the European cities, London, Paris, Rome, Athens. Visitors of exhibition had opportunity to see artist pictures and descriptions about time, place when pictures made, about Vincent's life moments in that time, about his thoughts, connection with brother and sister, about letters that he write to his brother Teo, about his physical condition, about his beliefs, attitudes on social problems. Experience in exhibition, in that way, was visual, as well as, emotional. On one table was sentences "Vincent had desire for life!", "His favorite color was yellow!", "He was deeply connected with his brother Teo, who, also, suffer of same disease as Vincent." Visitors had opportunities to introduce work, life and thoughts of Vincent van Gogh. Specially touchable was room where he lived and work. The room was installed, just as real room, and visitors made pictures behind room. On down floor was multimedia story about Vincent's life and work. People could sit on the floor and look multimedia, animated movie. After projection, visitors could write comment in the yellow book in gallery, or online, on web site of exhibition, on Instagram, Facebook or Twitter pages. The comment was that visitors see beloved artist's work, but also introduced some biographical moments of his life. The exhibition had attention of media, televisions, radio stations, as well as, social media. The exhibition bring artistic experience to visitors, who felt work and life of Vincent van Gogh. From holistic marketing approach exhibition gave to visitors experience, by experiential instruments, whose made whole experience of this beautiful exhibition. Internal communications between employees gave excellent experience, relationship between exhibition's managers and visitors was crystal artistically. Integrated marketing communication was brilliant, with one sentence in behalf "Loving Vincent".

Whole experience gave to visitors knowledge and inspirations for their work, as well as, inspiration to follow arts. This is beautiful example of implementation of sophisticate experience marketing.



Figure 2: World exhibition "Loving Vincent" (source: theguardian.com, accessed: 22.09.2019., <https://www.theguardian.com/us>)

3.2. Exhibition "Leonardo da Vinci - 500 years of genius"

Another example of implementation of experience marketing is exhibition "Leonardo da Vinci - 500 years of genius". The exhibition was present in London, Rome, Venice, Paris and Athens. Example is based on author's observations and discussion with managers of exhibitions in form of focus group. The exhibition gave whole view of Leonardo da Vinci work, life and thoughts. The first room presented Leonardo's machine works. Second room presented Leonardo's medical research of human body, which is shown on Figure 3. Third room presented different views on Leonardo's favorite paintings "Mona Lisa". Families with children, young people, middle age people and retired people was visitors. They enjoyed in look on Leonardo's paintings. Special room presented Leonardo's painting "Secret dinner". In middle of exhibition was room where was presented multimedia artist's work, with his philosophical thoughts, such as "Nothing can be loved or hated unless it is first understood", "In time and with water, everything changes", "Water is the driving force in nature". Comments on social media was that exhibition is brilliant as Leonardo da Vinci deserve. Specially young people was interested on his work, thoughts and life. This exhibition gave inspiration for loving arts to young people. From holistic marketing approach, this exhibition, also, used experience marketing, base on experiential tools. Internal communications was good. Relationship marketing was sophisticate. Integrated marketing communications was sophisticate, too. Whole exhibition was sophisticate, and, also, strong experience, according to visitors comments.



Figure 3: World exhibition "500 years of genius"

(source: whyathens.com, accessed: 26.09.2019., <https://whyathens.com/>)

As, visitor, author of this paper had opportunity to make focus group with art's managers in art's society "Why Athens", the organizer of exhibition, about experience marketing. Art's managers of this society conclude that experience marketing, base on experiential tools and care about consumers of arts is key for connection with audiences. They emphasized that all aspects of holistic marketing approach is important, internal marketing, integrated marketing, relationship marketing, based on social responsible approach. Interesting is that they enlighten role of care about audiences, in the way that people, visitors feel that artists and art's institutions care about them and their experience, that art's institutions care about history, tradition, about past. They emphasize that in implementation of marketing in arts, it is important to be passionate about arts works, respectful and sophisticate.

3.3. Publishing organization *Booka Store*

The good example of implementation of holistic marketing and experience marketing in development of literature arts, is the *Booka Store*. Every day in center of Belgrade, book's public have opportunity to buy books, enjoy literature events, exhibitions of books, philosophical discussions, or just sit in the store and read books.

The *Book Store* is surround by old part of Belgrade, where readers could buy books and enjoy in beautiful literature events. The *Booka Store* presents old book, but core of business is publishing new book's titles written by popular authors in Serbian the region and the world. Public in Serbia is introduces, for the first time, some of the brilliant authors by from the world. Some literature projects and events are traditional, but some other literature projects are interactive, so visitors can take part in events.

The *Booka Store* is brand in opinion of public audience in Serbia and region. Brand of *Booka Store* is based on excellent book's names, writers, brilliant artistic environment. Internal marketing in *Booka Store* is based on educated, young people that work in store, with brilliant communication skills. Atmosphere in store is peacefully, artistically and literature. Integrated marketing is based on clear message that *Booka Store* send to public audience, as place where people enjoy in literature.

The *Booka Store* has communication with public audience on social media, such as Instagram and Facebook, as well as web page. On the social media readers have opportunities to be informed about old and new book's title, about literature events, about open discussion forums. The readers have opportunities to write about their opinions about books and, also, create communities on some topics.

The storytelling of the *Booka Store* is based on open, free, cosmopolitan and artistically approach and stories, where in the focus is book and written words. The image that they create is that they are book community. Implementation of relationship marketing gives opportunities to be in connection and communication with all public audience and stakeholders that surround *Booka Store*. When someone buy book in store or by online book store, there is opportunity to give e-mail address, so *Booka Store*, continually could inform about new book's titles, literature events, literature projects, or social responsible campaigns.

Public had opportunity to enjoy in literature services in *Booka Store*, as well as, to enjoy in literature events. Specially touchable is literature events with brilliant writers, present in Figure 6.

After literature events, visitors could write comments in the yellow book in *Booka Store*, or online, on web site, on Instagram, or Facebook pages. The comments are that visitors enjoy in beautiful written words, books, stories and literature events. The literature events had attention of media, televisions, radio stations, as well as, social media. The number of people in Serbia and region that love books from *Booka Store* rise every year and *Booka Store* become regional brand.

Artistic literature projects and artistic environment have impact on literature experiences. History facts prove that literature arts improve culture of the world. Modern society needs cultural and arts content (Janičić, 2018)



Figure 4: Booka Store (booka.rs)

3.4. Publishing organization Waterstones

Good example of implementation holistic marketing approach and experience marketing in literature arts is English the book store *Waterstones*. Visitors of the *Waterstones* adore to walk around several floors of store and look for new and old book's titles in the fields of science, as well as, poetry, child books and make brilliant literature experiences. Visitors enjoy in atmosphere of literature arts and culture in beautiful environment, full of literature arts, present in Figure 7.

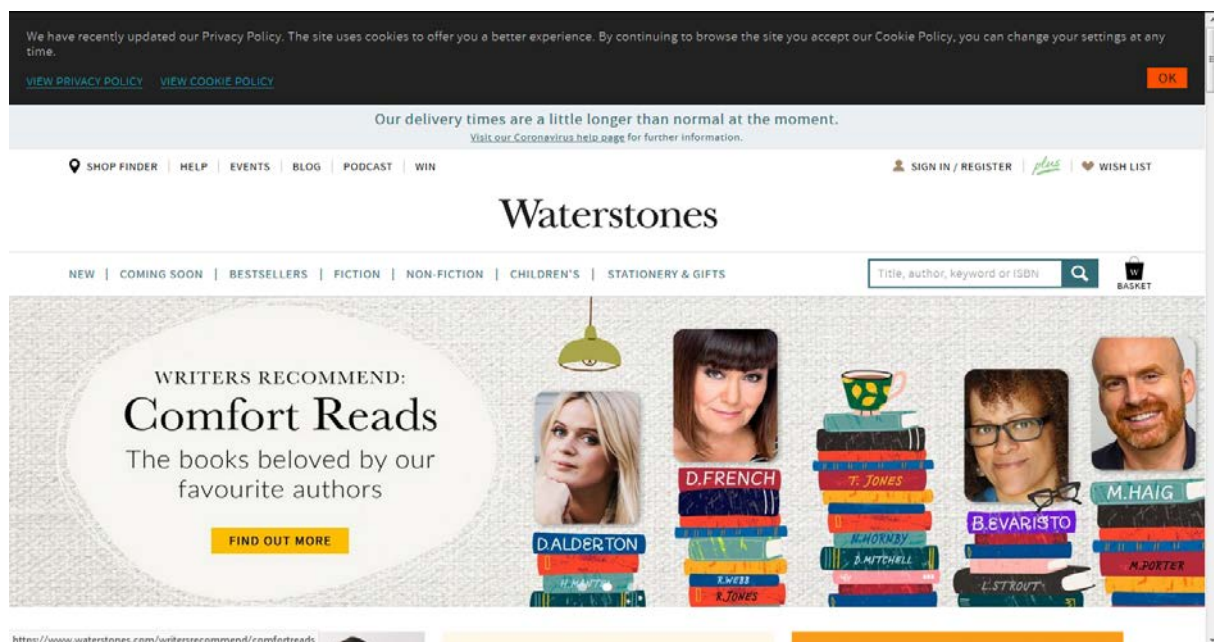


Figure 5: Waterstones (source: waterstones.com)

Author of this paper had opportunity to make focus group with managers in these publishing institutions.

Managers of the publishing institutions conclude that holistic marketing approach and experience marketing have impact on development on literature arts. They emphasized that all aspects of holistic marketing approach is important, internal marketing, integrated marketing, relationship marketing, based on social responsible approach in development of literature arts. Interesting is that they enlighten role of care about readers needs and wishes. The key is to research readers needs and wishes and to focus on publishing good book's titles, according to their wishes.

All these publishing institutions care about history of literature, tradition of literature, and, in that way, give brilliant excellent experiences to readers. They emphasize that in implementation of marketing in development of literature arts, it is important to be passionate about literature, be respectful and sophisticate in communication with public.

The members of focus group, managers of of the publishing institutions emphasized that it is important that offline and online media write in good way about publishing institutions, book's titles, writers and literature events. They concluded that media contents about publishing institutions, culture and art's events have impact on development of publishing institutions brand.

The members of focus group proved that holistic marketing approach in literature arts is synergy of all element, internal marketing, integrated marketing, relationship marketing and social responsible marketing. They emphasized that employees present culture of publishing institutions. It is important that they have skills for good communications with readers. Good atmosphere between employees is create element for brand building. Integrated marketing have to send consistent message for public about literature arts, is proved by opinion of the members of focus group. Also, the members of focus group, proved that readers are the best advocate for literature arts, when they connect with publishing institutions books and writers, as well as, that literature events, as holistic relationship marketing tool, make atmosphere of connection, opportunity for conversation and discussion. All members of focus group proved importance of social media in communication with readers.

Results of focus group emphasized the most important experiential tools for developing of literature experiences and building of literature brand. In the focus group, managers emphasized that in implementation of marketing in literature arts, it is important to be passionate about literature, respectful and sophisticate. Literature arts open hearts and it is way to connect people and share messages.

3.5. Budva Theatre City

The good example of implementation of development of arts experiences is "Budva Theatre City". Every night in centre of city Budva in Montenegro, during summer nights, tourists have opportunity to enjoy some artistic presentation in "Budva Theatre City", in theatre events, in music events, literature events, exhibitions and philosophical discussions.

It is Theatre under the open sky, surrounding by old stone houses and in the centre is stage where visitors could enjoy in arts, brilliant actors role, stories all aruound of the world. Every nigh theatres around world present their theatre projects, literature events, music events, exhibitions, movie nights and philosophical discussions. Some projects are traditional, but some other projects are interactive, so visitors can take part in events. Visitors had opportunities to introduce beautiful theatre, literature and music events. Specially touchable is

theatre events with stories of life of historical persons, music nights with brilliant musicians, writers, painters, photographers, present in Figures 6 and 7. After projections, visitors could write comments in the yellow book in theatre, or online, on web site of theatre, on Instagram, Facebook or Twitter pages. The comment was that visitors enjoy in beautiful artistical events. The theatre events had attention of media, televisions, radio stations, as well as, social media. The theatre events bring artistic experience to visitors.



Figure 6: Theatre City Budva, guest of evening is Bitez Theatre from Belgrade with "The King New Dress" (source: gradteatar.me)



Figure 7: Theatre City Budva (source: gradteatar.me)

3.6. Split arts city

Good example of implemetation of experience marketing in arts is city Split, in Croatia. Split has deep historical, artistic stories and tradition. In the centre of the city is Croatian National Theatre is place where tourists could enjoy in art of theatre. Music, movie, literature and dance festival follow summer time spirit. Tourists enjoy in atmosphere of arts and culture in beautiful Split, full of arts and culture, present in Figure 8..

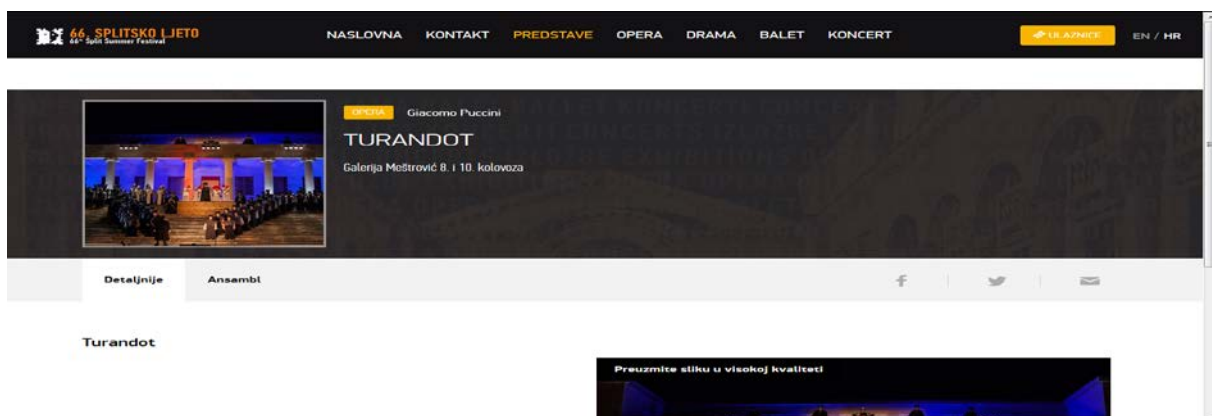


Figure 8: Split summer arts events (source: splitsko-ljeto.hr)

4. CONCLUSION

Theoretical analysis, comparative analysis, examples from practice and focus group with managers in arts about implementation of experience marketing in arts, give conclusion that it is necessary to innovated marketing strategies in the field of leading of artistic projects. Conclusion is that it is necessary to improve support of society about artistic projects. Conclusion is that experience marketing approach has impact on social behavior and social movement. The paper emphasize that it is important to improve knowledge in fields of history, sociology, culture and arts, through modern media, multimedia and digital, interactive movies. Also, it is necessary to make connection between artistic projects and target audiences and improve artistic experience. Modern museums and galleries accept multimedia, digital approach, as well as, experience and holistic marketing approach. Art's managers emphasize that in implementation of marketing in arts, it is important to be passionate about arts works, respectful and sophisticate. It is interesting that they enlighten role of care about audiences, in the way that people, visitors feel that artists and art's institutions care about them and their experience, that art's institutions care about history, tradition, about past.

The paper proved that media contents about arts, have impact on development of artistic institutions brand. Social media gives opportunities to share experiences about arts, to write comments and create groups to describe beloved arts events. Specialized journals for arts write about arts important facts, but it is, also, important that daily newspaper write about arts information and art's events. Social media have the most important impact, because many vloggers have stories about experiences about arts. Synergy of all these elements impact on development of arts experience.

The obstacles for research in the paper was little number of answers on quantitative analysis, which is send by social media. In future work, author of the paper will focus on quantitative research about experience marketing in arts.

The future theoretical and empirical research will be focus on experiential tools that can improve experience in arts. The future research will have goals to research impact of instruments of marketing mix in development of experience in arts. In future work will be use quantitative research, as well as, qualitative research, based on experiments, focus groups and observations. Future work on this topic will give holistic approach to experience marketing in arts. The author of the paper will passionate research this topic in the future.

5. REFERENCES

1. Belch, G., Belch, M. (2012). Advertising and Promotion-An Integrated Marketing Communications Perspective. New York: McGraw-Hill.
2. Blakeman, R. (2006). Integrated Marketing Communication. Toronto: McMillan.
3. Chong, D. (2002). Arts Management. London: Routledge.
4. David, P. (2005). Integrated Marketing Communication. Toronto: Elsevier Inc.
5. Larry, P. (2008). Strategic Integrated Marketing Communication. Toronto: Elsevier Inc.
6. Janičić, R., Filipović, V. (2011). Strateški marketing. Belgrade: Faculty of Organizational Sciences.
7. Janičić, R., Ćorović, B. (2018). "Challenge of Holistic Marketing in Artistic Projects". Journal Marketing, Vol. 49/2. Belgrade: Serbian Marketing Association.

8. Janičić, R., Žugić, J. (2018). "Challenge of Communications in Artistically Projects". *Journal of Media Dialogue*, No.32, Vol.11., ISSN 1800-7074, COBISS.CG-ID 12734480. Podgorica, Montenegro.
9. Janičić, R. (2019). "Experience Marketing in Arts". 17th Annual International Conference on Marketing. Athens Institute for Education and Research, Atiner. Athens, Greece.
10. Janičić, R. (2019). "Arts in Social Marketing Media Campaign". 6th Annual International Conference on Humanities and Arts in Global World, Athens Institute for Education and Research, Atiner. Athens, Greece.
11. Johansson, T, Luonila, M. (2017). *Making Sense of Arts Management*. Helsinki: University of Arts Helsinki.
12. Kennet, C. (2008). *Integrated Advertising, Promotion and Marketing Communication*. New York: Prentice Hall.
13. Kerrigan, F., Fraser, P., Ozbilgin, M. (2004). *Arts Marketing*. London: Esevier.
14. Kevin, R. (2004). *The Future Beyond Brands - Love marks*. New York: Power House Books.
15. Kolber, F., *Marketing u kulturi i umetnosti*, Clio, Beograd, 2010.
16. Kostić Stanković, M., Filipović, V., Štavljanin, V. (2017). *Marketing*. Beograd: Fakultet organizacionih nauka.
17. Kostić Stanković, M., Filipović, V., Vlastelica, T. (2020). *Odnosi s javnošću*. Belgrade: Faculty of Organizational Sciences.
18. Kotler, Ph., Keller, L. (2008). *Marketing management*, 12th Edition. New York: Prentice Hall.
19. Kotler, Ph., Keller, L. (2016). *Marketing management*, 15th Edition. New York: Prentice Hall.
20. Pelsmacker, P., Geuens, M., Bergh, V. (2007). *Marketing Communications*. London: Prentice Hall.
21. Poulsson, S. H. G.; Kale, S. H. 2004. The Experience Economy and Commercial Experiences, *The Mar-keting Review* 4(3): 267–277.<http://dx.doi.org/10.1362/1469347042223445>
22. Reid, N., King, W., DeLorme, E. (2008). *Top Level Agency Creatives Look at Advertising Creativity Then and Now*. New York: Journal of Advertising.
23. Same, S., Lappiman, J. (2012). *Experience and Experiential Marketing*. Vilnius, Lithuania: 7thInternational Scientific Conference "Business and Management". ISSN 2029-4441 print / ISSN 2029-929X online ISBN 978-609-457-116-9 CDdoi:10.3846/bm.2012.063 <http://www.bm.vgtu.lt>
24. Schmitt, B. 1999a. *Experiential marketing: How to get customers to sense, feel, think, act and relate to your company and brands*. The Free Press, New York, USA.
25. Schmitt, B. 1999b. *Experiential Marketing*, *Journal of Marketing Management* 15(1-3): 53–67.<http://dx.doi.org/10.1362/026725799784870496>
26. Schmitt, B. 2003. *Customer Experience Management: A Revolutionary Approach to Connecting with Your Customers*. John Wiley & Sons, Inc. Hoboken, New Jersey, USA.

27. Terence, S. (2008). Advertising Promotion and Other Aspects of Integrated Marketing Communications. New York: Prentice Hall.
28. Tynan, C., McKechnie, S. (2009). Experience marketing: a review and reassessment, Journal of Marketing Management 25(5-6): 501-517.<http://dx.doi.org/10.1362/026725709X461821>

AN ANALYTICAL STUDY OF WORKING CAPITAL MANAGEMENT OF SELECTED CEMENT COMPANIES IN INDIA

Ahmed Mahdi Abdulkareem

ORCID ID: 0000-0001-5996-1744

Ph.D. Research Scholar, Department of Commerce and Business Administration,
Saurashtra University, Rajkot, India

Alok Kumar Chakrawal

Professor, Department of Commerce and Business Administration,
Saurashtra University, Rajkot, Gujarat – 360005, India

ABSTRACT

This article is to analyze and evaluate working capital management of selected cement companies. The main purpose of this study is to find out the liquidity position of selected cement companies in India, five companies were selection. The duration of study is five years start from 2015-16 to 2019-20. Two ratios were used for the analysis of data: current ratio quick ratio. To test hypothesis ANOVA was used. The major findings of the study indicate that there are significance difference in the quick ratio and current ratio of selected cement companies. Based on the data analysis, there is a mixed trend in the current ratio during the year 2015-16 to 2019-20. The analysis also shows the ups and down in the quick ratio of the selected cements companies during the period of 5 year. It indicates that there is mixed trend in quick ratio during the year 2015-16 to 2019-20. Removing short-term debt from balance sheet allow companies to have better quick and current ratios and allow to save some of liquidity in the near term and put in to better use. Companies are suggested to adopt more aggressiveness in maintaining their current ratio.

Keywords: Working Capital, Liquidity, Current Ratio, Quick Ratio, Management.

INTRODUCTION

Working Capital is the life blood of every business concern. Business firm cannot make progress without adequate working capital. Inadequate working capital means shortage of inputs, whereas excess of it leads to extra cost. So the quantum of working capital in every business firm should be neither more nor less than what is actually required. The working capital plays the same role in the business as the role of heart in the human body. Working capital funds are generated and circulate in the business just like blood in the heart. This is because the working capital is known as the circulating capital. Working capital has also a technical role to play in the maximization of the rate of return on capital invested provide it keeps pace with scientific and technological development taking place in the field to which it pertains. A firm may exist without making profits but cannot survive without liquidity. The function of working capital management organization is similar that of heart in a human body. Also it is an important function of financial management. The financial manager must determine the satisfactory level of working capital funds and also the optimum mix of current assets and current liabilities. He must ensure that the appropriate sources of funds are used to finance working capital and should also see that short term obligation of the business are met well in time. Working capital refers to short-term funds required for financing the Duration of one year. In the Words of Ralph Kennedy and Stewart Mac Muller, "The inadequacy of working capital is the main cause of the Business failure. Working capital consists broadly of

that portion of Business assets, which are used in, or related to current operations, and Represented at any time by operating cycle of such items as against Receivable, inventories of raw material, notes or bills receivables and Cash. While its fixed capitalism invested in various fixed assets, the working capital is in the form of current assets. "Working capital refers to the form of current assets, such as cash, short-term investment in marketable securities, accounts receivable and various types of inventories." The main characteristic of assets in the working capital! Category is that, they are liquid i.e. they can be converted into cash within a period of fiscal year or less. If the operation of a company is to run smoothly, a proper relationship between fixed capital and current capital has to be maintained. Every business enterprise requires working capital to pay off its short-term obligations. Moreover, every firm needs working capital because of the fact that its production, sales, cash payment and realization are not instantaneous and synchronized. There elapses certain time for converting raw materials into finished goods, finished goods into sales and finally realization of sale proceeds. Hence, funds are required to support such of these activities in the firm. That fund is called Working Capital a firm should maintain adequate working capital as per needs of its business operations. Funds adding to the cost of capital but not contributing towards the earnings. It may, thus result in accumulation of large inventory resulting in mishandling, waste and theft etc., excessively liberal credit policy and slack credit collection resulting in higher incidence of bad debts, speculative tendency to push sales and managerial complacency resulting in management inefficiency, wasteful expenditure and diversion of funds.

LITERATURE REVIEW

N.Arunkumar And Radha Ramanan(2013), the researchers are analyzed the relationship of inventory days, debtor's days, creditor's days, current ratio, ratio of current liability to total assets, financial assets to total assets, assets turnover ratio and size with return on capital employed is analyzed . In this study correlation analysis shows that the firm's profitability is highly affected by variable relating to assets. Also identified positive relation between profitability and debtor's days and inventory days and conducted sensitivity analysis to find out coverage of return on assets.

Oladipupo A.O, And Okafor C.A.,(2013), they discussed some investigates implementation of a firm's working capital management practice on the profitability and dividend pay-out ratio for selected companies. The main focus of the study is effects of working capital management which is considered trade cycle and attributes of working capital management on the profitability and dividend pay-out ratio. In this study finding that the impact of working capital management on corporate profitability appears to be statistically insignificant at 5% level of confidence level. In this study major observation was dividend pay-out ratio influenced positively by profitability and cash conversion cycle but negative result in growth rate in earnings.

Robert Kieschnick, Mark Laplante, Rabih Moussawi, (2013), they provided first empirical study of the relationship between corporate working capital management and shareholders' wealth. In this study time span was US Corporation from 1990 through 2006, researchers found evidence that the incremental dollar invested in net working capital is having not worth that the incremental dollar held in cash for the average firm, the future sales expectations are highly affected by the valuation of the incremental dollar invested in net operating working capital. The value of the incremental dollar comprehensive in credit creation and greater effect on shareholders' wealth.

Md. Hoque Arifil, Md. Mia Amin, Anwar Rakibul S.M., (2015), they considered that the correlation between the profitability is affected by working capital management is to be analyze. For this purpose working capital ratio and profitability ratio are used and correlation matrix have been used to show correlation between two variable and regression analysis was used for impact position. And the major finding of this study is significantly positive correlation between profitability and working capital attributes as well as impact of day sales outstanding on profitability ratio are affected negatively for the study period for the study.

Paul Pinku, Mitra Paroma (2018), the researchers take working capital management as main aspect which is indicated ability to meet day-to-day operating expenses and indicator of firm's short term financial health. For the purpose of equilibrium between liquidity and profitability, firm can plan effective utilization of working capital component. In this study empirical model should be used to established relationship between working capital management and profitability of steel industry in India by using panel data regression.

Rajavathana Ganesamoorthy, (2013), in their study the analysis is based on the Indian selected automobile companies. In this study two major companies that are Tata Motors limited and Mahindra and Mahindra selected for the analysis purpose. In this study ratio and simple percentage, which are two instruments used for finding and components of working capital should be used. Finding of the company was both companies shows efficient receivable and payable management and also found that negative cash conversion cycle during the study period for the both companies. For this study conclusion was both the companies efficiently managed their working capital components.

OBJECTIVES OF THE STUDY

The present work of the article has its own objectives. The work has been undertaken keeping in view certain objectives. The researcher has applied all sincere efforts to satisfy the broader objective listed below:

1. To study the liquidity position of selected cement companies.
2. To analyze and evaluate working capital management of selected cement companies.

DATA COLLECTION

Data collection is very important task for the researcher. There are two types of data.

1. Primary data
2. Secondary data

The study based on secondary data. The data was collected from published annual report on the year 2015-16 to 2019-20 of selected companies. Other information related to selected companies is collected from official website, net sources, books and journals, newspapers, etc.

DATA ANALYSIS AND INTERPRETATION

The data obtained have been duly classified tideland tabulated under various groups as per requirements of the study and analytical tools like ratios, charts and ANOVA single factor were used for objective analysis the drawing for meaningful conclusions. Researcher used the

current and quick ratios to analyze the performance of working capital in selected cement companies.

CURRENT RATIO

➤ Formula:

$$\text{Current ratio} = \frac{\text{Current assets}}{\text{Current liabilities}}$$

Current ratio expresses relationship between current assets and current liabilities. It is measure short-term financial strength of the business. Current ratio is calculated for current assets divided by current liabilities during that period. The current ratio compares all of company's current assets to its current liabilities. These are usually defined as assets that are cash or will be turned into cash in a year or less and liabilities that will be paid in a year or less. The current ratio helps investors understand more about a company's ability to cover its short term debt with its current assets and make apples to apples comparisons with its competitors and peers. Weakness of current ratio includes the difficulty of comparing the measure across industry groups, over generalization of the specific assets and liability balances, and the lack of trending information.

Table 1: Current ratio of selected cement companies

Year	Ultratech	Ambuja	ACC	Shree	Dalmia
2015-2016	0.63	1.24	0.83	1.39	0.90
2016-2017	0.76	1.35	1.31	1.22	0.83
2017-2018	0.59	1.60	1.53	1.12	0.76
2018-2019	0.61	1.72	1.71	1.50	0.70
2019-2020	0.58	1.57	1.97	1.08	0.64
MAX	0.76	1.72	1.97	1.5	0.9
MIN	0.59	1.24	0.83	1.08	0.64
AVERAGE	0.634	1.496	1.47	1.262	0.766

(https://www.google.com/URL?www.moneycontrol.com%2F&usg=AOvVaw2xmi4F6cHBL_upj3X)

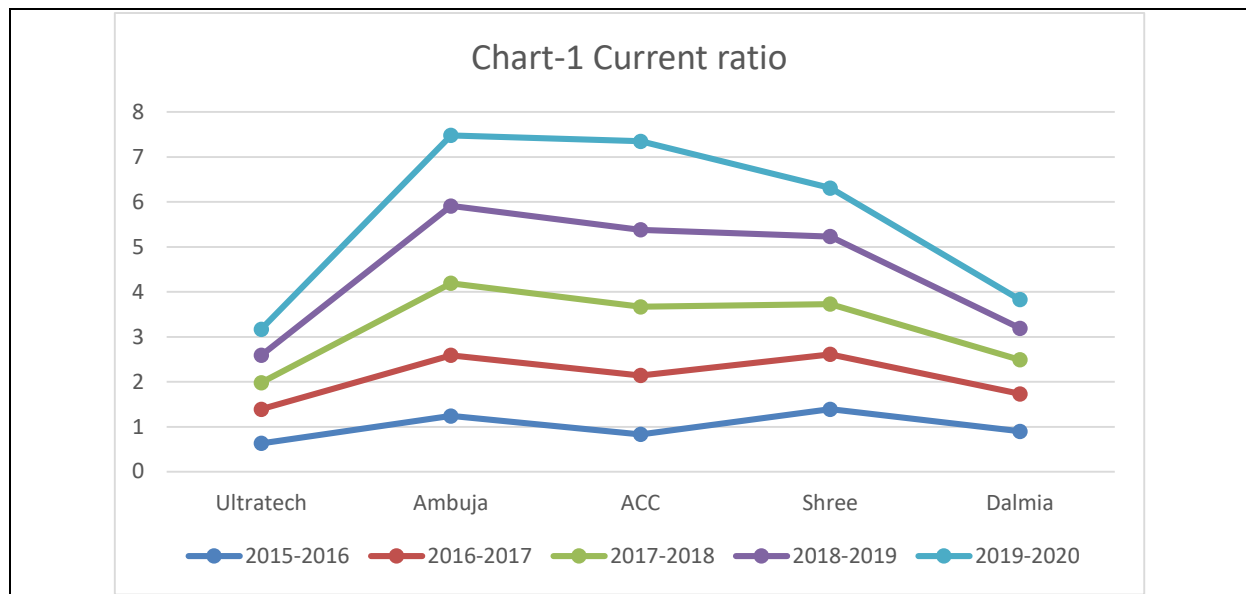


Figure 1: Current ratio of selected cement companies

INTERPRETATION

➤ The above table No.1 indicates the current ratio of the five selected cement company for the five year starting from 2015-16 and ending on 2019-2020.

➤ In case of Ultratech cement ltd. Current ratio was 0.63% in the year 2015-16. Then in the year 2016-17 it is increased by 0.13% reached up to 0.76% which is maximum ratio during the study of Ultratech cement company period of 5 years. Then in 2017-18 it was decrease up to 0.59% which was minimum ratio during the study of Ultratech cement company period of 5 years. In the year 2019-18 the ratio increased up to 0.61%. In the year 2019-20 it decreased by 0.03% and reached to 0.58%. The average current ratio of Ultratech cement ltd is 0.634% during the study period of 5 years.

➤ In the second case of Ambuja cement ltd. Current ratio was 1.24% in the year 2015-16 which is minimum ratio during the study of Ambuja cement company period of 5 years. Then in the year 2016-17, 2017-18 and 2018-19 current ratio was continuously increase up to 1.35%, 1.60% and 1.72%. In the year 2019-20 ratio is 1.57% which is decline by 0.15% compare to year 2018-19. In the year 2018-19 ratio was 1.72% which is maximum ratio of Ambuja Cement Company during the study period of 5 years. The average current ratio of Ambuja cement ltd. Is 1.50% during the study period of 5 years.

➤ In the case of ACC cement ltd. Current ratio was 0.83% in the year 2015-16 which is maximum ratio during the study of ACC cement company period 5 years. Then in the year 2016-17, 2017-18 and 2018-19 current ratio was continuously increase up to 1.31%, 1.53% and 1.71%. In the year 2019-20 current ratio is once again increase by 0.29% and stood up at 1.97% which is highest ratio of ACC Cement Company during the study period of 5 year. The average current ratio of ACC cement ltd. Is 1.47% during the study period of 5 years.

➤ In the case of Sheer cement ltd. Current ratio was 1.39% in the year 2015-16. Then ratio was respectively decreased to 1.22% and 1.12% in the year 2016-17 and 2017-18. In the year 2018-19 current ratio was reached to 1.50% which is the highest ratio of Shree Cement Company during the study period of 5 years. After year 2018-19 the current ratio was decrease 1.08% in the year 2019-20 which is minimum ratio during the study of Shree cement

company period of 5 year. The average current ratio during the study period of 5 years of Shree cement ltd is 1.262%.

➤ In the case of Dalmia cement ltd. Current ratio in the year 2015-16 was 0.90% which is maximum ratio during the study of Dalmia cement company period of 5 years. Then in the year 2016-17, 2017-18 and 2018-19 it was continuously decrease 0.83%, 0.76% and 0.70% respectively. In the year 2019-20 ratio was once again decrease up to 0.64%, which is minimum ratio during the study of Dalmia cement company period of 5 years of Dalmia Cement Company. The average current ratio of Dalmia cement company was 0.77% during the study period of 5 years.

➤ In the above table we can see that and analyzed that the highest or maximum current ratio was 1.97% in the year 2019-20 of ACC cement company and minimum current ratio was 0.59% of Ultratech cement company during the study of 5 selected companies and during the study period of 5 years.

HYPOTHESIS TESTING

H₀: There is no significant difference in current ratio of selected cement companies during the Study period.

H₁: There is significant difference in current ratio of selected cement companies during the Study period.

Table 2: ANOVA

Source of Variation	SS	df	MS	F	P-value	F crit
Between Groups	3.226976	4	0.806744	14.78311222	9.0109406	2.866081402
Within Groups	1.09144	20	0.054572			
Total	4.318416	24				

The above ANOVA table shows that the calculated value F is 14.78311222 is more than the table value of 2.866081402 at the 5% level of significance and we accepted alternative hypothesis and reject null hypothesis. Hence, we conclude that there is significance difference in the current ratio of selected cement companies.

QUICK RATIO

➤ **Formula:**

$$\text{Quick ratio} = \frac{\text{Current assets} - \text{Inventory}}{\text{Current liabilities}}$$

The quick ratio is an indicator of company's short term liquidity position and measures a company's ability to meet its short-term obligation with its most liquid assets. The quick ratio measures a company's capacity to pay its current liabilities without needing to sell its

inventory or obtain additional financing. The quick ratio is considered a more conservative measure than the current ratio, which includes all current assets as coverage for current liabilities. The higher the ratio result, the better a company's liquidity and financial health the lower the ratio the more likely the company will struggle with paying debts. The quick ratio measures the dollar amount of liquid assets available against the dollar amount of current liabilities of a company. Liquid assets are those current assets that can be quick converted into cash with minimal impact on the price received in open market, while current liabilities are a company's debts or obligation that are due to be paid to creditors within one year.

Table 3: Quick ratio of selected cement companies

Year	Ultratech	Ambuja	ACC	Shree	Dalmia
2015-2016	0.58	0.99	0.57	1.02	0.64
2016-2017	0.61	1.11	1.06	0.92	0.57
2017-2018	0.59	1.30	1.23	0.92	0.55
2018-2019	0.63	1.52	1.50	1.15	0.47
2019-2020	0.60	1.31	1.81	0.87	0.45
MAX	0.63	1.52	1.81	1.15	0.64
MIN	0.58	0.99	0.57	0.87	0.45
AVERAGE	0.602	1.246	1.234	0.976	0.536

(https://www.google.com/URL?www.moneycontrol.com%2F&usg=AOvVaw2xmi4F6cHBL_upj3X)

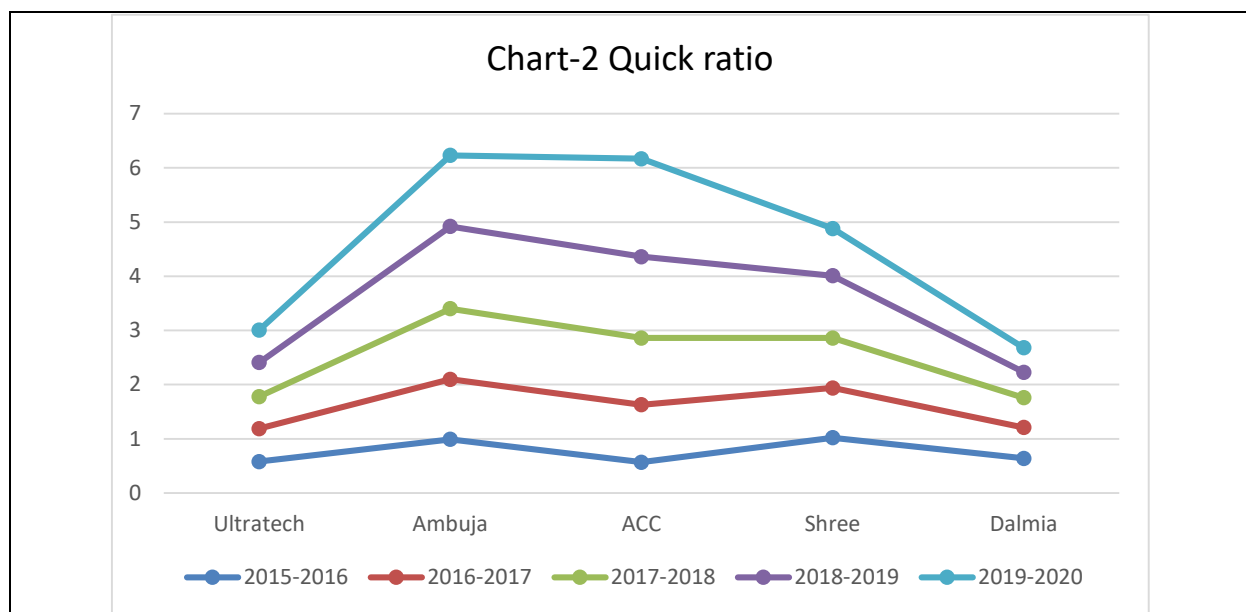


Figure 2: Quick ratio of selected cement companies

INTERPRETATION

➤ The above table.3 indicates the Quick ratio of the five selected cement company for the five year starting from 2015-16 and ending on 2019-2020.

- In case of Ultratech cement ltd. Quick ratio was 0.58% in the year 2015-16 which is minimum quick ratio during the study of Ultratech cement company period of 5 years. Then in year 2016-17 and 2017-18 quick ratio was 0.61% and 0.59% dereference between this two years is only 0.02%. The maximum Quick ratio was 0.63% in the year 2018-19 during the study of Ultratech cement company period of 5 years. In the year 2019-20 the ratio was 0.63%. The average Quick ratio of Ultratech cement ltd is 0.602% during the study period of 5 years.
- In second case of Ambuja cement ltd. Quick ratio was 0.99% in the year 2015-16 which is minimum quick ratio during the study of Ambuja cement company period of 5 years. Then in year 2016-17, 2017-18 and 2018-19 Quick ratio was continuously increased by 0.12%, 0.19% and 0.22% which is 1.11%, 1.30% and 1.52% as compare to previous year. After year 2018-19 ratio was decreased by 0.21% which is 1.31%. The maximum Quick ratio was 1.52% in the year 2018-19 during the study of Ambuja cement company period of 5 years. The average Quick ratio of Ambuja cement ltd is 1.246% during the study period of 5 years.
- In the case of ACC cement ltd. Quick ratio was 0.57% in the year 2015-16 which is minimum quick ratio during the study of ACC cement company period of 5 years. Then in year 2016-17, 2017-18, 2018-19 and 2019-20 Quick ratio was continuously increased by 0.49%, 0.17%, 0.27% and 0.31% which is 1.06%, 1.23%, 1.50% and 1.81% as compared to previous year. The maximum Quick ratio was 1.81% in the year 2019-20 during the study of ACC cement company period of 5 years. The average Quick ratio of ACC cement ltd is 1.234% during the study period of 5 years.
- In the case of Shree cement ltd. Quick ratio was 1.02% in the year 2015-16. Then in year 2016-17 and 2017-18 there is no change in Quick ratio which is continue for two years is 0.92. After year 2018-19 ratio was increased by 0.23% which is 1.15% which is maximum Quick ratio during the study of Shree cement company period of 5 years. In the year the quick ratio is decline to 0.87% in the year 2019-20. The average Quick ratio of Shree cement ltd is 0.976% during the study period of 5 years.
- In the case of Dalmia cement ltd. Quick ratio was 0.64% in the year 2015-16 which is maximum quick ratio during the study of Dalmia cement company period of 5 years. Then in year 2016-17, 2017-18, 2018-19 and 2019-20 Quick ratio was continuously decline to 0.57%, 0.55%, 0.47% and 0.45%. The minimum Quick ratio was 0.45% in the year 2019-20 during the study of Dalmia cement company period of 5 years. The average Quick ratio of Dalmia cement ltd is 0.536% during the study period of 5 years.
- In the above table we can see that and analyzed that the highest or maximum Quick ratio was 1.81% in the year 2019-20 of Shree cement company and minimum Quick ratio was 0.45% of Dalmia cement company compare to other companies during the study period of 5 years

HYPOTHESIS TESTING

H₀: There is no significant difference in Quick ratio of selected cement companies during the Study period.

H₁: There is significant difference in Quick ratio of selected cement companies during the Study period.

Table 4: ANOVA

Source of Variation	SS	df	MS	F	P-value	F crit
Between Groups	2.282904	4	0.570726	10.23760494	0.000111705	2.866081402
Within Groups	1.11496	20	0.055748			
Total	3.397864	24				

The above ANOVA table shows that the calculated value F 10.2376 is more than the table value of 2.866081402 at the 5% level of significance. So that we conclude that accepted alternative hypothesis and reject null hypothesis. Hence, we conclude that there is significance difference in the Quick ratio of selected cement companies.

FINDINGS

➤ Current ratio measures a company's ability to pay current or short-term, liabilities with its current or short-term assets. A ratio under 1 indicates that the company's debts due in a year. The analysis shows the ups and down in the ratio of selected cement companies during the period of 5 year. It indicates that there is mix trend in current ratio during the year 2015-16 to 2019-20. The higher current ratio compare to other selected cement companies was 1.496% of Ambuja cement ltd., 1.47% of ACC cement ltd. and 1.262% of Shree cement ltd. Which indicate the ratio was negative which means they are taking on too much debt, or their cash balance is being depleted either of which could be a solvency issue if it worsens. The lower current ratio compare to other selected cement companies was 0.634% of Ultratech cement ltd. and 0.766% of Dalmia cement ltd. Which indicate the ratio was positive it could indicate better collection, faster inventory turnover or that the company has been able to pay down debt.

➤ The quick ratio measures a company's capacity to pay its current liabilities without needing to sell its inventory or obtain additional financing. The analysis shows the ups and down in the ratio of selected cement companies during the period of 5 years. It indicates that there is mix trend in quick ratio during the year 2015-16 to 2019-20. The higher quick ratio was 1.246% and 1.234% of Ambuja cement ltd. And ACC cement ltd. Which indicates the batter a companies liquidity and financial health also the company fully equipped with exactly enough assets to be instantly liquidated to pay off its current liabilities as compare to other selected cement companies. The lower quick ratio was 0.976%, 0.602% and 0.536% of Shree cement ltd., Ultratech cement ltd. And Dalmia cement ltd. This indicates companies struggle with paying debts and also may not be able to fully pay off its current liabilities in the short term as compare to other selected cement companies.

CONCLUSION

This study contribute in way for analysis of strength and weakness of cement industries in India. Through this study the knowledge particularly regarding various statistical tools and techniques and statistical test will improve. In addition to the society will be able to know the real situation of working capital management of the selected cement companies. To conclude the study, it can be said that the adoption of above measures will doubtlessly help the selected companies to improve their overall performance in the management of working capital.

REFERENCES

- Abdulkareem, A. M. (2020). Financial Performance of Indian Pharmaceutical Companies: Analysis of Leverage and Cost of Capital. *Journal of Advanced Research in Economics and Administrative Sciences*, 1(1), 13-22.
- N.Arunkumar And Radha Ramanan(2013), "Working Capital Management And Profitability: A Sensitivity Analysis", *International Journal Of Research and development*, Page No.52-58.
- Oladipupo A.O, And Okafor C.A.,(2013), "Relative Contribution Of Working Capital Management to Corporate Profitability And Dividend Payout Ratio: Evidence From Nigeria", *International Journal of Business And Finance Management Research*. Page No. 13-20
- Robert Kieschnick, Mark Laplante, Rabih Moussawi, (2013), "Working Capital Management And Shareholders' Wealth", *Review Of Finance* Page No. 1827-1852
- Md. Hoque Arifil, Md. Mia Amin, Anwar Rakibul S.M., (2015), "Working Capital Management And Profitability: A Study On Cement In Bangladesh", *Research Journal Of Finance And Accounting*, Page no.18-29
- Paul Pinku, Mitra Paroma (2018), "Analysis Of The Effect Of Working Capital Management Profitability Of The Firm: Evidence From India Steel Industry", *Asia- Pacific Journal Of Management Research And Innovation*, Page No. 32-38
- Rajavathana Ganesamoorthy, (2013) "Management Of Working Capital Components Among Selected Automobile Companies In India", *Asian Journal Of Management* Page No. 61-72
- Abdulkareem, A. M., & Meghanathi, P. D. (2020). The Impact of Leverage on Earnings Per Share: A Study of Selected Petroleum Companies in India. *Journal La Bisecoman*, 1(2), 25-36.
- <https://www.google.com/url?sa=t&source=web&rct=j&url=https://corporatefinanceinstitute.com/resources/knowledge/finance/working-capital-management/&ved>
- <https://www.google.com/url?sa=t&source=web&rct=j&url=https://www.grin.com/document>
- <https://www.google.com/url?sa=t&source=web&rct=j&url=https://www.investopedia.com/terms/w/workingcapitalmanagement>

A NEW PERSPECTIVE ON THE RELATIONSHIP OF POETRY AND SOCIETY: COGNITIVE APPROACH

Özge Can

Faculty of Letters, Linguistics, Dokuz Eylul University, Izmir, Turkey

Şule Düzdemir

Department of Foreign Languages, Dokuz Eylul University, Izmir, Turkey

ABSTRACT

The view of the relationship between poetry and society has traditionally been the focus of literature until today. However, as a literary work, poetry provides important clues about the function of the human mind and gives information about the experiences belonging to the external world. Although Cognitive Poetics sees linguistic knowledge as a part of general cognition and thought by means of focusing on making connections between readers and literary sciences, the foundations of the theory can be integrated into the evaluation process of society's outputs through the examination of some works of the poets representing their period. In this context, this study aims to interpret and discuss the relationship between poetry and society from the cognitive perspective within the scope of Attila İlhan's poem *Ben Sana Mecburum* (1960) and provides a basis for experimental studies to explain mental processes focusing on the relationship between language and mind.

Keywords: Social Cognition, Poetry, Cognitive Linguistics, Socialist Realist Poetry, Society, Cognitive Poetics

INTRODUCTION

Language is the most important object of thought that reveals the relationship between mental processes and social experiences. It is believed that both individual and social perspectives can be reached through the language that shows the way of perceiving the world with the influence of the society and culture in which the individual lives.

Considering that the individual shapes his feelings and thoughts by means of his knowledge of the world, the fact that the language used by the individual allows the observation of the social context cannot be ignored. The object of this study is language, and cognitive perspective on literary texts paves the way for drawing a holistic picture. The reason for this is that the essence of literary studies is language and the cognitive view to language seems to be capable of providing compact information about contextual situations like interpretation, history and social conventions. At this juncture, this study aims to discuss the relationship between poetry and society within the framework of Cognitive Poetics, and the theoretical details are explained in the next section.

COGNITIVE POETICS

Cognitive Linguistics is a recent approach to language, and contrary to both Generative Grammar and Formal Semantics, it presents a perspective on language and the mind (Evans, 2012). In Cognitive Linguistics, the basic assumption is that words and individual's experience cannot be matched directly. Namely, for Cognitive linguists, depending on experiential aspects such as cognitive and cultural models, perspectives, conceptual metaphors, different situations can be formed in different ways (Weber, 2004). Thus, language is connected to cognition inseparably.

Although poetry is a part of literature, it offers important clues about human cognition as it emerges from the productions of individuals belonging to society. Since the poems are emotion- oriented products and the rational mechanism is kept in the background, important clues about human cognition can be captured from expressions conveying emotions that are predicted to be less controlled by the mind. Therefore, Cognitive Poetry is a tool to reach human cognition with its language-oriented studies.

In general terms, *Cognitive Poetics* is the application of cognitive sciences to literary texts, analysing them from a cognitive perspective. As the founder of the field, Tsur (2002) suggests that poems are one of the components of literary texts having emotions, so they can be analysed on the basis of Cognitive Linguistics and Cognitive Psychology, which form the new field called as Cognitive Poetics. For Tsur (2002), Cognitive Poetics is the study of perceptual effects on readers in literary studies. In other words, besides having meanings and conveying thoughts, poetic texts also indicate emotional qualities that the reader perceive. Since the term was used by Tsur, the studies on Cognitive Poetics have extended their application fields including the whole literary studies (Harrison and Stockwell, 2014). Thus, as well as the contribution of Cognitive Psychology to the field as Tsur proposed, Lakoff and Johnson's (1980) Conceptual Metaphor Theory and Cognitive Stylistics have also become influential. In this respect, Stockwell (2002) states that Cognitive Poetics is a progress in Cognitive Stylistics and this development proceeds as the restructuring of rhetorical adjustments (Stockwell, 2002). Briefly, the studies on Cognitive Poetics are accompanied by the fields of Cognitive Psychology, Cognitive Semantics, Conceptual Metaphor Theory and Cognitive Stylistics. Cognitive Linguistics argues that human cognition is common and that is why studies on human language strive to reach this common cognition through Cognitive Poetry. Thus, this study focuses on the discussion of human cognition and social cognition blending with Cognitive Poetics.

POETRY and SOCIETY

Literature is thought as the reflection of its society since ancient times. Being one of the elements of it, poetry has the same characteristics, so poets have always played a crucial role for societies. The operation of cognition differs from culture to culture and this difference in societies and cultures can be explained by means of poetry. In addition, in order to reach the universal cognition, it is necessary to reach the social cognition. Since social cognition is possible to be reflected by the eminent poets belonging to the society, as an important part of literature, poetry is the best way to convey human emotions. Undoubtedly, every period is quite different from each other. That is why, in order to understand the literary works of the term including the language and cognition, it is necessary to have information about the period in which they were written. For this reason, it will be appropriate to explain the movement of socialist realist first.

Socialist realist poetry is an art movement connected to Marxism, socialism and materialism, so; socialist realists focus on the difficulties and oppression that the working class has and describes social life with its problems and they see Marxist ideology as the only solution for all these problems. The characteristics of the period in poetry can be classified as below:

- Socialist realists brought free verse features.
- Socialist realist poetry has an ideological content. The fact that it has a political content increased the power of influence and determination of poetry.
- Parallel and symmetrical flows and breaks in poems are reflections from the Russian poet Mayakovski.

• In addition to the influence of Marxist ideology in the content, the style was also affected by Russia (Aydoğdu, 2017).

Özçelebi (2008) states the foundations of socialist realism as:

- Positive person/hero/type
- Revolutionary romance
- Domination
- Socialist partisanship
- Historical optimism/ trusting the future
- Socialist humanism
- Purposefulness
- Nationality/ nationalism
- Partiotism
- An epic and populist narrative
- Style/ content/function
- Incompatibility with bourgeois ideology

Considering the characteristics of the term, it would be appropriate to analyze the poem *Ben Sana Mecurum* by Attila İlhan, as one of the eminent poets of the movement. Yet, although the theory we used for this study is based on the readers' experiences rather than the poet's biography or social and historical context, it is useful to give brief information about him beforehand.

Attila İlhan was born in Menemen, Izmir, in 1925. He is considered among the artists of the 1940 generation known as socialist, so there are social elements in his works (Çelik, 2007). The language in his poems is generally simple and understandable. His poems include both the optimistic and the realistic view, but as he passed through different views and periodic changes, he wrote his poems with social aspect rather than individual romanticism (Aliye, 2001).

The poem below by İlhan written in 1960, given in both Turkish and English, makes the impression that it is a love poem considering both its title and the content. However, taking into account both the period in which he lived and his tendency to touch on social issues, it is appropriate to be used as a database to discuss both human and social cognition within the framework of Cognitive Poetics.

BEN SANA MECBURUM

ben sana mecburum bilemezsin
adını mih gibi aklımda tutuyorum
büyüdükçe büyüyor gözlerin
ben sana mecburum bilemezsin
içimi seninle ısıtıyorum

ağaçlar sonbahara hazırlanıyor
bu şehir o eski İstanbul mudur
karanlıkta bulutlar parçalanıyor

YOU ARE A MUST FOR ME

you are a must for me, you never know
i keep your name in my mind as a nail
your eyes getting bigger and bigger
you are a must for me, you never know
i am heating inside of me with you

trees are getting ready for autumn
this city is that old İstanbul?
clouds are torn apart in darkness

sokak lambaları birden yanıyor
kaldırımlarda yağmur kokusu
ben sana mecburum sen yoksun
sevmek kimi zaman rezilce korkuludur

insan bir akşamustu ansızın yorulur
tutsak ustura ağzında yaşamaktan
kimi zaman ellerini kırar tutkusu
birkac hayat çıkarır yaşamasından
hangi kapıyı çalsa kimi zaman
arkasında yalnızlığın hınzır uğultusu

Fatih'te yoksul bir gramofon çalıyor
eski zamanlardan bir cuma çalıyor
durup köşe başında deliksiz dinlesem
sana kullanılmamış bir gök getirsem
haftalar ellerimde ufalanıyor
ne yapsam ne tutsam nereye gitsem

ben sana mecburum sen yoksun
belki Haziran'da mavi benekli çocuksun
ah seni bilmiyor kimseler bilmiyor
bir şilep sızıyor ıssız gözlerinden
belki Yeşilköy'de uçağa biniyorsun
Yeşilköy
bütün ıslanmışsın tüylerin ürperiyor
belki körsün kırılmışsın telas içindesin
kötü rüzgar saçlarını götürüyor
ne vakit bir yaşamak düşünsem
bu kurtlar sofrasında belki zor
ayıpsız fakat ellerimizi kirletmeden

ne vakit bir yaşamak düşünsem
sus deyip adınla başlıyorum
içimsıra kımıldıyor gizli denizlerin
hayır başka türlü olmayacak
ben sana mecburum bilemezsin.

street lights are immediately flashing
over sidewalks, the smell of rain
you are a must for me, you are absent

to love is sometimes a rather

disgracefully frightening
man gets tired all of a sudden in an evening
to live captive, over straight razor
sometimes, his passion breaks his hands,
takes out a few lives in his lifetime
whichever door he knocks sometimes
behind him, whistle of the naught silence
of loneliness

a poor gramphon plays in Fatih
from ancient times a Cuma plays
standing in the corner, i would listen non-stop
i would bring an untouched sky to you
weeks are crumbled in my hands
what would i do, what would i hold on,

where would i go
you are a must for me, you are absent

maybe you are blue dotted child in June
Ah no one knows you, no one knows
a ship leaks from your deserted eyes
maybe you are taking an aeroplane in

wholly got wet, your hair shudder
maybe you are blind, broken, in a hurry
Bad winds are carrying away your hair

whenever i think of living a life
maybe hard in this wolves table
without a shame, though without getting our

hands dirty
whenever i think of living a life
i start with your name, with saying silence
your secret seas are moving inside of me
No, it won't happen in other ways
you are a must for me, you never know...

Now, we will proceed to evaluate the theoretical perspective we have discussed so far over this specific poem.

DISCUSSION and CONCLUSION

Compulsion (Tr. mecburiyet, Eng. must), which forms the general subject in the poem can be roughly defined as the action of being forced to do something, firstly. And according to *Cambridge English Dictionary* the word means (i) a very strong feeling of wanting to do something repeatedly that is difficult to control, and (ii) a force that makes you do something (<http://dictionary.cambridge.org/dictionary/english/compulsion>). Stating the two objects of compulsion as humans and human affairs, Flavell and Miller (1998) claims that social

cognition refers cognition and knowledge about people and their doings, pertaining to social and psychological world.

At first glance, the poem is about a love and the poet is tied to his lover with an uncontrollable passion, especially considering the title and the first line of the poem. Yet, as a mirror of the society, the choice of the poet may be reflected to the poem on the occasion of an indispensable situation which takes place in the society rather than his private life. Thus, social cognition takes the place of the cognition of the individual. Although he does not state explicitly, there was a military coup in the days when the poem was written, so the poem has the traces of this event by means of some symbols. For example, the lexical item *razor*, is a symbol of danger. The poet, sharing the hazardous environment mentally in the period he lived, refers the upcoming dangers/risks with this symbol. In other words, he uses the word *razor* to express that he is at risk. As well as being alone, he looks hopeless and lives in a poor neighbourhood in *İstanbul*. It does not look like it used to be, so he cannot recognize it. Although the atmosphere is gloomy and the poet seems pessimistic, he still imagines reaching the sky, which symbolizes freedom and peace. As the members of the society, people are broken and probably blind, so they cannot see the realities which they actually need to realize and they are drifted away by the *bad wind* which shows nothing is under their control and likely to bring sad consequences. As can be seen from the last stanza, whenever he is eager to enjoy life, he remembers it is not easy because of the sneaky and cruel people surrounding him, which he calls as *wolves table*, and in a society like that it is almost impossible to live without a shame and have a pure life. The poet establishes a connection between the society he lives in and other people with whom he predicts to interact through the poem.

It can be said that İlhan, one of the members of the socialist realist movement, presents his thoughts and beliefs to his readers' critical evaluation. Undoubtedly, this presentation is connected to what and how the society sees the world in which they live, in other words, how his readers encode the issues of society in their experiential knowledge. Since he has the ability to understand the feelings, thoughts, behaviours and intentions of the society, the poet acts as a mirror of the society through the poem.

REFERENCES

- Evans V 2012. WIREs Cogn Sci 2012. doi: 10.1002/wcs.1163
- Çelik Y 2007. Şubat Yolcusu: Attilâ İlhan'ın Şiiri. Ankara: Akçağ Yayınları.
- İlhan A 2017. Ben Sana Mecburum, 44. Baskı, Türkiye İş Bankası Kültür Yayınları, İstanbul.
- Aydoğdu Y 2017. Cumhuriyet Dönemi Türk Edebiyatında Toplumcu Gerçekçi Şiirin Serüveni (1923-1950). DOI: 10.29029/busbed.335707
- Özçelebi H 2008. "Türk Toplumunda Toplumcu Gerçekçi Eleştiri Anlayışının Temelleri", Uluslararası Asya ve Kuzey Afrika Çalışmaları Kongresi: Edebiyat Bilimi ve Sorunları, Ed. Zeki Dilek, Mustafa Akbulut, Zeki Cemil Arda, C: III, Ankara, ss. 1251-1275.
- Aliye Z 2001. Mavi Adam-Attilâ İlhan'la Söyleşiler, Bilgi Yayınevi, Ankara.
- Weber J 2004. Review: A New Paradigm for Literary Studies, or: The Teething Troubles of Cognitive Poetics. *Style*. (38)4: 515-523.
- Tsur R.2002.*Aspects of Cognitive Poetics. Cognitive Stylistics: Language and cognition in text analysis*. Edited by Elena Semino and Jonathan Culpeper.pp.279-318.Amsterdam/Philadelphia:John Benjamins Publishing Company.

Harrison C. and Stockwell P. 2014. Cognitive Poetics. *The Bloomsbury Companion to Cognitive Linguistics* (ss. 218-233). Editörler Jeannette Littlemore ve John R. Taylor. Londra: Bloomsbury

Stockwell P. 2002. *Cognitive Poetics*. New York, Routledge.

Lakoff, G. and Johnson M. 1980. *Metaphors We Live By*. Chicago: The University of Chicago Press.

Flavell J. H. and Miller P. H. 1998. Social cognition. In W. Damon (Ed.), *Handbook of child psychology: Vol. 2. Cognition, perception, and language* (pp. 851–898). John Wiley & Sons Inc.

**ATTITUDES TOWARD CHANGE:
EVIDENCE FROM LOCAL GOVERNMENT**

Dr. Ade Irma Anggraeni

Department of Management, Faculty of Economics and Business,
Universitas Jenderal Soedirman, Purwokerto, Indonesia

ORCID ID: 0000-0001-6896-7865

ABSTRACT

Globalization and regional autonomy are still significant issues faced in regional economic development. In order to improve competitiveness and management of assets optimal area, Local Governments should have the human resources management mechanism Human resources who have a proactive attitude towards change are individuals who are highly committed to the goals the organization wants to achieve. This study aims to explain aspects that can improve employee commitment, namely organizational communication, work involvement and organizational learning. The study was conducted on 239 employees of local government agencies in Banyumas district. Data analysis was carried out with the Least Square Partial program.

Keywords: organizational communication, work involvement, organizational learning, organizational commitment, attitude toward change.

1. INTRODUCTION

Globalization and regional autonomy require speed and foresight of local governments in managing regional potential to become more competitive. Regional autonomy is a strategy developed to strengthen the economy and regional competitiveness in order to strengthen national economic conditions in facing the era of globalization. Creating a strong local economy to top the agenda of local governments in order to be able to contribute more in national development. The local government needs to adjust its pace of movement with the demands of the community and the opportunities for cooperation offered by the private sector and abroad. Transformation efforts are a necessity for local governments by understanding various internal and external factors so that bureaucratic professionalism can be achieved.

Organizational readiness for change is determined by the views and attitude owned milli ki by members of the organization to change itself. In this case, the employee becomes essential. Employees who are committed to change will have a particular perspective that can encourage a series of actions aimed at the successful implementation of changes in the organization (Meyer et al, 2002). Commitment becomes an essential factor in achieving congruence between individual goals and organizational goals. Changes in an organization start from the preparation stage, namely the awareness to change. Employees who are aware of the changes will have a degree of understanding and acceptance better change that will lead to commitment, namely internalizing the changes in the implementation of the work (Conner, 1992).

In the process of change, it is very natural for an individual to experience feelings of insecurity and comfort due to changes in work relations and daily activities (Nadler, 1987). The perception that the work environment is uncertain will direct employees to become resistant and decrease commitment to the organization (Ashford et al, 1989). Changes

in an organization also have the potential to cause role ambiguity, namely a situation where employees do not have clear direction about their role in a job or organization (Rizzo et al, 1970). Employees can also experience role conflicts, namely the inconsistency between the efforts made and what is expected by the organization. Not only that, but change also has the potential for *role overload*. In order to anticipate this, organizations need to design good communication by prioritizing continuous feedback to reduce resistance to change and improve employee morale (Klein, 1996).

Good communication also needs to be supported by efforts to design work involvement so that employees feel they have the ability and can contribute to the work. Job involvement can be employees to be more adaptive in facing change because this able to see the opportunities and benefits of these conditions. An adaptive employee can optimize his ability to respond to change so that he can commit to organizational goals. Employees can be committed and have a positive attitude towards change if they see the opportunity given by the organization in developing and developing career paths. Various forms of activities such as training can increase employee commitment (Bhatnagar, 2007). When an organization can facilitate employees in developing their capabilities, employees will have the desire to try better and be committed to carrying out their duties (Paul and Anatharaman, 2004). Through learning, the organization helps employees to be more committed to the organization and increases the feeling of its membership in the organization (Sayeed, 2001).

This research aims to analyze the factors that influence employee attitudes toward change. Organizational commitment lead to the determinant factor in shaping the positive attitude of employees towards change. Organizational commitment can be achieved through organizational communication, work involvement and organizational learning. Support for the following research results:

a. Effect of Organizational Communication on Organizational Commitment

Organizational communication is a dynamic process that functions as the primary tool for the success or failure of the organization concerning the task environment. Allen (1992) states that interpersonal communication is like employee efforts to give opinions and views relating to the issues around them and communicate with superiors, colleagues and supervisors is a factor that influences organizational commitment. This statement supports the results of Downs (1988) research which states that there is a positive relationship between organizational communication and organizational commitment. Chen et al, (2006) concluded that the communication was positively related to organizational commitment. Based on the results of previous research hypotheses can be formulated first, namely:

H1. Organizational Communication Has Positive Effect on Organizational Commitment

b. Effect of Job Involvement on Organizational Commitment

Perrot (2002) concluded that Job involvement could be measured by the degree to which employees feel actively participate in their work or to what extent the employee is looking for some self-expression and actualisation in his work. Job involvement will make someone able to issue the best ability in doing a job because he was involved in the job. Previously Blau and Boal (1987) concluded that high work involvement would increase commitment organization. Based on the results of previous research, the second hypothesis can be formulated, namely:

H2: Job Involvement Has a Positive Effect on Organizational Commitment

c. Effect of Organizational Learning on Organizational Commitment

Research conducted by Mowday et al (1979) concluded that organizational learning affects organizational commitment. Pedler et al (1991) explained that in the context of the congruence of goals and values of employees towards the organization, organizational activities that facilitate the learning of all the members could increase employee commitment. Furthermore, Bhatnagar (2007) states that organizational learning increases the level of employee commitment. Based on the results of previous research, the third hypothesis can be formulated, namely:

H3. Organizational Learning Has Positive Effect on Organizational Commitment

d. Organizational Commitment on Attitudes Toward Change

Iverson research (1996) concluded that organizational commitment is the factor that most influences attitudes toward change after the factor of union membership. Employees who have a strong commitment to being more in line with the goals and values of the organization as well as better to accept the changes. This research supports Guest's opinion (1987) that employees who are committed will be more receptive to organizational changes than employees who do not commit. The results of the study of Lau and Woodman (1995) prove that organizational commitment has a direct and significant effect on the dimensions of change. Research Yousef (2000) concluded that affective commitment has a direct and positive effect on employee attitudes toward change. Based on the results of previous research hypotheses can be formulated fourth, namely:

H3: Organizational Commitment affects the attitude towards change

Based on the hypothesis presented above, the research framework is as follows.

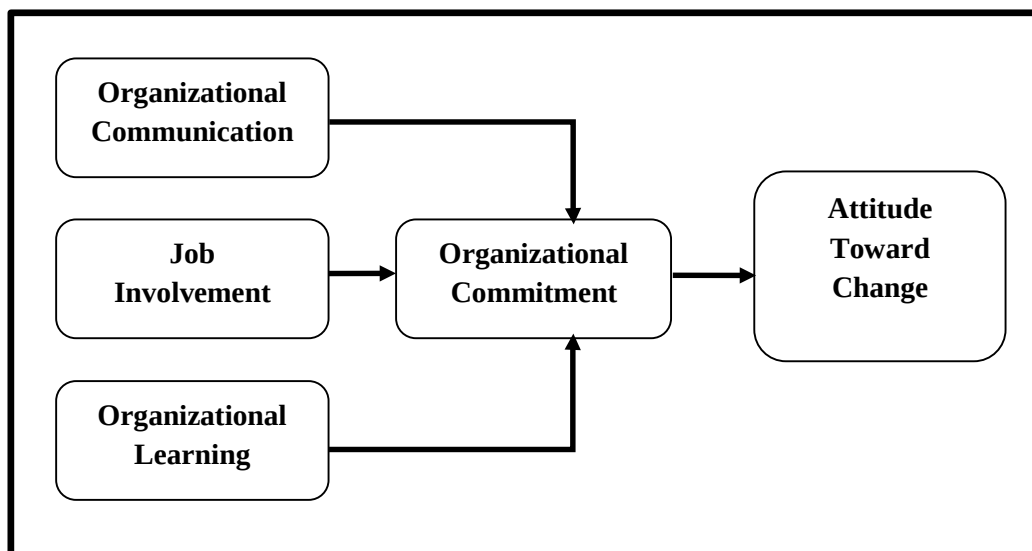


Figure1. Research model

2. RESEARCH METHODS

This research was explanatory as it aims to examine the influence of organizational communication, job involvement and organizational commitment to changing attitudes toward change. Sources of data obtained through the data of primary data obtained directly from the object of research by distributing questionnaires to the respondents. Data collection in this study was carried out by the survey method, namely using a questionnaire containing

the measuring construct or variable items used in the research model. The model of the questionnaire used is a closed and open questionnaire. The population in this study were all employees of the Regional Government Agency in Banyumas Regency. The sampling method uses the proportionate stratified random sampling method. In this study, there were 239 respondents. The variable measurement tool that will be used in this study uses interval data measurements.

This study was designed to test the relationship model of multiple relationships between variables, which involve many variables and the information to be obtained is simultaneous, so quantitatively the analysis technique used is the Partial Least Square model estimation. Chin (1998) states that Partial Least Square does not assume a particular distribution for parameter estimation, then the parameter technique is not needed. The PLS evaluation model is based on prediction measurements that have non-parametric properties. Outer model with reflexive indicators is evaluated by convergent validity and discriminant validity from the indicator and composite reliability for block indicators. Stone (1974) and Geisser (1975) stated that the structural model or inner model was evaluated by looking at the presentation of variance explained by looking at the R-square value for the latent dependent construct and also seeing the magnitude of the structural path coefficient. The stability of these estimates is evaluated using statistical t-tests obtained through bootstrapping procedures.

3. RESULTS AND DISCUSSION

a. Data collection

In this study, the data collected by the questionnaire directly as much as 248 questionnaires. From the results of questionnaires, 239 questionnaires were fulfilling the requirements to be analysed in order to test the hypothesis.

b. Characteristics of Respondents

The characteristics of the respondents in this study included the sex of education and work period. The majority of respondents aged 31 to 40 years (41%), the majority of respondents were male (74%), had an equivalent educational background of undergraduate (49%). The length of work of the respondents varies and is balanced between those who have more than 15 years of work experience (43%) and those who work less than 15 years (57%).

c. Measurement Model (Outer Model)

The measurement model or outer model defines how each indicator block is related to its latent variables. Outer models with reflexive indicators are evaluated by convergent and discriminant validity from the indicator and composite reliability for indicator blocks. In this section, we will discuss the results of testing the validity of the instruments used. Validity testing is done to determine the extent to which the ability of research instruments to measure the things that want to be measured. Validity test is done by analysing valid whether or not a sub-variable is used as a measurement and then from a valid sub-variable item analysis is done. Testing the validity of the items is done using PLS analysis tools. The results of this item analysis test will be discussed in this section. Although this instrument has been tested for validity in previous studies, validity testing is still needed because research is carried out under different conditions. Different conditions not only in terms of respondents, such as the characteristics of respondents, are of course different, but the differences also lie in the respondents who are intended.

Convergent Validity

Convergent validity refers to the existence of correlations between different instruments that measure the same construct. *Convergent Validity* is assessed based on the correlation between the score of the item or indicator (component score) and the construct score calculated by PLS. Convergent validity is used to determine the validity of each relationship between the indicator and its latent construct. The individual reflexive size is said to be high if it correlates more than 0.7 with the construct we to measure. However, for the initial phase of research on the development of a scale of measurement the loading value of 0.50 to 0.60 is considered sufficient (Ghozali, 2006). Based on this criterion, the indicator whose loading value is less than 0, 5 0 is dropped from the analysis and the estimation is carried out.

The results of data processing using PLS produce outer loading for each indicator (manifest variable) of the construct (variable). The results showed that there is a value loading value below 0.5. After processing indicators such invalid, then all the indicators have loading values above 0.70.

Discriminant Validity

Discriminant validity is used to show that latent constructs predict the size of their blocks to be better than the size of other blocks. Discriminant validity can be seen from the value of cross loading, the value of the indicator correlation to the construct must be higher than the value of the correlation between the indicator and other constructs, the results of the analysis show that loading correlation between each variable is more significant than loading correlation with other variables. This shows that the latent construct can predict the size of the block itself is better than the size of the other blocks. It means the variables have good discriminant validity.

Composite Reliability

Evaluation of indicator block reliability is done using composite reliability. Compared to Cronbach Alpha, composite reliability assumes that all indicators are given equal weight. So that composite reliability is a closer approximation with the assumption that parameter estimation is accurate while Cronbach alpha tends to lower bound estimate reliability. According to Chin (1998), an indicator is said to have good reliability if the value is greater than 0.7. Reliability test results with composite reliability can be seen in table 1.

Table 1. Composite Reliability

Composite Reliability		
OC	0.917	reliable
JI	0.868	reliable
OL	0.893	reliable
OComm	0.907	reliable
AC	0.913	reliable

In table 1 it can be seen that all latent variables can be accepted. Measurements with composite reliability of all variables above 0.7. Thus the construct that is built shows the accuracy and accuracy of the gauge or is reliable.

Structural Model (Inner Model)

Inner model is also called inner relation. The inner model describes the relationship between latent variables based on substantive theory. Assessing the inner model is to look at the relationship between latent constructs by paying attention to the results of the estimation of the path parameter coefficients and their level of significance. Hypothesis testing can be done by considering the level of significance and path parameters between these latent variables as shown in table 2.

Table 2. Inner Model

	Original Sample Estimate	Mean of subsamples	Deviation Standard	T-Statistic	R-Square
OC -> OComm	0.340	0.395	0.101	3,378	0.351
JI -> OComm	0.507	0.500	0.097	5,208	0.120
OL-> OComm	0.593	0.608	0.097	5,208	0.363
OComm -> AC	0.404	0.479	0.087	4,632	0.363

In assessing the PLS model begins by looking at the R-square value for each latent dependent variable. Changes in R-square values can be used to assess the effect of independent latent variables on latent dependent variables, whether they have substantive influence.

a. Organizational Commitment

Test the effect of organizational communication on the organizational commitment it appears in the calculated t-statistic value that is equal to 3.378 significant because it is bigger than the T-table which is 1.97 with a significant level of 0.05. Test results T shows that there is a significant effect of organizational communication on organizational commitment. The coefficient of the influence of organizational communication and organizational commitment at 0.340 is positive. Based on these results it can be concluded that H 1 is acceptable. So, there is a positive and significant influence of organizational communication on organizational commitment.

Test the effect of job involvement on the organizational commitment it appears in the calculated t-statistic, which is equal to 5.208 significant because it is bigger than the T-table which is 1.97 with a significant level of 0.0. T-test indicates that there is significant influence of job involvement towards organizational commitment. The coefficient of the influence of organizational involvement on organizational commitment equal to 0.507 is positive. Based on these results it can be concluded that H 2 is acceptable. So, there is a significant positive effect of work involved on organizational commitment.

Test the effect of organizational learning on the organizational commitment it appears in the calculated t-statistic value which is equal to 5.208 significant because it is greater than the T-table which is 1.97 with a significant level of 0.05. Test results T shows that there is a significant effect of organizational commitment on attitudes toward change. The coefficient of influence between organizational commitment and attitude towards change at 0.404 is

positive. Based on these results it can be concluded that H3 is acceptable. So, there is a positive and significant influence on organizational learning on organizational commitment.

Test the effect of the construct (latent) on an organizational commitment to attitudes toward change looks at the value of t-statistic significant count is equal to 4.632 because it is greater than the T-table which is 1, 97 with a significant level of 0.05. Test results T shows that there is a significant effect of organizational commitment on attitudes toward change. The coefficient of influence between organizational commitment and attitude towards change at 0.404 is positive. Based on these results it can be concluded that H4 is acceptable. So, there is a positive and significant influence on the organizational commitment to attitudes toward change.

DISCUSSION OF ANALYSIS RESULTS

The results of analysis by using Smart PLS indicated that based on the value of t-test statistic is calculated then H1 accepted. This result shows that there is a positive and significant influence of organizational communication on organizational commitment. Organizational communication is believed to play an essential role in encouraging member organizations to devote their efforts to the work of the organization. Willingness to make a serious effort on behalf of the organization is one of the three factors of organizational commitment. Strong trust, acceptance of the goals of organizational values and a great desire to maintain membership are organizational commitments. In this research setting, organizational communication is the other factor for the emergence of organizational commitment. With the logic of employees who have good relations with the leadership and get constructive feedback from superiors, they have a high commitment to the organization. This logic is supported by research conducted by Chen et al (2006) which concluded that organizational communication is positively related to organizational commitment. The results of this study also support the research of Downs (1981) stating that there is a positive relationship between organizational communication and organizational commitment. The results of the study are consistent with the proposed hypothesis and have the meaning that the organizational commitment that employees have is influenced by organizational communication.

The results of the study as shown in table 2 also show significant H2. This shows that there is a positive and significant influence of work involved on organizational commitment. In this research setting, work involvement is another factor in the emergence of organizational commitment. The logic that underlies that employee involvement in decision making that will affect employees and increase employee autonomy and control over their working lives will make employees more motivated, more loyal to the organization, more productive and more satisfied with their work. This logic is supported by research conducted by Blau and Boal (1987) which concluded that high work involvement would increase organizational commitment. The results of the study mean that organizational commitment held by employees is influenced by work involvement.

Hypothesis 3 which states that organizational learning has a positive effect on organizational commitment is also evident in this study. The efforts of various learning practices carried out by the organization not only can improve the ability of employees, but also can increase the desire of employees to showcase the efforts of employees who are better at completing their work. When an employee can achieve organizational goals through his best efforts, he is confident that there will be congruence between his goals and objectives. It can in creakanse employee commitment.

Hypothesis 4 which states that organizational commitment has a positive effect on attitudes toward change is also evident in this study. With the logic of employees who have high commitment will be more in line with the goals and values of the organization and more comfortable to accept changes in logic. This is supported by research conducted by Lau and Woodman (1995) which prove that organizational commitment has a direct and significant effect on the dimensions of change. The results of the study are consistent with the proposed hypothesis. The results of this study also support the research conducted by Yousef (2000) which concluded that affective commitment directly and positively influences employee attitudes toward change. The research result means that an employee attitude towards change is influenced by organizational commitment which is owned by the employee.

4. CONCLUSION

This study found that through organizational commitment, the indirect influence of organizational communication, work involvement and organizational learning on attitudes toward change is significant and positive, or in other words through mediating organizational commitment, a significant and positive influence between organizational communication, work involvement and learning organizational attitude towards positive attitudes toward change will emerge. Based on the critical findings of the study, to increase the positive attitude towards change, it is suggested to the leaders of Regional Government Agencies to continuously improve communication, work involvement and organizational learning that support efforts to increase employee commitment in their organizations.

Implementation of the concept of work involved can be done through efforts to actively involve employees in the process of setting goals, decision making, and work activities. This can encourage employees to actively develop themselves so that the organizational commitment of employees to the organization is well maintained. Then the implementation of the concept of organizational communication can be done through increasing the pattern of communication of superiors to subordinates who have been established by developing sufficient communication. Organizational communication supports personal development and employee performance both emotionally and intellectually in an atmosphere of openness and concern for employees so that employees feel understood.

Indicators of trust in direct superiors are indicators of the highest loading factors in forming organizational communication. It is therefore recommended that the leaders of Local Government Agencies develop appropriate and fair policies for several reasons. First, it can reduce conflict among employees. Second, it can eliminate prejudice bias towards each other. Third, it takes time to study the emotional aspirations of employees and how they relate to collaborative work. Fourth, choose people suitable for roles in teams that have good professional abilities and emotional intelligence. Fifth, it is important to reward employees who excel and cleanse the organization of negative influences. Seventh, it should be compiled core values and standards of behaviour that can be accepted by each other, create an atmosphere of mutual concern and motivate creativity. Eight, it can support for developing heartfelt mentality and service in employee relations with each other. Then indicators of feeling centred/ engaged in work are indicators with the highest loading factors in shaping work engagement. Therefore it is recommended that the leaders of Regional Government Agencies continue to create a work environment that supports employee synergy and participation.

REFERENCES

- Allen, M. W., 1992. Communication And Organizational Commitment: Perceived Organizational Support As A Mediating Factor. *Communication Quarterly* ,40 , 357–367
- Aranya, N. and Jacobson, D. 1975. An Empirical Study of Theories of Organizational and Occupational Commitment. *The Journal of Social Psychology*, 97 (1), 1, 15-22.
- Begley, T.M. and Czakka, J.M, 1993. Panel Analysis of The Moderating Effects of Commitment on Job Satisfaction, Intent to Quit, and Health Following Organizational Change. *Journal of Applied Psychology*, 522-6.
- Benkhoff, B, 1997. Disentangling Organizational Commitment: the Dangers of the OCQ for Research and Policy. *Personnel Review*, b, 26(1/2), 114-31.
- Bhatnagar, J., 2007. Predictors Of Organizational Commitment In India: Strategic Roles, Organizational Learning Capability And Psychological Empowerment. *The International Journal Of Human Resource Management*, 18(10), 1782-1811.
- Blau G.J., and Boal, K.B., 1987. Conceptualizing How Job Involvement And Organizational Commitment Affect Turnover And Absenteeism, *Academy Of Management review*, 12, 288-300
- Chen, J.C., Silverthorne, C., and Hung, J.Y., 2006. Organization Communication, Job Stress, Organizational Commitment, and Job Performance of Accounting Professionals in Taiwan and America, *Leadership and Organization Development Journal* , Vol. 27, No. 4, pp. 242 – 249
- Conner, Daryl. 1992. *Managing at the Speed of Change: How Resilient Managers Succeed and Prosper Where Others Fail*, Villard Books, New York
- Cooper, Donald R., and C. William Emory. 1999. *Metode Penelitian Bisnis*. Jilid 1 Edisi kelima Penerbit Erlangga Jakarta.
- Downs, C.W., Clappitt, P., and Pfeiffer, A., 1988. Communication And Organizational Outcomes. In G. Goldhaber and G. Barnett (Eds.), *Handbook of organizational communication* (pp. 171-211). Norwood,
- Ghozali, Imam, 2006. *Aplikasi Analisis Multivariate dengan SPSS*, Cetakan Keempat, Badan Penerbit Universitas Diponegoro, Semarang.
- Guest, D., 1987. Human Resource Management And Industrial Relations. *Journal of Management Studies* 24 : 5
- Iverson, R.D., 1996. Employee Acceptance Of Organizational Change: The Role Of Organizational commitment, *The International Journal of Human Resource Management*, Vol. 7 No. 1, pp. 122-49
- Kanugo, 1979, Measurement Of Job And Work Involvement, *Journal Of Applied Psychology*, 67, Pp 341-349
- Ketchand, Alice A. and Jerry R. Strawser. 1998. The Existence of Multiple Measures of Organizational Commitment and Experience- Related Difference in a Public Accounting Setting. *Behavioral Research in Accounting*. Vol. 10. pp: 109 – 137
- Knoop, Robert. 1995. Relationships Among Job Involvement, Job Satisfaction and Organizational Commitment for Nurse. *The Journal of Psychology* 129(6). Pp: 643-649

- Meyer, J.P., Natalie J. Allen, Catherine A. Smith (1993), Commitment To Roganization And Occupation: Extensions And Test Of Three Component Conceptualization, *Journal Of Applied Psychology*, Vol 78 No. 4, 538-351
- Meyer, J.P., Stanley D.J., Herscovitch, L., Topolnytsky L, 2002. Affective, Continuance and Normative Commitment to The Organization: A Meta- Analysis of Antecedents, Correlates and Consequences, *Journal Of Vocational Behavior*
- Mowday, R. T., Steers, R. M., and Porter, L. W. (1979). The Measurement Of Organizational Commitment. *Journal of Vocational Behavior*, 14, 224-247.
- Nadler, A., 1987. Determinants Of Help Seeking Behaviour: The Effects Of Helper's Similarity, Taskcentrality And Recipient's Self Esteem. *European Journal of Social Psychology*, 17,57-67
- Paul, A.K., and Anantharaman, R.N., 2004. Influence of HRM practices on organizational commitment: A study among software professionals in India. *Human Resource Development Quarterly*, 15 (1), 77-88
- Rizzo, J.R., House, R.J., and Lirtzman, S.I., 1970. Role conflict and ambiguity in complex organizations. *Administrative Science Quarterly*, 15(2): 150-163.
- Schuler, Randall S. and Susan E. Jackson.1997. *Manajemen Sumber Daya Manusia Menghadapi Abad Ke-21*. Edisi Keenam. Jilid 1. Penerbit Erlangga. Jakarta
- Scholl, R. W. (1981). Differentiating Organizational Commitment From Expectancy As A Motivating Force. *Academy of Management Review*, 6, 589-599
- Yousef, Darwish. A (2000), Organizational Commitment As A Mediator Of The Relationship Between Islamic Work Ethic And Attitudes Toward Organizational Change, *Human Relations, Journal Of Applied Psychology*, Vol 52 (4) 513-537

HARMONIZATION OF THE FOREIGN TRADE POLICY: EU & SERBIA

Assist. Prof. Dr. Mihailo Ćurčić, Research Associate

University of Defense, Military Academy, Social Sciences Department, Belgrade, Serbia

ORCID ID: 0000-0001-7674-0310

ABSTRACT

The concept of liberal foreign trade policy represents absolute freedom in competition, type and volume of exports, but also freedom in dictating the price framework. As this concept enables freedom of functioning in the international and domestic market, in this way it encourages potential exporters to reach the required level of competitiveness, where the actions of the state are mostly excluded. On the way to EU membership, the Republic of Serbia is implementing the necessary reforms, including the adaptation of foreign trade policy as an important segment in the creation of gross domestic product. This paper presents the results of this process so far, with the aim of highlighting the positive results, as a model that would serve developing countries.

Keywords: foreign trade policy, harmonization, EU, Serbia.

INTRODUCTION

In practice, the concept of liberal foreign trade policy does not exist, given that, no matter how liberal the policy, there will always be the interest of the state, and thus the desire for intervention, to establish a macroeconomic balance, both in the national economy and in the region. When it comes to this type of policy, it can be said that a subtype of moderate liberal foreign trade policy is present in the application, which has a wide application in modern organized developing countries.

In such systems, a large number of foreign trade economic entities operate, which acquire the right to engage in foreign trade by fulfilling certain legal conditions. The state does not directly influence the selection of participants or the volume and category of imports, but can indirectly, through certain support instruments, provide more favorable conditions for the export or import of products of a particular sector, which is of strategic interest. (Kozomara, 2012).

For example, trade liberalization in the European Union also seeks to remove non-tariff barriers to trade, which include protectionist measures to help domestic producers, subsidies, technical barriers to trade or strict sanitary requirements. Lower non-tariff barriers can facilitate cross-border trade in services, which play a major role in overall EU trade. However, data collection and measurement issues complicate efforts to support trade in services. On the other hand, trade defense instruments enable the EU to react, for example, to dumping or subsidies incompatible with the WTO in partner trading countries and form the protective front of EU trade policy. (Titievskaja, 2019)

LITERATURE PREVIEW

Ever since the establishment of the European Economic Community (hereinafter: the EEC), it has been envisaged that the EEC member states pursue a common trade policy. During the four decades of the European Community's existence, a comprehensive legal basis has been created and an institutional mechanism for conducting a unified foreign trade policy has been created. However, its still incomplete unity is weakening the position of the EU and its companies in the global market. (Bjelić, 2003)

Since the introduction of the EEC in international economic flows, the cooperation of the member countries of this organization has been delimited in relation to trade with countries that do not have the status of members (the so-called third countries) (Renard, 2018). For these reasons, trade between Member States is characterized as internal trade, while trade exclusively for third countries is characterized as foreign trade. Later, such a terminological concept was adopted in the case of the European Union.

Given that each regional economic organization (or alliance, union) has its own common foreign trade policies, which are harmonized to a predetermined extent, countries within these alliances can trade with each other without specific barriers. Similarly, the EU requires a certain level of harmonization of foreign trade policies of non-member countries (Curzi et al., 2018), in order to establish any kind of bilateral trade. It often happens that the mentioned harmonization encompasses different spectrums of integration, which go beyond the framework of foreign trade, where, above all, we mean politics and the economy as a whole.

The EU's Common Commercial Policy, or Trade Policy (Kube, Pedreschi, 2018) has gradually evolved over the years to cover a range of trade areas under the jurisdiction of the European Union. The Treaty of Rome provided for a common market, as well as a customs union, whose activities were focused on trade in goods. Subsequent agreements extended the effect of this policy to services and commercial aspects of intellectual property rights. Trade policy falls within the exclusive competence of the EU, which means that it manages trade policy and trade negotiations on behalf of the Member States. The determination of competences is crucial for the procedures necessary for concluding trade agreements, because the areas that fall under the common competence, they need to be ratified by both the EU and the member states.

Although it is generally accepted that trade liberalization leads to economic growth, the impact on jobs varies both between and within countries. According to the European Commission, free trade in 2018, encouraged the development of 36 million export transactions. (Carbone, 2019) It can also lead to greater inequality, especially by widening the gap between skilled and unskilled workers or by causing the unequal relationship between developed and developing countries to solidify. Trade liberalization in its elementary form involves the elimination of customs duties. Customs duties can be reduced according to WTO agreements, with the most-interest tariff being the highest possible tariff that WTO members

can charge each other. Conversely, preferential customs duties may be agreed under trade agreements or customs union arrangements. Rules of origin have been developed to determine the origin (or "economic nationality") of a product. (Titievskaia, 2019)

Rapać and Dabić (2013) state that the most important step in the process of Serbia's accession to the European Union was certainly the signing of the Stabilization and Association Agreement. This step of Serbia towards the EU, shaped the Serbian foreign trade policy in relation to this community and the liberalized foreign trade regime. EU foreign trade policy focuses on fostering fair and free trade, improving market access and supporting a rules-based multilateral trading system. To achieve these goals, the EU uses a range of legislative tools and negotiates trade agreements with trading partners. Specifically, over the last decades, the EU has aimed to expand open and free trade based on the mandates of the Member States.

EU trade agreements are adopted by a lengthy procedure, which includes various stages, such as preparation, mandate for opening talks, negotiations, textual agreement, initialing, signing, provisional application and, finally, entry into force. It also offers different types of trade relations, ranging from deep integration on both the regulatory and trade fronts, to simple partnership and cooperation agreements, which do not offer preferential treatment (Ryngaert, 2018). Trade agreements are enforceable through a special dispute settlement mechanism that allows the parties to adopt economic remedies in the event of non-compliance. However, certain provisions of trade agreements, such as trade and sustainable development clauses, have a different mechanism for resolving disagreements that includes government consultations and recommendations issued by a panel of experts. Efforts to make trade policy "greener" (Wen & Li, 2019) include chapters on trade and sustainable development, but also provisions that support the sustainable use of natural resources, biodiversity, forestry and fisheries. Trade agreements also include human rights clauses aimed at encouraging trading partners to improve internal governance.

According to the data of the EU Delegation to the Republic of Serbia, Serbia enjoys significant benefits through trade and economic integration with the EU. EU member states are the most important foreign trade partners of Serbia, which is confirmed by the data that as much as 67% of Serbia's total exports are intended for this market, that is, that 60% of total imports are realized from the EU. Exports of domestic goods to the territory of the EU have increased from 3.2 billion to 10.9 billion euros in the last ten years. In addition, the data indicate a better position of Serbia when it comes to the coverage of imports by exports, where the percentage increased by a slight 32% (from 50% to 82% in the previous ten years). Germany and Italy are traditionally the most important foreign trade partners of the Republic of Serbia (24% of total exports, and 22% of total imports of goods in 2018), however, in recent years, Hungary and Romania stand out as important export destinations in the region.

METHODOLOGY AND DATA

In this part, an analysis of the impact of the degree of integration of Serbia into the foreign trade policy of the European Union, as the cause of the growth of Serbia's exports to developing countries, was conducted. The trend of integration into the foreign trade policy of the European Union is taken as the trend of the Trade Openness Index (Gozgor, 2017) of the Republic of Serbia in a time series of 10 years.

The methodology for calculating this index is as follows:

$$TOI = \frac{X + M}{GDP} * 100$$

TOI – Trade Openness Index

X – Export

M – Import

GDP – Gross Domestic Product in Europe

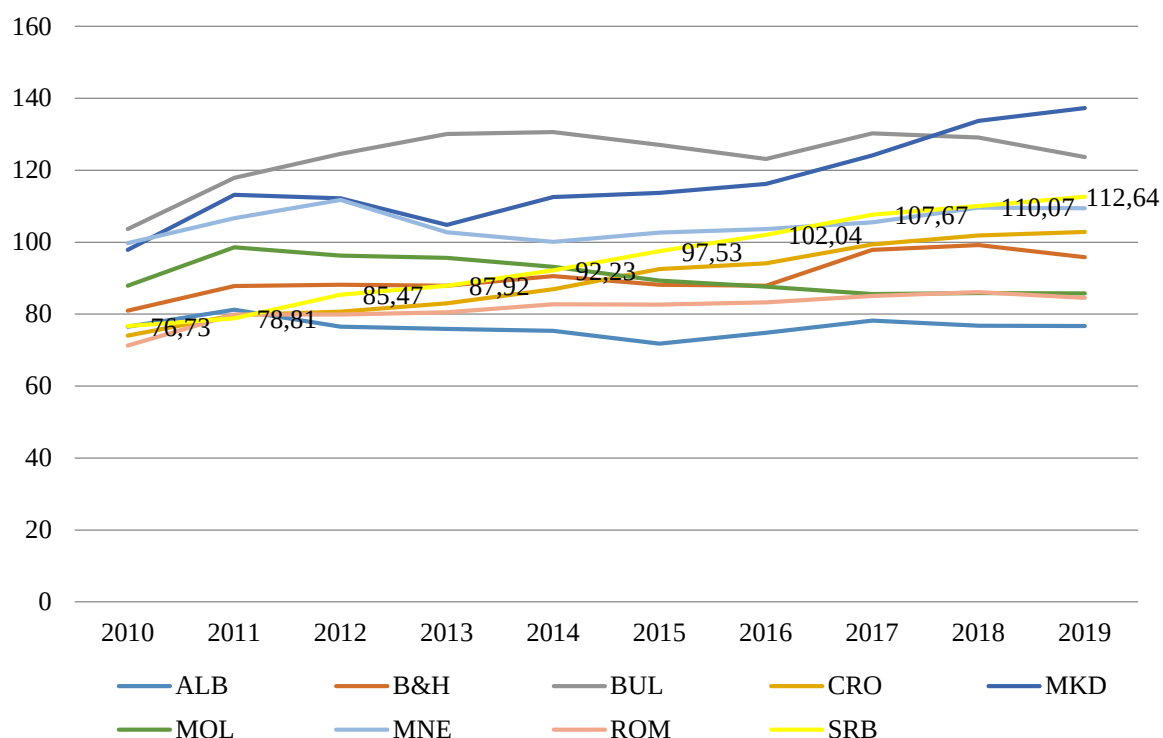
Based on the movement of this index, the real state of integration of Serbian foreign trade into the international trade system of the European Union can be monitored, which is shown in Table 1. Due to all the above, as one of the relevant indicators, the index of foreign trade openness represents Variable 1.

Table 1. Movement of the foreign trade openness index

	2010	2011	2012	2013	2014	2015	2016	2017	2018	2019
Albania	76.54	81.22	76.51	75.87	75.41	71.80	74.81	78.19	76.80	76.73
Bosnia & Herz.	80.97	87.84	88.15	87.93	90.61	88.20	87.95	97.87	99.22	95.88
Bulgaria	103.71	117.87	124.54	130.12	130.63	127.03	123.19	130.27	129.13	123.72
Croatia	74.04	79.73	80.75	83.02	86.98	92.54	94.15	99.44	101.85	102.85
N.Macedonia	97.88	113.19	112.21	104.86	112.54	113.70	116.19	124.14	133.73	137.28
Moldavia	87.94	98.62	96.31	95.69	93.16	89.33	87.64	85.64	85.87	85.77
Montenegro	99.78	106.66	111.77	102.77	100.13	102.69	103.67	105.55	109.61	109.45
Romania	71.24	79.87	79.94	80.52	82.77	82.66	83.30	85.06	86.17	84.56
Serbia	76.73	78.81	85.47	87.92	92.23	97.53	102.04	107.67	110.07	112.64

Source: World Bank

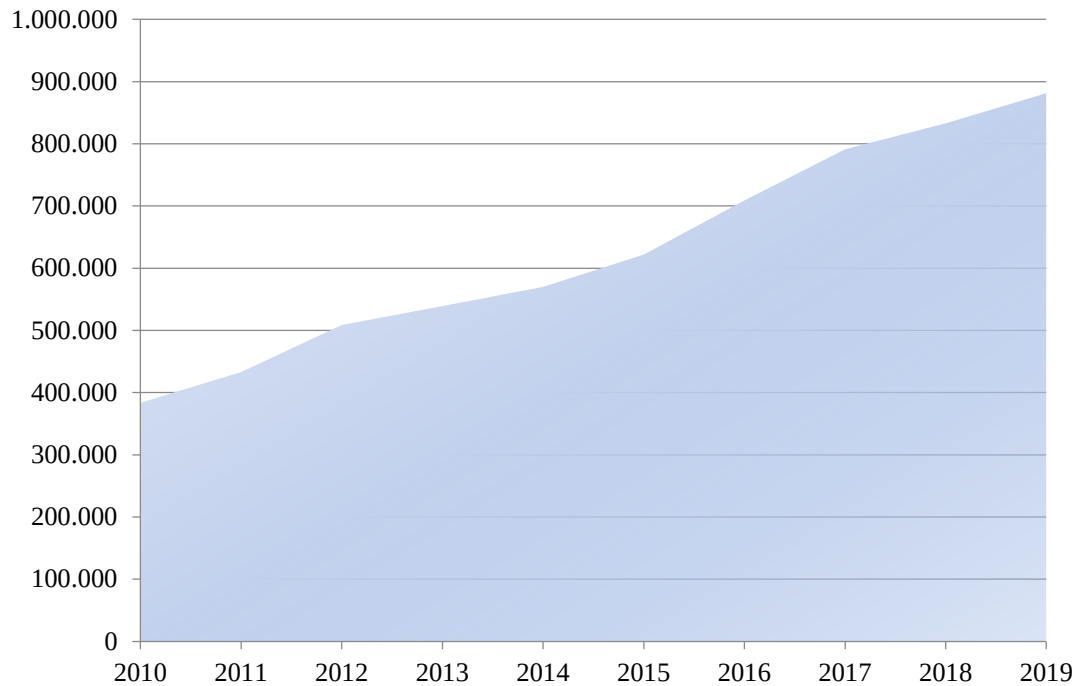
In the table shown, the data of the countries that are members of the Central European Free Trade Agreement (CEFTA), which was signed in 2006 and entered into force in 2007, are considered. Although some countries, shown in the table, became members of the EU (Bulgaria and Romania in 2007, and Croatia in 2013), and therefore withdrew from this agreement, their data were also taken, in order to make an analysis of the continuity in the movement of the predefined TOI parameter.



Graph 1. Analysis of TOI trend

Source: World Bank

Based on the above, we can establish a stable trend of steady growth of TOI, which is definitely a good indicator of integration into the concept of EU free trade. In the previous ten years, Serbia has recorded an increase in TOI at an average rate of 3.59 on an annual level, unlike other countries that are signatories to the CEFTA agreement, where most of them have noticeable oscillations in foreign trade. From the beginning of the observed period, almost all countries from the sample had better results than Serbia. However, in 2014, and later in 2017, there were noticeable shifts in foreign trade, which can be explained by government incentives to increase trade in goods and services at the international level. In 2019, in relation to Serbia, Northern Macedonia and Bulgaria were better positioned.



Graph 2. Exports to developing countries (million RSD)

Source: Statistical Yearbook (2013-2019) of the Republic Statistical Office of the Republic of Serbia

On the other hand, the value of exports of the Republic of Serbia to developing countries, in the previous period, will be taken as Variable 2 in the analysis (Graph 2). It is an indisputable fact that Serbia is on the path to harmonization of foreign trade with the EU, and all with the aim of creating a stable macroeconomic environment and gaining the status of an EU member, it is recording higher foreign trade turnover. As an indicator of the use of potential in the current socio-economic and geopolitical situation in the region and the world, exports to developing countries are treated as an important factor on the way to achieving macroeconomic goals, and of course, sustainable economic growth and development.

RESULTS AND DISUCSSION

The correlation in which the parameters are defined was analyzed with the help of Pearson's correlation, as well as in the case of proving a general hypothesis.

Empirical research was conducted using the Pearson Correlation method. The simple linear correlation coefficient is explained as the covariance defined with the help of units of standard deviations of certain variables that are the subject of analysis. (Pamučar, 2017) Mathematically expressed as the coefficient of covariance and products of standard deviations:

$$r_{xy} = \frac{C_{xy}}{SD_x * SD_y}$$

where the products of standard deviations are obtained by applying equations

$$SD_x = \sqrt{\frac{\sum x^2}{n} - x^{-2}}, \quad SD_y = \sqrt{\frac{\sum y^2}{n} - y^{-2}}$$

This coefficient indicates the degree of dependence between the variables, and determines the extent of sample dispersion around the regression line. The correlation coefficient has a value that ranges in the interval [-1, 1].

If the variables are not related, the dispersion around the regression line is large. As the linear relationship increases, the dispersion decreases. If there is absolute agreement between the two variables, all data lie on the regression line.

For the purpose of this research, the values of *Trade Openness Index* were taken (Variable 1), on the one hand, i.e. the *export's values of the Republic of Serbia*, on the other hand (Variable 2).

Table 2. Research Results

		TOI	Export
TOI	Pearson Correlation	1	.994**
	Sig. (2-tailed)		0.000
	N	10	10
Export	Pearson Correlation	.994**	1
	Sig. (2-tailed)	0.000	
	N	10	10

****.** Correlation is significant at the 0.01 level (2-tailed).

Based on the data presented in this table, we can conclude that the obtained correlation coefficient is statistically significant. Using the Chaddock scale (Bacho et al., 2019; Telizhenko et al., 2019) in the period of the previous 10 years (N = 10), we conclude that the value of realized exports to developing countries has a positive effect on the movement, ie. growth of TOI in the same period. That is, the value of the foreign trade openness index has a positive effect on the growth of exports to developing countries, which actually confirms the first elaborating hypothesis of this paper. The value of the correlation coefficient of these two parameters (0.994) is classified into a functional positive correlation ($0.99 < r < 1$), with a pronounced statistical significance of 0.000 (significance threshold is 0.01).

Similar to this analysis, Professors Dragutinović-Mitrović and Bjelić (2015) examined the effects of different trade regimes on bilateral trade of the Western Balkans and Central European countries in the EU accession process from 2001 to 2010. The analysis supported the hypothesis that, with significant effects of standard gravitational model, and variations of the trade regime in the EU, the accession process encourages bilateral trade of the observed countries. Analyzing the final phase of the countries of Central European economies on their path to EU membership, they concluded that the completion of trade integration in the EU

leads to a further increase in their bilateral exports to the EU. This trend is observed both in their trade with the EU-15 and in their intra-regional trade.

CONCLUSION

The results for the Western Balkan countries indicated that trade integration with the EU has a positive effect on their trade. However, it is also shown that greater positive effects on trade were achieved during the first phases of their EU integration, when asymmetric trade preferences were applied, than in the later phases when the Stabilization and Association Agreement entered into force by introducing symmetry, which did not create significant influence. As less competitive partners, the countries of the Western Balkans enjoyed asymmetric trade benefits unilaterally granted by the EU, and the Agreement did not bring any new benefits in their trade with the EU.

REFERENCES

Annual Report (2019) World Trade Organization

Bacho, R., Pukala, R., Hlibko, S., Vnukova, N. & Pola, P. (2019). Information Management: the Key Driver of the Economic System's Development. *Marketing and Management Innovations*, 3, pp. 297-307

Bjelić, P. (2003). European Union foreign trade policy model. *Economic Annals*, 156, p. 131-147

Carbone, M. (2019). Purposefully triggering unintended consequences: The European Commission and the uncertain future of the EU-ACP partnership. *The International Spectator*, 54(1), 45-59

Curzi, D., Luarasi, M., Raimondi, V., & Olper, A. (2018). The (lack of) international harmonization of EU standards: import and export effects in developed versus developing countries. *Applied Economics Letters*, 25(21), 1552-1556

Dragutinović-Mitrović, R. & Bjelić, P. (2015). Trade regimes and bilateral trade in EU enlargement process: Focus on the Western Balkans. *Acta Oeconomica*, 65(2), pp. 249-270

Gozgor, G. (2017). Does trade matter for carbon emissions in OECD countries? Evidence from a new trade openness measure. *Environmental Science and Pollution Research*, 24(36), 27813-27821

Kozomara, J. (2012). *Foreign trade commodity transactions*. Belgrade: Faculty of Economics and Institute for International Politics and Economy

Kube, V., & Pedreschi, L. (2018). The social dimension of the common commercial policy. In *The EU Social Market Economy and the Law* (pp. 272-292). Routledge

Pamučar, D. (2017). Comparison of ranks of alternatives in the process of multicriteria decision making. *AGG + Journal of Architecture, Civil Engineering, Geodesy and Related Scientific Areas*, 5 (1), p. 16-25

- Rapaic, S., Dabic, D. (2013). Foreign trade aspect of the accession of the Republic of Serbia to the EU. *International Problems*, 65, p. 341-364
- Renard, T. (2018). EU cyber partnerships: assessing the EU strategic partnerships with third countries in the cyber domain. *European Politics and Society*, 19(3), 321-337
- Ryngaert, C. (2018). EU trade agreements and human rights: From extraterritorial to territorial obligations. *International Community Law Review*, 20(3-4), 374-393
- Telizhenko, O., Pavlenko, O., Martynets, V. & Rybalchenko, S. (2019). Modeling the Influence of Cluster Components on the Economic Development of a Territory. *TEM Journal*, 8(3), pp. 900-907
- Titievskaia, J. (2019). *EU Trade Policy*. European Parliamentary Research Service
- Wen, J., & Li, Y. (2019). Profit distribution model of green building supply chain with fairness preferences and cap-and-trade policy. In *IOP Conference Series: Earth and Environmental Science* (Vol. 237, No. 5, p. 052043). IOP Publishing

**ORGANIZATION OF PREVENTIVE HEALTHCARE FOR WOMEN VICTIMS OF
DOMESTIC VIOLENCE DURING THE COVID-19 PANDEMIC IN ORDER TO
PREVENT FEMICIDE AS A GENDER-BASED MURDER**

PhD Vida VILIĆ

ORCID ID: 0000-0003-1413-4037

Research Associate, Clinic of Dentistry Niš, Serbia

ABSTRACT

Domestic violence is, among other, important social problem, especially in the time of pandemic and lockdown, on one side, and overcrowding in health system, on the other side. The objective of the paper is to elaborate the situation in healthcare institutions since the beginning of the covid-19 pandemic when it comes to preventive action and care for women victims of domestic violence, as well as to give some suggestions on how to ensure healthcare during the pandemic and thus avoid possible serious consequences for their lives and health. It is necessary to introduce and to use appropriate preventive measures in order to avoid a fatal outcome due to injury in cases of domestic violence, as well as promotion of education and sensitization of healthcare workers who work with this target group of patients.

Experiences gained in previous epidemics have clearly shown that the health crisis always leads to a recession in gender equality, leaving women victims of domestic violence without resources, including healthcare. Due to the massive care for patients infected with coronavirus, as well as due to lockdown, women were not able to receive timely and adequate health care. Serbian media reported on drastic number of cases of violence and femicide since the beginning of the pandemic. It is necessary to organize healthcare teams to be trained and ready to provide necessary assistance to these women even in cases of healthcare system overcrowding, preventing further injuries due to recurrence of violence and the occurrence of death as a consequence, ie. femicide.

The result that we all want to achieve is to provide timely healthcare in cases of injury to women victims of domestic violence during the pandemic, in order to prevent fatal outcome.

Keywords: healthcare system, domestic violence, pandemic, femicide

MENTAL PROGRAMMS AND CROSS-CULTURAL EDUCATION

Associate Prof. Dr. Maria Butucea

Teacher Training Department, Technical University of Civil Engineering, Tacul Tei B-dv,
No.122-124,

Bucharest, Romania

ORCID ID: 0000-0003-2054-8631

ABSTRACT

The discourse regarding mental programs can have an impact on education because it represents the deep level of culture. Nowadays, we are confronted much with different cultural backgrounds of students in cross-cultural classes, schools or universities. All official discourses are focused only on surface level as declarative discourse regarding what we shall do and there are less explanations why or what for. But always there are misunderstandings. We try in this approach to offer teachers some ideas that can improve their knowledge regarding their students, mental programs as cultural backgrounds (here Chinese) and forgoing creating and teaching in an integrated vision. Traditional Chinese mind is still working in modern and contemporary time even official discourse tries to erase differences to the western mind and assume similarities. How is it possible to understand Chinese exponents without learning about their deep philosophical assumptions that work as mental programs? It seems to be settled by scholars that human behavior and actions have deep motivations and intentions. Are anthropological studies relevant for us? Should we learn about different countries, culture? Globalization in schools means communication and much valorization. How could we make it possible? First of all, we could do it by enriching our discourse with new concepts and new understandings. Different sciences claim and use different concepts, but we think for educational sciences it is much better to use “mental program”. We have studied some that can explain Chinese behavior and attitude that is good to be known and reflect on.

Keywords: mental program, education, culture, Chinese mind, globalization.

1. INTRODUCTION

The last century abounds in ideas and mind theories. Conscious and unconscious as part of the mind are concepts already well known since Freud. But, Carl Jung (Jung, 1958) is especially important for us, because he proposed the notion of collective unconsciousness as archetypes. In different areas of social research there are used different concepts. By example, in philosophy of sciences since Th. Kuhn uses the concepts like “paradigm” and “assumptions” (philosophical values) as tacit knowledge which are manifesting in examples along which scientists use them in different historical epochs. In history scientists prefer the concept of “myth” and use the notion of imaginary mind product. Recently, cognitive psychology has used notions like mental scheme and “mental program” or in cultural anthropology according to Hofstede (1996) is “soft-ware of the mind”. Also we can recall that the notion being used in sociology as stereotypes. All these concepts have a lot of similarities. It might be a more useful “mental program” instead of another concept to reflect the cultural background for individuals or groups of students. In order to improve our image regarding the student’s mind and our cross-cultural education we must give a chance no matter the place of school or system of education should be. Meanwhile in this approach we will exemplify by a case-study on Chinese mind.

2. SOME BOUNDARIES AND SIMILARITIES OF CONCEPTS

It doesn't matter which concept we've used before, all seems to have something in common; the distinction between rational and irrational. Irrational is not absurd, but more deeply, hidden, unraveled, difficult to catch it in a logical declarative discourse. Rational is what the community considers being so. If romantics claim the new areas especially in arts, modernism produces rational enlightenment, postmodernism used to be more focused on the role of cognitive supposition in the discourse about development of science. Of course, philosophy of science and history of science once make a goal of itself to find and reveal such tacit knowledge and assumption of scientists. (Kuhn, 1976; Blaga, 1987)

Sciences of education haven't such great goals, because being embedded in a social system in a specific period of time, the system of education is regarded as a paradigm. But what about the integration of individuals who are coming from other cultures, people who must be educated? They have been lived for sure in another paradigm (as cultural background and exemplarities). Jung introduced the notion of "archetype" as an indefinite number of motifs or patterns of an archaic character, in principle identical with the root ideas of mythology and similar thought-forms.

Mircea Eliade said: I use the term "archetype" just as Eugenio d'Ors does, as a synonym for "exemplary model" or paradigm. According to Eliade, the roots of symbolic thinking should be searched and found before language and rational discourse - the knowledge as we conceived. "The symbol reveals certain aspects of reality — the deepest aspects — which defy any other means of knowledge. [...] Images, symbols, and myths respond to a need and fulfill a function, that of bringing to light the most hidden modalities of being." (Eliade, 1959, p. 537) In such a case, he presumes there is thinking before language as hidden modalities of being. It means the unconscious should be considerate more than a psychological issue.

We think that the Eliade's concept is a working notion, as a pattern, which can be adapted in different contexts. In such a view is conceived the notion of myth, which, actually, Eliade prefers and it is rooted in a deeper level. In Jung's perspective archetypes are a structure as at Plato and that meaning we can find also in Levi-Strauss' structuralism. From Eliade's point of view, we could add the dynamical perspective. In the same way all adepts of imaginary history accept the irrational in writing history using myths in that perspective. Romanian historian Lucian Boia, citing some contemporary historians whose works were focused in another kind of practice, historiography - called the history of imaginary, wrote: "We simply guess that human beings are programmed to think and dream in a defined way. That very schema of mind which are settled we can call archetypes. There is about a pattern of organization where the content can change but the boundaries remain". (Boia, 2000, p.15)

As we could see the notion is enriched since Plato's eidos. Nowadays, the field of research and discovery is plenty of concepts related to computer science and cognitive psychology. Mental programs are used as metaphors to describe the mental constant and also capture variation for both individual and social perspective. Education can use this entire concept to describe and create an accurate image of the subject we should study. It can be the educational system, teachers or students.

If Chinese mind follows the Chinese imaginary history as archetypes or myth is out of doubt. It remains to find and stress which are them and how they work today. And more what kind of behavior produces what kind of citizen behavior? Mental programs as synchronic and diachronic concepts could be used to describe and explain how the contemporary mind is sculptured in order to create a possible psychological profile for a possible migrant (teacher or student). My approach is based on studies on Chinese history and Chinese philosophy and on westerner perspective as well. It follows our personal observations, books and articles we

wrote focused on Chinese culture and education (Butucea, 2014). In our opinion values and assumptions are not entirely revealed by official educational documents in present days in China. So, we need to discover deeper levels in order to understand their mind and behavior. There are also some point stressed in an article by Chinese authors which are referring to the level of research and how the young researchers have a double socialization consequences in social interaction life when they follow westerner philosophy and practice.,, (...) the internationalization of the social sciences [...] affect the case of students from the People's Republic of China who are trained in social sciences in France and return to pursue their career in higher education and research in China. [...] epistemological differences between the two academic worlds may give rise to any professional difficulties in this many-sided scientific socialization.”(Wang, Guiheux, 2018, para.1)

3. SOME CHINESE MENTAL PROGRAMS

There are some beliefs and ideas which can sculpt the Chinese mind and brain and make Chinese people different. First, we can mention the geographical place as a key point (Fung Yu Lan, 2015) which might be a source. The second is perception regarding time and their history. Mental programs, that can rule the mind, are not only ideas, but also some site-spots, games or mythical animals. All of them can play the roles of symbols as a paradigmatic style of thinking and model for any behaviors, for learning or research. We can study imaginary stories, idioms, and pictures. Paradigms as we know are not true or false in a scientific meaning. Paradigms as fundamental beliefs, popular metaphysics just could orient behaviors and action as exemplarities related always from the successful past times. As symbols they talk nowadays to the youngster mind as a model, algorithms and problem solution even in different circumstances far from initial culture. We try here to stress some of them and see the connection with contemporary actions, events, facts many related to education. The deep level of mind and behavior can differ from the surface level of an agent's behavior and also regarding education. We've selected and briefly presented some of them as they are mentioned in historical sources and popular philosophy, commonsense and personal observation of everyday life. Might be during our intercommunication with representatives of Chinese culture it is better to take it in consideration in order to improve schooling.

3.1. Circle – The vector of change

The first deepest mental program is about circularity, the game of Yin and Yang as a vector of transformation, change, evolution and reorientation. Its roots are in Daoism. It is known for centuries and works in historiography and cognitive – epistemic everyday life as a model. Some ideas are philosophical points of view, some are out-comes of social history and many are mythological or linguistic. In our opinion, from one part their past philosophical ideas justify beliefs, opinion, acts, and events. From the other part, present actions confirm the validity of the historic, old ideas. The past is the source of right and wrong and justify everything and the present action can confirm the past. So, even if the image of truth is elaborated in a circle, the history must be explained and use the philosophical point of view and the last ones must be provided as testimony of the history. We can notice that the circle actually is turning without any proof. Circularity is one paradigmatic belief as a philosophical image. If the appeal to it doesn't work, we can settle a new circle with a new element but actually the same as pattern. Historical time is circular as an image pattern and the explanation must be a puzzle in which every piece must fit together (ad-hoc), if not, continuity is kept by returning to the past as ideal (see Chinese history). The puzzle only has two pieces, Yin and Yang; these two concepts which can describe the movement. In such a point of view, that defies any logic of us (vicious circle of explanation), archetypes explain

progress, continuity or any change, switch never totally new. If they failed, they justify it by the end of rise; if they are successful it works for a new start needed. Sometimes counterparts coexist like in contemporary political slogan “one country, two regimes”.

3.1.1. Educational and cognitive remarks

Children’ stories are used to mark every step they do. Story and myths are full of meanings to prove the wise/mistakes of ancestors and can explain even contemporary good or bad behavior following their example. Idioms are used in everyday life and politicians quote Lao Zi or other philosophers and historians when they speak about state affairs.

Chinese mind is settled to connectivity and absorption of knowledge. Chinese mind should internalize the meaning before verbalizing it. Sometimes it is not verbalized at all, but it is shown by behavior. The person is always a potential good and also could be bad. Every child should be modest and do everything that he/she is doing, even having a good performance, he/ she always says: “I am learning. I am not yet able to speak English (or something else like playing basketball or piano).

The circular paradigm means everything is round: it is on the way, in the process of doing. Chinese students always reflect how the others received the message they sent. Is like a circle between an individual mind and collective mind. The truth must be in the middle. About leaders who are not in charge anymore (by example Mao) they show respect and say that their time is over (circle is closed). China always “feel”, emotionally when a new king or president is needed, the person is not elected rationally, democratically, in our meaning. Children are educated to show much respect to parents, ancestors, professors, and the president. All people in charge should be capable when they are in their full time or if not, people are waiting for somebody else to replace them. Obedient behavior is adopted by “waiting person” who have great expectations from wise politicians, wise teachers and father, big brother (as a mate, colleague, friend) to solve the problem. Therefore, personal initiative is rare and blamed by others. Education cultivate modesty, feelings, auto-control, appreciation of people in position and produce completion in schools universities, support youngster prepared as new generation to replace as Ying - Yang in the future historic puzzle.

3.2. The Great Wall –The image of secure space and unity

The second archetype as a mental program is The Great Wall, a great achievement of this people and country. There are many other buildings (monumental) and bridges but this one is working as a mental program. Many scholars noticed before that China was built as continental country with huge landscapes, fields, forests and high mountains. Their rivers were paradise, but at the same time a scary place because floods and average water. They appreciate water (Lao Zi) but also are scared by it. So, is much better to stay on land, which is a stable place. The seas and overseas a mysterious, oversee are always related to afterlife from where might come ghosts, monsters. There could be dangerous threats; people from desert or westerner places who can come for trading or also for still or kill Chinese people. Whatever was the reason for Shihuangdi to use such huge human resources to build it becomes a paradigm for all future kings. Common people understand they are protected, aristocracy consider it as a big achievement and settle their position as protectors.

This archetype became a social-moral mental program related to security as psychological need. It is about security in family, group and country. Even if it had no utility or less utility during the time it is playing the great role of symbol and source of contemporary behavior and action.

The image of the Great Wall functions as ideas of closeness and it is settled in historical time as a necessity and an ideal for survival. It seems that borders or diplomacy are not enough to

stop invasions. Related to ideas of closeness is the ideal of unity even before unification and continuing in history even the territory and leaders differ. Nowadays technologies, globalization which should produce openness could not change Chinese mind because this image of protection still works as ethnic identity which was initially cultural unity. In modern time - official language (Putonghua), economic protectionism, nationalism are all coming from this imaginary mind scheme - the program settled by the image of a protective wall around, even now is just a tourist spot sight so far.

3.2.1. Contemporary remarks

Nowadays, China is still closed, even though they claim in the official discourse that they are living in an open world and must have connections. They follow unconsciously as politicians and simple people the same old dream. When they feel whatever treats they close the door. Google after a while was forbidden, foreigners can be dangerous (recent memory regarding colonialism, invasion). When the important summit G7 is located in China, all business offices ought to be closed, communication with the world is interrupted. They afford to lose money (economy) in the name of security, protection. Common people must obey and understand (post-control, route deviation for traffic cars for large zones). The image of the Great Wall has been working in Chinese minds of the Chinese for centuries. It is all about culture, ideas about society governance and protection. Politicians use it successfully. So, this matter is not only related to communist regime. Technologies, globalization, which must produce openness, do not change anything because this mental scheme of protection still works. Unity of territory, Putonghua, economic protectionism, nationalism are all coming from this imaginary mind - the program settled by the deep meaning of the wall around.

3.2.2. Educational consideration

I will stress some elements of non-formal education, social environment. During trips and journeys around China we can observe that in the mountains, on the stones, everywhere is a tourist spot there are words with deep meaning poems or ancient stories. Here is about how non formal education, everyday life can influence children's minds.

Some can say it is political propaganda for the national party but after a deep reflection and based on history it seems to be more. Stone is the symbol of stability and refuge. At the entrance of the Great Wall is written. "There is not a Chinese who is not climbing the Great Wall", (words of Mao Zedong, but for sure he had quoted ancestors). The unity and closeness is expressed in everyday life also. For example, we observed taking a taxi from the airport during the Olympics Games (2008), when there was some trouble with Tibet, authorities have forbidden foreigners entrance in and every student and young people were bearing a T-shirt with the emblem "China is one!" They learn in history classes but also in Chinese movies (long serial) how foreigners produce huge damage to China and how people have always suffered. Their history is full of conflicts and chaotic periods of times, of course. But also there are heroes who fight always for people and country. They also learn a lot about the history of other countries, sometimes in many details. They must know about others as well as about Chinese history and literature. They can copy everything and produce their own Chinese version (IT platform) in order to protect themselves not to spy or connect others.

3.3. The dragon - The image of power

The mythological animals (totems) are shaping Chinese mind as an image of movement, change as Absolut Law of nature (philosophical background) and the huge power. In their history, kings are always compared with dragons. The fantastical mythological animal become an image of Power, unseen, untouchable (Dao - 道), but real by his manifestation in nature, social organization, personal (zodiac). Dragon is a totemic animal for Chinese that

orient minds to show others how great could be the culture, the kingdom and also invite them to obey and surrender under such a force even without physical confrontation (Martial Art, Weiqi – Chinese chess) but by power of strategic intelligent plan. The power means to be virtuous and forceful and always be ready to protect common people (implicit message in any contemporary movie, especially Gong Fu movies). The power shows how to be tolerant and protective. That image is repeated in any contemporary historic movies, where the king is, or must be, merciful, wise, impartial, but he also can punish anyone who weren't under the law. Tien xia (天下, people) an ancient concept that reflect a political vision in which the king must serve people. Nowadays, movies are focused to reveal how ordinary people find justice to the king and reveal the corruption of aristocracy (so far, communist ideology is nothing but a new form of the cultura they can found available also in the past) The big dragon or lion/tiger are protecting and making justice. Could have been that real situation in history? Might be yes, might be not. Moral virtues are attached to the top powered personality, anyway.

The image of Dragon makes them think in megalomaniac still and they are building a huge Buddha's statue, huge bridge. That image of potentiality does not make them arrogant, not because they aren't sometimes, because that image is correlated with another one - Confucian point of view – modesty (do not show the feeling, be humble). The great power is inner power, invisible. The force is coming from unity, protection of margins, moral as self-control. And that is exactly like in Martial Arts!

3.3.1. Educational consideration and interpretation

Students prefer to go abroad to study in a famous university in well-known big countries. China is competing only with competitive countries (England, USA and Germany) and asks them for equality or sometimes considering that Chinese (achievements, buildings, and results) are better. Any new discovery or achievement is already discovered in China many centuries before or at least announced in some way (their textbook is full of examples). It is a kind of déjà-vu, epistemologically speaking. Furthermore in the IT realm, everything is adopted and modified according to their culture language producing, again, closeness and impenetrability for foreigners. Even students who are studying English are eager to learn about other cultures; they always turn to their one. It is a more stable and more protective place in the world networks. Mr. Z. Sh., Chinese English teacher in Minnan University, owner of a private school also, uses his money to open a Tea House, a club where he settled a museum for students in order “to learn English but never forget their Chinese roots!” Is this about conservative mind in a globalization era?

The authority is related to power, so they respect authority, as father, teacher, and government. In Chinese minds, authority should never make mistakes; they must protect simple people and students because they are the best. They have good decisions for everybody (communitarian point of view). The student works better in groups and individualistic attitudes are blamed. To be together is the real power and produces success. In business after college, in company people has power again because of their relationship - guanxi (关系, friends who never betray and pay respect each other). So far, the traditional mental program of grandiose and moral dragon is a working as etic meta-program.

3.4. The obsessive idea of Center as life's vector

What does yellow mean for Chinese? The word is deeply grounded in time. At first, the yellow land (fertile soil, the loess) in the northwest, by foreigners. (Butcher, 2016). After the image of land, was named people who were living over there as the yellow population, tribes near the Yellow River which also were carrying loess and have yellow color. Yellow becomes in Chinese mystery, the color of power, used only by kings (not because of gold!).

Furthermore is linked the number five which also represents the power, the center, inner power. The numerical arrangement (as square) is using 5 as center (Granet, 2006). It is the number of King and in Martial Arts and expresses central inner power or, furthermore, in architecture the central pillar of a house. Unification makes China a big country and center of the world. Traders or scholars in ancient times from around borders or from long distances came along here and learned Chinese culture (language, pottery, cloths and rules).

This culture was developed around the central plain according Chinese historiography as Sima Qian (Lun, 2015). The unity was settled not by army, intrusions in other territory (even that was the case sometimes) and the assimilation of others was cultural. Culture of the central plain has a magnetic attraction. Some barbarians become also, culturally speaking, Chinese by acculturation (Westerner scholars, Indian or Japanese monk). Chinese culture irradiates and spreads around to Japan, Korea, and Vietnam. Every Chinese martial art includes the word Wu, power and center, five (number), every monastery said that over there is the center of the world. The name China (center, 中 as character) shows later what they actually were thinking before.

In the globalization time, they always think they must prove they are the best, even the lowest situation. The center is here – in the mind, the place, the business, the capital, the economy. The center, the dragon and the wall work together and shape the Chinese mind to work to demonstrate the ancestral figure, image, metaphor and reinforce the dream to be again and forever the great nation. The centrality became the vector of the entire Chinese life; family (everybody return to celebrate New Chinese Year at home), community (they work very well in groups representing a place, town, company) modern nation (the slogan China is One). This dynamic mental program works for every Chinese even if he/she is living overseas. Political discourses or regulations follow this vector of the old “central plain culture” that is transformed nowadays in the notion of “modern China country and nation” or “one belt one road” new Silk Road to connect the world. This program enhances also the moral behavior of any individual.

Students go abroad and return with knowledge, money to help family, city or nation. Responsibility, honor, shame are shared by the entire family, school, nation. Hofstede calls this “communitarian” dimension of the culture. The outcomes in sport or scientific discovery make everyone proud. To be Chinese means to move around the central power that is forever and a day in China.

3.4.1. Educational consideration

Student avoids shame, must study diligently classics, treats illness by herbal medicine and practices martial art, no matter where they are studying. There is China Town everywhere around the world. Centrality is creating by mind or is in the mind. The geographic territory is not the first clue to explain this force; we think the culture should be taken in consideration. The cultural mental program of centrality is everywhere (everywhere the Chinese are living) and have a power to keep it. Several centuries European have spread in the world and imposed their culture, Westerner culture. The European culture acts as a centrifugal vector. Chinese culture has a centipede vector. We shouldn't talk about the clash of civilization, it might be better to talk about completeness. Chinese are prepared by the mental program to accept the counterpart culture. The program of double aspect Yin –Yang makes possible explanations for absorption and for openness of their behavior keeping deep historical roots.

They also call this Harmony of Yin-Yang, central and peripheral, power and modesty putting all mental programs to work together in order to succeed and learn to co-operate in the global system of the world.

There are more other programs but there is not enough space to reveal them like the role of some books (Art of War - Sun Zi), Chinese Chess as making the decision component of life, divination Yi Jing or numerology. All this might be the topic of another possible approach. We had focused only on observations during the time of working in Chinese Universities.

CONCLUSION

Chinese mental programs work every day and make Chinese efficient. If we are astonished nowadays it is because we are thinking in our westerner paradigm. Their perseverance, calmness makes us wonder. Actually, they internalize from childhood to adult state different programs. Also as tacit knowledge in school as school culture or tacit curriculum is still promoted. So, we could summarize some ideal as programs and connected behaviors:

- A Chinese student less expresses him/herself; better internalize knowledge, (absorption) as Yin period of life.
- His dream is to have a family, children and friends and work together (work in groups better than individuals). Being modest and becoming powerful means to have moral behavior (to help others).
- Any Chinese teacher is always referring to the past great ancestors as models. History is that specific superior culture developed in the Central Plains and protected by the Big Wall.
- Their nationalism is determined also by the mental program - centrality as space vector and greatness (big country, large population, monumentality).

Can we understand such programs? Many times we interpret in our paradigm and perspective. Meanwhile they are surprised by our misunderstandings. They try to learn everything about western culture in order to communicate or do business. We are just wandering about differences. We claim it could be better if we try to study more Chinese culture and mind for pursue the globalization goals. It seems we are more closed in our paradigm. Let's open it!

REFERENCES

- Blaga, L. (1987). Știință și creație în Opere, Vol.10. Editura Minerva. Bucuresti.Romania
- Boia, L. (1998 /2000), Pentru o istorie a imaginarului, Ed. Humanitas, Bucuresti.Romania.
- Butucea, M. (2014). Valori asimilate în cultura școlară chineză.; Editura Pro Universitaria. Bucuresti. Romania.
- Butcher, A. (2016). Yellow River/ The Mother of China (Hello, China!) Aug 22, 2016. Retrieved from: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=RGwb3zxRR-A>
- Corbin, A. (1988). Le Territoire du vide. L 'Occident et le désire du rivage (1750-1840), Ed. Aubier, Paris.
- Durand, G. (1964). L 'imagination symbolique, PUF, Paris.
- Eliade, M. (1959). Cosmos and History, in Harper Torch Books,viii-ix. New York: p. 537
- Eliade, M. (1961). Images and Symbols, trans. by Philip Mairet in Sheed and Ward, New York .p. 21.
- Hofstede, G. (1996). Managementul structurilor multiculturale. Editura Economică. București. Romania.
- Granet, M. (2006). Gândirea Chineză. Editura Herald. București.

Jung, C.G. (1958) in The Collected Works of C.G. Jung, trans. by R.F.G. Hull. Bollington Series XX, New York: Pantheon, Vol. 11, p. 490.

Kuhn, Th. (1976). Structura revoluțiilor științifice. Editura Științifică și Enciclopedică. București.

Le Goff, J. (1991). Imaginarul medieval, Ed. Meridiane, București.

Lan, Fung-Yu. (2015). A Short History of Chinese Philosophy. ISBN 978-7-5135-6128-0, Beijing.

Moreno, A. (2015). Ecumenism, Archetypes, and Symbols. Retrieved from: <http://opcentral.org/resources/2015/01/21/antonio-moreno-ecumenism-archetypes-and-symbols>

Patlagean, E. (1978). L'Histoire de l'imaginaire, in La Nouvelle Histoire Retz, Paris, pp. 249-269.

Wang, S. Guiheux, G. (2018). A Case of Double Socialisation in the Social Sciences: The Experience of Chinese Researchers Trained in France [Une double socialisation scientifique en sciences sociales. Le cas de chercheurs chinois formés en France] in China Perspectives, Issue:4 Pgs. 21-30. Retrieved from <http://http://www.cefc.com.hk/issue/china-perspectives-2018-4>

RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN URBANIZATION AND HEALTH OUTCOMES IN INDIAN STATES

Dr. Sabyasachi Tripathi

Assistant Professor, Department of Economics, Adamas University, India

ABSTRACT

The present study assesses the impact of urbanization on health outcomes in Indian states from the period 1971 to 2011. Urbanization is measured by the total urban population, percentage of urban population, and urban population growth rate. Health outcomes are measured by total fertility rates (TFR), crude birth rates (CBR), infant mortality rates (IMR), and life expectancy at birth (LEB). The fixed effect panel data models suggest that urbanization has a strong positive effect on health outcomes by reducing TFR, CBR, IMR, and by increasing LEB. Therefore, we suggest that the increasing urbanization in India is not only beneficial for higher economic growth and development but also for a higher level of health outcomes. The positive urban health outcomes may also be able to control the population growth in India. Therefore, urbanization is essential for holistic development in India.

Keywords: Urbanization, total fertility rate, crude birth rate, infant mortality rate, India

INTRODUCTION

India is going through a transformation from its rural-based agriculture economy to urban-based industry and service lead economy. The percentage of urbanization has increased from 17.97 % in 1961 to 31.16% in 2011. The total urban population has risen from 7.9 crores to 37.71 crores during the same period of time. The urban population grew at 2.76% per annum during 2001-2011 [Bhagat, 2011]. It is also important to note that for the first time since independence, the absolute increase in the urban population was higher than that in the rural population. However, though India's urbanization rate is moderate compare to its peers, the large scale emergence of census towns in 2011 signals the rapid transformation is taking place in the rural areas in the form of non-farming activities.

Cities and towns of India constitute the world's second-largest urban system, and over 50% of the country's gross domestic products generated by these cities and towns [Tripathi, 2013]. The agglomeration economies helped to reduce poverty, increased standard of living by increasing job opportunities and reduced dependence on agriculture in India. Therefore, several recent urban policies such as 100 smart cities mission, and Atal Mission for Rejuvenation and Urban Transformation (AMRUT) are put in place for the promotion of urbanization in India.

In this paper, we argue that urbanization not only worthy of higher economic growth and reduction of poverty but it has also a positive impact on overall health outcomes. Health outcomes are measured by total fertility rate, crude birth rate, infant mortality rate, and life expectancy at birth. All the measurements of health outcomes are relevant. For instance, from an environmental point of view having fewer children is positive; recent research has shown that having one fewer child reduces a parent's carbon footprint by 58 tonnes of CO₂ a

year.¹ On the other hand, urbanization is measured by the total urban population, percentage of urban population, and urban population growth rate.

The crude birth rate (CBR) is declining in India states/union territories. CBR in Delhi declined from 33.6 in 1971 to 17.5 in 2011. The total fertility (TFR) rate in Assam dropped from 5.7 to 2.4 in the same period. The infant mortality rate (IMR) in Bihar reduced from 118 in 1981 to 44 in 2011. Life expectancy at birth (LEB) in Madhya Pradesh has increased from 54.7 in 1991 to 62.8 in 2011. On the other hand, Indian states are witnessing variations in their levels of urbanization. For instance, in 2011 the level of urbanization in Mizoram was 52% whereas it was only 11% in Bihar. Hence, the assessment of the relationship between state-level urbanization and health outcomes is very important for the promotion of urbanization in India.

Our period of the study lies between 1971 and 2011. Data for life expectancy at birth is fetched by a quinquennial Survey and not available before 1991. Therefore, we consider 1991-95 as 1991, 1997-01 as 2001 and 2007-2011 as 2011. Data for TFR, CBR, IMR, and LEB are collected from Sample Registration System (SRS) Bulletin various issues, Office of the Registrar General & Census Commissioner. LEB data before 1995-99 are collected from Economic Survey, Government of India.

BRIEF REVIEW OF LITERATURE

Some empirical studies have systematically studied the relationship between health outcomes and urbanization. Bandyopadhyay and Green (2017), using cross-national panel data, found evidence of a robust negative correlation between crude death rates and urbanization. They also found robust evidence that mortality decline is correlated with urbanization through the creation of new cities rather than promoting urban growth in already-extant cities.

Indian literature is mainly concentrated on how city-specific urbanization level impact on urban health. For instance, Saravanan et al. (2016) analyzed the water-borne diseases in the city of Ahmedabad, India. Butsch et al. (2012) demonstrated that urban health is closely connected with the specifics of India's urbanization. Differences in lifestyle and access to resources result in polarisation: the healthiest and the least healthy citizens now live in urban India. Kumar et al. (2018) suggested that there is a strong need to set up primary healthcare system in urban areas and systematically deal with urban health challenges in terms of vector-borne diseases, rising incidence of noncommunicable diseases, air pollution and acute respiratory infections, road traffic accidents, trauma, and injuries. Singh et al. (2011) found that urbanization and coverage of safe delivery were not associated with either infant or under-five mortality.

A brief review of Indian literature suggests that the overall impact of urbanization on health is missing. Therefore, it is very much important to assess the impact of urbanization on the overall health of the Indian states.

REGRESSION RESULTS

Our regression analyses aim to quantify the relationship between urbanization and health outcome. As our data set is a panel, we estimate the following equation:

¹ <https://www.theguardian.com/world/2018/dec/26/falling-total-fertility-rate-should-be-welcomed-population-expert-says>

$$Healthoutcome_{it} = \alpha + \mu_{it} + \lambda_{it} + \beta Urbanization_{it} + \epsilon_{it} \quad (1)$$

where $Healthoutcome_{it}$ is the health outcome of state i in year t , μ_{it} is a state fixed effect (to measure state-specific factors such as culture and geography), λ_{it} is a year fixed effect (to measure state-invariant time shocks or trends), ϵ_{it} is a well-behaved error term. Our independent variable is urbanization.

Table 1 presents the summary statistics of each variable used in the regression models. The coefficient of variation (CV) measures the dispersions of data points in a data series. Life expectancy at birth, crude birth rate, and total fertility rate have lower values of CV, which indicate little differences in their means, implying a more symmetrical distribution. However, it is not the case for the total urban population, percentage of urban population, and urban population growth rate.

Table 1: Descriptive statistics for panel data

Variable	Observations	Mean	Standard deviation	Minimum	Maximum	CV (in %)
Total urban population (in thousands)	173	6643.763	9473.413	7	50818	142.5911
Urban population growth rate	131	3.931603	2.405088	-3.2	14.6	61.17322
Percentage of urban population	164	30.14744	21.29322	0	97.5	70.63028
Total fertility rate	114	3.094925	1.345929	0.719	6.7	43.48826
Crude birth rate	149	25.85772	7.463634	13.3	44.9	28.86424
Infant mortality rate	109	62.9633	36.05216	11	167	57.25901
Life expectancy at birth	47	64.16809	4.662716	54.7	74.4	7.266409

Table 2 presents the raw correlation coefficients. The estimated values of correlation coefficients quantify the direction and strength of the linear association between the variables. The results show that the total urban populations have a positive association with life expectancy at birth. In contrast, the total urban population is negatively correlated with the total fertility rate, crude birth rate, and infant mortality rate.

Table 2: Correlation coefficient of the variables used in regression model

	tup	upgr	pup	tfr	cbr	imr	leb
Total urban population (tup)	1						
Urban population growth rate (upgr)	-0.09	1					
Percentage of urban population (pup)	0.57	0.21	1				
Total fertility rate (tfr)	-0.11	0.11	-0.51	1			
Crude birth rate (cbr)	-0.17	0.11	-0.52	0.97	1		
Infant mortality rate (imr)	-0.20	0.01	-0.51	0.74	0.80	1	
Life expectancy at birth (leb)	0.14	0.07	0.55	0.75	0.81	0.93	1

Before we choose the appropriate panel models, we do several diagnostic tests for regression models 1-4. Table 3 shows the statistically significant F-test and compels us to go for the fixed-effect model over the pooled model. The statistically significant values of the Breusch–Pagan Lagrange multiplier (LM) test indicate that the random effect models are appropriate. To decide between random and fixed-effect models, we run the Hausman test. The statistically significant values of the Hausman tests support the estimation of fixed-effect models. After that, we test for heteroscedasticity using STATA command *xttest3*. We found that the errors of all models suffer from heteroskedasticity. Therefore, to ensure the validity of the regression results, we must obtain robust estimations. To do that, we use a ‘robust’ option with the fixed-effect model estimation to obtain heteroscedasticity-robust standard errors (also known as Huber/White or sandwich estimators). The robust estimation results are presented in Table 3. As our data point is not typically macro panels as with 10 years interval we do not find any problem of serial correlation. The significant values of *F* statistics for regressions 1–4 indicate that the overall models are statistically significant.

Regression model 1 indicates that both the total urban population and the percentage of the urban population have a negative and statistically significant (at 1% level) effect on the total fertility rate. A 1 percent increase in the total urban population (or the percentage of urban population) decreases the total fertility rate by an average of 0.8% (or 0.4%). However, urban population growth rates do not have any impact on the state-wise total fertility rate.

Table 3: Regression results from fixed-effect model

Independent variable	Dependent Variable			
	Total fertility rate	Crude birth rate	Infant mortality rate	Life expectancy at birth
	Model 1	Model 2	Model3	Model4
Total urban population	-0.0831867*** (0.0173681)	-0.4609718*** (0.1014489)	-2.646046*** (0.5465919)	0.3847682*** (0.1297111)
Percentage of urban population	-0.0437692*** (0.0119973)	-0.37568*** (0.0781787)	-0.9880629** (0.4439989)	0.1042742 (0.1530414)
Urban population growth rate	0.0944864 (0.0611309)	1.017043*** (0.2367432)	4.904715*** (1.663697)	-0.6167882 (0.5579803)
Constant	4.679025*** (0.2662022)	36.36082*** (1.794091)	97.178*** (10.95679)	56.92342*** (1.078854)
F statistics	21.67***	34.70***	24.35***	39.26***
Overall R ²	0.0482	0.1272	0.0254	0.0393
Number of observations	101	126	97	47
F-test for model specification.	10.94***	8.16***	9.9***	11.79***
Null hypothesis: Pool versus FE				
LM-criteria for model specification. Null hypothesis:	22.96***	18.07***	8.77***	8.08***
Pool versus RE: Pool				
Hausman criteria for model specification. Null hypothesis:	817.23***	145.86***	45.04***	15.90***
RE versus FE				
Wald test for groupwise heteroskedasticity: The null is homoskedasticity	2359.59***	4.9e+30***	3.6e+30***	6231.46***

Robust standard errors in parentheses

*** p<0.01, ** p<0.05

Regression models 2 and 3 suggest that the total urban population and percentage of the urban population have a negative effect on the crude birth rate and the infant mortality rate. On the contrary, the urban population growth rate has a positive effect on them. This indicates that the percentage change of urban population that represents the relative change in the size between populations across a period is more important than the urban population growth rate which represents the average amount of change across a period. Finally, the total urban population has a positive and statistically significant (at 1% level) effect on the life expectancy at birth. The estimated results show that a 1% increase in the total urban population increases life expectancy at birth by 3.8 %. The results indicate that urbanization has a positive impact on health outcomes.

DISCUSSION

The “Theory of Demographic Transition” in demographic literature (e.g., Notestein, 1945; Davis, 1949; Stolnitz, 1964; and Lee, 2003) stated that through the economic development and social changes fertility and mortality rate decline. Amonker and Brinker (2007) supported this theory for India and suggested that modernization, health, education, and family planning are inversely related to fertility rates (crude birth rate and total fertility rate) among the states of India. There is also evidence that urbanization was responsible for about 22% of the decrease in TFR between 1982 and 2008 [Guo et al., 2012].

This paper suggests that India’s urbanization also has a similar effect on the total fertility rate. Urbanization is associated with higher economic development through higher engagement in education and work. This reduces fertility rates. Higher economic development that is associated with a higher rate of urbanization in India has demanded higher medical facilities. This, in turn, reduces the infant mortality rate. Urban dwellers with higher income secure more medical insurance than rural areas. In 2014, 14.1 % of rural people have health insurance whereas 18.1 percent in urban areas.² It is important to note that 68% of the people in India live in rural areas in 2011. Finally, life expectancy at birth is higher for urban dwellers than rural people. The difference in life expectancy between urban and rural India was about 4.7 years in 2013-17. Urban dwellers benefit from advances in healthcare services. They also become conscious of making them healthy. Therefore, we suggest that urbanization is essential for higher overall health outcomes in India.

CONCLUSIONS

The relationship between urbanization and health outcome is assessed in this study. Urbanization is measured by the total urban population, the percentage of the urban population, and the growth rate of the urban population. On the other hand, health outcome is measured by total fertility rate, crude birth rate, infant mortality rate, and life expectancy at birth. This paper finds that urbanization has a positive effect on the overall health outcomes of the Indian States.

No country has ever reached middle-income status without a significant increase in urbanization (Annez and Buckley, 2009). Urbanization has contributed, not only to higher-income but also has improved people's lives (Jacobs, 1984; Hall, 1998). Therefore, the promotion of urbanization is very important for many developing countries such as India.

² <https://economictimes.indiatimes.com/news/economy/policy/18-population-of-urban-area-covered-under-health-insurance-government/articleshow/52149871.cms?from=mdr>

The finding of this study suggests that urbanization is not only good for higher economic growth and development but also higher health outcomes.

On the other hand, by lowering the fertility rate urbanization can control the population in India. Prime Minister Narendra Modi in his Independence speech pointed out that population growth is a major concern in India. Indian delegate Karan Singh in the 1974 Conference on Population and Development declared that 'development is the best contraceptive'. It is proved that in developing countries such as India urbanization and development go hand-in-hand. Therefore, we suggest urbanization may also control population size in India with higher health outcomes.

REFERENCES

- Amonker, R G and G Brinker (2007): "Reducing fertility in India," *International Journal of Sociology of the Family*, Vol 33, No 2, pp 328-348.
- Annez, P. C. and Buckley, R. 2009. Urbanization and growth: Setting the context. In Spence, M., Annez, P.C. and Buckley, R.M. (eds.). *Urbanization and growth. Commission on growth and development*. Washington, DC: The World Bank. pp. 1-45.
- Bandyopadhyay, S and E Green (2018): "Urbanization and mortality decline," *Journal of Regional Science*, Volume 58, No 2, pp 483-503.
- Bhagat, R B (2011): "Emerging pattern of urbanisation in India," *Economic and Political Weekly*, Vol 46, No 34, pp 10-12.
- Butsch, C , P. Sakdapolrak and V.S. Saravanan (2012): "Urban health in India," *Internationales Asienforum*, Vol 43, (2012), No 1-2, pp 13-32.
- Davis, K (1949): *Human Society*, Macmillan, New York, NY.
- Guo, Z, Z Wu, C M Schimmele, and S. Li (2012): "The effect of urbanization on China's fertility," *Population Research and Policy Review*, Vol 31, No 3, pp 417-434.
- Hall, P (1998): *Cities in civilisation: Culture, innovation and urban order*, London: Weidenfeld and Nicolson.
- Jacobs, J (1984): *Cities and the Wealth of Nations: Principles of Economic Life*, New York: Random House.
- Kumar, S, S Kumar and B Gupta (2018) "Urban health: Needs urgent attention," *Indian journal of public health*, Vol 62, No 3, pp 214-217.
- Lee, R (2003): "Rethinking the evolutionary theory of aging: transfers, not births, shape senescence in social species", *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*, Vol 100, No 16, pp. 9637-9642.
- Notestein, F.W. (1945), "Population – the long view", in Schultz, T.W. (Ed.), *Food for the World*, University of Chicago Press, Chicago, IL, pp. 36-57.
- Saravanan, V S, M A Idenal, S Saiyed, D Saxena, and S Gerke (2016): "Urbanization and human health in urban India: Institutional analysis of water-borne diseases in Ahmedabad," *Health Policy and Planning*, Vol 31, No 8, pp 1089-1099.
- Singh A, P K Pathak, R K Chauhan, W Pan (2011): "Infant and child mortality in India in the last two decades: A geospatial analysis," *PLoS ONE*, Vol 6, No 11, e26856. doi:10.1371/journal.pone.0026856.

Stolnitz, G J (1964): “*The demographic transitions, from high to low birth rates*”, in Freeman, R. (Ed.), *Population, the Vital Revolution*, Doubleday and Co., New York, NY.

Tripathi, S (2013): “Do large agglomerations lead to economic growth? Evidence from urban India,” *Review of Urban and Regional Development Studies*, Vol 25, No 3, pp 176–200.

HISTORICAL AND SOCIOLOGICAL PERSPECTIVE OF INTERFAITH HARMONY AMONG ALBANIANS

Dr. Genti KRUJA

University College Bedër, Humanities and Law Faculty, Tirana, ALBANIA

ORCID ID: 0000-0002-0321-814X

Abstract

Judging from the horizontal-synchronic viewpoint, Albanians are a people where both Abrahamic religions, Christianity and Islam, coexist. Each of these Abrahamic religions exists along with their respective branches. In more simple words, the Albanian population has two Christian communities: the Western Roman Christianity and the Eastern Orthodox Christianity. This population also has two branches of the Muslim community: the Sunni Muslims and the Bektashi Muslims. As in every other nation in the world, in Albania there are also many atheists (in the last census about 2%), believers who do not practice any rites or who are not participants of any shrines, and mixed families of many faiths within them. In the first half of the 20th century, there was a Hebraic community and the beginnings of a protestant community. The Albanian state itself is a secular state and according to the country's Constitution, there is no official religion; however, this does not exclude the state's responsibility to create the conditions for the revival and development of religion and religious institutions.

Keywords: Tolerance, dialogue, interfaith, harmony, inter-religious.

1. Religions

One of the philosophers who greatly influenced the twentieth-century philosophical scene, Alfred Ayer, points out "God is not an object of reason, but an object of faith."¹ According to this viewpoint, neither does religion have a duty to prove God's existence with empirical reasoning or with axioms as those of science, nor does science have to claim that by reasoning by means of concepts of scientific causality and rationality it can demonstrate the non-existence of a supernatural power. On the other hand, the philosophy of science and the prevailing idea in the worldview treatment of modern sciences acknowledge that sciences are incapable of shedding light beyond the rational form of the explanation of the world, which human logic enables. Science cannot tell what exists beyond those imaginations produced by human reasoning.²

According to Ayer, "There is no opposition between a scientist who studies nature and a theist, who believes in the transcendence of God."³

The study of religion is a challenging endeavor, which poses a completely special demand to sociological imagination. Religion is found in all human societies, in which it has played a major role throughout human history. This is also confirmed by archaeological discoveries. Religious symbols and rituals have often been integrated in society's material and artistic culture.

¹ Ayer, A. J., *Language, truth and logic*, Penguin Books, London, 2001:124.

² Fuga, A. *Rrugë drejt dialogut ndërfetar në Shqipëri*, USAID, "Fondacioni Zgjidhja e Konflikteve dhe Pajtimi i Mosmarrëveshjeve", Tirana, 2010:20.

³ Ayer, *ibid.*

Durkheim studied religion, mainly that of small traditional societies. His book *Elementary Forms of Religious Life* (1912) is a unique study in the sociology of religion. He pointed out that religion is not just a matter of faith. For example, collective ceremonies increase solidarity between people and are essential to connecting the members of a community. According to him, in traditional cultures, all aspects of life are described by religion.⁴ Nonetheless, he is unclear about what might happen to religions in the future. He attaches significance to human values such as freedom, equity, and social cooperation.

Although Durkheim generalizes religions, he studied only a small number of examples. Meanwhile, Weber did a more extensive study of Hinduism, Buddhism, Taoism, ancient Judaism and Christianity in his book *Protestant Ethics and the Spirit of Capitalism*. However, he could not complete his book on Islam.

Weber considered his study of world religions as a unique project. Marx, Durkheim and Weber pointed out that the influence of religion would fade. However, Weber emphasized that only Islam would grow and revive becoming the basis for important developments by late twentieth century.

According to contemporary sociologist Anthony Giddens, Islam has consistently promoted activism. Muslims have coexisted with Christians and Jews throughout their history, except the cases of the Crusades, post-Andalusia Spain and the conflict between Israel and Palestine.⁵

Religion, according to him, is “a system of shared cultural beliefs and rituals, which offers a sense of meaning and purpose, creating an idea of reality that is sacred, comprehensive and supernatural”. Religion is also a universal culture dating back about 40,000 years.

In recent years, various researchers have studied societies with many religious beliefs. Research shows that there are probably few people who have never been affected by religious sentiments and the science of rational thought can never answer crucial questions such as the meaning of life, which have always been the essence of religion.

The case of Albanians’ return to faith in the 1990s shows that people need faith and, contrary to what was thought by classical sociologists, this feeling did not disappear despite the totalitarian atheist regime of the communist system; it became stronger and stronger.

How did religious harmony emerge in Albania?

Interfaith dialogue and co-existence are challenging goals. In recent years, Albanian governments have been trying to move forward, playing an active role in keeping interfaith coexistence healthy. One of these steps has been the opening of Islamic, Orthodox, and Catholic theological programs in Albania so that religious leaders and experts can be educated and trained within the country. Another important project of the Albanian government has been the idea to include a course on religion, where dialogue in middle and high schools aims to support, sustain, and maintain healthy harmony between the various religious communities in the country, and to provide a good example for others.⁶

Judging from the horizontal-synchronic viewpoint, Albanians are a people where both Abrahamic religions, Christianity and Islam, coexist. Each of these Abrahamic religions exists along with their respective branches. In more simple words, the Albanian population has two

⁴ Giddens, A. *Sociologjia*, Çabej, Tirana, 2007:439.

⁵ Ibid, 450.

⁶ Kruja, G.; Zaimi, A.; Gjana, F. “The Challenges of Religious Education at Schools in Multi-religious Societies: The Case of Albania.” *Religious Diversity at School: Educating for New Pluralistic Contexts*, 2021:335.

Christian communities: the Western Roman Christianity and the Eastern Orthodox Christianity. This population also has two branches of the Muslim community: the Sunni Muslims and the Bektashi Muslims. As in every other nation in the world, in Albania there are also many atheists (in the last census about 2%), believers who do not practice any rites or who are not participants of any shrines, and mixed families of many faiths within them. In the first half of the 20th century, there was a Hebraic community and the beginnings of a protestant community. The Albanian state itself is a secular state and according to the country's Constitution, there is no official religion; however, this does not exclude the state's responsibility to create the conditions for the revival and development of religion and religious institutions.⁷

In the inner regions of Albania's highlands, Christianity seems to have spread at a slow pace given the fact that the bearers of objects, which were found in early Medieval cemeteries (the Culture of Koman – VI-VIII), practiced pagan burial rites. In these regions, Christianity would strengthen after the foundation of Durres Episcopate (IX-X centuries).⁸ After Church disaggregation in 1054, only dioceses of Bar, Durres and Skopje Episcopates remained dependent on Rome. During the XIII-XVI centuries, Durres oscillates between the Western and Eastern Churches according to the political circumstances. This instability is also observed in some leaders of Arbanon. Demetrius, along with the clergy, the nobles and the entire population converted from Orthodoxy to Catholicism. Fan S. Noli has portrayed Skanderbeg's father in this way:

“In matters of religion, Gjon Kastrioti was a pure Albanian. He was not a fanatic follower of any faith but he changed it according to the day's politics. He was a Roman Catholic as an ally of Venice in 1407, a Slavic Orthodox as an ally of Stefan Lazarevic of Serbia from 1419 to 1426, a Muslim as an ally of Murat II from 1430 to 1438 and again a Roman Catholic as an ally and Honorary Citizen of Venice and Ragusa, until his death as a Christian in 1443”⁹

A description of 1308 describes the inhabitants of Kunavia, Stefaniaka, Pulti and Dibra, as “neither pure Catholics nor pure Schismatics.”¹⁰

On the eve of the Ottoman rule, the homogenous Catholic block extended from Bar in Albanian Alps to Shkumbin and from the Adriatic Sea to the Black Drini river. The Catholic parishes of Skopje dioceses members were spread among the Orthodox population.¹¹

However, religion and culture among Albanians were an inseparable element of their daily life, which along with the language constituted the national identity.

The Albanian people with two faiths, Christianity and Islam, is and should be a special example and a symbol of religious harmony in the history of the peoples of the Balkans and beyond. Muslims and Christians have lived in harmony and have coexisted without divisive confrontations; on the contrary, they have complemented each other. The very existence of cult objects, mosques, churches and tekkes, symbolizes the history of our country. The future

⁷ Kruja, G. (2020a). Interfaith Dialogue in Albania as a Model of Interreligious Harmony. *Journal of Ethnic and Cultural Studies*, 7(3).

⁸ Anamali, S. *Ilirët dhe shqiptarët*, “E vërteta mbi Kosovën dhe shqiptarët në Jugosllavi”, 1990:42-43.

⁹ Noli, F. *Gjergj Kastriot Skenderbeu 1405-1468*, Tirana, 1967:64.

¹⁰ *Burime të zgjedhura për historinë e Shqipërisë*, vëll. II, Tirana, 1962:111; Xhufi, Pëllumb, *Shqipëria dhe bota mesdhetare në Mesjetë* (shek. XI-XIV), “Studime historike”, 2, 1990:183, Ulqini, Karaman, “Faktorë kulturorë e fetarë”, Shkodër 1999:8.

¹¹ Farlatus, D.; Coletus, J. *Illyricum Sacrum, tomus septiemus*, Venetiae, 1817; Thalloczy, L.; Jiricek K.; Sufflay, E. *Acta et diplomata res Albaniae aetatis illustrantia (vol.I-II)*, Vindobonae, A. Holzbausen, 1913, 1916; Sufflay, M. *Serbët dhe shqiptarët*, Tirana, 1926; Ducellier, A. *La façade maritime de L'Albanie au Moyen Age*, Thessaloniki, 1981; *Historia e Shqipërisë*, vol. I, Tirana, 1959; Gjini, G. *Ipushkëvia Shkup-Prizren nëpër shekuj*, Drita-Ferizaj, 1992.

of Albania and Albanians will be happy if members of the Muslim and Christian communities embrace their religion with knowledge and deeds and respect each other.

As brothers by blood, but also as Muslims and Christians, Albanians must understand once and for all that not only their reality and destiny, but the reality and the destiny of the whole world from the beginning to the end, is a diversity of faiths and convictions. Albanians will not have religious divisions as long as they believe that religions in Albania are an asset and not a misfortune and that the only Creator is the same for everyone, Muslims and Christians.

Interreligious tolerance, understanding and interfaith harmony constitute one the three most prominent values (the other two being Besa (keeping the promise) and hospitality) of Albania, sociologist Zyhdi Dervishi claims.

The issue of Albanians' interreligious understanding appears as a rebus, almost indecipherable in the dual background of the prevailing socio-cultural reality of many societies today which experience problematic religious conflicts, and a dense fog of prejudices, which come from outside and distort the appearance of Albanian society's values.¹²

In the writings of non-Albanian thinkers and travelers, there are many descriptions of this issue. For example, when Hugo Adolf Bernatzik visited many cities and regions of Albania, he wrote about the Albanian society of 1929:

"Catholics, Orthodox, and Muslims leave in peace in this small country; and often live together even in small villages. Religious wars are unknown and inconceivable to Albanians".¹³

Edith Durham wrote that a part of Albanians...have gone directly from paganism to Islam.¹⁴

Scholar Dervishi states that Albanians' religious feeling is not superficial; however, its recognition by foreign scholars and travelers is yet insufficient. This conclusion is confirmed by numerous indisputable facts of the religious reality in Albania.

Thus, during the last three or four centuries, although very poor, the Albanian people has had a very high density of churches, mosques and tekkes. For example, in the early XX century, as Th. Ippen writes, only in Kruja, there were about 366 mosques, and tekkes.¹⁵

According to Dervishi, the "heart" of the full functioning of the cultural value of interfaith tolerance and understanding has to do with an inherent profile of Albanian people's psycho-cultural modelling, which albeit quite faintly, has been re-evaluated by qualified scholars of Albanians' spiritual construction.¹⁶ Edith Durham wrote that Albanians 'have the instinct of a noble man'.¹⁷ Therefore, not having the instinct of the mass, Albanians have almost never mistreated minority groups on the grounds of race, ethnicity, nationality, or religion. Historically and currently, minority social groups have been and still are protected by the tolerance, the tendency for understanding and the humane spirit of majority social groups.

¹² Dervishi, Z. *Sociologji kulture 1*, Sh.B. e Librit Universitar, Tirana, 1999:31-45.

¹³ Bernatzik, H. A. *Shqipëria-vendi i shqiptarëve*, botuar nga Uegen, Tirana, 2003:154.

¹⁴ Durham, E. *Brenga e Balkanit dhe vepra të tjera për Shqipërinë edhe shqiptarët*, Sh.N. "8 Nëntori", Tirana, 1990:158.

¹⁵ Dervishi, Z. *Fakte rrjedhëse të mirëkuptimit ndërfetar të shqiptarëve: një provë shpjegimore*, studime dhe vlerësime bashkautorësh, "Rrugë drejt dialogut ndërfetar në Shqipëri", USAID, botuar nga "Fondacioni Zgjidhja e Konfliktëve dhe Pajtimi i Mosmarrëveshjeve", Tirana, 2010:152; shih: revista "Të drejtat e njeriut", 1996, nr. 2, f. 28.

¹⁶ Ibid, p. 155.

¹⁷ Durham, p. 544.

Furthermore, the more disproportionate the numerical and demographic relations between minority and majority religious group, the more understanding is shown by the majority religious group.

According to sociologist Dervishi, except for very rare cases, in the Albanian society you are more favoured in many respects if you are a member of a minority group than a member of a majority group.¹⁸

Religious differences among Albanians do not “function” as a source of conflict. On the contrary, religious differences make Albanians more discreet in their relations with each other and more inclined to harmonize their interests.

Albanians are very vocal about the noun phrase “interreligious harmony” and the prevalence of this harmony in the Albanian society is a source of pride for them. Recently, finding the “magic” formula of religious harmony is a concern not only for Albania, but for the whole world. The tradition of interfaith coexistence among Albanians is not something that emerged in modern times; it is a tradition coming from centuries ago. As these values are not eternal, they must be preserved and inherited from generation to generation.¹⁹

Naturally, these questions arise:

- How did religious harmony emerge among Albanians?
- What are some historical facts that shed light upon it?

Several researchers have acknowledged that the sense of nationality among Albanians has never been confused with religious issues. Thus, Lord Byron wrote:

“I love Albanians; they are not all Muslims; some of their tribes are Christian. Religion does not make them change their customs.”²⁰

According to researcher Artan Fuga, differences in religious views and mystical beliefs do not exclude cooperation between different religious communities. This is because the major monotheistic religions, however distinct and contradictory they may be from each other, still have things in common, which can pave the way for the cooperation for the moral perfection of men, to increase the degree of solidarity among them, to strengthen feelings of humanity, forgiveness and compassion, as well as to create a moral background opposing theft, torture, violence and murder.

All major monotheistic religions are based on the acceptance of the idea of the supernatural. Worshipping God and love for others are the foundations of religious teachings. Moral teachings on peace, respect for life and understanding are found in all monotheistic religions practiced in our country.²¹

From this point of view, this metaphor teaches us that the different religious, moral or scientific perspectives on the world, do not have to be a source of conflict and fanaticism at

¹⁸ Dervishi, Z. *Fakte rrjedhëse...*, p. 156.

¹⁹ Kruja, G. *Bashkëjetesa ndërjetare në Shqipëri si faktor stabiliteti social. Albania, a model of interfaith harmony for Europe?*, Beder Press, Tirana, 2018.

²⁰ *Gazeta Panorama*, 15-04-2004.

²¹ Fuga, A. *studime dhe vlerësime bashkautorësh, Rrugë drejt dialogut ndërjetar në Shqipëri*, USAID, botuar nga “Fondacioni Zgjidhja e Konfliktëve dhe Pajtimi i Mosmarrëveshjeve”, Tirana, 2010:26.

all, but a humanistic motivation to be open to the other and to know him/her and their special culture, which as Habermasi puts it, constitutes the precise concept of the universal; in other words, the universal as a totality of differences in their complementarity.²²

The spread of Islam in Albanian lands

The spread of Islam in Albanian lands was a phenomenon caused by the interaction of a range of different factors: political, economic, cultural and religious. The Ottoman Empire was a state that accepted the existence of non-Muslim communities within the territories under its rule. Thus, even in Albania, the Ottoman rule was not followed by the use of organized and direct state violence aiming to eradicate the existing religion (Christianity) and impose Islam. The survival of Christian communities in Albania, despite their shrinking on the account of mass conversions to Islam for several centuries, is its best evidence.

Unlike neighbouring Balkan peoples, Albanians did not have a single national church. On the contrary, due to its special geo-political position, the Albanian territory was located on the border between the two world churches of the time: the Roman Catholic Church based in Vatican and the Byzantine Orthodox Church based in Constantinople (Istanbul).

Lack of harmony, quarrels and tensions in the relations between the institutions of the two main churches (Catholic and Orthodox), the poor educational and theological level of the clergy (as evidenced by documents of the time) as well as the lack of respect for ethics and church discipline in clergy's daily activity had a strong influence on weakening the position of Christianity among Albanians and facilitating the penetration of Islam.²³

The spread of Islam in Albanian territories was a process with a diversity of consequences on Albanian people's economic, social and cultural life. Changes in the Albanian people's religious structure, as a result of Islam, were reflected in the architecture and urban planning of Albanian settlements, in their customs and artistic creativity, and in the lexis of Albanian through the penetration of words and expressions of Ottoman-Arab origin, thus adding a Muslim cultural aspect to the daily lives of Albanians.

With the spread of Islam in Albanian territories, religious diversity deepened further potentially creating conditions for the division and dissolution of Albania. Nonetheless, such a thing did not happen because the new religious reality was a mosaic set upon strong foundations, and strengthened in the course of history by convergence factors such as ethno-psychological features, the common language and culture, and so on. On the other hand, similarly to Christianity (Orthodox or Catholic), Islam in general remained a popular religion among Albanians, far from intolerance and doctrinal bigotry.

Historical documents are the most accurate argument for the tolerance and peaceful coexistence of Albanians of different faiths. In a report sent to Vatican in 1663, the Catholic missionary Pjetër Mazreku, stated in astonishment:

"As they stay constantly together, the Christians learn so many things from the infidels (Muslims) such as celebrating on Friday, which is the main holiday of the Turks (Muslims) and endless superstitions..."

During the centuries when the process of the islamization of Albanian population was still under process, the difference between the Christian part and the Islamized part was not very pronounced.

²² Ibid, p. 28.

²³ Rreth përhapjes së Islamit ndër shqiptarët, Drita e Dijes, Shkodër, 1999.

The increase in religious variability during the Ottoman rule, due to the conversion to Islam of the majority of the Christian population, did not affect the ethnic character of the Albanian people, despite some scholars' claim that along with their religion, the Islamized population also lost their national awareness. It should be noted that in Albanian territories bordering other ethnicities, the Islamizing process was one of the factors that influenced the ethnic isolation of Albania and its territories from neighboring peoples.

Even the autochthonous population of Kosovo and the eastern Albanian areas, just like all the Islamized Albanian population, changed only their religious affiliation preserving their Albanian ethnicity. Mass conversion to Islam occurred two centuries following the Ottoman rule of Albanian territories, indicating a natural and rather slow spread.

Albania: preservation of understanding among religious communities

Leaders of the Albanian state have occasionally shared the religious tolerance and harmony that exists in Albania in various international conferences and panels.

In the Oxford Forum "Interfaith Tolerance in the Tradition of Albanian people"²⁴ in 2005, president Moisiu said that Albanian immigrants of the 1990s generally brought to the West an image of a violent, harsh and dangerous Albania. Very soon, in the political and scientific circles of the West, the question arose:

"Does there exist another Albania, an Albania with a European face, an Albania where surviving values of civilization can be found?"²⁵

It was precisely this question, this situation and the need to change the country's image and to refute some malicious tendencies of the western media, which prompted Albanian researchers and their colleagues in Europe to research the bright values of Albanian identity, similar to those of the West. Among these values, interfaith tolerance, coexistence and harmony were qualities which very soon attracted the attention of those scholars and politicians, both Albanian and foreign, who believed in and sought for another image of the Albanian people.

This model is a valuable asset for Albanians, as well as a positive reality of great value for the region and beyond. Our societies are inevitably going towards globalization and integration trying to create a big family in which there is room for all values and assets of countries and peoples. In this globalizing world, small countries are not expected to compete with their economies and material possessions. Nonetheless, they can contribute to the enrichment of the global society with their identity and precious values creating a mosaic rich in values and cultures which acknowledge and respect one another.

The "Albania case", as an exemplary case of coexistence of faiths throughout history, very soon began to be treated as the "Albanian phenomenon", which gained significance not only as a cultural and historical issue, but above all, as a useful experience to humanity, and as an opportunity for evocation and encouragement in international settings.

While the debate whether the future held a clash of civilizations or dialogue between them, intolerance led to September 11 event, which made humanity deeply reflect both on its past and future. It was during this period that many international conferences of a political and scientific character were held in Tirana. A variety of activities on the same topic were also organised by universities and research institutes.

²⁴ www.president.al, faqja zyrtare e Presidencës, 9.11.2005.

²⁵ Kruja, G. (2020b). Dimension of Interfaith Harmony in Albanian Culture. In Proceedings of the 19th International RAIS Conference on Social Sciences and Humanities. Scientia Moralitas Research Institute.

But what is interfaith tolerance among Albanians? Is this an accurate term or should another term be used? In effect, scholars and researchers of political and religious sociology, whether foreign or local, have used terms containing differences in the form of nuances. Religious historians and theologians use the term “religious ecumenism”. Historians of Middle Age and ethnologists use the term “religious convergence”. Sociologists and historians tend to use the terms “tolerance”, “coexistence” or “interfaith harmony”.

Religious tolerance among Albanians is not a quality developed in modern times; neither is it a product of education or schooling. It is a tradition coming from the depths of centuries. Albania is the country in which the two greatest empires of Middle Age met and separated: Rome and the Byzantium.

Albania was also the place where the authority of the two churches met and separated: the Roman Church and the Byzantine Church. Although rivals and strong opponents, the two empires and the two churches never became a cause for conflict among Albanians. At the end of Paleochristianism, ‘the Line of Theodosius’ divided Albania into two parts, one under the Roman political and religious rule and the other under the Byzantine political and religious rule. However, this division never turned into a border among Albanians themselves. In Albania, Islam is a religion that has coexisted with Europe for centuries and it is one of its religions.

In the Albanians’ identity, the national feeling generally stands above religious differences. The Albanian is firstly a member of an ethnic community and then of a religious community. This happens for reasons of geopolitical tendencies that have been manifested against Albanians.

Tolerance among Albanians is not only religious, but also linguistic; and in many cases, it is ethnic. During the First World War, in Albania there were many foreign armies, almost as many as in all the Balkans: Austrian, French, Italian, Greek, Montenegrin and Bulgarian. When the war ended and these armies had neither food nor medicine or means to return to their countries, the Albanian people accommodated them in their houses, although they were fully aware that most of them had committed crimes against Albanians themselves. In the post September 8, 1943 period, when the fascist Italy capitulated, in Albania there were thousands of militia and officers who had come to Albania as an invading army. Within two weeks, this army was disarmed and treated as deserters, destined to be exterminated by the Nazi army. The Albanian people saved this army from the horror that awaited them, even though they had killed and burned or raped and looted. Italian soldiers wore traditional Albanian clothes and took refuge in Albanian families.

The attitude of Albanians towards Jews during World War II was unparalleled. Albanian governments, which, as elsewhere in the world at that time, cooperated with fascist authorities, cooperated as vassal governments; however, they never handed over the list of Jews to the foreign armies. Albania is the only country in the world where despite the conditions of double occupation, no Jew was handed over, ended up in concentration camps or was victimized. This was the case not only with Jews who were Albanian citizens, but also with about 3000 Jews coming from the Balkan countries, who were fleeing persecution or death in their countries.²⁶

These 3.000 Jews, most of whom entered Albania illegally, were provided immediate and unconditional protection from Albanian authorities and Albanian people.

²⁶ Moisiu, A., Londër, 9.11.2005; Loloci, C., *Trepça*, 4.08.2005.

Tolerance is also a typically ethnic characteristic of Albanians. This quality may also be related to Albania's geopolitical position. While the West has seen the Balkans and its door, Albania, as an exotic east, the East, has always considered it as West. At the crossroads of the two worlds, Albanians have given and taken with both, preserving their identifying essence, serving as a bridge of influences and adopting many things from them. Therefore, the conviction was formed among Albanians that diversity, whether religious, regional, genetic, national or cultural, does not constitute a threat, but an asset. Such a conviction has shaped interreligious tolerance among Albanians and wider and has made Albanian civilization open to others.

Conclusion

Peaceful religious pluralism has served as a unifying element between people, families and different groups of society. Religious communities remain faithful to their original inspirations of good and peace, and with great devotion play an active role in overcoming social problems, the socialization of youth, as well as strengthening the role of the family, culture and national identity. With its special contribution, Albania represents one of the rare cases of a country with different religions where all political and social factors, including religious communities, are strong supporters of the country's integration in the European Union and NATO. Values are not eternal; they must be preserved and cultivated in the mentality of citizens and in democratic culture. Similarly, it is necessary to transform the culture of dialogue among different faiths and religious communities into a bridge of unity and communication and of exchange and stronger connection between people and countries.

An important value of which Albania is proud today, is the coexistence of different religious communities. Many consider this an asset as no recordings of religious clashes throughout the history of the country may be a unique case. However, recent examples in the world and in the Balkans have shown that religious balances are very delicate and their manipulation has often had serious consequences. This has been acknowledged by the leaders of the major traditional communities: the Muslim, Orthodox, Catholic and Bektashi, pointing out that one of the reasons for their statements is that religious disputes are related to ethnic, social and political conflicts.

Muslims, Orthodox, Catholics and the Bektashis have called on the state authorities to protect the freedom of all authorised representatives or religious leaders in order to fulfil their mission. They have called for the drafting of a resolution on the legal status of religious communities as well as the return of property nationalized or confiscated during communism.

In Albania, religious freedom was re-established after the fall of communism. Opening to the world brought with it the influx of many new currents which have often caused clashes within traditional communities themselves. According to data in the State Committee for Cults, 241 religious organizations are currently registered and operating in Albania. Accumulating the centuries-old experience, religious faiths are preparing to face the challenges of a secularized world.

Tolerance does not always mean consent; but a joint endeavour to listen to and respect one another; it means the mutual good will recognizing differences between people of different religions, and ultimately, it is a gradual transition to compromise and consensus by all. As such, it can become an individual's personal inner value.

People may show a spirit of tolerance in everyday life; this, though, does not mean that their mission ends there. In its support, an appeal for cooperation is made. This is a type of social interaction, in which religious communities work together to achieve common goals. In order

for cooperation to become a civic democratic value, it must happen repeatedly, as the social context and the factors stemming from it are different from traditional Albania. Therefore, obviously any kind of barrier, whether mental or psychological, must be overcome and people must make more efforts to understand one another.²⁷

In one of his studies, philosopher of sociology Artan Fuga points out that lack of debate on essential theological issues is not a safe basis which guarantees that we will always have social peace and religious coexistence, which we have inherited as part of our national heritage today. If people are not treated democratically, social conflict and divisions based on social class or religion might arise even from secondary differences, not genuinely religious, but related to religion; for example, divisions over the placement of a monument in a town street, the shape of railings surrounding a building, the placement of a religious symbol on a hill or on a roadside, over a tombstone, or over other issues, which are not of a religious nature. In this case, the conflict is not based within the real area of dialogue or debate; it stems from the birth and emergence of some social conflicts, which later turn into symbolic and linguistic divergences or alternatives to explaining history. The basis of this not so democratic debate, which we have recently seen in a few cases, has more to do with social and regional divergences as well as social and geopolitical groups, which use religious differences or the history of the relationship between the nation and religion as ideological instruments of action in the present and as goals to be achieved in the future.²⁸

The highest goal of interfaith, moral and political dialogue is to always stay alive, without falling into fanaticism or extremism of any kind. If so far it has managed to maintain itself in Albania, in the future, it will surely face new challenges, and will have to affirm itself not through absence but through a philosophy, method and culture that inspire tolerance and coexistence.²⁹

It might be an exaggeration to say there is a historical role Albanians can play in building bridges between Christianity and Islam, as Arbër Xhaferi claims. Most scholars of the history of religions in Albania acknowledge that there are historical, political, social and cultural reasons that have led to a general situation of religious harmony in Albania.³⁰

References

- Anamali, S. *Ilirët dhe shqiptarët*, “E vërteta mbi Kosovën dhe shqiptarët në Jugosllavi”, 1990.
- Ayer, A. J. *Language, truth and logic*, Penguin Books, London, 2001.
- Bernatzik, H. A. *Shqipëria-vendi i shqiptarëve*, botuar nga Uegen, Tirana, 2003.
- Burime të zgjedhura për historinë e Shqipërisë*, vëll. II, Tirana, 1962.
- Xhufi, P. *Shqipëria dhe bota mesdhetare në Mesjetë* (shek. XI-XIV), “Studime historike”, 2, 1990.
- Ulqini, K. “Faktorë kulturorë e fetarë”, Shkodër 1999.

²⁷ Kruja, G. Bashkëjetesa ndërfaqetare në shqipëri si faktor stabiliteti social, May 3, Beder Press, 2018.

²⁸ Fuga, A., *ibid*, p. 32.

²⁹ *Ibid*, p. 35.

³⁰ Xhelili, Q. *Toleranca ndër marrëdhëniet midis komuniteteve fetare në Shqipëri dhe ndikimi i tyre në jetën shoqërore në periudhën midis dy luftërave botërore*, Simpozium Ndërkombëtar “Krishtërimi ndër shqiptarët”, Tirana, 1999:39.

Dervishi, Z. *Fakte rrjedhëse të mirëkuptimit ndërfetar të shqiptarëve: një provë shpjegimore*, studime dhe vlerësime bashkautorësh, “Rrugë drejt dialogut ndërfetar në Shqipëri”, USAID, Fondacioni Zgjidhja e Konfliktëve dhe Pajtimi i Mosmarrëveshjeve, Tirana, 2010.

Dervishi, Zyhdë *Fakte rrjedhëse të mirëkuptimit ndërfetar të shqiptarëve: një sprovë shpjegimore*, Revista “Univers”, 2008.

Dervishi, Z. *Sociologji kulture 1*, Sh.B. e Librit Universitar, Tirana, 1999.

Durham, E. *Brenga e Ballkanit dhe vepra të tjera për Shqipërinë edhe shqiptarët*, Sh.N. “8 Nëntori”, Tirana, 1990.

Fuga, A. *Rrugë drejt dialogut ndërfetar në Shqipëri*, USAID, “Fondacioni Zgjidhja e Konfliktëve dhe Pajtimi Mosmarrëveshjeve”, Tirana, 2010.

Gazeta *Panorama*, 15-04-2004.

Giddens, A. *Sociologjia*, Çabej, Tirana, 2007.

Gjini, G. *Ipeshkëvia Shkup-Prizren nëpër shekuj*, Drita-Ferizaj, 1992.

Historia e Shqipërisë, vol. I, Tirana, 1959.

Kruja, G. (2020a). Interfaith Dialogue in Albania as a Model of Interreligious Harmony. *Journal of Ethnic and Cultural Studies*, 7(3).

Kruja, G. (2020b). Dimension of Interfaith Harmony in Albanian Culture. In *Proceedings of the 19th International RAIS Conference on Social Sciences and Humanities*. Scientia Moralitas Research Institute.

Kruja, G.; Zaimi, A.; Gjani, F. “The Challenges of Religious Education at Schools in Multi-religious Societies: The Case of Albania.” *Religious Diversity at School: Educating for New Pluralistic Contexts*, 2021.

Kruja, G. *Bashkëjetesa ndërfetare në shqipëri si faktor stabiliteti social*, May 3, Beder Press, 2018.

Rreth përhapjes së Islamit ndër shqiptarët, Drita e Dijes, Shkodër, 1999.

Noli, F., *Gjergj Kastriot Skenderbeu 1405-1468*, Tirana, 1967.

Presidenti Moisiu, A., Londër, 9.11.2005, fjalim; Loloci, C., gazeta “Trepça”, 2005.

Të drejtat e njeriut, 1996, no. 2.

Xhelili, Q. *Toleranca ndër marrëdhëniet midis komuniteteve fetare në Shqipëri dhe ndikimi i tyre në jetën shoqërore në periudhën midis dy luftërave botërore*, Simpozium Ndërkombëtar “Krishtërimi ndër shqiptarët”, Tirana, 1999.

Webliografi

www.president.al (9.11.2005)

**EXAMINING THE IMPACTS OF EXTRA-SCHOOL ACTIVITIES ON BENINESE
LEARNERS' ACADEMIC ACHIEVEMENTS**

Amadou SALAMI

Department of English, Faculty of Letters, Languages, Arts and
Communications (FLLAC) Université d'Abomey-Calavi (UAC)
Bénin

ABSTRACT

The present study explores the impacts of extra-school activities in Benin secondary schools. It was conducted in some secondary schools of Ouémé region. Questionnaires were administered to both teachers and learners of the selected schools. Similarly, interviews were conducted among learners involved in such activities. The data obtained from questionnaires have been analyzed and discussed in order to draw out relevant conclusions. The major findings of the study have proved that extra-school activities are profitable to the learners who are very conscious of their future. In this perspective, students' investments out-of-school have a positive impact on certain educational outcomes as supported by this study. The findings also led to suggestions to authorities at different levels as well as parents, teachers and learners.

Keywords: extra-school activities, academic achievements, poverty, implications

PREVENTING SOCIAL INTERNET CRIMES USING RELIABLE DISTRIBUTED APP STORE BASED ON BLOCKCHAIN TECHNOLOGY

Kiarash Shamsi

University of Science and Culture, Faculty of Computer Science, Tehran, Iran.

Hosein Gharaee

ICT research Institute (ITRC), Tehran, Iran.

ABSTRACT

Today, many people spend a significant portion of their time on their cellphones, storing or transmitting private data. Smartphones will, in general, serve as a gateway for people to communicate with the virtual world. As a result, several malwares attack smartphones every year, stealing user information, unauthorized use of the device's physical resources, extortion, or system destruction. Nonetheless, many mobile applications are currently generated on a regular basis by various programmers and are mostly released on well-known platforms, like Google Play and App Store, for the Android and iOS operating systems, respectively. Since these platforms are developed centrally, it is impossible to accurately examine the surge of new applications. Because of this flaw, many popular applications have spyware, some of which are occasionally uncovered. This article will describe how to create a secure and reliable app store using a blockchain architecture. Anyone in our system can publish an application for public usage or serve as a reviewer, assessing and verifying other applications. Verifiers install and run all ready-to-publish programs on their own virtual machine using the proof-of-work algorithm before publishing them. Then, in the absence of a program, they apply standard evaluation criteria to examine how it is implemented and whether it is problematic. Finally, if a consensus algorithm collectively approves the application's correctness and performance, it will be released. Applications are placed on a distributed file system underneath this platform, and a hash of their identity data as well as a portion of their metadata is saved on a blockchain system. Participants in the consensus protocol are also awarded a financial incentive token. The benefits of this technology include significantly improved data availability, excellent authentication accuracy using the collective consensus algorithm, and the absence of any central entity in this process.

Keywords: Blockchain, Incentive Token, Proof-of-Work, Distributed Systems.

REPRESENTATION OF THE WEISTIC IDEOLOGY IN SELECTED CLASSICAL AFRICAN NOVELS

Akinola Monday Allagbé

Département d'Anglais, Faculté des Lettres, Langues, Arts et Communication (FLLAC),
Université d'Abomey-Calavi (UAC), République du Bénin,

Ayodele Adebayo Allagbé

Département d'Anglais, Faculté des Lettres et Sciences Humaines (FLSH),
Université de Zinder (UZ), République du Niger,

Unité de Recherche en Sciences Sociales, Humaines, et de l'Éducation (UR_2SHE).

ABSTRACT

Africa's contact with the Western world has indubitably disarticulated its established traditional social structure, including its underlying ideology called weism. Weism as opposed to individualism generally emphasises collectivism, harmony, and most importantly community life or communitarianism in social life. This paper aims to demonstrate how the weistic ideology is represented in two classical African novels, namely: Ayi Kwei Armah's *Fragments* (1970) and Chinua Achebe's *Things Fall Apart* (1958). Drawing its theoretical insights from Dogbe (1980), Gbadegesin (1991), Van Dijk (1995; 2006), Gyekye (1996b), Akpomovie (2009) and the qualitative content analysis research method, the study argues that weism is an ideology which cognitively and socially forges or/and shapes the behaviour patterns and controls the beliefs of members of traditional Africa. The findings reveal that weism is represented in the novels as an ideology which ontologically constrains the individual, in traditional Africa, to consider the interest of others first in everything s/he is doing. They also exude that it is portrayed in the novels as an ideology which promotes solidarity, cohesion, unity, love, hospitality and social peace in society. Based on these findings, we affirm that weism can serve as an alternative ideological solution to the multifarious and complex social problems contemporary Africa is facing today.

Keywords: Community life, ideology, social structure, traditional Africa, weism.

1. INTRODUCTION AND THEORETICAL FRAMEWORK

It is a truism to say that Africa's contact with the Western world has disarticulated its established traditional social structure, including its underlying ideology called weism. This state of affairs is conspicuously observed in contemporary Africa. Simply put, contemporary Africa is facing so many social problems today. These problems have been increasingly captured and represented by contemporary writers like Amma Darko, Chimamanda Ngozi Adichie, to name just but a few. In Darko's *Faceless* (2003), for instance, the social issue of street children is depicted. This depiction teleologically encodes African (Ghanaian) parents' detachment from one of the key weistic beliefs that children are precious, and as such, they need to be highly cherished. In *Purple Hibiscus* (2003), on the other hand, Adichie represents Eugene Achike (Papa) as someone who is in conflict with tradition because he has come in contact with and espoused the Christian doctrine or ideology, and for this reason, he treats his own biological father (Papa Nnukwu) condescendingly, calling him a heathen. This representation is another glaring proof of the disarticulation of traditional African social structure and its underlying ideology called weism. This paper aims to demonstrate how the

weistic ideology is represented in two classical African novels, namely: Ayi Kwei Armah's *Fragments* (1970) and Chinua Achebe's *Things Fall Apart* (1958).

If we agree that every human society has its own established social structure undergirded by a given ideology or a given set of ideologies, we simply want to imply that the ideology or the set of ideologies underlying that social structure cognitively and socially serves to forge or/and shape and control the behaviour, and most especially the beliefs of the members of the society. Concurring with the foregoing, Van Dijk (2006, p. 116) claims that "Ideologies are foundational social beliefs of a rather general or abstract nature. One of their cognitive functions is to provide (ideological) coherence to the beliefs of a group and thus facilitate their acquisition and use in everyday situations." Elsewhere, Van Dijk (1995, pp. 17-18) further posits that "[...] ideologies are the basic frameworks for organi[s]ing the social cognitions shared by members of social groups, organi[s]ations or institutions".

Unlike contemporary Africa described in the abovementioned fictional texts, Dogbe (1980, p. 789) argues that the traditional African social life is ruled by weism, "'we-law' or 'we-logic'". Moreover, he (1980, p. 797) submits that:

a philosophy of "Weism" (I am, because we are and since we are, I am) is a theory of harmony and co-operation which have usually determined the types of structure that community services agencies in African society should have. Social services are usually directed toward sociali[s]ation, unification, reunification, integration, reintegration, conciliation, reconciliation and finally cohesion.

In the quote above, weism is considered both as a philosophy and a theory. But we consider it, in this study, as an inclusive ideology which ontologically encourages and fosters in (traditional) African society harmony, co-operation and community services directed toward human socialisation, unification, reunification, integration, reintegration, conciliation, reconciliation and finally cohesion. In line with the foregoing claim, Gbadegesin (1991, p. 67) observes that there is, of course, a wide range of community structures throughout the African continent, but he places emphasis on collectivity or communitarianism as a primary trait of most (traditional) African states or/and peoples. Similarly, Dogbe (1980, p. 890) considers community life as a major feature of traditional Africa; i.e., a community life made up of beings or a community in which the gods, spirits, nature, the ancestors, the elders and the people interplay to enrich life.

In addition, in traditional Africa, the weistic ideology is believed to constitute a set of categories and standards used to appreciate the behaviour of an individual. In this sense, Akpomuvie (2009, p. 121) argues that "Every [traditional] culture provides a set of categories and standards to be used in evaluating human behaviour. Some of these standards are (ideally) the same for all persons." It is important to note at this level that the weistic ideology is passed on to the members of a traditional African community by means of education. This is to say, the members of the community are taught from their childhood the core values that found the community, shape its behaviour patterns, control its beliefs, etc. Put in another way, every individual, in traditional African community, is brought up to acknowledge not only the existence of common community values, but also to feel utter loyalty and commitment towards those values (Gyekye, 1996b, p. 36). In the subsequent section, the methodology the current study draws on is clearly outlined.

2. METHODOLOGY

This paper draws on the qualitative content analysis research method. This method includes the collection and evaluation or discussion of language features or textual data. The textual data are

nothing else but some textual snippets extracted from the two novels under study, viz.: Fragments (F henceforth) and Things Fall Apart (TFA henceforth). The collected data are further discussed in such a way that the weistic beliefs encoded in the novels are brought to the fore. In other words, the analysis essentially revolves around how the weistic ideology is represented in the selected fictional texts.

3. REPRESENTATION OF THE WEISTIC IDEOLOGY IN THE SELECTED NOVELS

In literary and language studies, literature is claimed to serve as a mirror for society. This is to say, literature reflects society the way it is, its social realities included, at a given time. The utmost aim of literary writers in depicting the social realities of society is to create awareness about those realities. Reading the two classical fictional texts under scrutiny here is not an exception to that claim. One of the social realities in these texts is weism. Recall that weism is arguably an ideology which cognitively and socially forges or/and shapes the behaviour patterns and controls the beliefs of members of traditional Africa.

In F, for instance, many weistic beliefs are represented. One of them is that the ancestors keep watch over the living. That is why members of traditional African societies, especially members of the traditional Ghanaian society, often invoke the ancestors for protection. In the novel, the foregoing reality is encoded in Baako's uncle's (Foli's) prayer for him, when he is about to travel to the United States of America. The narrator informs the reader about this through Baako's grandmother: "The uncle called upon the nephew [Baako] the protection of the old ones gone before. The circle was not broken" (Armah, 1970, p. 3). The preceding representation clearly indicates a rite which has to be regularly performed so as to maintain the link/circle between the living and the dead/ancestors. As we have noticed in the textual snippet quoted, if the living neglect this rite, the circle between them and the dead will be broken. Another weistic belief depicted in the fiction is that a man/woman is not born into this world alone; i.e., s/he belongs to the community and the ancestors. The foregoing is plainly shown in Baako's uncle's prayer for him: "[...] There are no humans born. You are a piece of us, of those gone before and will come again" (Armah, 1970, p. 4).

In the above textual snippet, it is obvious that an individual born into traditional African societies, especially in the traditional Ghanaian society, is not on his/her own as s/he is spiritually and socioculturally linked to his/her community and ancestors. In this sense, the individual's success is attributed to his/her community and ancestors. Again, the entire community weistically shares the joy of and celebrates the successful member. This weistic bond is encoded in Baako's uncle's prayer too: "You will come stronger, to make us stronger, wiser, to guide us with your wisdom" (Armah, 1970, p. 4). In fact, one can notice the effect of the weistic ideology in Baako's people's behaviour as they accompany him to the airport after spending their time attending the prayer ceremony organised for him by his uncle. The narrator describes this weistic attitude through Baako's grandmother. Consider how Baako's grandmother highlights the weistic ideology by means of the repeated use of the inclusive pronoun 'we' in what follows: "We [Baako's relatives] did not go with him inside the airplane to see him go. We were not allowed to go with him [...]" (p. 11).

It is crystal clear in the preceding text that weism is an ideology that binds traditional African (Ghanaian) members together. Not only does this ideology encourage and foster solidarity among traditional African members but it also instills the sense of responsibility and mutual assistance in them. To emphasise the primacy of the sense of responsibility and mutual assistance in the weistic culture, Baako's uncle praying for him clearly advises him in these terms: "Do not be persuaded [that] you will fill your stomach faster if you do not have others

to fill [...] There are no humans who walk this earth alone” (Armah, 1970, p. 4). However, Baako lamentably fails to keep this advice. When he gets to abroad, he surprisingly turns away from the weistic logic with/in which he has been brought up. As a result, he hardly sends something (money, for instance) home to his relatives. The worst is that he dares to come back home empty-handed after spending five years over there. This attitude is weistically inconceivable! Unlike Baako, Brempong, who also travels abroad, knows fully well that weism implies that one should work hard to make ends meet and satisfy the material needs of one’s family, relatives and entire community. Therefore, while in abroad, Brempong contrary to Baako, works hard to earn enough money and buys a lot of presents for his family and relatives. The foregoing clearly suggests that Brempong is a blessing to his people while Baako is the contrary.

The narrator further highlights Baako’s failure in a conversation that he has with Brempong. In this conversation, Brempong, on his return, is said to buy his mother “a complete freezer and a deep refrigerator plant, commercial model” (Armah, 1970, pp. 52-53). In fact, for Brempong, travelling abroad is “[...] a big opportunity and those at home must benefit from it too” (p. 5). This is an obvious effect of the weistic ideology. Again, Brempong argues with Baako that returning home empty-handed after spending some time abroad is a waste of time: “It’s no use,” said Brempong. [and he added] Going back home with nothing. You may not have the chance to travel again in a long time” (ibid.). In the preceding textual snippet, one can notice that Brempong is ontologically keyed to the weistic ideology. His being keyed to the weistic ideology is not actually without any social rewards. On his arrival at the airport, he is given a red-carpet celebration and addressed with these terms: “our white man”, “the big man” and “a white man”: “Eeeeei! our white man, we saw you wave! We saw you! The big man has come again, oh, they have made you a white man. Completely! And you have come back to us, your own. Thank God” (p. 56) (italics ours).

The warm welcome given to Brempong in the text above plainly confirms a Yoruba adage that says that “Olowo ni ayé mon” (“The world only knows a rich person”). One further notes in the narration that there are both rich and poor people among those who come to welcome Brempong at the airport. In fact, their coming to welcome him indicates an effect of the weistic ideology. Brempong’s rich relatives wear kente:

[...] the many voices of Brempong’s welcoming crowd resumed their excited chatter. The headlights of cars now entering the area once more lit their smiling faces and the riot of blue and green and red and yellow and black and deep gold and purple in the different kente cloths out there (Armah, 1970, p. 57).

As seen in the text above, kente is a cloth that most fortunate Ghanaians put on when there is a very important ceremony. By wearing kente to Brempong’s welcoming ceremony, his relatives clearly prove that they consider him as a very important person. The astonishing part of the welcoming ceremony is that one of Brempong’s sisters lays a kente on the ground for him to tread on:

Come, my been to, come, my brother. Walk on the best. Wipe your feet on it. Yes, it’s kente, and it’s yours to tread on. Big man, come! [and] Brempong let her lead him over the rich cloth, nodding and smiling as she yelled repeatedly to him, ‘Stamp on it, yes, great man, walk!’ (Armah, 1970, p. 59).

Although there is a display of wealth behind the African weistic tradition depicted above, one should not ignore the sense of sacrifice which it requires, especially from the celebratee (the successful returnee). According to the weistic culture, the individual is expected to cultivate a sharing attitude and gratitude toward his/her family, relatives and community. The same thing is also expected from the celebrators (the community). For instance, an old woman who happens

to join the crowd to welcome Brempong at the airport has to sacrifice her “[...] last cedi [...]” (Armah, 1970, p. 59) to take a taxi back home. The foregoing is an expression of love, which is subsumed in the weistic ideology characteristic of traditional Africa. In traditional Africa, love, not money or material wealth, is what, in actual fact, makes members of the community come together to celebrate the progress of one of their fellows. It is also love that makes them share one another’s suffering in times of hardships. But today imported or foreign religions (Christianity and Islam mainly), Western-inspired modernity, and most especially “Couferism—an uncritical imitation of Western customs” (Obiechina, 1974, p. 11) have progressively turned away the minds of most (not to say all) Africans from the weistic ideology. The character Baako can be further used to illustrate the preceding claim.

As mentioned earlier, when Baako gets to the US, he ideologically departs from the weistic tradition of his people. During his five-year stay over there, he hardly sends something (e.g. money) home to assist his parents and relatives, and even returns home empty-handed. And the worst part of it is that before coming home, he does not inform his parents and relatives. In effect, Baako’s attitude can be considered here as an ideologically misfit attitude. Consider how Baako’s mother reacts to her son’s ideologically misfit behaviour in the following text: “Oh, Baako,’ she said, trying to smile through her tears. [and she added] You came so suddenly. You didn’t give us time to get ready for you” (Armah, 1970, p. 70). It follows from the foregoing to note that Baako’s departure from the weistic ideology discursively marks his departure from African (Ghanaian) identity. Having demonstrated how the weistic ideology is represented in F, let us now move on to TFA.

In this fictional text, the weistic ideology is basically represented as a binding element in a context of murder implicating two neighbouring villages: Umuofia and Mbaino. Simply put, a married woman from Umuofia is killed in Mbaino, and this deserves an immediate address. In a bid to decide on what attitude to adopt before this murder issue, an urgent meeting is summoned by Umuofians the next day: “In the morning, the market place was full. There must have been about ten thousand men there, all talking in low voice” (Achebe, 1958, p. 8.). It is obvious in the foregoing textual snippet that the narrator is unable to give the exact figure of those who effectively attend the meeting. The token ‘about ten thousand men’ in the sentence “There must have been about ten thousand men there, all talking in low voice” unquestionably indicates this. In addition, the entire sentence shows the interest all the participants attach to the meeting as they attend it in a numerically huge number. In fact, these participants are so interested in the murder case that their anger mounts increasingly as the meeting progresses. One can notice the preceding apprehension in the orator’s, Ugbuefi Ezeugo’s verbal and non-verbal semiotic behaviour: “Those sons of wild animals have dared to murder a daughter of Umuofia. He threw his head down and gnashed teeth and allowed a murmuring of suppressed anger to sweep the crowd” (p. 8).

The participants’ attitude in general denotes sympathy, another value subsumed in the weistic ideology. Note that most of the participants attend the meeting without knowing the victim in person. In traditional Africa, one does not forcefully need to know a victim (of a doom or disaster) in person before sympathising with him/her or his/her family. In fact, this does not matter, what really matters is that the victim belongs to the same community as oneself. To prove that not all the participant members of the meeting know the victim, let us quote the orator’s speech wherein he introduces the victim’s husband, Ugbuefi Udo, to the audience:

And in a clear unemotional voice he told Umuofia [...] [that] That woman said Ezeugo, was the wife of Ugbuefi Udo, and he pointed to a man who sat near him with a bowed head. The crowd then shouted with anger and thirst for blood (Achebe, 1958, p. 8).

As stated earlier on, not only does the weistic ideology subsume sympathy, but it also includes love, unity and social peace. The people who attend the meeting actually do so because they share in common the aforementioned core weistic values. At the meeting, these men reflect on how to treat the murder issue. Guided by these values still, they in conclusion come up with a decision meant to promote social peace, instead of war, through dialogue: “An ultimatum was immediately dispatched to Mbaino asking them to choose between war on the one hand, and on the other offer of a young man and a virgin as compensation” (Achebe, 1958, p. 8). The decision taken by the people of Umuofia is accepted by the people of Mbaino as they finally give out “[...] a lad of fifteen and a young virgin” (p. 9) to Okonkwo, their emissary. According to the decision, the virgin girl should be given to the bereaved husband, Egbuefi Udo as wife. It follows from this representation to emphasise that traditional African societies, especially the traditional Ibo society, have their own ways of solving social problems, including conflicts, etc.

It is important to point out at this level that the weistic ideology permeates the moral code in traditional Africa, and this code is not a respecter of anybody. This is to say, it applies indiscriminatorily and incompacently to everybody, man or woman, young or adult, weak or strong, powerful or powerless, known or un-known, etc. For instance, when Okonkwo, a reputed wrestler and title-owner in Umuofia, inadvertently kills a young boy, he is sanctioned (Achebe, 1958, p. 86), his houses, animals and barns are burned down and he and his family are forced into exile for seven good years. The narrator actually emphasises the destruction of Okonkwo’s belongings with a view of not foregrounding the barbaric nature of the sanction but its cleansing nature; the land has to be cleansed of the blood of the young boy. Note that those who partake in the execution of the sanction have nothing against Okonkwo. In fact, his best friend, Obierika is one of them: “They had no hatred in their heart against Okonkwo, Obierika was among them” (p. 87).

When Okonkwo and his entire household are forced into exile, they find refuge in a neighbouring village called Mbanta, Okonkwo’s motherland. His uncle, Uchendu welcomes him and his family without bothering to find out why they have left Umuofia. This denotes love and mainly hospitality, a sacrosanct value subsumed in the weistic ideology:

It was not until the following day that Okonkwo told him the full story. The old man listened silently to the end and then said with some relief: ‘it is a female ochu [murder]’. And he arranged the requisite rites and sacrifices (Achebe, 1958, p. 91).

Further, Uchendu gives his nephew a plot of land on which to settle down and two or three others on which to farm: “Okonkwo was given a plot of ground on which to build his compound and two or three pieces on which to farm during the coming planting season” (p.91). Okonkwo’s maternal uncle’s attitude actually reveals an effect of the weistic ideology in that only someone raised and socialised in the (weistic) ways of traditional Africa can behave in such a fraternal way. He is so hospitable and caring, indeed! His kind gesture towards Okonkwo truly facilitates his social integration in Mbanta. If Okonkwo has not had an uncle ingrained in the weistic culture or/and ideology, one can imagine his plight and that of his entire family. He and his family will be treated like outsiders. An example of outsiders in the narration is the white missionaries who also want a piece of land like Okonkwo on which to build their church (called shrine in the fiction), they are given a portion of Evil Forest instead. By giving a portion of Evil Forest to the missionaries, Okonkwo’s maternal people actually want to test the power that these missionaries claim they have over death:

‘They [the white missionaries] want a piece of land to build their shrine,’ said Uchendu [Okonkwo’s maternal uncle] to his peers when they consulted among themselves. We shall give them a piece of land.’[...] Let us give them a portion of Evil Forest. They boast about victory over death. Let us give them a real battlefield in which to show their victory (p. 105).

Another aspect of the weistic ideology depicted in the novel is an unfailing friendship. While in exile, Okonkwo maintains and sustains his friendship ties with Obierika who lives in Umuofia. In fact, before he goes into exile, he entrusts Obierika with some of his yams. The latter sells them and brings the money to him in Mbanta. Pertaining to this, the narrator has this to say: “When they had eaten, Obierika pointed at the two bags. ‘That is the money from your yams’, he said” (Achebe, 1958, p. 100). Obierika’s loyalty to Okonkwo actually helps him to sustain his financial capacity, which is highly instrumental for preparing his return to Umuofia. As we are later told, in the last year of his exile, “Okonkwo has sent money to Obierika to build him two huts in his old compound where him and his family would live until he built more huts and the outside wall of his compound” (p. 115). As we have seen, Okonkwo has been able to cope with his exile experience thanks to the weistic bond between him and his uncle, Uchendu, on the one hand, and his best friend, Obierika, on the other (these two men are arguably ingrained in the weistic tradition). And this bond has served a great deal to facilitate his (re-)integration and most importantly sustain his financial capacity throughout his exile period. For example, while Okonkwo is still in exile, we are informed that “His yams grew abundantly, not only in his motherland [Mbanta] but also in Umuofia where his friend gave them out year by year to share-croppers” (p. 121).

4. CONCLUSION

This paper has set out to demonstrate how the weistic ideology is represented in two classical African novels, namely: *Fragments* and *Things Fall Apart*. Drawing its theoretical insights from Dogbe (1980), Gbadegesin (1991), Van Dijk (1995; 2006), Gyekye (1996b), Akpomovie (2009) and the qualitative content analysis research method, this study has argued that weism is an ideology which cognitively and socially forges or/and shapes the behaviour patterns and controls the beliefs of members of traditional Africa. The analysis has revealed some important findings. It has exuded, for instance, that characters like Baako and Brempong in *Fragments* and Okonkwo, Obierika and Uchendu in *Things Fall Apart* are ontologically ingrained at varying degrees in the weistic culture of traditional Africa.

However, at the contact of the Western world, Baako quickly deviates from this culture, and subsequently turns into an ideological misfit for his society. It is important to emphasise at this stage that Brempong, like Baako, travels abroad, but he manages to maintain and sustain his weistic tradition all through. This denotes ideological constance. In fact, this is what ensures his reintegration on his return. In the same token, Okonkwo who is forced into exile after committing a crime is able to survive in Mbanta (his motherland) thanks to the fraternal assistance of his uncle, Uchendu. Again, he is able to connect to his hometown, Umuofia, owing to the unfailing friendship of Obierika, who helps him to sell his yams, grow his yams and rebuild his compound. This friendly attitude facilitates Okonkwo’s return and reintegration in Umuofia. As demonstrated in this study, weism is an ideology that ontologically constrains the individual, in traditional Africa, to consider the interest of others first in everything s/he is doing. It also promotes solidarity, cohesion, unity, love, hospitality and social peace in society. Based on these findings, we affirm that weism can serve as an alternative ideological solution to the multifarious and complex social problems contemporary Africa is facing today.

REFERENCES

1. Achebe, C. (1958). *Things Fall Apart*. Heinemann Educational Books.
2. Adichie, C. N. (2003). *Purple Hibiscus*. First Edition edn: Farafina: Lagos.

3. Akpomuvie, O. B. (2009). Culture, Religion and African Philosophy. In International Journal of Theology & Reformed Tradition, Vol 1, pp.118-134.
4. Armah, A. A. (1970). Fragments. Heinemann Educational Books.
5. Darko, A. (2003). Faceless, First Edition. Accra, Ghana: Sub-Saharan Publishers.
6. Dogbe, K. (1980). Concept of Community and Community Support Systems in Africa. In Anthropos, 75, H 5./6, pp 781-798. JSTOR. Web. 27 October 2011.
7. Gbadegesin, S. (1991). African Philosophy: Traditional Yoruba Philosophy and Contemporary African Realities. New York, NY: Peter Lang.
8. Geary, D. M. (2012). Transnationalism and Identity: the Concept of Community in Ghanaian Literature and Contemporary Ghanaian Culture. Honors Theses. 102.
https://digitalcommons.bucknell.edu/honors_theses/102
9. Gyekye, K. (1992a). Person and Community in African Thought. In Person and Community. ed. Kwasi Wiredu and Kwame Gyekye, Washington, D.C.: Council for Research in Values and Philosophies, pp. 101-122.
10. Gyekye, K. (1996b) African Cultural Values: An Introduction. Philadelphia, PA: Sankofa Publishing Company.
11. Menkiti, I. A. (1979). Person and Community in African Traditional Thought. In African Philosophy: An Introduction. Ed. Richard A. Wright. Washington, D.C.: University Press of America, pp. 157-168.
12. Obiechina, E. (1974). Culture, Tradition and Society in the West African Novel, First Edition. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
13. Van Dijk, T. A. (2006). Ideology and Discourse Analysis. In Journal of Political Ideologies, 11 (2), pp. 115-140.
14. Van Dijk, T. A. (1995). Discourse Analysis as Ideology Analysis. In: C. Schäffner & A. Wenden (Eds.). Language and Peace. Aldershot: Dartmouth Publishing.

**SYSTEM PRINCIPLES OF AUTONOMOUS LEARNING OF PROFESSIONALLY
ORIENTED ENGLISH COMMUNICATION OF PRE-SERVICE EDUCATORS**

Assoc. Prof. Dr. Natalia DMITRENKO

ORCID ID: 0000-0002-3556-0003

Vinnitsia Mykhailo Kotsiubynskyi State Pedagogical University, Faculty of Foreign
Languages, Department of Methods of Foreign Languages Teaching,
Vinnitsia, Ukraine

ABSTRACT

The analysis of scientific concepts that reveal the specific problem features of autonomous learning of professionally oriented English communication of pre-service educators is conducted. To provide the theoretical substantiation and methodological development of the methodological system principles of autonomous learning of professionally oriented English communication of pre-service educators. Analyse of the studies on the scientific problem of autonomous learning, with the aim to substantiate methodological system principles of autonomous learning of professionally oriented English communication of pre-service educators. In the article, the fundamentals of autonomous learning of professionally oriented English communication of pre-service educators are grounded. The components of the methodological system principles of autonomous learning of professionally oriented English communication of pre-service educators are presented. Organizational conditions and methods of autonomous learning of professionally oriented English communication of pre-service educators are described. The assessment criteria of formation level of autonomous learning of professionally oriented English communication of pre-service educators are defined. The results of the study reveal the objectivity and cogency of the data and prove the efficiency of the developed methodological system principles of autonomous learning of professionally oriented English communication of pre-service educators.

Keywords: autonomous learning, methodological system principles, professionally oriented English communication, pre-service educators.

COMPARING MANAGEMENT CONTROL SYSTEMS AND PERFORMANCE BY CHARACTERISTICS OF ENTERPRISES

Prof. Dr. Oanh Thi Tu LE

University of Labor and Social Affairs, Hanoi, Vietnam

ORCID ID: 0000-0002-2823-2204

Duc Minh NGUYEN

Hanoi University of Science and Technology, Vietnam

ABSTRACT

The article aims to evaluate the implementation of management control systems (MCS) on the performance of Vietnamese enterprises, in terms of the firm size and age. Data was collected from 308 participants, including accountants, CEOs of Vietnamese firms. The structural equation modeling tool of SPSS - Amos 20 software was used to assess the research model. Our main findings show that: There is ever-increasing attention on the implementation of MCS from Vietnamese firms; however, the degree of utilization is still heavily dependent on the business size and age. Accordingly, in terms of firm size, the medium-sized enterprises, by utilizing successfully both Diagnostic control systems and Interactive control systems, achieve the highest performance level; whereas large-sized ones, focusing mainly on Diagnostic control systems, represent a lower degree of effectiveness. Finally, the small businesses, which are less likely concerned about MCS use on generating organizational capital, obtain the worst result. Regarding the age, the 5 to 10 years businesses reflect the greatest performance, thanks to their skillfully and wisely implementation of MCS use on planning and achieving strategic goals. On the contrary, the over 10 years enterprises show a very poor result comparing to the first group, due to the excessive use of diagnostic control systems on management. Likewise, the newly enterprises receive the same outcome as the second group, despite they prefer diagnostic control systems. These results suggest to Vietnamese enterprises implement regular and uniform managerial control to achieve better performance.

Keywords: Diagnostic control systems, Enterprises' size and age, Interactive control systems, Management control systems, Performance.

1. INTRODUCTION

"Management control systems" (MCS) are widely acknowledged and receive huge attention from researchers over the last two decades, hence providing an effective measurement tool to evaluate the performance level of enterprises (Saeed, NurFarhana, & Mohammed, 2017). Anthony (1965) is the first person to bring the term "Management control systems" into the academic world as well as provide the theoretical acknowledgment about MCS, defining these systems as "the process by which managers ensure that resources are obtained and used effectively and efficiently in the accomplishment of the organization's objectives". The above definition constrained subsequent scholars not only to foresee MCS as encircling the mostly accounting-based pedals of planning examination of activities, as well as measuring concerted effort and integrated instrument, it can also serve synthetically distinct management control from operational control and strategic control.

Since then, the theoretical understandings of MCS have been developed and implemented in various business aspects (Merchant & Simon, 1986; Otley et al., 1994; Simon, 1995). Merchant and Simons (1986) have shown a broader dimension about MCS use, mainly focusing on the agency theory and behavioral theory. Otley et al (1994) indicate the close relationship between

MCS use and accounting, viewing accounting as an essential part of MCS; since it is a formal mechanism of gathering and communicating data for the ends of aiding and coordinating collective decisions in the light of the overall goals or objectives of an organization. Simon (1995) referred to MCS as the formal, information-based routines and procedures managers use to maintain or alter patterns in organization activities. Other researchers have imposed various definitions of MCS, including the perspective that MCS consists of systematic use of management accounting to achieve some goals (diagnostic control systems) and other controls such as personal and clan controls (interactive control system) (Chenhall, 2003).

Diagnostic control systems are the use of performance measurement systems (PMS) or KPIs (key performance indicators) to monitor organizational performance against important dimensions or a given strategy (Simon, 1995; Widener, 2007). Such systems include a broad range of metrics key areas for comparing actual performance against preset targets, thus identifying exceptions and deviations from plans (Mundy, 2010). Diagnostic controls consist of data transmitted through formal reports and rely heavily on a specialist to prepare and interpret information (Widener, 2007). In its purest form, a diagnostic system acts as (i) monitoring and (ii) legitimizing operations (Vandenbosch, 1999; Simon, 2000).

Monitoring is a composite activity of standardized processes for obtaining and processing management information. Such processes evolve over long periods and seek to keep up-to-date information for the relevant business (e.g., fulfillment of goals or the degree of progress in an initiative) (Simon, 1994). Monitoring is characterized by the consistency between periods so that comparisons are easy to make. The purpose of monitoring activities is mainly to ensure that the business obtains the information necessary for accessing whether or not objectives have been achieved.

Legitimizing decision (legitimation): Effective decisions must go through a process of legitimation. As described by Vadenbosch (1999), this type of use refers principally to justify and validate past actions, thus increasing and ensuring the legitimacy of future action.

Interactive MCS use implies formal two-way processes of communication where employee participation is encouraged in a formal process of debate (enabling employees to search for opportunities, solve a problem, make decisions). At this point, the interactive use of MCS provides a vehicle for top management to reveal their values and preferences to organizational members (Simons, 1995; Mundy, 2010). In short, interactive use focuses on the formulation and use of predictions in dealing with the effects of environmental uncertainty on firm operations. Interactive control systems use, comprised of (i) Focusing organizational attention and (ii) strategic decision-making uses (Vandenbosch, 1999; Simons, 2000).

Focusing organizational attention (Attention focusing): Using MCS to direct attention is done by responding to the question “what problem must we focus on?” “what opportunities and challenges are presented?” (Simons, 1995). This type of question contributes to creating positive and frequent dialogue among top managers and employees (Widener, 2007). However, several factors are leading to the successful implementation of attention focusing, including democratic management style, decentralized management, entrepreneurial spirit, and independence.

Strategic decision-making: Fast decision-makers use more information and develop more alternatives than slow ones (Eisenhardt, 1989). Therefore, the huge source of information gathered by MCS use plays a significant role in helping top managers with the process of making strategic decisions as well as coping with the rapid changes in the business environment.

According to Kaplan & Norton (1992), the purpose of the MCS is to support the processes of decision-making, planning, monitoring, and evaluation by providing valuable and relevant information at the right time. MCS use, in the beginning, is designed as an effective system in management control in industrial countries' consortiums, which are characterized by separation of ownership and control, thus leading to the potential agency problem. Therefore, using MCS ensures the interests of sub-units go in line with organizational strategic goals. Besides, MCS also provides essential information to help top managers alter and make necessary changes to formal organizational strategies (Sljivic et al., 2015).

It is widely accepted that a firm's MCS is designed to ensure the execution of work plans so that the actual results can be compared to the desired performance; besides, MCS use is also recommended for facilitating strategy implementation and enhancing organizational performance, through the processes of providing numerous information about enterprises' current state as well as predictions to strategic environmental uncertainty (Simons, 1990). When dealing with business uncertainty, it is necessary to collect as much valuable information as possible, to achieve a strategic goal while reducing the risks of failures. For instance, diagnostic control systems provide up-to-date information about the progress of conducting businesses. On the other side, interactive control systems can be used to expand opportunity-seeking, improving the firms' decision-making. At this point, the implementation of various MCS uses is viewed as the critical step to planning and monitoring organizational strategic goals by different levels of uncertainty. In summary, using both diagnostic and interactive control systems can help enterprises interpret a large amount of unidentified information resulting from the external environment (Janke et al, 2014).

Based on the facts of prior discussion, it is strongly believed that MCS use is making a great contribution to business management, strategy formulation, and implementation. Moreover, previous studies have indicated that MCS can be viewed as the most significant resource of a firm, based on the hypothesis that MCS can generate company's profits as well as facilitate the process of evaluation and decision-making to obtain a positive impact on improving organizational performance (Ittner et al., 2003; Chenhall, 2003; Kaplan & Norton, 1996).

The concept of performance is not limited to only the financial aspect (such as company's revenues, profits, operational profit), but also integrates non-financial aspects such as customer satisfaction, productivity, quality, and innovation (Henri & Journeault, 2010). According to Franco Santos et al. (2012), performance comprises of reported performance and perceived performance. The reported performance is based on information internally or externally reported and can be financial or non-financial. Perceived performance is based on responses from research participants' perceptions of firm performance, hence can be measured both objectively and subjectively.

In conclusion, the impact of MCS uses on organizational performance has been the center of discussion in numerous academic studies searchers, thus receive huge attention from economists and many other organizational scholars. Along with the massive development in numerous facets of society, such as personal expectations, socio-economic environment, technological abilities, MCS use has been evolving over the last 50 years, since their very first theoretical principles were developed by Anthony. While the core factors of MCS use remain, the implementations of modern MCS use vary regarding the contextual as well as environmental businesses. Therefore, it is an urgent need to conduct comprehensive studies to examine the various impacts of MCS use on different dimensions of business contexts, plus obtaining theoretical evidence as well as the achievements of enterprises. With this regard, the main purpose of this research is to examine the implementations of MCS use in the case of Vietnamese firms, thus evaluate diverse impacts of MCS use on organizational performance in

terms of firms' size and age to provide precious understandings for Vietnamese firms' managers to enhance levels of organizational performance.

2. RESEARCH METHODOLOGY

2.1. Research process

The study is conducted by using an official questionnaire survey made on Google forms, then sent to accountants and business managers via email, messenger, and zalo apps. We apply the convenience sampling method for the fact that participants are friends, relatives, and business partners, etc.

The questionnaire is outlined with the view to evaluating the levels of implementation of MCS use in Vietnamese enterprises, including (i) Diagnostic control systems use; (ii) Interactive control system use; (iii) Performance. (iv) Business information. A 5 -point Likert scale ranging from (1) "well- below the average" (highly disagree) to (5)- "well- above the average" (highly agree) was used to measure items in the first three constructs, while the nominal scale was used to measure items in the last construct.

As the result, the online survey shows 315 respondents successfully filling the survey. Then, the data was collected using excel and examined by using SPSS 20.0, which comprises of frequencies method, analysis of mean, correlation, outcome evaluation. Among these, 7 observations were removed due to missing values....In total, 308 valid observations are used for the analysis.

2.2. Research scale

Diagnostic control systems measurement consists of 04 variables from the Monitoring measure and 09 variables of Legalization, which were inherited from Henri (2006a) and Vandenbosch (1999).

Likewise, Interactive control systems measurement includes 07 variables of Focusing attention measures and 07 variables from Decision- making measures taken from Brockman and Simmonds (1997).

Business Performance measurement comprises non-financial and financial targets, which was adopted by Gomez – Villanueva (2008) and Orozco (2016).

Control variables were evaluated in terms of firm size and by the number of employees (small-sized with fewer than 100 employees; medium-sized with 100 up to 200 people, large-sized with more than 200 people.; in terms of years of operation, enterprises are categorized into three groups (under 5 years, from 5 to 10 years, and over 10 years).

Details of the scale measurement are thoroughly manifested in Table 1 and the firms' characteristics are shown in Table 2.

Table 1. Scale descriptions

No.	Scale	No. of items	Sources
1	Diagnostic control systems	13	Henri (2006a); Vandebosch (1999)
	Monitoring	04	
	Legitimizing	09	
2	Interactive control systems	14	Brockman & Simmonds (1997)
	Attention-focusing	07	
	Strategic decision-making	07	
3	Performance	05	Gómez-Villanueva (2008); Orozco (2016)

Table 2. Characteristics of Firms

Characteristics		N = 308	Percentage (%)
Size of firms (Number of employees)	< 100 people	168	54,5
	100 - 200 people	94	30,5
	> 200 people	46	14,9
Age of firms	< 5 yrs	80	26
	5 - 10 yrs	151	49
	> 10 yrs	77	25
Total		308	100

Table 2 shows the firm size relating to the number of employees, which points out that the majority of enterprises are small-sized with fewer than 100 people (168, 54%), followed by medium-sized with 100 up to 200 people (94; 30.5%), the rest is over 200 people. In terms of years of operation, enterprises from 5 to 10 years are higher than those over 10 years and those under 5 years (151;49%). The above characteristics are typical for Vietnamese enterprises when the majority of firms are small and medium-sized, young age, private ownership, and in trading and services (OECD, 2021). Therefore, the survey object is the vivid representative of Vietnam companies.

3. RESULTS AND DISCUSSION

3.1. Status of MCS and performance of Vietnamese firms

Diagnostic control systems (DM) consist of Legitimizing and Monitoring organizational strategies. Figure 1 shows the impact of MCS use as a monitoring tool. As consequence,

Vietnamese firms have applied MCS as a monitoring use to achieve organizational goals (mean over 3.76). Monitoring on results of pre-established objects obtains the highest mean (3.9), followed by monitoring use on the processes of achieving strategic goals (mean 3.86) and monitoring use on estimated goals comparison (mean 3.84). The review key measures are barely used (mean 3.76).

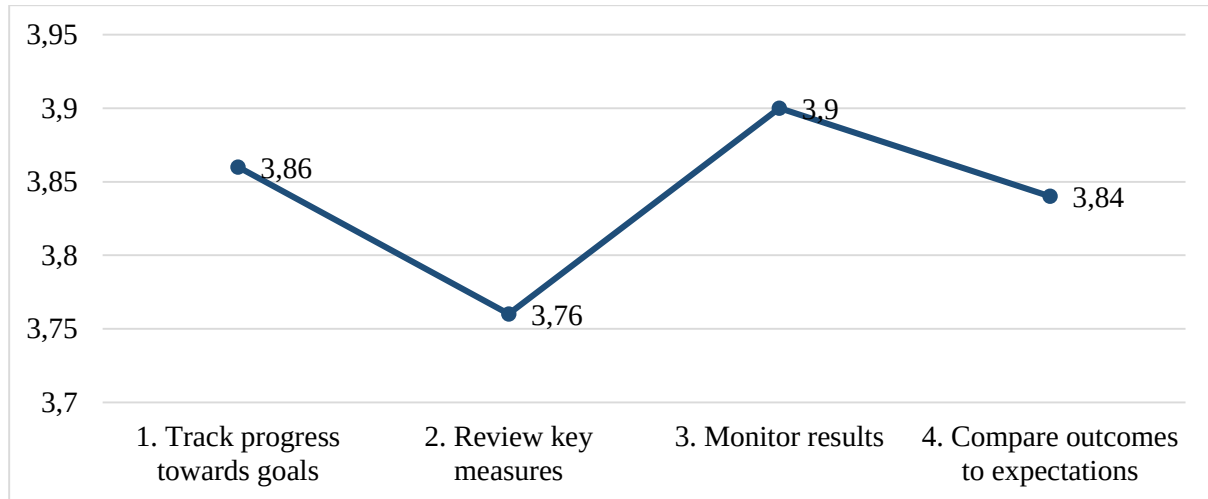


Figure 1. Monitoring MCS use

Figure 2 indicates Diagnostic controls as a legitimization tool enables managers to give the authority and credibility to provide legitimacy of activities, hence consolidate the belief of employees in their decision-making. According to this figure, almost all companies obtain MCS uses in association with the implementation of regulations and legal documents (mean from 3.67 to 3.86). Specifically, those firms encouraging the employees to support organizational strategies and promote participation and involvement of employees in the development of organization are highest mean (from 3.79 to 3.85), followed by those providing the legitimacy of activities, explain and evaluate the understandings as well as attitude of employees towards various environmental uncertainties and initiation and implementation of strategic decisions (mean from 3.73 to 3.77). Enterprises using MCS as tools to expect employees to support strategic goals take the lowest mean (3.67).

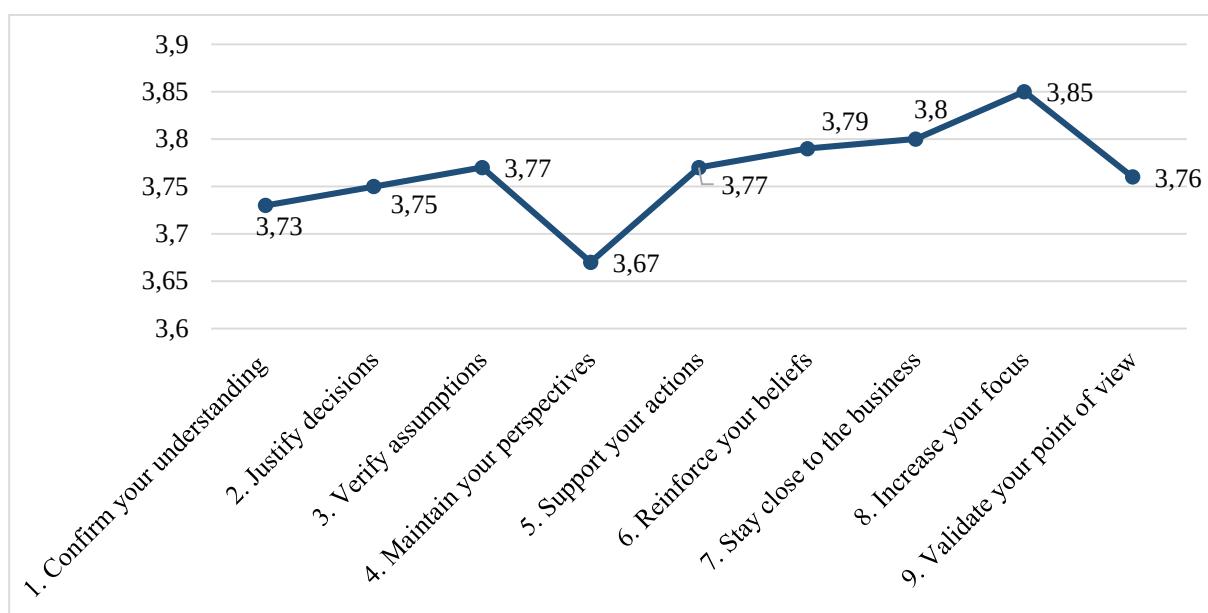


Figure 2. Legitimizing MCS use

Interactive control systems

Interactive control systems, comprise attention focusing and strategic decision-making uses. The utilization of Interactive control systems in companies is described in Figures 3 and 4.

Figure 3 indicates that the majority of companies use MCS as decision – making tool (mean from 3.57 to 3.85). In particular, the first group of enterprises which obtains the process of deciding in required, identified, or major cases obtain good scores (mean 3.85, 3.84, and 3.81 respectively). The second group, which applies decision-making uses in unconventional situations, such as making the structured decision or against the company’s estimates, recognizes a lower mean but is relatively unchanged (from 3.73 to 3.77).

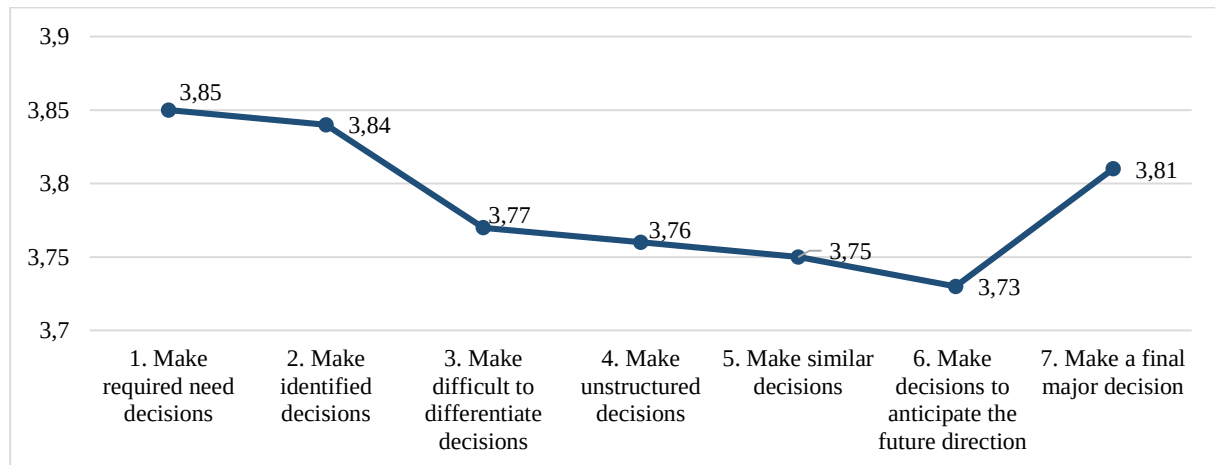


Figure 3. Decision-making MCS use

In Figure 4, all parts of Attention- focusing use receive a positive mean (3.75 to 3.87). The degree of Attention – focusing use in encouraging participation of employees informal meetings of company accomplishes the highest score (mean 3.87), followed by using in generating arguments and discussions towards organizational plans and operations, plus paying attention to the key factors as well as promoting the strong connection between managers and employees and aiming to achieve the mutual benefits (mean 3.79 to 3.82), while the implementation in providing firm’s comment view is the lowest mean (3.75).

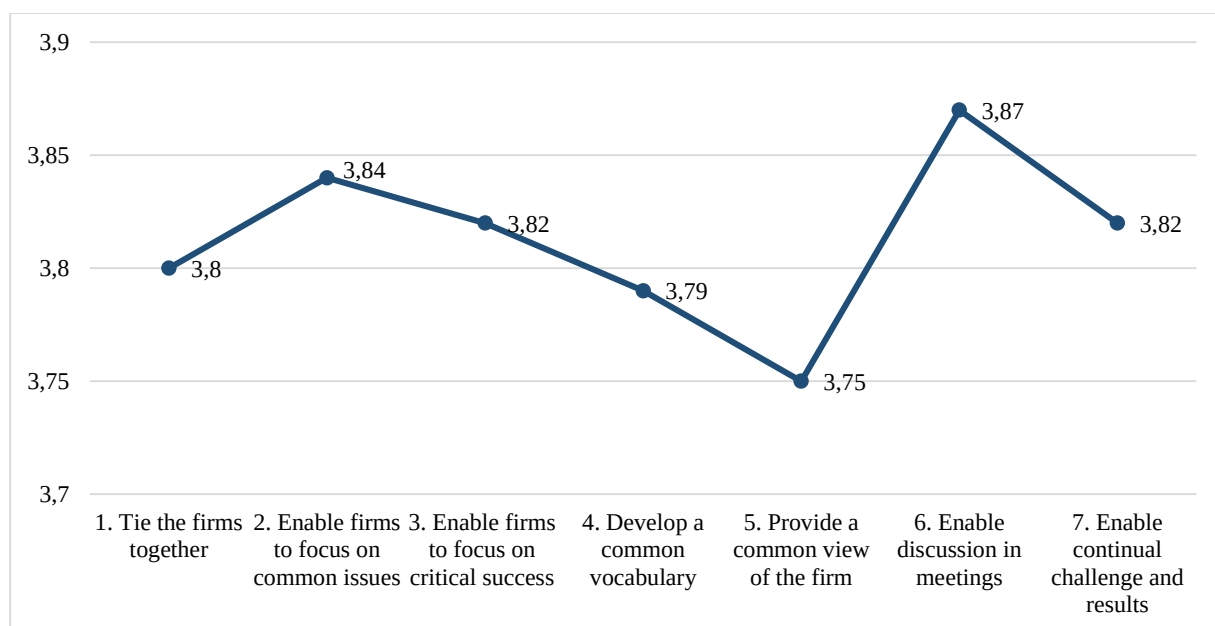


Figure 4. Attention – focusing MCS use

Business performance is examined by both financial aspects (such as the company's revenues, profits, operational profit), and non-financial aspects such as customer satisfaction, productivity, quality, and innovation. In Figure 5, business performance is measured by analyzing firm outcomes and organizational goals. The results show that performance is evaluated at the target level (mean from 3.61 to 3.64). Enterprises that achieve Sales and Customer satisfaction are higher than the target of profit, ROI, and employee satisfaction.

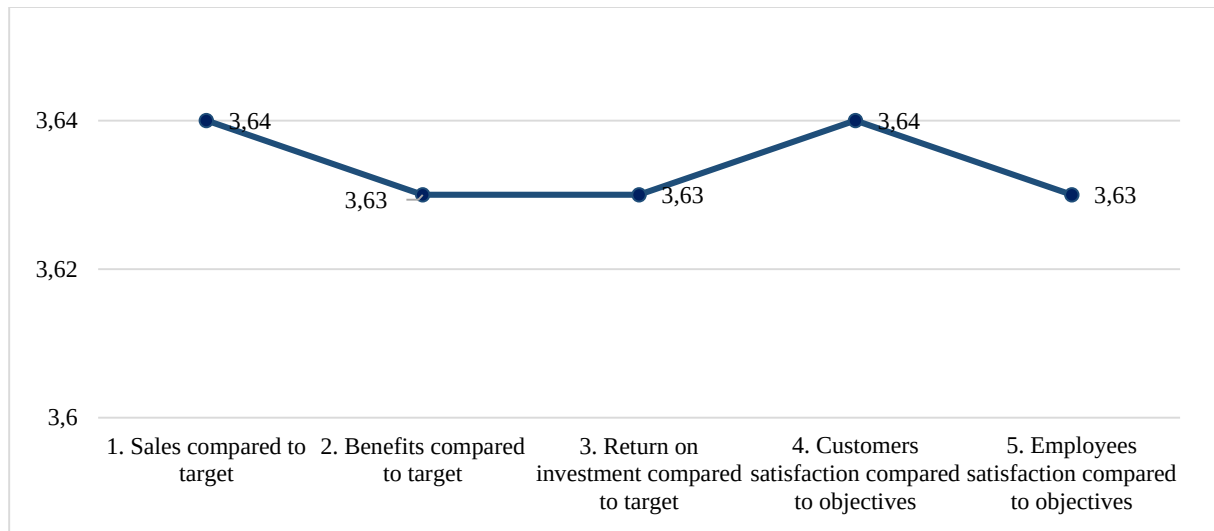


Figure 5. Business performance

3.2. Comparing MCS use and performance by business characteristics

MCS uses in terms of the firm size

Figure 6 shows the results of the process of analyzing the differences in the implementations of MCS use, including DM and IM of the small-sized firm (under 100 employees), medium-sized (from 100 to 200 employees), and large firm (over 200 employees).

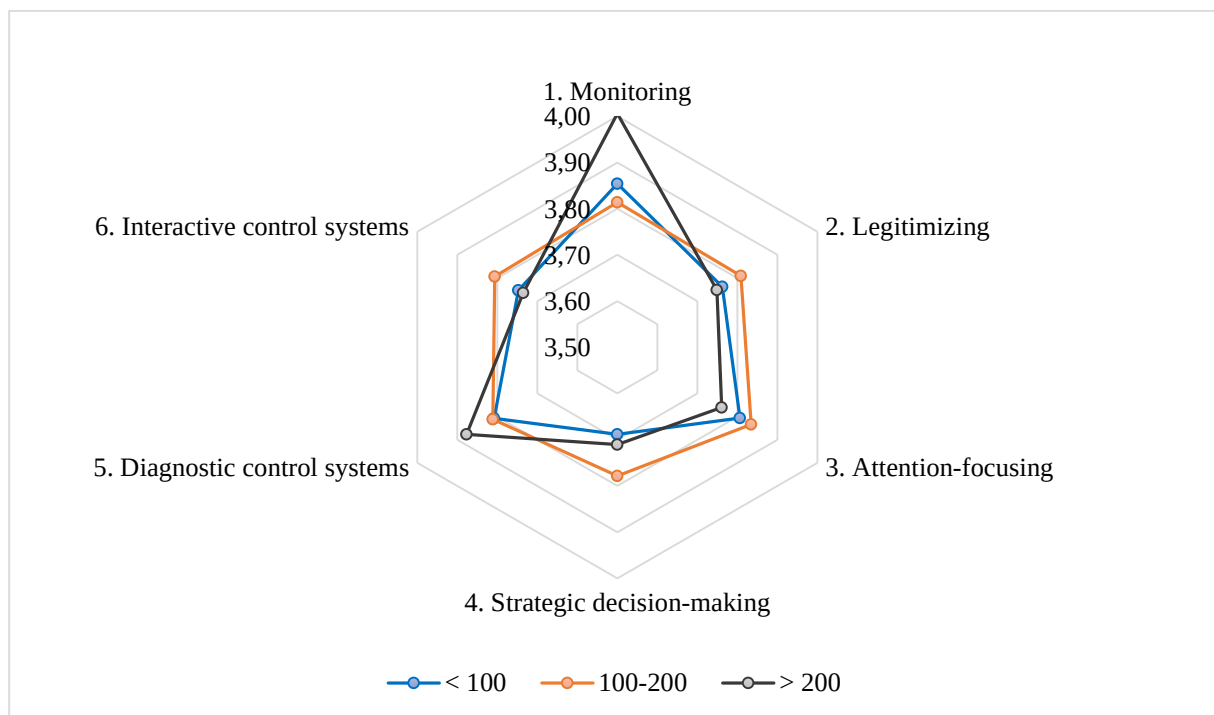


Figure 6. Comparing MCS uses by firm size

Large-sized enterprises use more Diagnostic control than small and medium-sized ones, especially monitoring activities (mean 4.01). However, these enterprises performed the worst Interactive control (mean 3.74). Medium-sized enterprises exercise the most uniform control measures and conduct the highest interaction control (means 3.81) with attention-focusing and strategic decision making. Small businesses have the worst controls.

Performance regarding the firm size

In Figure 7, we conduct an assessment of the diverse levels of organizational performance comparing business size. Accordingly, medium-sized companies achieve the best degree of performance, such as financial and non-financial targets, generating a huge of profits and customer satisfaction, followed by the large companies. Among measurement indicators of performance, all three types of enterprises have revenues exceeding organizational targets, thus reaching the highest score of all indicators. In detail, the large and medium-sized companies take the same level (mean 3.67), while the small-sized companies have the lowest (mean 3.62). All indicators of organizational performance of small-sized businesses have the same level, however, the indicator of organizational targets exceeding is the lowest.

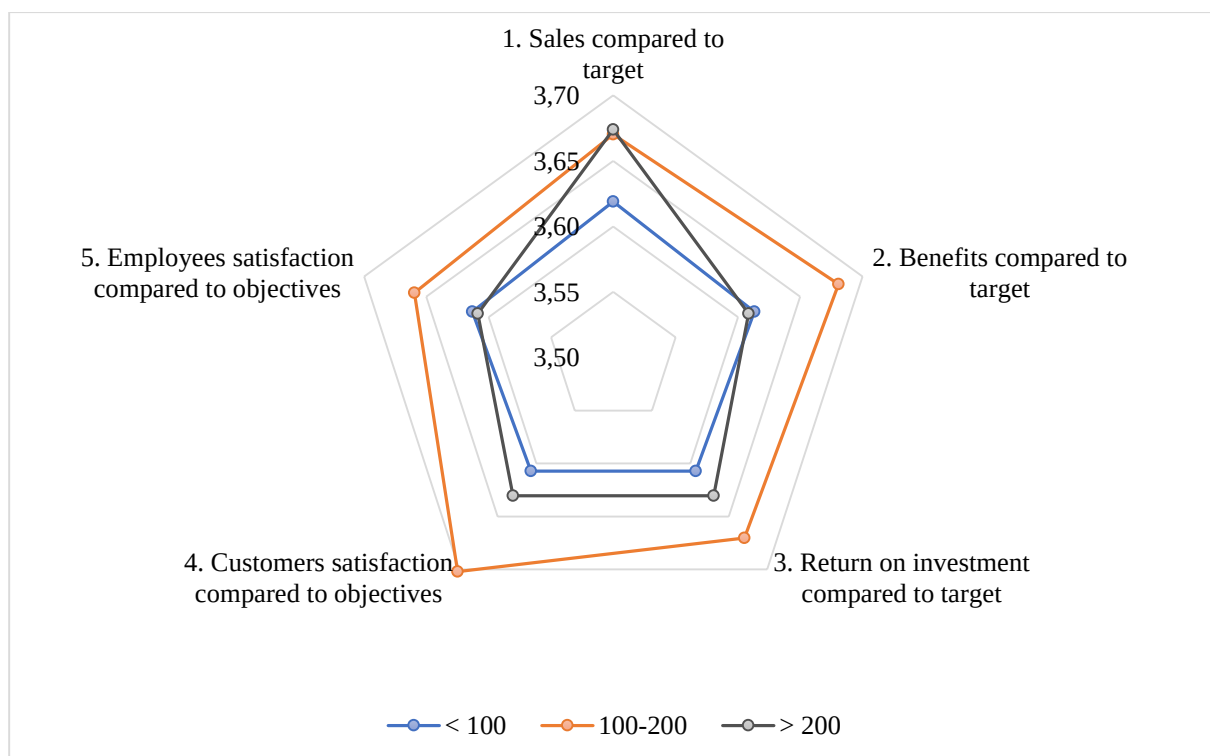


Figure 7. Comparing performance by firm size

In short, results from Figures 6 and 7 indicate that the implementation of MCS use in medium-sized enterprises has led to better performance. Moreover, using interactive control systems constantly results in the highest level of customer and employee satisfaction of the three groups. Besides, the combination of DM and IM contributed to the significant improvement of organizational revenues, profits, and ROI. For large companies, focusing on DM help them exceed the pre-planned goals in terms of revenue, but has a small effect on other indicators. Similarly, small-sized businesses, though pay huge attention to DM, receive poor results in comparison to the other groups. The results of examining organizational performance in terms of the firm size show that the Vietnamese medium-sized enterprises have proactively and

positively utilized the MCS use to enhance organizational performance, while the large enterprises cannot fully exploit the potential applications of MCS uses to achieve their targets. Small-sized enterprises, due to the lack of necessary resources, poor managerial experiences, cease to meet their expected performance.

Moreover, this result also provides precious acknowledgment on how to utilize MCS use to boost organizational performance. Diagnostic control systems use has a positive influence on the development of capabilities plus, the performance; however, the overuse of monitoring MCS could lead to a negative effect on the attitude of employees. Therefore, it is necessary to implement both diagnostic and interactive control systems with the view to increasing the self-independence of employees as well as the two-way discussion between managers and employees, which results in the superior performance of enterprises. Nevertheless, to further evaluate the impact of MCS use on performance, it'd be better to conduct quantitative researches.

MCS uses in terms of firm age

The various implementations of MCS use by firm age (under 5 years, 5 to 10 years, over 10 years) are presented in Figure 8. Overall, enterprises prefer using DM to IM, especially in monitoring organizational operations. In terms of age, enterprises which establish from 5 to 10 years obtain the level of implementation of MCS use in managerial activities more equally; while the under 5 years and over 10 years enterprises record the similar level of MCS uses, which is lower comparing to the 5 to 10 years sector. Of all three sectors, the under 5 years has the lowest degree of MCS uses.

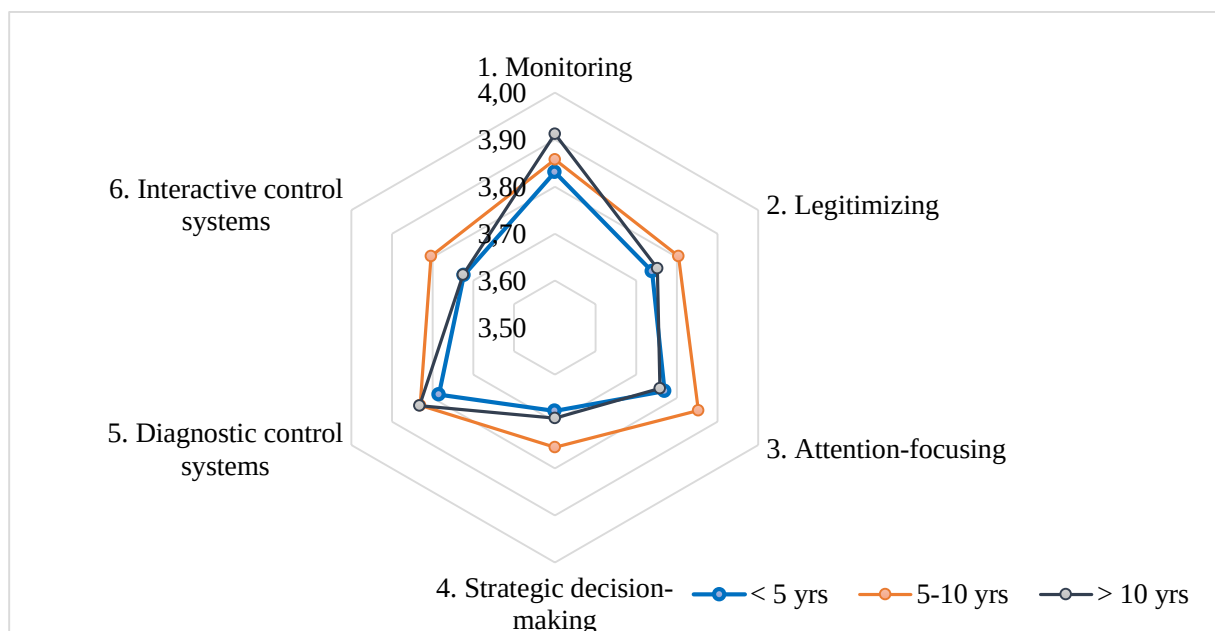


Figure 8. Comparing MCS by firm age

Performance in regards to firm age

In figure 9, we perform a test to evaluate the influence of business age on business performance. As the result, the 5 to 10 years firms achieve the highest degree of performance, followed by the over 10 years firms, plus they both share the same ROI. All three sectors acquire the balance of financial measures (revenue, profit, ROI). However, the under 5 years firms have the lower

leverage of non-financial indicators achieved (such as customer satisfaction, employee satisfaction) than financial indicators.

Analyzing the link between MCS uses and organizational performance (Figure 8 & 9), the test's results indicate that the 5 to 10 years businesses obtain great outcomes in all measures provided. More specifically, the degree of using MCS is more frequent than in the past, thus reaching the best performance exceeding business targets, while maintaining the balance between non-financial and financial indicators of the organization. The over 10 years and under 5 years businesses share the same frequency in the degree of MCS use, however, the performance of those over 10 years is better than those under 5 years. In general, the 5 to 10 years enterprises, which are undergoing the challenging periods of entrepreneurship, tend to apply equally both (DM) and (IM) in business operations, have the greatest results in three sections. Conversely, the over 10 years businesses, posing large market share, mainly focus on (DM), thus result in lower outcomes than the 5 to 10 years businesses. For the under 5 years businesses, which are still facing numerous hardships, such as the limited sources of revenue, partners, market share as well as struggling to seek the development strategies, seem to express less concern about MCS uses, achieve the worst performance.

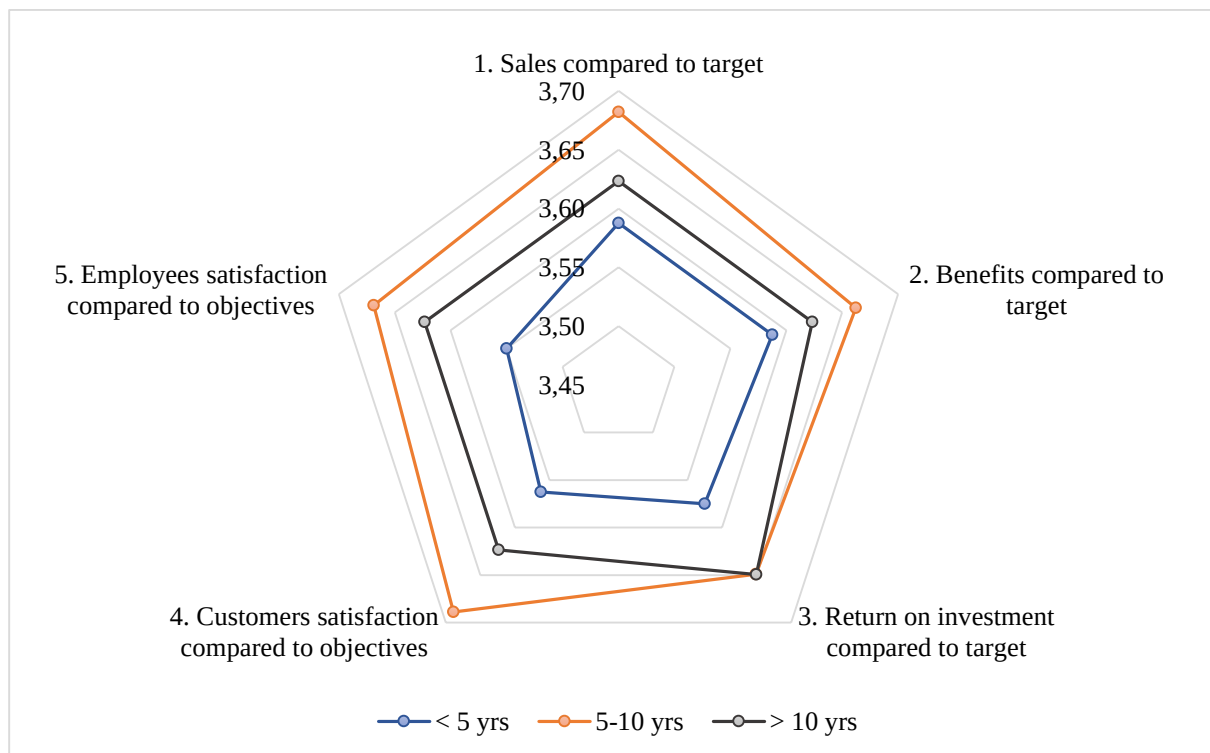


Figure 9. Comparing performance by firm age

In summary, the results of this study confirm the important role of the implementation of both diagnostic and interactive control systems in contribution to better performance, thus providing the knowledge of the relationship between MCS use and mediating variables, such as business age. To prove the validity of the theory, quantitative researches must be carried out.

4. CONCLUSION

The results of this study indicate that there is growing attention towards MCS uses (including both DM and IM) in managerial implications of Vietnamese enterprises (gaining the “agreed”

measurement), and the degree of MCS use is different regarding business size and age. In terms of business size, medium-sized enterprises, combining effectively both diagnostic and interactive control systems, achieve superior performance in non-financial and financial objectives; whereas, large companies, with significant advantages in economic capital, fruitful resources, and reputation, are unable to boost their performance. Of the three sectors, the small-sized businesses show the poorest result due to the less concern on MCS uses.

With regards to business age, the 5 to 10 years businesses have the best performance thanks to the extensive and regular application of MCS uses. Meanwhile, the over 10 years businesses mainly focus on interactive control systems, that obtain the lower performance than the 5 to 10 years businesses, despite their long-term experiences as well as years of operations in management control and business activities. To this end, the under 5 years enterprises have the lowest level of performance, since they have applied MCS uses to a large extent, however, restrained by the limitation in managerial and business experiences, hence dealing with abundant of difficulties in the way to prove their values.

To sum up, the results of this article provide guidance and point at several avenues associated with the relationship between MCS uses and organizational performance, especially the regular use of MCS and the combination of both diagnostic and interactive control systems make a significant contribution to better performance. Thus, future researches should focus on clarifying and analyzing the relationship between MCS uses and organizational performance.

5. REFERENCES

- Anthony, R. N. (1965). *Planning and Control Systems: a Framework for Analysis* (Vol. First Edition). Harvard University.
- Anthony, R. N., & Govindarajan, V. (2004). *Management Control Systems* (Vol. 11th Edition). Mc Graw Hill.
- Brockmann, E., & Simmonds, P. (1997). Strategic decision making: The influence of CEO experience and use of tacit knowledge. *Journal of Managerial Issues*, IX(4), 454– 467.
- Chenhall, R. (2003). Management control systems design within its organizational context: Findings from contingency-based research and directions for the future. *Accounting, Organizations and Society*, 28, 127-168.
- Franco-Santos, M., Lucianetti, L., & Bourne, M. (2012). Contemporary performance measurement systems: A review of their consequences and a framework for research. *Management Accounting Research*, 1–41.
- Gómez-Villanueva, J. (2008). Orientación al mercado, capacidades empresariales y resultados en las PYMES de nueva creación. Universidad Autónoma de Barcelona.
- Henri, J., & Journeault, M. (2010). Eco-control: The influence of management control systems on environmental and economic performance. *Accounting, Organizations and Society*, 35(1), 63–80.
- Henri, J.-F. (2006a). Management control systems and strategy: A resource-based perspective. *Accounting, Organizations and Society*, 31(6), 529–558.
- Hult, T. (1998). Managing the international strategic sourcing process as a market-driven organizational learning system. *Decision Sciences*, 29(1), 193–216.

- Ittner, C. D., Larcker, D. F., & Randall, T. (2003). Performance Implications of Strategic Performance Measurement in Financial Service Firms. SSRN, 28(7-8), 715-741. doi:10.1016/S0361-3682(03)00033-3
- Janke, R., Mahlendorf, M., & Weber, J. (2014). An exploratory study of the reciprocal relationship between interactive use of management control systems and perception of negative external crisis effects. *Management Accounting Research*, 25(4), 251-270.
- Kaplan, R. S., & Norton, D. P. (1996). *Balanced Scorecard*. Harvard Business School Press.
- Kaplan, R., & Norton, D. (1992). The Balanced Scorecard. Measures That Drive Performances. *Harvard Business Review*, 71-79.
- Lumpkin, G., Coglisier, C., & Schneider, D. (2009). Understanding and Measuring Autonomy: An Entrepreneurial Orientation Perspective. *Entrepreneur Theory And Practice*, January, 47-69.
- Mundy, J. (2010). Creating dynamic tensions through a balanced use of management control systems. *Accounting, Organizations and Society*, 35(5), 499-523.
- OECD. (2021). SME and Entrepreneurship Policy in Viet Nam. doi:https://doi.org/10.1787/30c79519-en
- Orozco, D. B. (2016). Understanding The Impact Of Management Control Systems Over Capabilities And Organizational Performance, Under The Influence Of Perceived Environmental Uncertainty. Doctoral Thesis. Barcelona, Spain.
- Otley, D. (1994). Management Control in Contemporary Organizations: Towards a Wider Framework. *Management Accounting Research*, 5, 289-299.
- Saeed, N. A., NurFarhana, A. S., & Mohammed, O. M. (2017). A Review Of Literature In Management Control System (Mcs), Business Strategy, And Firm's Performance. *International Journal of Management Research & Review*, 7(2), 99-112.
- Simons, R. (1994). How new top managers Use Control systems as levers of strategic Renewal. *Strategic Management Journal*, 15(3), 169-189.
- Simons, R. (1995). Levers of control: How managers use innovative control systems to drive strategic renewal. *Strategic Management Journal*, 15, 169-189.
- Simons, R. (2000). *Performance Measurement and Control Systems for Implementing Strategy*. Boston: Harvard Business School, Boston. Prentice-Hall, Inc.
- Sinkula, J., Baker, W., & Noordewier, T. (1997). A Framework for Market-Based Organizational Learning: Linking Values, Knowledge, and Behavior. *Journal of the Academy of Marketing Science*, 25(4), 305-318.
- Sljivic, S., Skorup, S., & Vukadinovic, P. (2015). Management control in modern organizations. *International Review*, 3(4), 39-49.
- Vandenbosch, B. (1999). An empirical analysis of the association between the use of executive support systems and perceived organizational competitiveness. *Accounting, Organizations and Society*, 24(1), 77-92.
- Widener, S. (2007). An empirical analysis of the levers of control framework. *Accounting, Organizations and Society*, 32(7-8), 757-788

EFFECTIVE MATHEMATICS TEACHING METHODOLOGY

Dr. Raja Mohammad Latif

Department of Mathematics and Natural Sciences

Prince Mohammad Bin Fahd University

Al Khobar Kingdom of Saudi Arabia

ORCID ID: 0000-0003-3140-9581

ABSTRACT

Modern mathematics teaching methodology offers various possibilities for solving the problems of involving students in independent and research work, it develops their problem solving skills as well as their creative thinking process. The purpose of this study is to discuss the teaching methods and their application in different branches of mathematics taught at a higher level. Mathematics teaching methods include lecture, inductive, deductive, heuristic or discovery analytic, synthetic, problem-solving, laboratory, and project methods. Teachers may adopt any method according to the specific branch of mathematics as well as available resources and the number of students in a class. There is a significant influence of metacognition and attitude towards the teaching profession on the teaching competency of prospective mathematics teachers. We will elaborate methodologically on different approaches to learning and teaching mathematics effectively. We also present the importance of attitude and competency towards learning and teaching mathematics professionally, effectively, and successfully.

Keywords: Mathematics, attitude, effective, competency, teacher, education.

1. INTRODUCTION

Education is the most powerful instrument whose effective use requires the strength of will, dedicated work, and sacrifice. As this instrument is in the hands of teachers in the present scenario, they must possess the skill of evolution of innovative strategies besides the strength of will, dedication, and sacrifice. Education intends to develop desirable habits, skills and, attitudes that make an individual a respectful well behaved mannered type of person in society. The quality of education of students depends upon the competence, dedication, and quality of teachers. It is not brick and mortar of the classroom, but the dialogues rapport, interactions supported by deeds, between the learners and the teachers, all the time developing within its four walls can make or mar the destiny of the youngsters and in turn that of the nation. Being a teacher is to be a change agent transforming ideas into ideals and ideals into institutions that may spread the light of knowledge and wisdom into eternity. A competent and committed teacher is in demand for today's revolutionary era. Teacher commitment has been identified as one of the most crucial factors for the success of education and educational institutions which are closely associated with their work performance. True education, it must be noted at the outset, is a powerful force in bringing about the desired change. It is education and education alone that can bring about changes in knowledge, skills, attitudes, appreciation, and understanding of things around us. Education is a process of growth and development that takes place in students when they work at it under favorable or unfavorable circumstances. The content of education is not a body of knowledge. It is a cluster of attitudes, feelings, perceptions, insights, abilities, and skills of which the ability to think independently and is of the first importance. No less valuable is the ability to experience life fully and honestly. Knowledge, as far as education is concerned, is a means to this end and not an end in itself. For the student,

there is no knowledge until the student involves himself in getting it. Until the student does something with it, it is only a set of materials waiting to be transformed into living thoughts, ideas, and attitudes. In other words, knowledge exists as something known by someone. It has no independent reality of its own. Education is a tri-polar process where teachers, taught, and social environment act and react with one another. It is a life-long process. It is a process of individual development. It is both theoretical and practical. It is science as well as art. It is an instrument that is used to attain a better life. Education is essentially a process of growth and development which goes on throughout life. Education is the source of modification of behavior. Mathematics is a science of calculation, a science of space and numbers, and a science of measurement, magnitude, and direction. The meaning of the word mathematics is ‘the science in which calculations are prime’. In this way, because of these assumptions of mathematics, one can say that mathematics is the science of numbers, words, signs, etc, with which one can know about the magnitude, direction, and space. Mathematics is an important subject in every learning institution’s curriculum. It is more closely related to our daily life as compared to other subjects. Except for the mother tongue, there is no other subject, more closely related to daily life than Mathematics. Mathematics is considered the father of science. In present days, mathematics has been given an important place in the university curriculum. We present methodologically different approaches to learning and teaching mathematics effectively. We will also elaborate importance of attitude and competency towards learning and teaching mathematics effectively and successfully.

2. PROBLEM-SOLVING APPROACH

Effective teaching of mathematics establishes clear goals for the mathematics that students are learning, situates goals within learning progressions, and uses the goals to guide instructional decisions. Implement tasks that promote reasoning and problem-solving. Effective teaching of mathematics engages students in solving and discussing tasks that promote mathematical reasoning and problem solving and allow multiple entry points and varied solution strategies to use and connect mathematical representations. Effective teaching of mathematics engages students in making connections among mathematical representations to deepen understanding of mathematics concepts and procedures and as tools for problem-solving. Effective teaching of mathematics facilitates discourse among students to build a shared understanding of mathematical ideas by analyzing and comparing student approaches and arguments. Effective teaching of mathematics uses purposeful questions to assess and advance students’ reasoning and sense-making about important mathematical ideas and relationships. Effective teaching of mathematics builds fluency with procedures on a foundation of conceptual understanding so that students, over time, become strong skill-oriented in using procedures flexibly as they solve contextual and mathematical problems. Effective teaching of mathematics consistently provides students, individually and collectively, with opportunities and supports to engage in productive struggle as they grapple with mathematical ideas and relationships. Effective teaching of mathematics uses evidence of student thinking to assess progress toward mathematical understanding and to adjust instruction continually in ways that support and extend learning. By making use of a problem-solving approach in teaching and learning mathematics is of value to all students and especially to those who have high achieving abilities. We state some of the reasons for using the problem-solving approach. The approach of problem-solving places the focus on the student making sense of mathematical ideas. When solving problems students are engaged in exploring the mathematics within a problem context rather than as an abstract. Problem-solving encourages students to believe in their ability to think mathematically. They will see that they can apply the mathematics tools that they are learning to find the solution to a problem. Problem-solving provides ongoing assessment

information that can help teachers make instructional decisions. The discussions and recordings involved in problem-solving provide a rich source of information about students' mathematical knowledge and understanding. Good problem-solving activities provide an entry point that allows all students to be working on the same problem. The open-ended nature of problem-solving allows high-achieving students to extend the ideas involved to challenge their greater knowledge and understanding. Problem-solving develops mathematical power. It gives students the tools to apply their mathematical knowledge to solve hypothetical and practical life-world problems. Problem-solving is enjoyable and it allows students to work at their own pace and make decisions about the way they explore the problem. Because the focus is not limited to a specific answer. Students at different ability levels can experience both challenges and successes on the same problem. Problem-solving better represents the nature of mathematics. Research mathematicians apply this exact approach in their work daily in solving mathematics problems. Once students understand a problem-solving approach to mathematics, a single well-framed mathematical problem provides the potential for an extended period of exploration.

3. EFFECTIVE TEACHERS

The teachers are required to know the pedagogy that determines how their students successfully learn. They know and understand the content and practices those students need to comprehend, as described in the standards framework. They know the students they teach as learners and challenge all students at their level by encouraging them to risk-taking strategies. They should create purposeful learning experiences for students by making use of relevant and meaningful contexts. Effective teachers of mathematics know how students learn effectively. They know the pedagogy that determines how their students successfully learn. Such teachers recognize that for students to effectively use mathematics that they need to understand the concepts presented as well as become fluent with the skills taught. It is through the ongoing and increasingly complex application of concepts and skills that students become secure and competent in their use. Effective teachers of mathematics are knowledgeable in the theory of learning their subject. They know how students learn, know what students need to learn, know what their students already know, encourage risk-taking, create purposeful learning experiences, create a challenge for teaching for effective teaching of mathematics. The old paradigm of balanced instruction focused on enabling students and teachers to achieve success at educational institutions. Today's paradigm focuses on students achieving university and career readiness in life. They recognize the importance of using concrete materials and visual representations to develop a deep understanding of the subject. They have a clear picture of the learning progression that best develops the knowledge base and skills of their students. They also have a broad and clear view of learning experiences they can use in the classroom, to meet the different learning needs of each student. Effective teachers are highly capable of looking at student misconceptions, either in the classwork, through homework, or assessments, and reteach the material using their understanding of the developmental nature of what becomes before or after the misconception. A deep understanding of the content enables teachers to directly address the specific misunderstandings that students may have. Such teachers need to be continual learners of mathematics inclusive of effective teaching techniques. Effective pedagogy is the subject of ongoing research and development, and the way to teach and learn mathematics is never static. Effective teachers know what students need to know and an effective learning method. Effective teachers know and understand the content and practices of the mathematics standards framework that students need to know. Such teachers have a deep understanding of concepts and utilize multiple ways to represent and explain them. They are also fluent with the procedures and practices their students will need to succeed in mathematics. The common core focus on career and university readiness requires that students be able to

apply mathematics to complex problems in multiple contexts, both real and mathematical way. Effective teachers augment fluency procedures with a deep conceptual understanding knowledge of where and how to apply and use mathematics skills and concepts. Effective teachers know their students as learners however knowing a student as a mathematics learner is complex. An effective mathematics teacher quickly builds a picture of their students by progressively providing opportunities to demonstrate what they are learning. This way, teachers update and deepen their understanding of individual students. The effective teacher continuously uses this growing knowledge of students as learners to inform their instruction so they can better meet students' needs. Assessment in mathematics is primarily formative. It involves collecting information from a range of sources, in a variety of ways. This includes information on students' strategies, understandings, attitudes, and prior knowledge and skills. Assessing a student involves making informed judgments about what the student knows. Hence, effective teachers not only monitor the performance of a student but also their ability to show their understanding of the content that has been taught. Effective teachers integrate assessment into instructional practice and acknowledge students' prior learning and help them make connections between what they already know and what they are currently learning. It is very useful to gather information from a range of formal and informal sources using a variety of means, particularly written and verbal, and analyze the information presented. The teacher should use ongoing assessments to identify the learning needs of each student. This allows them to teach proactively, assisting students to meet articulated goals. Allowing the subject to be problematic means allowing students to wonder why things are, to inquire, to search for solutions, and to resolve incongruities. It means that both curriculum and instruction should begin with problems, dilemmas, and questions for students. When referring to "challenges," it is meant that a student will need to experience some degree of struggle to achieve a learning goal. Many strategies introduce challenges into a lesson, including the use of a rigorous open task, the use of questioning strategies that involve all students, asking exploratory and generative questions, and consistently requiring students to pose, reflect on, and justify arguments. Along with providing a challenge is the need to provide differing degrees of support for students. The greater the challenge, the greater the need for teacher support in a gradual release of responsibility from the teacher to the student. An optimal learning environment generates an atmosphere of trust, where it is understood that making mistakes is acceptable because mistakes are the essence of learning. A learning environment that promotes student mathematics learning is one where multiple types of strategies are encouraged. Understanding and recognizing connections within mathematics comes by finding different ways to achieve the same result. The social setting that teachers provide is equally as important as the physical environment. Research tells us that the quality of the instruction makes the difference, and it is the interaction between the teacher and student, most especially the feedback the student gets, which is essential. Learning mathematics involves taking risks. This is more likely to happen if students feel that their attempts will be valued. Teachers need to help students see that mistakes are a natural part of the learning process. By accepting their approximations and providing informed, genuine, and encouraging responses, teachers are letting students know that they believe in them. While teachers can create the conditions that foster learning, and demonstrate strategies for learning to occur, the students must be actively engaged. The program needs to be interesting enough so that students will want to engage in the learning. Effective teachers of mathematics create purposeful learning experiences for students through solving problems in relevant and meaningful contexts. There is ample evidence showing the need for problem-solving to be an integral part of all mathematics learning. Teaching through problem-solving, however, means that students learn mathematics through real contexts, problems, situations, and models. The contexts and models allow students to build meaning for the concepts. This way, they can move on to increasingly more abstract concepts. Findings from previous studies

suggest that the effectiveness of students' teachers can have a significant impact on student achievement outcomes. However, scholars have not updated research on the short- and long-term effects of this experience, nor have they tied the information to highly effective and highly ineffective teachers' beliefs on teaching and learning.

4. ATTITUDE TOWARDS TEACHING MATHEMATICS

A mathematics teacher not only has to be effective in teaching his subject but also should have a favourable attitude towards teaching mathematics. The term 'attitude' refers to reports of what people think or feel or how they intend to act. Since it is important for the prospective mathematics teacher how he thinks or feels about teaching mathematics, it is desirable to study their attitude towards teaching mathematics because it not only affects his behavior in the classroom but also of the students. There are different techniques for measuring attitudes. Among the different techniques available for the construction of attitude scale, the more commonly used techniques described: (a) the method of paired comparisons, (b) the method of equal-appearing intervals, (c) the method of successive intervals, (d) the method of summated ratings, (e) scalogram analysis, and (f) the scale discrimination technique. one's attitude towards any profession is a measure of the positive or negative effect he has towards that occupation. Attitude is an emotional reaction towards a person or thing. It is a personal response to an object, developed through experience, which can be characterized as favorable or unfavorable. The use of 'teaching' as the object or stimulus of the feelings delineates a set of attitudes known as 'attitudes towards teaching'. Attitude towards teaching mathematics is defined as a generalized attitude towards the universe of the teaching of mathematics content and is measured in terms of its favourableness or unfavourableness of the subject. A few authors have shown that the relationship between aspects of the social environment and student emotional aspects may be mediated by other variables such as control-related appraisals and values-related appraisals. Therefore, competence support, autonomy support, expectations, and feedback that students receive from others have an impact on their cognitive appraisals and these are the main sources of their emotional dispositions. When studying attitudes, it is important to take into consideration the role of these mediated variables where we can include the motivation features of each student.

5. TEACHING COMPETENCY

The values of teaching are regarded as desirable, important and are held in high esteem by the people who live in a particular society. Thus, values give meaning and strength to a person's character by occupying a central place to all-around development. Therefore, values reflect one's attitudes, judgments, decisions, choices, behavior, relationships, dreams, and vision. The progress and improvements of mathematics are linked to the prosperity of the state. Therefore, mathematics plays an important role in the progress of society. Competence refers to appropriate prior knowledge, skills, attitudes, and abilities in a given context that adjusts and develops with time and requires effectively and efficiently to accomplish a task. To be competent is not the awareness, the attainment, or even the knowledge of the various attributes within the document, although all of these play a crucial role in it. To be competent is just a position of this knowledge with the application of that knowledge in teaching practice. In other words, a competent individual is one who effectively and efficiently accomplishes a task in each context using appropriate knowledge, skills, attitudes, and abilities. In other words, the more competencies that an instructor possesses, the higher the propensity that courses instructed by that instructor will result in positive outcomes for a greater number of students. There are many related activities to be performed by the teacher inside and outside the classroom. The

effective organization of these activities would require that a teacher possesses a certain amount of knowledge and certain attitudes and skills. This is known as teaching competence. In other words, teacher competence refers to “the right way of conveying units of knowledge, and skills to students”. The right way here includes knowledge of content, processes, methods, and means of conveying content. Any definition of teaching competence depends on teaching in a particular setting, the culture, and the values held in the community. It also depends on the innumerable teacher and student characteristics and the classroom context. The effectiveness or ineffectiveness of teaching is closely linked to teaching competence. The competent teacher would also create classroom conditions and climate, which are conducive for student learning. Teaching competency has various dimensions such as content knowledge, instructional planning, student motivation, presentation and communication skills, evaluation competencies, and classroom management skills. While the teacher would require all these dimensions to a reasonable extent, it is in the manifestation of these in an integrated manner that makes him effective in the classroom context. Teaching competence is defined as adequacy for a task of required knowledge skills and abilities. It emphasizes the ability to do rather than the ability to demonstrate knowledge. As such in teaching competency-based teacher education has become a special designation for an educational approach. In the present scenario, we need competent teachers to meet the challenges of the teaching-learning process. The shape will undoubtedly depend on what goes on in the classrooms and how it goes on. These two facets of classroom situations entirely revolve around the qualities of teachers, who virtually steer the whole process. Hence, a teacher is an important instrument in the teaching-learning process, and more so his qualities that contribute to effective teaching. Teacher effectiveness is a phenomenon that works well on the learner. It is crystal clear that the entire process of a teaching-learning transaction depends on the efficiency of a teacher, who is in turn role to manifest potentialities of a student into actuality be accepted without a second thought. The teaching-learning process cannot be undertaken in a vacuum but, it is a positively directed action, for which teachers are to be endowed with optimum competence in teaching.

6. TEACHING PROFESSION

Teacher education in mathematics is facing the challenge of producing teachers for a new society. Purposefully to meet the challenge successfully, it is necessary to improve the quality of teacher education. Teacher education thus holds the most crucial position in the education system today. A teacher educator is the topmost academic and professional in the educational pyramid. A teacher educator is responsible for the education of teachers under whose charge the destiny of the students is placed by the community. The onus of the quality of teachers, therefore, rests on the teacher educators themselves. Teaching is a lifetime profession and because of the rapid explosion of knowledge and attitude of teachers towards their profession is changing rapidly. Attitude is a mental state of readiness. It should be possessed by the persons positively if one wants to shine in one's field. Teachers with a good attitude towards their profession can produce better students. Attitude reflects man's behaviors and the teacher who thinks well of his or her profession is sure to contribute much towards the pupils and society. Teachers with a high attitude towards the teaching profession may contribute much to the profession and seek pleasure in continuing in the profession. The teaching competency of a teacher refers to the set of knowledge, abilities, and beliefs a teacher possesses and brings to the teaching situation. Teaching competency is the total sum of all the competencies possessed by the teacher that are used in a teaching situation. The teachers' performance in the class is thus dependent on the teachers' competencies. So traditionally the task of teaching students the fundamentals of study strategies has been in the domain aspect. Teachers are showing interest in helping their students master skills necessary to think and learn. There are some general

competencies and specific competencies different from subject to subject. The separate tool for measuring mathematics teaching competency, therefore, becomes necessary. The prospective mathematics teachers are to be empowered with these skills. The current method used to reach desired outcomes must, therefore, be modified and enhanced if success is to be achieved. Success should not be defined solely from the standpoint of mastery of subject matter, but rather from the teaching competency that includes self-control process, and metacognitive skills processing. Metacognitive skills are related to thinking about thinking and more precisely, thinking about one's learning. Metacognitive strategies enable the thinking process and accelerate the thinking in a good and correct manner to solve the problem easily. Therefore, this is needed for the teachers as well as the students. Since it seems that using metacognitive strategies as tools have had a positive effect on students' achievement in many subject areas. The studies on metacognitive skills are undertaken concerning different variables such as academic achievement, attitude, mental health, etc. The investigator, being the mathematics teacher and teacher educator, finds the relevance of metacognition in the teaching of mathematics. The experiences have taught the investigator that the mathematics teachers should possess the skill of metacognition so that they can improve the same to the students. The prospective teachers, during their education, should be sensitized in this regard. It is the fact that prospective teachers are the people on whom the responsibility of inculcating metacognitive skills among the students will be shouldered. Before developing skills, it is necessary to know their skills at present as the first step. Besides, only a very few studies are undertaken to find the relationship between teaching competency, metacognition, and attitude towards teaching. A separate tool for measuring mathematics also needs for the time. As far as the studies reviewed by the researcher are concerned, the areas related to prospective mathematics teachers, their teaching competency, and metacognition are hardly touched.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENT

The author is indebted to Prince Mohammad Bin Fahd University, Al Khobar, Saudi Arabia, for providing necessary research facilities during the preparation of this research paper.

REFERENCES

1. Abbott-Chapman, J., Hughes, P., Holloway, G. & Wyld, C. (1990) Identifying the Qualities and Characteristics of the Effective Teacher. Hobart, Youth Education Studies Centre: University of Tasmania.
2. Aggarwal, J.C. (2003), Teacher and Education in developing society, New Delhi: Vikas Publishing House Pvt. Ltd.
3. Amit Goel (2006), Learn and Teach Mathematics, New Delhi: Authors Press, Scholarly Books. Anastasi and Anne (1976), Psychological testing, New York: Macmillan Publishers Co.
4. Anice James and Balasubramanian, T.S. (2007), Teaching of Mathematics, New Delhi: Neelkamal Publications Pvt. Ltd.
5. Anisha Devi, M. (2006), The effect of metacognitive strategy developing teaching competency in mathematics among DTE students, Unpublished M.Ed thesis, M.S.University, Tirunelveli, Tamilnadu.
6. Antony Gracious F.L. and Annaraja P.(2011), 'Scientific Attitude and Reading Skill of Prospective B.Ed Teachers', GCTE Journal of Research and Extension in Education, 6(1) January 153-157.

7. Aruna Kumar kulshrestha (2003), Teaching of Mathematics, Meerut: R. Lall Book Depot.
8. Barry, K. and King, L. (1993), Beginning Teaching, 2nd ed. Wentworth Falls, NSW: Social Science Press.
9. Bhatnagar, R.P. (1985), Readings in Methodology of Research in Education, New Delhi: Metropolita.
10. Chandra Shivendra, Soti, Sharma and Rajendra, (1997), Research in Education, New Delhi: Atlantic Publishers and distributors.
11. Cheng, Eric C. K. (2014) Learning Study: Nurturing the Instructional Design and Teaching Competency of Pre-Service Teachers Asia-Pacific Journal of Teacher Education, v42 n1 p51-66 2014.
12. Denton, J.J., and Lacina, L.J. (1984). Quantity of professional education coursework linked with process measures of student teaching. Teacher Education and Practice, 39-64.
13. Emimah, S. (2011), Influence of metacognition and self-esteem on teaching competency of prospective teachers, Unpublished M.Phil thesis, Tamilnadu Teachers Educations University, Chennai, Tamilnadu.
14. Kim, M. C., and Hannafin, M. J. (2011). Scaffolding Problem Solving in Technology Enhanced learning Environments (TELEs): Bridging research and theory with practice. In Computers & Education, 56(2), 403-417.
15. Kuo, F. R., Hwang, G.-J., Chen, S.-C., & Chen, S. Y. (2012). A Cognitive Apprenticeship Approach to Facilitating Web-based Collaborative Problem Solving. In Educational Technology & Society, 15 (4), 319–331.
16. Latif, Raja Mohammad. (July – Sep. 2016). Qualities of Effective Mathematics and Science Teachers, “International Journal of Advanced Research in Education & Technology (IJARET)”, ISSN: 2394 – 2975 (Online) & ISSN: 2394 – 6814 (Print). Vol. 3, Issue 3 Ver. 1 (July – Sept. 2016). IJARET 33 – 2016 – 183. pp. 88 – 95. <http://ijaret.com/wp-content/themes/felicity/issues/vol3issue3/raja.pdf>
17. Latif, Raja Mohammad. (Nov. 2016). Problem Solving Effects in Teaching and Learning Mathematics, “International Journal Innovation and Applied Sciences (IJIAS)” ISSN 2028 – 9324. Vol. 18, NO. 3. Pp. 909 – 927. Website: <http://ijias.issr-journals.org/>
18. Lerman, S. (1990). Alternative Perspectives of the nature of mathematics and their influences of the teaching of mathematics, British Educational Research Journal, 16(1), 53-61.
19. Ljajko, E., & Ibro, V. (2013). Development of ideas in a GeoGebra– aided mathematics instruction in Mevlana International Journal of Education (MIJE) Vol. 3 (3Dyamic and Interactive Mathematics Learning Environments pp. 1- 7.
20. Masami, I. (2011). Problem Solving Approaches in Mathematics Education as a Product of Japanese Lesson Study. Journal of Science and Mathematics Education in Southeast Asia, 34(1), 2-25. Center for Research on International Cooperation in Educational Development. University of Tsukuba. Japan.
21. Mathew, P. (2016). Effectiveness of Cognitive Apprenticeship Model on Achievement in Mathematics Metacognitive Outcomes and Social Skills. Retrieved from URI: <http://hdl.handle.net/10603/89317>.
22. Muthulakshmi, P., and Veliappan, A. (2015). Effectiveness of an Interactive Multimedia learning Package in developing Attitude towards Mathematics. In I-manager’s Journal on School Educational Technology, Vol.11(3) December 2015 –February 2016.

23. Pierce R., & Stacey, K. (2011) Using Dynamic Geometry To Bring The Real World Into The Classroom. In L. Bu and R. Schoen (eds.), *Model-Centered Learning: Pathways to Mathematical Understanding Using GeoGebra*, 41–55. Sense Publishers.
24. Polya, G.(1966). On Teaching Problem Solving‘ In the Role of Axiomatics and Problem Solving in Mathematics. Ed. E.G.Begle.Washington D.C. The Conference Board of Mathematical Sciences.
25. Rengarajan, P., Deviha, S.S. & Jayaraman, K. (2012). Evaluating the Effectiveness of Java Applets in Teaching Circle in Mathematics at the higher Secondary level. In *Journal of Educational Research Extensions*, Vol 49(3) July September, 1-9.ISSN 0973-6190.
26. Salinas, P., and Quintero, E. (2013). Integrating Digital Technology for the Innovation of Calculus Curriculum. In *Proceedings of the ASEE Annual Conference*. Atlanta, GA: American Society for Engineering Education. Retrieved from <http://www.asee.org/public/conferences/20/papers/8153/view>.
27. Schank, R. C., Bernan, T.R, & Macpherson, K. A. (1999). Learning by Doing. In Reigeluth Retrieved from <http://ju-edu-website.weebly.com/ict-mediatedlearning.html>.
28. Shafer, K. G. (2008). Learning to Teach with Technology through an Apprenticeship Model. In *Contemporary Issues in Technology and Teacher Education*, 8(1), 27-44.
29. Singh, K. (2007). *Quantitative Social Research Methods*. SAGE Publications, New Delhi.
30. Sossi, D., Jamalian, A., & Richardson, S. (2011). Something Drawn, Something Touched, Something Scrolled: An Exploratory Comparison of Perimeter and Area Interventions Including Kidspiration. In *Journal of Mathematics Education at Teachers College Fall–Winter 2011*, Vol (2), 73-77.
31. Tashakkori, A. and Creswell, J.W. (2007). The New Era of Mixed Methods. In *Journal of Mixed Methods Research*, 1 (1), 3-7.
32. Tharp, R., and Gallimore, R. (1988). *Rousing minds to life: Teaching, learning and schooling in social context*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
33. Vygotsky, L. (1978). Interaction between Learning and Development. In L. Vygotsky, *Mind and society* (pp.79-91). Cambridge, MA, Harvard University Press.

**MACROECONOMIC IMPACTS OF SAFE ASSETS:
INTERNATIONAL EVIDENCE AND POLICY DISCUSSION**

Dr. Ly Dai Hung

VNU International School, Vietnam National University, Hanoi

Vietnam Institute of Economics, Hanoi

ORCID ID: 0000-0003-2693-7996

ABSTRACT

The paper investigates the impact of assets safety on the economic growth, then, discuss some policy implications to exploit the role of safe assets within the financial globalization. The method employs both cross-section on a data sample of 150 economies over the 1990-2019 period. The empirical evidence records that the assets safety only exerts a positive impact on the economic growth for the low safety level. Moreover, the trade openness and political stability also contributes on the improvement of economic growth rate.

Keywords: Safe Assets; Policy Discussion; Cross-Section Regression.

INTRODUCTION

The recent financial globalization is featured by the global shortage of safe assets, i.e, the supply is much less than the demand for safe assets (Caballero, Farhi and Gourinchas, 2017). Before the 2008 global financial crisis, the supply of safe assets accounts for 36.9% of world output. But, this ratio drops to just 18% in 2011, right after the crisis. This phenomenon can even results in an endogenous reduction of aggregate demand, especially when the interest rate is at zero-lower bound, thus, can cause the economic stagnation phenomenon. This, in turn, raises a new literature on searching the explanation for the macroeconomic impact of safe assets shortage. Our paper aims to make a contribution on this line of reasearch.

The paper focuses on the macroeconomic aspect of safe assets at the context of financial globalization.

The paper's objective is to analyze the impact of assets safety on the economic growth, then, discuss some policy implications to exploit the role of safe assets within the financial globalization. The method employs both cross-section on a data sample of 150 economies, both advanced and developing ones, over the 1990-2019 period. The empirical evidence records that the assets safety only exerts a positive impact on the economic growth for the low safety level. Moreover, the trade openness and political stability also contributes on the improvement of economic growth rate.

The paper falls into a nexus of two dynamic literatures, including the economic growth and the safe assets.

The paper is closely related to the literature on the economic growth. On the neoclassical growth model, postulated by Solow (1956) and Swan (1956), the income per capita grows with the rate of technology progress and labor force growth rate. In practice, the technology progress is measured by the productivity level, which is a Solow residual based on a constant-return-to-scale production function with labor-augmented technology (Freenstra et al, 2015). Thus, the productivity and labor fore growth rates jointly determines the long-run economic growth rate.

Moreover, the endogenous growth theory focuses on the source of technology progress. This progress can be due to the accumulation of capital across domestic firms on the AK model (Frankel, 1962), or by the expansion of new variety of product on the product variety model (Romer, 1990), or by the creative destruction (Aghion and Howitt, 1992). Beside the theory, the empirical evidence also records various determinants of economic growth such as the institutional quality (Robinson and Acemoglu, 2012), the financial development level (Levine et al, 1997), the capital account openness (Bussière and Fratzscher, 2008), and the human capital (Mankiw et al, 1992).

The current paper complements to these aforementioned papers by proving that the assets safety also contributes on enhancing the economic growth rate. In particular, the assets safety only exerts a positive impact on the economic growth for the low safety level. This implies that the safety of assets can be beneficial or trimental to the economic growth, depending on the level of safety.

The paper also belongs to the safe assets at financial globalization. The supply of safe assets also underlines the secular stagnation (Caballero, Farhi and Gourinchas, 2016). When an economy has scarcity of safe assets, it can fall into a safety trap, which is a type of liquidity trap but originated on the low supply of safe assets. Within this trap, the monetary policy is ineffective on the sense that an increase of monetary supply does not affect the aggregate demand, then, the output. Then, for a reduction of domestic supply, the only way to restore the equilibrium is an endogenous reduction of aggregate demand. Thus, the economy can fall into a secular stagnation.

Moreover, in the world economy, an economy can become a main issuer of safe assets only when its economic fundamentals are strong, and relatively stronger than the rest of world (He et al, 2019). And for the international monetary system, Farhi and Maggiori (2017) show that the multiple suppliers of safe assets can result in an unstable region. When there are competition between issuers of safe assets with low commitment to keep their value of assets in term of exchange rate, the supply of safe assets can fall into a region of unstable equilibrium, in which more supply of assets deteriorates their safety.

The current paper contributes on the line of research on the safe assets by providing an empirical evidence on the macroeconomic role of safe assets at the international integration context. The assets safety jointly with the economic openness determines the economic growth rate. This evidence holds both on the cross-section sample, which accounts for the comparison across advanced and developing economies;

The paper is structured as following. After the first section on Introduction, the second section presents the literature review on the safe assets. Then, the third section describes the analysis framework and associated empirical evidence on the impact of assets safety on the economic growth. Finally, the fourth section closes the paper with a conclusion and policy discussion.

LITERATURE REVIEW

There are two main concepts of safe assets. The safe assets can include all information-insensitive assets. According to this definition, the asymmetric information and its associated problems, such as moral hazard and adverse selection, does not affect the value of safe assets. Recently, this type of definition is used by Dang, Gorton, Holmstrom and Ordonez (2017) to differ the financial assets issued by banks from that by other assets on financial market, through the safeness and liquidity. Another concept of safe assets mentions all uncertainty-insensitive assets as the safe assets. In particular, the rate of return on safe assets is constant

in all realized states of nature. Recently, this approach is employed by Caballero, Farhi and Gourinchas (2016) to analyze the safe assets scarcity on the credibility of domestic demand.

On the economic growth, Bernanke (2011) claims that the international capital market is characterized by the scarcity of safe assets, since the demand is far more than the supply. On one hand, the supply of safe assets is quite modest, and accounts for a stable share of output for recent decades. This claim is confirmed by Gorton, Lewellen, and Metrick (2012). These authors document that, in United States, the percentage of safe assets has remained at about 33 percent since 1952. Over the same period, the ratio of US assets to GDP has increased by a factor of 2.5, raising the quantity of unsafe assets given the constant share of safe assets. On other hand, the demand for safe assets is huge, based on the gross savings by developing economies. Households in these economies tend to seek the financial assets as a store of wealth, beside the motivation of earning high rate of return. Bernanke (2010) also emphasizes that when the excess demand for safe assets is met by the supply of unsafe assets, the asset price surges, building up the bubbles on the financial market. And when the bubbles explore, the financial market falls into crisis, as happened in United States in 2008.

The shortage of safe assets can also affect the physical investment that is required to match the saving needs of society. Caballero, Farhi and Gourinchas (2017) argue that if the saving side of economy has a disproportionate desire for safe assets, then the economy only wants to fund a small share of the overall risky investments. Therefore, when the scarcity of safe assets becomes more severe, it will be hard to sustain the levels of physical investment needed to generate economic growth. From this perspective, publicly funded infrastructure investment becomes particularly attractive, as it can both boost potential growth and does so with maximum issuance of safe assets per unit of installed capital. Moreover, the authors also mention other policy to escape from the safe assets shortages, including: a valuation rise through the exchange rate appreciation of safe asset producer economies; the issuance of public debts; the production of private safe assets; and changes in regulatory frameworks, global risk sharing.

Recently, Caballero and Farhi (2017) prove the existence of a safety trap, a type of liquidity trap but is based on the scarcity of safe assets. On both liquidity and safety trap, the monetary policy is ineffective, since the bonds and money are perfect substituted. On the safety trap, however, the government can improve the effectiveness of monetary policy by increasing the supply of government bonds, served as safe assets. This action reduces the price of safe assets, then, raises their interest rate to be higher than the interest rate on holding money. The difference on the interest rates, in turn, motives the households to hold the government bonds. Therefore, the monetary policy becomes effective to affect the demand for output.

On the international integration context, Caballero, Farhi and Gourinchas (2017) show the mechanism for transmission of secular stagnation across countries, when the world economy suffers the scarcity of safe assets. In particular, when the economies trade with each other, the depression of domestic demand can be offset by the foreign demand through a great trade surplus. But when the trade surplus goes up in one economy, it reduces in other economy. Thus, to offset the reduction on domestic demand in one economy, the others needs to use the monetary policy to raise the money supply, and stimulate the aggregate demand. But if the supply of safe assets is scarce in all countries, the interest rate on holding assets falls to be nearly equal to the interest rate on holding money. This makes the bonds, as one type of safe asset, to be perfect substituted for the money. Then, the monetary policy is ineffective, and can not stimulate the demand for output. Therefore, with the safe assets scarcity, the stagnation in one economy is transmitted to other economy, and the whole world economy falls into the secular stagnation.

In brief, the literature on the safe assets provides various results, from the definition, the determinants to the spill-over effect in macroeconomy through the impact on the economic growth rate.

EVIDENCE

Based on the literature review on three aspects of safe assets, including the economic growth, inflation and exchange rate, we focus on the impact of safe assets on the economic growth. This section presents the analysis framework, then, the empirical evidence.

Data

The data is a cross-section sample of 145 advanced and developing economies. Each variable is averaged over 1990-2019. This 30-year period is long enough to absorb the fluctuation of economic variables. The analysis also shows that the evidence is also similar for the panel data regression.

The economic growth, denoted by (*aGDPpcgrowth*), is measured by the growth rate of real output per capita. The real output is the gross domestic product (GDP) at constant 2011 national price in million USD. This variable is from the Penn World Table 10.0 (PWT, 2020). With the population data from the Worldbank Development Indicators (WDI, 2020), the GDP per capita is the real output divided by the population. Then, we take the annual growth rate of GDP per capita, which is on percentage.

The sovereign debts rating, denoted by (*asovrate*), is from World Bank Cross-Country Database of Fiscal Space. The data, which is constructed by Kose et al. (2017), covers up to 200 countries over the period 1960–2016. The debt rating index is ranged from 1 to 21, and a greater index means safer. It illustrates the market perception on a country's ability to roll over debt, or to issue new debt, and on its market cost of borrowing.

The control variables are taken from various sources. First, the trade openness is the sum of exports and imports per GDP ratio on percentage. The data on exports, imports and nominal GDP are on current USD, and are from the Worldbank Development Indicators, constructed by World Bank (2020). Second, the capital account openness is the Chinn-Ito capital index, which is constructed by Chinn and Ito (2008). And institutional quality covers the effectiveness of government, quality of law and political stability. These indices are from the World Government Index database constructed by World Bank (2020).

Table 1: Descriptive Statistics

Variables	Observations	Mean	Std.Dev	Min	Max
Economic Growth (<i>aGDPpcgrowth</i> ,%)	179	1.90	1.65	-2.10	7.84
Sovereign Debts Rating (<i>aSovrate</i>)	148	11.92	4.92	4.85	21
Trade Openness (<i>aEopen</i> ,%)	200	86.26	49.18	13.34	388.95
Capital Openness (<i>aKaopen</i>)	179	0.02	1.26	-1.87	2.34
Government Effectiveness (<i>aGovernment</i>)	203	-0.03	0.97	-2.14	2.15
Quality of Law (<i>aLaw</i>)	205	-0.02	0.98	-2.30	1.97
Political Stability (<i>aPolitical</i>)	205	-0.00	0.95	-2.68	1.85

Table (1) reports the descriptive statistics of the data sample. The economic growth rate has a mean of 1.90% and standard deviation of 1.65%. And the sovereign debts rating has a mean of 11.92 with standard deviation of 4.92. For the openness, the trade openness has a mean of 86% and standard deviation of 49%, while the capital openness has a mean of 0.02 with standard deviation of 1.26. The institutional quality, including the government effectiveness, the quality of law and political stability, also exhibits a quite large standard deviation. Thus, the data offers a rich variation for exploring the dependence pattern of economic growth on the external debts.

Model

The model represents the cross-section regression. With this methods, the analysis can focus on the long-run equilibrium on the relationship between the sovereign debts rating and economic growth. This strategy is the traditional method on analyzing the economic growth (Barro and Sala-i-Martin, 1992). As Galor (1996) argue, this method is consistent to the class of models relevant to neoclassical growth model for which there exist an unique stable steady state.

The regression equation with the sample of economy (j) is as following:

$$aGDPpcgrowth_j = \alpha + \beta^{Sovrate} aSovrate_j + \beta^{Sovrate^2} aSovrate_j^2 + \beta^{Eopen} aEopen_j + \beta^{Kaopen} aKaopen_j + \beta^{aGov} aGovernment_j + \beta^{aPol} aPolitical_j + \beta^{aLaw} aLaw_j + u_j \quad (1)$$

The focal point is on the coefficients $(\beta^{Sovrate}, \beta^{Sovrate^2})$. They present the impact of sovereign debts rating on the economic growth. When they are significantly different to zero, the dependence pattern of economic growth on the sovereign debts rating follows a quadratic function. Then, the impact of sovereign debts rating on the economic growth can be positive or negative, depending on the value of sovereign debts rating.

Other coefficients illustrates the impact of various control variables on the economic growth. First, $(\beta^{Eopen}, \beta^{Kaopen})$ show the role of international integration on the economic growth. As suggested by the evidence by Bussière and Fratzscher (2008), the openness has a positive impact on the economic growth. And $(\beta^{aGov}, \beta^{aPol}, \beta^{aLaw})$ shows the impact of institutional quality on the economic growth. When the institution improves, the economic growth increases. Thus, both the coefficients of openness and institutional quality are expected to be positive: $\beta^{Eopen} > 0; \beta^{Kaopen} > 0; \beta^{aGov} > 0; \beta^{aPol} > 0; \beta^{aLaw} > 0$.

RESULTS

Table 2 reports the cross-section regression results of economic growth on the sovereign debts rating, on controlling for other independent variables. In column 1, a higher sovereign debts rating is associated with a greater economic growth rate. With an increase of 1 points, within the range from 1 to 21, the economic growth rate raises by 0,047%. Let's consider two economies, Phillipine and China. On average over 1990-2019, the former has the economic growth rate at 1.84% and sovereign debts rating at 10.31, while the latter has the corresponding parameters at 15.45 and 5.6%. The evidence suggest that if Thailand raises the sovereign debts rating by 5,14 from 10.31 to 15.45, its averaged economic growth rate also raises by additional 0,25%, to attain 2.09%.

The positive impact of sovereign debts rating on the economic growth rate is reserved on controlling for the economic and capital openness in column 2, but turns to be significant on accounting for the institutional quality in column 3. Moreover, the evidence also uncovers

that the trade openness is positively correlated with the economic growth rate, while the capital openness is negatively correlated.

In brief, the sovereign debts rating can exert a positive impact on the economic growth.

Table 2: Cross-Section Regression Results of Economic Growth (*aGDPpcgrowth*) on Sovereign Debts Rating (*Lnasovrate*), on Controlling for Economic Openness (*aEopen*, *aKaopen*) and Institutional Quality (*aGovernment*, *aLaw*)

VARIABLES	(1) aGDPpcgrowth	(2) aGDPpcgrowth	(3) aGDPpcgrowth
Sovereign Debts Rating (<i>aSovrate</i>)	0.0467* (0.0253)	0.0689** (0.0307)	0.0149 (0.0583)
Trade Openness (<i>aEopen</i>)		0.00879*** (0.00291)	0.00804*** (0.00300)
Capital Openness (<i>aKaopen</i>)		-0.264** (0.123)	-0.271** (0.124)
Government Effectiveness (<i>aGovernment</i>)			0.471 (0.619)
Quality of Law (<i>aLaw</i>)			-0.136 (0.521)
Constant	1.469*** (0.319)	0.570 (0.430)	1.178 (0.713)
Observations	136	127	127
R-squared	0.025	0.105	0.114

Notes: Standard errors in parentheses. *** p<0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1

Table 3 presents the regression results of economic growth on the sovereign debts rating by imposing a quadratic function. We divide the full sample into two sub-samples, including the 1990-2007 period in column 1 and 2, and the 2008-2019 period in column 3 and 4. If we employ the linear function, the dependence of economic growth on the sovereign debts rating follows an increasing pattern in the pre-crisis period (column 1) but a decreasing pattern in the post-crisis period (column 3). But when we employ a quadratic function, that economic growth follows an inverted-U-shaped curve, by first increasing then decreasing on the sovereign debts rating, in both the pre-crisis (column 2) and post-crisis (column 4) period. In brief, there exist a non-linear pattern of economic growth on the sovereign debts rating.

Table 3: Cross-Section Regression Results of Economic Growth (*aGDPpcgrowth*) on Sovereign Debts Rating (*Lnasovrate*) by a Quadratic Function

VARIABLES	(1) aGDPpcgrowth	(2) aGDPpcgrowth	(3) aGDPpcgrowth	(4) aGDPpcgrowth
Sovereign Debts Rating (<i>Lnasovrate</i>)	0.0611* (0.0367)	0.508** (0.231)	-0.0711** (0.0327)	0.379* (0.196)
Squared Value of (<i>Lnasovrate</i>) (<i>Lnasovrate</i> ²)		-0.0177* (0.00900)		-0.0172** (0.00740)
Constant	1.757*** (0.443)	-0.715 (1.334)	3.332*** (0.409)	0.846 (1.144)
Observations	119	119	110	110
R-squared	0.023	0.055	0.042	0.088

Notes: Standard errors in parentheses. *** p<0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1

CONCLUSION AND POLICY DISCUSSION

The paper quantifies the international experience on the impact of safe assets on the economic growth rate. The method employs a cross-section and panel data regression on a data sample of 150 economies, both advanced and developing economies, over 1990-2019. The empirical evidence records that the assets safety only exerts a positive impact on the economic growth for the low safety level. Moreover, the trade openness and political stability also contributes on the improvement of economic growth rate.

The results provide some important policy implications. Each economy needs to consider to exploit the impact of safe assets on the economic growth when the assets safety is still low. This range of value suggests a positive impact of assets safety on the economic growth rate. Moreover, the trade openness and political stability are crucial to make significant contribution on the economic growth rate.

For the future research avenue, the paper can be extended to account for the interaction of assets safety with some other macroeconomic variables on shaping the economic growth. This direction can provide additional evidence and policy discussion on enhancing the economic growth, especially for the developing economies.

FUNDING

The author thanks the VNU International School for financial assistance to take part in this conference.

REFERENCE

1. Aghion, P., & Howitt, P. (1992). A Model of Growth Through Creative Destruction. *Econometrica: Journal of the Econometric Society*, 323-351.
2. Barro, R. J., & Sala-i-Martin, X. (1992). Convergence. *Journal of Political Economy*, 100(2), 223-251.
3. Bernanke, B. S., Bertaut, C. C., Demarco, L., and Kamin, S. B. (2011). International capital flows and the return to safe assets in the united states, 2003-2007.

4. Bernanke, Ben S. Causes of the recent financial and economic crisis: testimony before the Financial Crisis Inquiry Commission, September 2, 2010. No. 101. Board of Governors of the Federal Reserve System (US), 2010.
5. Bussiere, M., & Fratzscher, M. (2008). Financial openness and growth: Short-run gain, long-run pain?. *Review of International Economics*, 16(1), 69-95.
6. Caballero, Ricardo J., Emmanuel Farhi, and Pierre-Olivier Gourinchas. "Safe asset scarcity and aggregate demand." *The American Economic Review* 106.5 (2016): 513-18.
7. Caballero, Ricardo J., Emmanuel Farhi, and Pierre-Olivier Gourinchas. "The safe assets shortage conundrum." *Journal of Economic Perspectives* 31.3 (2017): 29-46.
8. Caballero, Ricardo J., Emmanuel Farhi. "The safety trap." *The Review of Economic Studies* 85.1 (2017): 223-274.
9. Chinn, M. D., & Ito, H. (2008). A new measure of financial openness. *Journal of Comparative Policy Analysis*, 10(3), 309-322.
10. Dang, T. V., Gorton, G., Holmström, B., and Ordonez, G. "Banks as secret keepers". *The American Economic Review*, 107.4 (2017): 1005-29.
11. Farhi, Emmanuel, and Matteo Maggiori. "A Model of the International Monetary System." *The Quarterly Journal of Economics* 133.1 (2017): 295-355.
12. Feenstra, R. C., Inklaar, R., & Timmer, M. P. (2015). The next generation of the Penn World Table. *The American Economic Review*, 105(10), 3150-82.
13. Frankel, M. (1962). The production function in allocation and growth: a synthesis. *The American Economic Review*, 52(5), 996-1022.
14. Galor, O. (1996). Convergence? Inferences from theoretical models. *The Economic Journal*, 106(437), 1056-1069.
15. Gorton, Gary, Stefan Lewellen, and Andrew Metrick. "The safe-asset share." *The American Economic Review* 102.3 (2012): 101-06.
16. He, Z., Krishnamurthy, A., & Milbradt, K. (2019). A model of safe asset determination. *The American Economic Review*, 109(4), 1230-62.
17. Kose, Ayhan, Sergio Andres Kurlat, Franziska Ohnsorge, and Naotaka Sugawara. "A cross-country database of fiscal space." (2017).
18. Levine, R. (1997). Financial development and economic growth: views and agenda. *Journal of Economic Literature*, 35(2), 688-726.
19. Mankiw, N. G., Romer, D., & Weil, D. N. (1992). A contribution to the empirics of economic growth. *The Quarterly Journal of Economics*, 107(2), 407-437.
20. Romer, P. M. (1990). Endogenous technological change. *Journal of Political Economy*, 98(5, Part 2), S71-S102.
21. Robinson, J. A., & Acemoglu, D. (2012). *Why Nations Fail: The Origins of Power, Prosperity and Poverty*. London: Profile.
22. Solow, R. M. (1956). A contribution to the theory of economic growth. *The Quarterly Journal of Economics*, 70(1), 65-94.
23. Swan, T. W. (1956). Economic growth and capital accumulation. *Economic Record*, 32(2), 334-361.

MIGRATION AND CLIMATE REFUGEES: CRUCIAL ASPECTS OF PHENOMENON, DEFINING AND REORGANIZING IN A GLOBAL SOCIAL FRAMEWORK

Assoc. Prof. Dr. Sc. Katerina Veljanovska Blazhevsk

MIT University – Skopje, Faculty of Security Sciences, Skopje, the Republic of North
Macedonia

ABSTRACT

There is divergence among scholars whether climate refugees should be called refugees, since the current state of the art is that they cannot fit under the refugee definition as described in the Geneva Convention Relating to the Status of Refugees.

The social context of the issue is seen in the existing framework of climate change that is becoming a large-scale challenge to the global way of life of each individual, affecting each society, individually and collectively. In addition, environmental refugees are becoming a kind of reality that must be set in a legal framework, in order for this field to be properly regulated in the future, fitting in with existing global challenges, especially within refugees.

In the context of the above, among the factors that have the largest share in terms of analytical presentation, the spatial-social dimension of the problem is emphasized. Regarding the legal aspects, the paper starts from the legal framework for the interpretation of the definition of refugees, through the Geneva Convention of 1951, as well as more specifically about climate, environmental refugees, especially through the official interpretation by the IOM.

The main purpose of this analytical research is to encourage a more serious approach to climate (environmental) refugees, which need to be framed in a legal document, in order for their further interpretation internationally to be legalized and translated into an appropriate social order with their own rights and obligations. This paper uses a qualitative methodological framework, more specifically a method of content analysis, a method of comparison and a method of generalization and synthesis.

Keywords: migration, climate, environmental, refugees, factors, human rights

INTRODUCTION

Migration has impact on the countries of origin and the countries of destination as well as on the migrants host and sending societies. Ratha, Mohapatra and Scheja claim that the effects of migration on the country of origin are most often positive as the increased incomes from remittances, the ability to access finance for starting a new business as well as the knowledge, resources and support provided by the migrant diaspora foster poverty alleviation in the country of origin (Ratha et al., 2010). The authors suggest that migration can have serious negative impacts for the domestic institutions and politics in the cases of emigration of capable people that may cause loss of governance capacity in countries which have weak institutions.

Firstly, it is important to look into the criteria of the refugee definition and the Convention's object and purpose. Secondly, the section discusses the meaning of the term climate or environmental refugee. Thirdly, builds on the previous sections and discusses how the Convention definition should be interpreted to encompass climate refugees. In order to make the theoretical part relevant, this essay interprets a case study of climate refugees from Somalia - situations and perspectives in the context of interpreting international regulations and refugee initiatives.

It is difficult if not impossible to give a single definition of migration which is universally accepted under all circumstances of human migration, therefore there are different approaches of defining human migration. Migration can be defined as a process of moving, whether across an international border, or within the borders of a state encompassing any kind of movement of people, whatever its length, composition and causes.

Migration: Causes and consequences

There is no clear-cut definition on migration nor classification of the phenomena but there are some key features on which most authors seem to agree, and which are considered relevant for this paper. Human migration has been a part of human history since its very beginning. According to Graham and Poku, since the 1960s, the issue of migration has become a major topic in the international politics for various reasons (Graham, Poku, 2000).

Firstly the level of movements has increased largely, in the 60s, mainly the traditional immigration nations in North America and Oceania, were significantly affected by international migration, but by the 1990s more than 2 percent of the world's population was living outside of their country of birth and virtually every nation was influenced in some way by immigration or emigration of various kinds. Secondly, the diversity of the international population movement has been increased. In the past, the bulk of such movement involved permanent, or at least long-term, settlement at the destination, while at present times migration is characterized not only by increased levels of permanent settlement in foreign countries but also by a myriad of temporary, circular migrations of varying duration with a range of purposes. Thirdly, governments in destination countries are actively trying to limit the numbers and characteristics of immigrants but at the same time the involvement of governments in destination countries encourage emigration of different kinds because of the benefits of remittances to the national development (Graham, Poku, 2000).

There is no unique definition on migration nor is a simple classification of migration not possible either, because of the existence of multi-dimensional migration criteria's such as cause, length, distance, direction, volume, velocity, migratory status etc. According to Clarke, migration can be classified as internal, within the boundaries of a state or international and this approach has been introduced by many scholars because of the great significance of state political boundaries and the availability of information about migration at the state level (Clarke, 1972).

According to the IOM Glossary on Migration, international migration is the "movement of persons who leave their country of origin, or the country of habitual residence, to establish themselves either permanently or temporarily in another country" (International Migration Law, 2004).

Chandna, classifies migration based on duration of stay as permanent, semi-permanent and temporary migration (Chandna, 1998). Migration can also be forced, impelled, free and planned. Forced migration is caused by wars, repressive regimes and droughts that generate a mass movement of refugees who suffer from ill health, persecution, malnutrition and poverty (Fernie, Pitkethly, 1985).

Voluntary migrants or economic migrants include the category of migrants who decide to move as a result of their own desires and motivations.¹ People can migrate legally for the purposes of family reunification or employment as well as studies and training while those migrants who evade formal migration controls or the ones who have stayed legally but remain after the end of the permitted period are classified as illegal migrants.

Migration has always been an important component of population change at local, regional, national and global scale. There are many reasons why people decide to migrate to another region or country. These can be push factors such as political instability, civil conflict, forced migration, a lack of job opportunities, famine, or pull factors such as stability in the new country, higher pay rates or better opportunities. Usually, migration is not caused by a single factor but by a set of interacting and synergistic effects caused by a multitude of social, demographic, economic, climatic and biological factors. Bogue lists twenty five migration-stimulating situations for persons, fifteen factors in choosing a destination, and ten socio-economic conditions which can stimulate or retard mobility among a population as shown below (Bogue, Donald, 1959):

1) Migration-stimulating conditions and factors: Graduation; marriage; lack of marriage; employment offers; employment opportunities; migratory work; special skills; transfer of employment; sale of business; loss of farm; discharge from employment; low wages; retirement; death of relative; military service; medical care; imprisonment; political, racial or religious oppression; natural disasters; invasion or infiltration by outsiders; inheritance; maladjustment to community; wanderlust; social rejection; forced movement.

2) Factors in choosing destination: Cost of moving; presence of relatives or friends; employment offer; physical attractiveness of community; physical environment; amenities; population composition; special employment ; special assistance; subsidies; information; reputation; lack of alternative destinations.

3) Socio-economic conditions affecting migration: Major capital investments; major business recessions; technological change; changes in economic organization; provisions for social welfare; migration propaganda facilities; regulations affecting migration; moving conditions and levels; tolerance of minorities; migration policy.

Lees's migration push and pull model

According to Lee's Theory on Migration every act of migration involves a place of origin, a place of destination and a set of intervening obstacles. Lee, recognizes four categories of factors that influence the decision to migrate (Lee, 1966):

- Factors associated with the area of origin.
- Factors associated with the area of destination.
- Intervening obstacles.
- Personal factors.

There are both positive and negative factors associated with the place of origin as well as positive and negative factors associated with the place of destination. But different factors have various influences on different individuals in specific situations. For example a good schooling system may be counted as a positive factor for a parent and negative for a house owner with no children because of the high real-estate taxes while an unmarried person without taxable property would be indifferent to the situation. However there is a difference between factors related to the place of origin and the ones related to the place of destination. People are familiar with the place of origin and base their judgments according to their experience while they are not familiar with the place of destination thus there is always an ignorance regarding advantages and disadvantages in the place of destination as one can now

about them only by living there. According to Lee's push and pull model there are two sets of "push" and two sets of "pull" factors involved in the process of migration, meaning there are positive and negative factors related to the place of origin and the place of destination and they may be any type political, economic, social, environmental or cultural forces. For Lee, while migration may result from comparing factors at the place of origin and destination a simple calculation of positive and negative factors does not decide the act of migration rather the balance in favor of the decision to migrate must be enough to overcome the natural inertia which always exists. Besides these positive and negative factors in the place of origin and destination, there is a set of intervening obstacles and restrictions between the place of origin and destination and these obstacles include distance, costs of moving, loss of income, housing or legal regulations regarding immigration. However these obstacles may have little consequences for some migrants while being great impediments for others. Furthermore, personal factors also may facilitate or retard migration. Personal awareness of conditions elsewhere and intelligence influence the evaluation of the situation at the place of origin while the knowledge of the situation at the place of destination depends upon personal contacts or sources of information which are not universally available for everyone. Also, personalities play an important role because some are resistant to change of residence or any other change while others welcome change for the sake of change, for some there must be solid reasons for migration while for others a little provocation or promise is enough to make the decision. For Lee, migration is a balance of push-pull at origin, push-pull at destination, and the intervening obstacles. Alternatively, it may impact the subjective opinions or expectations of a potential migrant thinking whether he should to move or stay put. Lee does not consider how the competing pushes and pulls are reconciled, but assumes that a choice is made by some rational process based on positive and negative conditions at the place of origin and destination. Today Lee's model of migration push and pull factors apply to different migration contexts including the studied context in this thesis but what is also important to emphasize in the case of Kosovo is that international migration is highly restricted by Lee's intervening obstacles in the form of immigration laws regulating which people, from which countries and under which conditions may enter and stay in a certain country.

Explaining the crucial aspects of the refugee definition

It was not until 1951 that a universal definition of refugee was agreed upon in article 1A(2) of the Convention (Hong, 2001: 324). The Convention defines a refugee as:

„A person that owing to well-founded fear of being persecuted for reasons of race, religion, nationality, membership of a particular social group or political opinion, is outside the country of his nationality and is unable, or owing to such fear, is unwilling to avail himself to the protection of that country; or who, not having a nationality and being outside the country of his former habitual residence as result of such events, is unable or, owing to such fear, is unwilling to return to it" (Art. 1A). Additionally, the preamble of the Convention recognizes the importance of people enjoying fundamental rights and freedoms and urges states to recognize the humanitarian nature of refugees' circumstances (Preamble of the Convention Relating to the Status of Refugees). In addition, it is because the national authorities are not able to provide this protection (Heater and Simon, 2014: 548). According to Heater and Simon and with further deeper analysis, it can be seen that it is important to restore the fundamental rights and freedoms of those who have lost the protection of their national governments, by granting them international protection in the form of asylum ". Moreover, it is about the safeguarding human dignity (Arboleda and Hoy, 1993: 67).

Climate refugees (or) Environmental refugees - the world towards a new challenge

The term environmental refugee was introduced by El-Hinnawi in 1985 (Boon and La Tra, 1985: 86). Stating that environmental refugees are people: "who have been forced to leave their traditional habitat, temporarily or permanently, because of a marked environmental disruption (natural/and or triggered by people) that jeopardized their existence and/or seriously affected the quality of their life" (Zellentin, 2010: 65).

Despite some theoretical aspects and definitions, one still cannot speak of consensus among scholars and international organizations as to who is a climate refugee and whether the term is appropriate (or ecological refugees). According to Keane, climate refugee is an inappropriate term, stating that people fleeing due to environmental circumstances do not fall under the scope of the Convention definition of refugee (Keane, 2004: 210-215). McAdam refers to three points which stand in the way of granting refugee status to people solely fleeing climate or environmental dangers: the lack of crossing an international border, the absence of persecution and the absence of one of the persecution reasons.

Climate/environmental Refugees – A Case Study

The case of Somalia is analysed as a kind of example, where there has been an armed conflict for almost 20 years, but also many droughts and floods, so that the humanitarian crisis is becoming more visible and actual. In fact, in this part of the world the main means of subsistence and the economy as a whole depend directly on the weather. A number of local and international humanitarian organizations and agencies are involved in this process. In addition, the fact that there is a high population growth in certain areas of Somalia contributes to these facts (Little, 2008).

When it comes to the fact that climate refugees cannot be easily distinguished from other types of refugees, such as economic refugees, refugees due to danger in certain areas, etc., then in the case of Somalia, the escalation of the civil war contributes for the humanitarian crisis that has been going on in this country for the last twenty years.

In this case, the fact is mentioned that the country is not a member of the UN Framework Convention on Climate Change, ie there is no direct national action for adaptation to climate change. To a large extent, all this is due to the complex dynamics of conflicts and disasters, but also human mobility in this area.

One of the solutions offered by international humanitarian agencies, local NGOs is to provide internal resettlement, as the external migration scheme is disrupted.

According to Little, due to environmental disasters, environmental refugees first start migrating to other cities in Somalia, such as Mogadishu, however droughts are prolonged on the grounds that the population needs to migrate further. This is a seemingly "proof" of how complex the situation of natural disasters and conflicts in an area can be (Little, 2008).

The case of Somali environmental refugees and the overall developments in this country as a result of the ongoing environmental disasters and armed conflicts point to the fact that stereotyping when it comes to migrants and refugees is no longer appropriate. More specifically, according to Kolmannskog, traditional frameworks and mechanisms for protecting people from climate disasters and conflicts require new forms of action by international regulations in this area as well as international agencies aimed at protecting refugees, with a special focus on environmental refugees. In this regard, the country faces laws passed only "on paper" while the international community faces areas it cannot help by offering its classic, tried-and-true approach (Kolmannskog, 2009: 183).

If the issue of environmental refugees from Somalia is considered from the other side, then the area that comes to the fore is Kenya. Namely, according to The Kenyan Refugees Act (2006), these people are recognized as refugees on the basis of fear of persecution, religion, nationality or political opinion, all in accordance with the Convention relating to the Status of Refugees (1951). The Kenyan government, however, restricts the right to work and freedom of movement of these refugees (Reuters, 2009).

In line with this, the Kenyan government also points to the application of this group of refugees to the UNHCR regarding the determination of their refugee status. However, the problem becomes cyclical because the situation in Kenya is not particularly great because this country is also a region of drought and competition of locals and displaced persons (U.S. Committee for Refugees and Immigrants, 2009).

CONCLUSION REMARKS

Climate refugees do not fall within the definition of the existing concept of refugees. According to a review of the wider literature, in order to clarify the relationship between climate refugees and environmental refugees, it is seen that the climate refugees are in a way a subset of the environmental refugees, who were forced to flee due to sudden or gradual changes in the natural environment. In addition, there is already a breakdown of the definition of environmental refugees by the International Organization for Migration, of environmental emergency migrants; forced migrants and motivated migrants.

According with the above mentioned, it becoming clear why climate refugees do not entirely fit under the Convention definition. Furthermore, McAdam focused more on explaining why under the current circumstances climate refugees do not meet the Convention criteria. Keane is more straight-forward and claims that the fact that the Convention is silent on climate harms as recognized reasons, provides enough evidence as to why climate refugees cannot be Convention refugees (Keane, 2004: 215). But that should not have to mean too much. Fleeing due to sexual orientation is also not specifically mentioned in the definition, but still can be a reason to obtain refugee status by reading the fleeing reason into the persecution reason of 'membership of a particular social group' (UNHCR, 2002).

In addition, within the case of Somalia, there is some overlap with the official definition of a refugee under the Convention, especially in terms of the apparent fear of persecution, but there is no column in the definition itself that initiates a fear of terrorism or insecurity in the country due to armed conflict. Additionally, the definition needs to be extended to the need for fear of climate change, ie changes in the environment that may initiate a danger to the health of the citizen. Perhaps, through these initiated directions, a new wave of refugees can be analysed and specified in the future, climate (ecological) refugees, primarily as a result of global warming and the growing climate and ecological changes that are expected in different parts of the world, interpreted differently.

There is ambiguity in the analytical view (as in McAdam) that climate refugees do not fall into the category of typical persecution, as it calls into question the possibility of recognizing climate / environmental damage. However, the case of Somalia described in this paper states otherwise. Namely, climate change must not be experienced in a non-discriminatory manner. There is only one explanation for this view, even with an addition to the definition of refugee status. Additionally, the allusion to distinguishing between climate refugees in their own country, in that regard, emphasizes the need to include these individuals in the category of internally displaced persons (IDPs).

Climate refugees, those who crossed a border, do qualify as Convention refugees which are being persecuted for their membership of a particular social group. By recognizing this, the international community will not only act in accordance with their obligations. But also recognize their role in the bigger picture of climate change and face the consequences.

REFERENCES

- Art. 1A(2) of the Convention Relating to the Status of Refugees (adopted 28 July 1951, entered into force 22 April 1954) 189 UNTS 137 (the Convention)
- Arboleda, Eduardo, Hoy, Ian 1993 The Convention Refugee Definition in the West: Disharmony of Interpretation and Application *International Journal of Refugee Law*
- Boon, La Tra (n 29) 85, 1985 Refer to the Essam El-Hinnawi's definition. His original statement can be found in Essam El-Hinnawi, *Environmental Refugees* (UNEP, 1985).
- Bogue, Donald, J. 1959 *Internal Migration*. In The Study of Population. Philip M. Hauser and Otus Dudley Duncan. eds. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
- Clarke, J., I. 1972 *Population Geography*. Second edition. Oxford: Pregamon Press
- Chandna, R.C. 1998. *Population*. New Delhi: Kayani Publishers
- Fernie, J, Pitkethly, A. 1985 *Resources, environment and policy*. London: Harper and Row, p.17
- Heater Alexander and Johnathan Simon, 2014 Unable to Return in the 1951 Refugee Convention: Stateless Refugees and Climate Change *Florida Journal of International Law*
- Graham, D.T., Poku, N.K. 2000) *Migration globalization and human security*. London: Routledge
- International Migration Law. 2004 *Glossary on Migration*. Geneva
- Jeanhee Hong, 2001 Refugees of the 21st century: environmental injustice. *Cornell Journal of Law and Public Policy*
- Keane, David 2004 *The Environmental Causes and Consequences of Migration: A Search for the Meaning of "Environmental Refugees"* The Georgetown International Environmental Law Review 210
- Kolmannskog, Vikram, 2009 Norwegian Refugee Council, "Climate change, disaster, displacement and migration: initial evidence from Africa. *New Issues in Refugee Research*, Research Paper No. 180
- Little, Peter D. 2008 *Somalia: Economy without State*. The International African Institute, quoted in Norton, Gregory Land, Property and Housing in Somalia, NRC
- Lee, E.,S. 1966. *Theory of Migration*. Demography 3
- Preamble of the Convention Relating to the Status of Refugees (adopted 28 July 1951, entered into force 22 April 1954) 189 UNTS 137 (the Convention).
- Ratha, Dilip, Mohapatra, Sanket, Scheja, Elina. 2011. *Impact of migration on economic and social development: a review of evidence and emerging issues*. Policy Research Working Paper
- Zellentin, Alexa. 2010. *Climate Migration*. Cultural Aspects of Climate Change. Analyse & Kritik 63

Internet data

Reuters, *Floods could threaten up to 750 000 in Kenya—UN*, 6 November 2009, available at <https://www.bbc.com/news/av/world-africa-53776774>, Accessed at 23/09/2021

U.S. Committee for Refugees and Immigrants. *World Refugee Survey 2009 – Kenya* available at, <https://www.refworld.org/docid/4a40d2aa76.html>, Accessed at 23/09/2021

UNHCR. *Guidelines on International Protection: Membership of a particular social group within the context of article 1A(2) of the 1951 Convention and/or its 1967 Protocol relating to the Status of Refugees'* (Geneva 2002), <https://www.unhcr.org/publications/legal/3d58de2da/guidelines-international-protection-2-membership-particular-social-group.html>, Accessed at 20/09/2021

INFLUENCE OF SOME ANTHROPOMETRIC INDICES ON GENERIC AND SPECIFIC BALANCE PERFORMANCE

Antonela Karmen Ivišić¹, Nikola Foretić¹ PhD, Šime Veršić¹ PhD

¹University of Split, Faculty of Kinesiology, Split, Croatia

ABSTRACT

Sports gymnastics belongs to the branch of aesthetically designed sports, whose technically complex movements are acyclic repeated on gymnastic equipment. The complexity of motor movements in gymnastics is manifested when performing various gymnastic elements such as jumps, rotations and turns, which are often associated, and require athletes to control movement, while the emphasis is on maintaining a balanced body position. In general, there is a problem when it comes to sports balance testing because there are no standardized sport-specific tests used to test balance. Therefore, the main aim of this study was to examine and validate a newly-constructed gymnastic balance test that will be applicable in the assessment of balance in sport gymnastic. The participants in this study were female students (N = 22) of the second year of undergraduate university study of Kinesiology in Split, aged 19 to 23 years, and with the different sports orientations. Two set of variables were observed. Body weight and height, body mass index, leg length, foot length and foot width as anthropometric measures, and in domain of motoric abilities, ankle mobility, postural stability test on Biodex Balance System and newly constructed sport-specific balance test. Results showed that anthropometric variables have negative impact on balance performance. This impact showed to be bigger on the generic, laboratory balance test, then on the sport-specific test. Finally, there is no association between mobility and observed balance tests. Future studies should be directed towards validation of reliable sport-specific balance tests.

Keywords: Biodex balance system, gymnastic, stability, anthropometry, morphology, mobility

THREE MODES OF AFRICAN-AMERICAN DRAMATIC HERITAGE

Sinan Gul

National Defense University, Foreign Languages Department, Ankara, Turkey.

ABSTRACT

Drama has been neglected by scholars for so long that the literary merits it contains often remain unnoticed. However, literary and theatrical content of plays usually constitute a well-established reflection of the period that it represents. Therefore, dramatic works in general should be seminal to evaluating social and historical factors that have been deemed important for different ethnical and cultural groups within society. Following this principle, this article tracks three different playwrights' main works in order to show how the analysis of the African American people's history operates on different scales through dramatic reflections of their experiences. As a result, selected plays by Langston Hughes, Amiri Baraka (former Leboi Jones) and August Wilson demonstrate how the African American movement gradually has formed its voice through social upheavals and reform movements. It is important to understand how African American drama offers a different approach to the ongoing evaluation and review of the movement's evolution as all plays by these writers contain reflections of characters taken from the heart of key events in African American history.

Keywords: African American Drama, Black Theater, social movements.

INTRODUCTION

Drama is the bastard art in the US as Susan Harris explains in her infamous book. There is a clear negligence and reluctance of dramatic activities that can be observed among other genres throughout the relatively short history of American literature. Most scholars regard Eugene O'Neill as the father of "serious" American drama and that is where real American drama starts for many academicians. Although this perception has been altered thanks to the "discovered" works of Susan Glaspell, Elmer Rice or performative activities of Provincetown players, it is still difficult to shake canonical pillars of American dramatic heritage. African-American playwrights are late boomers like their white predecessors and colleagues, but it is clear that plays by African-American playwrights also have a significant impact in cultural, political and social processes. This paper scaffolds a triangular model of the twentieth century African-American drama and draws a sketch of three different African-American playwrights belonging to three separate periods to be able to follow the differences and similarities each epoch through the works of Langston Hughes, Amiri Baraka (former Leboi Jones) and August Wilson. Each of these playwrights deserves a book to analyze their own works separately, and there is a myriad of works over their literary products but my aim is to discern an evolution of protest and sense of collaboration over decades through selected plays. Although these three are prolific writers in terms of producing literary works, I have chosen three significant plays to represent their writers for the brevity and practicality of this article.

For a long while, African-Americans had one primary problem: freedom. The problem of slavery did not cause confusion in any other country as it did in America. That's why it is uniquely difficult to make a sound comparison with other countries. No other country allowed slavery in their borders for as long as America did. No other country started a Civil War to abolish slavery. No other legal and social regulation required such a fierce Civil Rights movement –except South Africa to grant its citizens to have equal rights with others. Although there were other more overt reasons behind the phenomenon of slavery in the US, the underlying cause of it was the fact that America was founded on entrepreneurship. The

pioneer Puritans settled in the US to flee from religious despotism, but they always had a business oriented mentality and morality, as the sociologist Max Weber also placed within the heart of capitalist ethic system. The system of the transatlantic slave trade, aimed to be used especially in the agrarian American South, was really profitable. The industrial North did not insist on slavery as South did. This might partly have derived from the intellectual attribution of New England, the accumulation of respectable education institutes, and the mechanization of business instead of reliance on the human factor.

American South had enormous fields to be exploited but they needed as many hands as possible to harvest them. Slaves were the best means of collecting crops, with no wages, no insurance, no benefits, and no legal responsibilities. Although slavery was abolished by the Civil War, it took almost another century for Blacks¹ to be respected and legally recognized as rightful citizens of the United States. It took massacres, rebellions, murders, violation of human rights. On such a long way to freedom, African Americans found their own ways to narrate what happened to them. First, they kept their African dances and songs, and then they impersonated their experiences. It was a difficult life because when they were first brought, they were divided and separated. Without their relatives it was easier to handle them. They were forbidden to speak their native languages, most of them were not allowed to get married and they could easily be sold to another plantation. They were not allowed to be Christians until 1700 because whites feared that baptism would give them a claim to freedom. By 1890, more than 90 percent of the African families, most of whom were farmers, resided in the South (Hatch & Shine, 65).

Langston Hughes

At the beginning of the twentieth century, a big wave of immigration started from South to North. Industrial advancements improved the major cities, and people, particularly African-Americans, were looking for better employment and conditions. Since they were unskilled industrial workers and had little formal education, they were forced to accept low-paying jobs. However, the Blacks started to have education even though the amount was not high compared to the whites. If we have to label a certain time or name of people for the Black Art movement, at some point Langston Hughes has to be mentioned since he is the African-American without whose books no library in the US can be complete. He was a crucial forerunner of Black arts poetry, drama, essays and short fiction. He supported many black writers to write about their own experiences. He led a controversial life, gained many friends and enemies at the same time. He gave his testimony before the McCarthy committee in 1953, and cut his ties with the Left. Later in the 1960s, people accused him of being a careerist for his engagement with Black Power (Smethurst, 1225).

Hughes is primarily famous for his poetry, but he authored a great number of plays as well. Among the one hundred plays he wrote, *Mulatto* is unique since it is the only tragedy he wrote. It is also one of the rare plays in which he used conventional European structure. It is

¹ This sounds like a post-Trump phrase which I am not very pleased and I know that it is not really acceptable to call African-American citizens through their skin color, but to be able to portray the difference between races according to the accepted norms of those decades, I will use the term carefully in some places because as Langston Hughes and other writers indicate the term African-American does not necessarily address the whole population. Suzan Lori Parks also approaches the matter in a similar method: "As there is no single 'Black Experience,' there is no one way to write or think or feel or dream or interpret or be interpreted." ("An Equation for Black People Onstage," in *The America Play* (New York: Theatre Communications Group, 1995), 21. For example, in *The America Play* (1995) and *Top Dog Underdog* (2001), there are characters defined as African Americans, but their racial identities are not cultural signifiers but just dramatic devices. August Wilson has also "adopted an aesthetic position that foregrounds blackness and seeks to make the black play ever-relevant, especially to today's black audiences." (Shannon, 604)

included in The Norton Anthology of American Literature.² Hughes was not a Negro, and he always had some concerns about it. He mentions that in his autobiography:

You see, unfortunately, I am not black. There are lots of different kinds of blood in our family. But here in the United States, the word “Negro” is used to mean anyone who has any Negro blood at all in his veins. In Africa, the word is more pure. It means all Negro, therefore black.

I am brown. My father was a darker brown. My mother an olive yellow. (11)

What Hughes complained about had a variety of levels. The term “tragic mulatto” is used to denote a light-colored, mixed-blood character who suffers because he is not fully a member of one race. The theme of mulatto should be really appealing to him; he has two famous poems and a play on the subject. It is another aspect of slavery caused by miscegenation. Many white owners slept with their slaves to increase the amount of their workers or out of sheer desire. The children born from such relationships were called mulattos and usually separated from the other slaves. Because of their bi-racialism, they were not accepted by either of the groups.

Mulatto was Langston Hughes’ first full-length play. Surprisingly, it ran for a year on Broadway. It toured the US for eight months before it was played in Italy by Italian actors for two more years. The play takes place in the South in the post-World War I era. The main conflict in the play is between Colonel Thomas Norwood and his youngest mulatto son, Robert Lewis. When Bert was seven, Colonel beat him because Bert called him “dad”. After that he sent him to a board school. Bert’s mother, Cora, is the housekeeper. She persuaded Colonel to send her kids to school so that they could go up North to find decent jobs for themselves. Colonel is a man of pride, and he never renders Cora’s children as his. After his return, Bert tells everyone that he is colonel’s son and argues with whites in the post office. Although he is warned, he keeps using the front door for his entrance to the mansion. All these factors increase the tension between Colonel and him. Worried about the changing racial attitudes in the North that might ruin his business; Colonel argues with Bert and threatens to kill him. They fight and Bert kills him before he does. While Bert is trying to escape, a mob blocks his way and he returns to the house, where he prefers to shoot himself rather than be captured and lynched.

Hughes portrays a relatively comfortable South, where blacks have their essential rights as long as they obey the rules. Bert, however, wishes to be respected as white. He is stubborn just like his father, but his mother is more experienced and sensible than his son. She can feel the gravity of the situation. Bert is not after privileges, he wants to embrace his identity. Although Norwood is his father, he is a man living with history and traditions. His Colonel title associates him with the Civil War, and he is one of the plantation owners who justify slavery for practical and commercial reasons. He does not hesitate to remind his son where he belongs:

² The first series of African American theatre started with a tea garden in Manhattan by a Mr. Brown between 1816 and 1817. He organized songs, poetry recitals and dramatic monologues for his African American customers. Shakespeare’s *Richard III* was staged in his garden on September 21, 1821. This was the first play performed by Blacks in America. Later Brown converted his garden into a theater hall, and established the first Black theatre in the entire country. The honor of the first drama written by African American does also belong to Brown. Titled *The Drama of King Shotaway*, it uncovers a slave uprising on the island of St. Vincent. It did not last long due to the white mocking attitude. Because there were not many African American playwrights, most of the black players were taking roles in Whites’ theaters playing the stereo type roles. In 1925, W.E.B. Du Bois initiated the Krigwa Playwriting contest, and the prize-winner plays were published in the magazine, *Crisis*, that Du Bois edited. Next year, Du Bois organized the Krigwa Little Theater to produce plays about, by, for and near African Americans in 1965 (Hatch & Shine, 379-380).

NORWOOD: ...Now, I'm going to let you talk to me, but I want you to talk right.

ROBERT: (Still standing) What do you mean, talk right.

NORWOOD: I mean talk like a nigger should to a white man.

ROBERT: Oh! But I'm not a nigger, Mr. Norwood! I'm your son.

NORWOOD: (Testily) You're Cora's boy. (19)

On the other hand, Bert's older brother, William, exemplifies internalized racism. Significantly, Hughes draws a comparison line between these two brothers. William gets angry with Bert because he does not comply with the rules of the mansion. Having a revolutionary character, Bert expresses his discontent at every opportunity he gets. While William accepts the status quo, Bert tells him about what he saw in Atlanta, Richmond and Washington. The difference between them emerges through the utopic vision that Bert has gained upon his travels. He has self-respect and confidence. He has gone through a metamorphosis and unshackled his invisible chains long ago. The way he approaches his father is more like an employee and employer relationship. Far from the sincerity of a parental affection, Bert is constantly exposed to scolding and warnings.

The lynching in the South was a common practice. It is insignificant if Bert relies on his father's power and wealth when he opposes the whites in the town. He embodies spirit and spirituality, and this proves crucial to his salvation. He feels linked to the systems of power, history, and knowledge. This might be a naive reception of such a large matter but what he has experienced convinced him of his righteousness.

Bert's suicide at the end suggests the unfair legal system. He knows if he is captured, there will be no trials or whatsoever, but a constant lynching to teach every 'nigger' a lesson. Hughes locates Bert in the center of the action. Although he seems to reiterate the common Southern mind-set, he fires a torch of hope and resistance through Robert. Crucially, Colonel's wife Cora, who has been submissive for years, joins the protest against Norwood at the end. Her raised voice is the message Hughes delivers. She is the one to tell Bert's story to others; his death finds a meaning in the end. Considering the fact that all of Cora's children have been educated in the American Northern mentality, Bert represents Northern values. He is the future of Blacks; he is the Black Power raising his voice; he is the militant fighting for the things that have been taken away from him.

Amiri Baraka (former LeRoi Jones)

The social conditions deteriorated for the Blacks day by day despite all the reformatory spirit dispersed through characters like Bert. The second half of twentieth century was laden with fierce struggles and atrocities for the African-American community. Despite the friendly and peaceful protests led by Dr. King, African-American communities were suffering from constant discrimination, and police brutality. While people were seeking retribution for the unfair treatment, government's delinquent actions fanned the flames. People who were angry and asked 'an eye for an eye' became a numerically significant group. Renouncing the non-violent tactics of Martin Luther King Jr., Malcolm X formed the Organization for Afro-American Unity in 1964. Additionally, following Malcolm X's assassination in 1965, the Black Panthers were founded. They played a major role in the violent riots which erupted regularly in major cities such as New York, Los Angeles, Cleveland, Newark, Chicago, Atlanta and Detroit. (Wilmer, 128-129) This said, however, an equal, if not greater, violence continued for blacks and hit the climax when Dr. King was assassinated in 1968. Although the tendency towards violence might seem to derive from personal choices, the fate Dr. King

and Malcolm X shared proves the intolerant atmosphere of the whole country in the 1960s. The Civil Rights movement, however, has created the most influential effect and change on the lives of the black Americans since the Civil War.

The crisis moved many writers to take a considerably harsher stance toward the emerging culture of stolidity in American society. Simply put, Le Roi Jones' career seems to embody the entire Civil rights movement. He was a prominent member of the Black Arts Movement which was described by Larry Neal in 1968 as "the aesthetic and spiritual sister to the Black Power concept" (62). Different than his contemporary Lorraine Hansberry, Jones always had a macho language and attitude for the representation of black characters on stage. In his *Dutchman* (1964), a middle-class black man, Clay, is murdered by a seductive white woman, Lula, on a train. The play involves several symbols indicating Western perceptions. In an underworld jargon, a Dutchman is a killer who is also in charge of disposing of the corpses. Lula epitomizes typical aggressive behaviors of a collective psyche, through which the essentially sick and guilt-ridden behavior of the American white society is exposed (Rice, 43). When Lula enters the car, she holds paper books, which symbolizes the civilized and literate world of the west as opposed to the illiterate blacks, whose right of education is taken from them. Lula's sunglasses are indicative of the disguise she is equipped with. The apple Lula holds is clearly a reference to Adam and Eve, and she is portrayed as the temptress. Although Clay's encounter with Lula brings him knowledge, it brings death as well. The approach Jones has in *Dutchman* is totally different from Hansberry's. He draws an aggressive and dominant white woman. The white myth of Black male sexuality is used to describe the deliberate annihilation of the African American people. He also strives to show the impossibility of a non-segregated society due to the noxious attitude of the white people. For Jones, the murder of Clay is no different than public lynching in the South. Although Lula tries to annoy Clay, her sentences mark her contempt for the Blacks. She deliberately tries to produce anger so that it would justify her killing him. The message from *Dutchman* might raise the tension between races because it is not misleading to conclude that the Blacks, who are unfairly murdered by the whites, should start to protect themselves and kill them in return. LeRoi does not advocate pacifism against violence; he believes violence should get violence in return. Albeit negative criticism on the play, it received Obie Award for best Off-Broadway play.

Jones' *The Toilet*, which offers a different venue for the same conclusion, is a one-act play taking place in a high school restroom. At the end of the day, two people are expected to fight: Ray, known as Foots, and Jerry, who is described as 'Paddy'. In the first half of the play, Foots' friends verbally joust. Karolis, who is supposed to fight with Foots, is eaten by another bully figure. The play examines the interaction of black and white cultures. It tells the story of a gang leader who takes part in an attack on an outsider whom he secretly loves. It, nonetheless, generates the possibility of a utopian practice of hope albeit the loss. There is a homoerotic tone in the play since Karolis likes Foots and sends him a letter offering Foots a blow job. At the end, Karolis is beaten by Foots and his gang. Jones ends the game with an optimist tone:

"After a minute or so Karolis moves his hand. Then his head moves and he tries to look up. He draws his legs up under him and pushes his head off the floor. Finally he manages to get to his hands and knees. He crawls over to one of the commodes, pulls himself up, then falls backward awkwardly and heavily. At this point, the door is pushed open slightly, then it opens completely and Foots comes in. He stares at Karolis' body for a second, looks quickly over his shoulder, then runs and kneels before the body, weeping and cradling the head in his arms (58 – 59)."

Another play by Jones, *The Slave* (1964), is set in the racial civil war in a near future. The play is described as “A Fable in a Prologue and Two Acts.” It is an investigation of a probable civil war between blacks and whites in contemporary America. The leader of black forces, Walker Vessles, visits his white ex-wife, Grace, and her husband Easley to take his children with him. On the background, explosions and guns are constantly heard. Vessel kills Easley, and at the end a child cries, but it is not significant if the child dies or not. In the final scene, Vessels turns to the old field-slave as he appeared in the Prologue.

It is clear from Jones’ plays that he is a fierce revolutionary and wants to change the status quo as quick as possible. While doing this, he does not hesitate to support any means of control. His anger stems from the slavery and reaches the discriminatory policies of the society. His plays are dark and brutal. He usually writes about deaths, murders, humiliations. Although his characters look stereotypical and his plays resemble melodrama, his political tone is overtly dominant on his content. Not surprisingly, *The Slave* was the last play that really addressed the white audience. Within a few years, he left the theatre altogether and started writing one-sided propaganda works.

While Hansberry exemplifies the pacifist, integrationist part of the Civil Rights movement, LeRoi stands for the harsh, violent façade of the militant groups who endorse fighting against the white dominance. Jones later converted to Islam, divorced his Jewish wife and left his two kids. He devoted himself to social and political action. Denying the ‘names of slavery’, he took on the Muslim name of Amiri Baraka. In 1964, he founded Black Arts Repertory Theatre and School in Harlem and Spirit House in Newark.

August Wilson

The next eminent person that left an everlasting track on the African American drama is August Wilson. He took the task of dramatizing the entire African American experience in the twentieth century. He wrote a play for each decade. *Ma Rainey’s Black Bottom* (1984) takes place in 1927 and tells the story of a black musician, Ma Rainey.³ His next play *Fences* (1987) is set in 1957 and uncovers a middle class worker, Troy Maxton, who sabotages his son, Cory’s, hopes of college. Eventually they have a couple of big clashes. Although Troy is a man of capabilities, he has never seen his potential. He lived a life of fear and submission, and that’s why he is a protector of the status quo. Wilson skillfully exposes the generation gap blacks had in the fifties. While the angry youth wanted to move forward and be part of the Civil Rights movement, elderlies withheld them for they saw what happened in the past. Wilson also implies that slavery is long before abolished, but still the feeling of interdependence and confidence has not been built for the African American community.

Troy was a great baseball player, but the color barrier in Major Baseball League prevented him playing. However, his later success of being a garbage truck driver instead of a barrel lifter, has given him satisfactory pleasure to stick to his life. As most of the older characters in African American plays, he is an advocate for conservatism. It is meaningful that the fences can only be finished after his death. Fences surround their property, marks what belongs to them. They are the proprietors of the country as well as anyone else, and nobody can change that. As I mentioned before and as Wilson signals, business which guarantees the right to buy and sell property is the quintessential characteristics of American society.

Wilson also recognizes that Troy Wilson has a warrior spirit. He is frustrated with outer injustice, strong, and ambitious. Wilson has several characters with a similar constitution such as Levee, in *Ma Rainey’s Black Bottom*, Boy Willie in *the Piano Lesson* (1987) and Sterling

³ I am not going to review all of August Wilson’s plays for the brevity and practicality of the task. I’ll analyze only the plays on my reading list.

in *Two Trains Running* (1990). Wilson is not alone at being fond of presenting such characters; Vessels in Baraka's *The Slave* (1964), or Sergeant Waters in Charles Fuller's *A Soldier's Play* (1982) also have the personality to challenge the dominant culture (Roudane, 138). The unfortunate common feature that they share is the same temperament which often causes trouble for them.

With *Joe Turner's Come and Gone* (1988), Wilson returns to the beginning of the century where people struggled in the middle of an identity crisis. Songs comprise an important place in Wilson dramaturgy. In *Joe Turner*, Bynum claims to have a spiritual encounter with his dad who advised him to find his own song. He helps others to find their own songs, too. The sacred aura created around Bynum is an implication to the explanation in the beginning of the play:

Isolated cut off from memory, having forgotten the names of the gods and only guessing at their faces they arrive dazed and stunned, their heart kicking in their chest with a song worth singing. They arrive carrying Bibles and guitars, their pockets lined with dust and fresh hope, marked men and women seeking to scrape from the narrow, crooked cobbles and fiery blasts of the coke furnace a way of bludgeoning and shaping the malleable parts of themselves into a new identity as free men of definite and sincere worth. (1)

Wilson tries to bridge the blacks with their African nature through the songs. For him, songs are the missing pieces of their identity; as soon as one finds his own song, he embraces the real salvation. The ritualistic part of the songs brings blacks closer to their pagan culture and their ancestors. The criticism for the religion rises at the dialogue between Martha and Loomis who has found her after years. When Martha says "Jesus bled for you. He's the Lamb of God who takes away the sins of the world" Loomis denies the Christian discourse, "I don't need nobody to bleed for me! I can bleed for myself" (93). The concept of religion has not been a big matter of investigation in the African American drama, but plays like Baldwin's *Amen Corner* (1954) investigates the individuals committed to the religious values.⁴

CONCLUSION

Wilson's *The Piano Lesson* (1990) tells the story of a brother, Boy Willie, and sister who argues over the piano with their family portraits on it. Their father stole it because he believed it belonged to them since his ancestors were sold for the piano. Boy Willie wants to sell it and buy a farm in the south, whereas his sister, Bernice wants to keep it for the memories it has. At the end, after Bernice plays the piano years later and spiritual appearances of the previous owner, Sutter, he consents to leave it with her. It takes place in the 1930s, and Wilson displays the conflicts with the past. Without solving them, there would be no steps further. This message might summarize the long path of African American drama. In the 1930s as Langston Hughes wrote it was a struggle to find their identity, and in the 60s, it was the fierce

⁴ Despite its pacifist discourse, religion has always made bigger impact on Civil Rights movement. Slaves were officially allowed to convert to Christianity after 1700. The tranquillizer effect of religion made slaves more obedient. They attended services with whites in the churches with the condition of being at the back or balcony. This presence, at least, helped blacks to be spiritually uplifted. Freed slaves under the leadership Absalom Jones established their first Church, The Bethel African Methodist Episcopal Church, in 1794. It cut its ties with Methodist Church in 1816, and united with other African Methodist churches. The African American church became the first institution that was controlled solely by blacks (Hatch & Shine, 282). Churches played a great role at creating responsible and educated black citizens. It has always been sensitive to Civil Rights movement and organized blacks against social and political injustice.

times of fighting, in the 80s, it was a time to finish the book of past, and move on the future. As Wilson told David Savran:

All art is political. It serves a purpose. All my plays are political but I try not to make them didactical or polemical. Theatre doesn't have to be agitprop. I hope that my art serves the masses of blacks in America who are in desperate need of a solid and sure identity. I hope my plays make people understand that these are African people, that this is why they do what they do. If blacks recognize the value in that, then we will be on our way to claiming our identity and participating in society as Africans. (37)

African American drama became a powerful device for African-Americans to find their own voice, songs, and identity. First, it broke the walls of racism on a fictional level and then came the social progress. It enabled blacks to have a utopian vision of the future. It mirrored the African-American society, and showed the way to question the status quo. Although it became a real teacher for the African-Americans, the mutual connection between black and white audiences did not reach to the desired point. However, it contributed a lot to preserve the cultural features, history and language of the African-American community. They successfully removed the stereotype figures of blacks from the Westerns stages, raised the consciousness not only for blacks but also whites as well. The fact that a black man can be the president of the USA is the legacy of those writers who did not yield to social and economic pressures and kept telling their honest and tragic stories.

REFERENCES

- Baraka, Imamu Amiri, 1971. *The Baptism and the Toilet*. New York: Ever Green. Print.
- Hatch, James V. and Shine, Ted, eds., 1996. *Black Theatre USA: Plays by African Americans, The Recent Period 1935 – Today*. New York: The Free Press. Print.
- Hughes, Langston, 1996. *Mulatto*. *Black Theatre USA: Plays by African Americans, The Recent Period 1935 – Today*. James V. Hatch and Ted Shine, eds. New York: The Free Press. Print.
- Hughes, Langston, 1993. *The Big Sea*. 1940. New York: Hill& Wang. Reprint.
- Neal, Larry, 1968. 'And Shine Swam On'. In LeRoi Jones and Larry Neal, eds. *Black Fire: An Anthology of Afro-American Writing*. New York: William Morrow, 1968. Print.
- Roudane, Matthew, 2007. 'Safe at home?: August Wilson's *Fences*.' *The Cambridge Companion to August Wilson*. Ed. Christopher Bigsby. New York: Cambridge UP, 2007.
- Savran, David, 2006. 'August Wilson', in Bryer and Hartig, eds., *Conversations with August Wilson*. Jackson: University of Mississippi Press. Print.
- Smethurst, James. 2002. "Don't Say Goodbye to the Porkpie Hat: Langston Hughes, the Left, and the Black Arts Movement." *Callaloo*, Vol. 25, No. 4 (Autumn), pp. 1224-1237. Web <http://www.jstor.org/stable/3300281> on 13/06/2013.
- Wilson, August, 1988. *Joe Turner's Come and Gone*. New York: Penguin. Print.